THE RISE
OF
THE DUTCH REPUBLIC
A HISTORY
BY
JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY
IN TWO VOLUMES
VOL. II.
EDINBURGH: ALEXANDER STRAHAN & CO.
LONDON: HAMILTON, ADAMS, & CO.
1859.
## CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

### PART III—(Continued.)

**ALVA. 1567-1573.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Chapter VI,</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter VII,</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter VIII,</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter IX,</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### PART IV.

**ADMINISTRATION OF THE GRAND COMMANDER. 1573-1576.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Chapter I,</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter II,</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter III,</td>
<td>136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter IV,</td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter V,</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### PART V.

**DON JOHN OF AUSTRIA. 1575-1578.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Chapter I,</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter II,</td>
<td>229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter III,</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter IV,</td>
<td>271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter V,</td>
<td>300</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Contents

#### PART VI

**ALEXANDER OF FARMA, 1578-1584.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Chapter I</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter II</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter III</td>
<td>367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter IV</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter V</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter VI</td>
<td>420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter VII</td>
<td>441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>INDEX</strong></td>
<td>459</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE RISE OF THE DUTCH REPUBLIC.

CHAPTER VI.

Orange and Count Louis in France—Peace with the Huguenots—Coligny's memoir, presented by request to Charles IX., on the subject of invading the Netherlands—Secret correspondence of Orange organised by Paul Buys—Privatizing commissions issued by the Prince—Regulations prescribed by him for the fleets thus created—Impoverished condition of the Prince—His fortune—His personal sacrifices and privations—His generosity—Renewed contest between the Duke and the Estates on the subject of the tenth and twentieth pence—Violent disputes in the council—Firm opposition of Viglius—Edict commanding the immediate collection of the tax—Popular tumults—Viglius denounced by Alva—The Duke's fierce complaints to the King—Secret schemes of Philip against Queen Elizabeth of England—The Ridolfi plot to murder Elizabeth countenanced by Philip and Pius V.—The King's orders to Alva to further the plan—The Duke's remonstrances—Explosion of the plot—Obstinacy of Philip—Renewed complaints of Alva as to the imprudent service required of him—Other attempts of Philip to murder Elizabeth—Don John of Austria in the Levant—Battle of Lepanto—Slothfulness of Selim—Appointment of Medina Celi—Incessant wrangling in Brussels upon the tax—Persevering efforts of Orange—Contempt of Alva for the Prince—Proposed sentence of ignominy against his name—Sonoy's mission to Germany—Remarkable papers issued by the Prince—The "harangue"—Intense hatred for Alva entertained by the highest as well as lower orders—Visit of Francis de Alava to Brussels—His unfavourable report to the King—Querulous language of the Duke—Deputation to Spain—Universal revolt against the tax—Ferocity of Alva—Execution of eighteen tradesmen secretly ordered—Interrupted by the capture of Brill—Beggars of the sea—The younger Wild Boar of Ardenne—Reconciliation between the English government and that of Alva—The Netherland privateersmen ordered out of English ports—De la March's fleet before Brill—The town summoned to surrender—Commissioners sent out to the fleet—Flight of the magistrates and townspeople—Capture of the place—Indignation of Alva—Popular exultation in Brussels—Puns and caricatures—Besau ordered to recover the town of Brill—His defeat—His pernicious entrance into Rotterdam—Massacre in that city—Flushing revolutionised—Unsuccessful attempt of Governor de Bourgogne to recall the citizens to their obedience—Expedition under Treslong from Brill to assist the town of Flushing—Murder of Pacheco by the Patriots—'t Zeeuws appointed Governor of Walcheren by Orange.

While such had been the domestic events of the Netherlands during the years 1569 and 1570, the Prince of Orange, although again a wanderer, had never allowed himself to despair. During this whole period, the darkest hour for himself and for his country, he was ever watchful. After disbanding his troops at Strasburg, and after making the best arrangements possible under the circumstances for the eventual payment of their wages, he had joined the army which the Duke of Deux Ponts had been raising in Germany to assist the cause of the Huguenots in France. The Prince having been forced to acknowledge that, for the moment, all open efforts in the Netherlands were likely to be fruitless, instinctively turned his eyes towards the more favourable aspect of the Reformation in France. It was inevitable that, while he was thus thrown for the time out of his legitimate employment, he should be led to the battles of freedom in a neighbour-

1 Bor. v. 269. Archives et Correspondance, iii. 316.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[i570.]

my's lines, traversed France, and arrived in Germany before the winter. Count Louis remained with the Huguenots. So necessary did he seem to their cause, and so dear had he become to their armies, that during the severe illness of Coligny in the course of the following summer all eyes were turned upon him as the inevitable successor of that great man, the only remaining pillar of freedom in France. Coligny recovered. The deadly peace between the Huguenots and the Court succeeded. The Admiral, despite his ascendency and his suspicions, embarked with his whole party upon that smooth and treacherous current which led to the horrible catastrophe of Saint Bartholomew. To occupy his attention, a formal engagement was made by the government to send succour to the Netherlands. The Admiral was to lead the auxiliaries which were to be despatched across the frontier to overthrew the tyrannical government of Alva. Long and anxious were the colloquies held between Coligny and the Royalists. The monarch requested a detailed opinion, in writing, from the Admiral, on the most advisable plan for invading the Netherlands. The result was the preparation of the celebrated memoir, under Coligny's directions, by young De Mornay, Seigneur de Plessis. The document was certainly not a paper of the highest order. It did not appeal to the loftier instincts which kings or common mortals might be supposed to possess. It summoned the monarch to the contest in the Netherlands that the ancient injuries committed by Spain might be avenged. It invoked the ghost of Isabella of France, foully murdered, as it was thought, by Philip. It held out the prospect of reannexing the fair provinces, wrested from the King's ancestors by former Spanish sovereigns. It painted the hazardous position of Philip, with the Moorish revolt growing at the enthrals of his kingdom, with

1 Laçaro, Reg. Nov. i. 255. Archives et Correspondance, i. 577.
2 De Thion. t. iv. 676-573.
3 Ibid. 684.
4 Green v. Prinsep. Archives et Correspondance, etc., iii. 276, 278.
5 De Thion, iv. xvi. t. v. 676, 589.
7 De Thion, i. vii. liv. xiiii. 32-56.
8 Ibid., 279, 280.
the Turkish war consuming its extremities, with the canker of rebellion corroding the very heart of the Netherlands. It recalled, with exultation, the melancholy fact that the only natural and healthy existence of the French was in a state of war—that France, if not occupied with foreign campaigns, could not be prevented from plunging its sword into its own vitals. It indulged in refreshing reminiscences of those halcyon days, not long gone by, when France, enjoying perfect tranquillity within its own borders, was calmly and regularly carrying on its long wars beyond the frontier.  

In spite of this savage spirit, which modern documents, if they did not scorn, would at least have shrouded, the paper was nevertheless a sagacious one; but the request for the memoir, and the many interviews on the subject of the invasion, were only intended to deceive. They were but the curtain which concealed the preparations for the dark tragedy which was about to be enacted. Equally deceived, and more sanguine than ever, Louis Nassau during this period was indefatigable in his attempts to gain friends for his cause. He had repeated audiences of the King, to whose court he had come in disguise. He made a strong and warm impression upon Elizabeth’s envoy at the French court, Walsingham. It is probable that in the Count’s impetuousity to carry his point, he allowed more plausibility to be given to certain projects for subdividing the Netherlands than his brother would ever have sanctioned. The prince was a total stranger to these inchoate schemes. His work was to set his country free, and to destroy the tyranny which had grown colossal. That employment was sufficient for a lifetime, and there is no proof to be found that a paltry and personal self-interest had even the lowest place among his motives.

Meantime, in the autumn of 1569, Orange had again reached Germany.

Paul Buys, Pensionary of Leyden, had kept him constantly informed of the state of affairs in the provinces. Through his means an extensive correspondence was organised and maintained with leading persons in every part of the Netherlands. The conventional terms by which different matters and persons of importance were designated in these letters were familiarly known to all friends of the cause, not only in the provinces, but in France, England, Germany, and particularly in the great commercial cities. The Prince, for example, was always designated as Martin Willemzoon, the Duke of Alva as Master Powels van Alblas, the Queen of England as Henry Philp- zoom, the King of Denmark as Peter Peterson. The twelve signs of the zodiac were used instead of the twelve months, and a great variety of similar substitutions were adopted. Before his visit to France, Orange had, moreover, issued commissions, in his capacity of sovereign, to various seafaring persons, who were empowered to cruise against Spanish commerce.

The “beggars of the sea,” as these privateersmen designated themselves, soon acquired as terrible a name as the wild beggars, or the forest beggars; but the Prince, having had many conversations with Admiral Coligny on the important benefits to be derived from the system, had faithfully set himself to effect a reformation of its abuses after his return from France. The Seigneur de Dolhain, who, like many other refugee nobles, had acquired much distinction in this roving corsair life, had for a season acted as Admiral for the Prince. He had, however, resolutely declined to render any accounts of his various expeditions, and was now deprived of his command in consequence. Gillain de Fiennes, Seigneur de Lumbres, was appointed to succeed him. At the same time strict orders were issued by Orange, forbidding all hostile measures against the Emperor or any of the princes of

---

1 De Thou, t. vii. liv. ii. 342-357.
2 Ibid., t. vi. 279, 329.
3 Green v. Frimat, Archives et Correspondance, iii. 484, 493. Mem. of Walsingham, 143.
4 Bor., v. 286.
5 Ibid., v. 310.
7 Ibid. Ibid., v. 108.
8 Ibid.
the empire, against Sweden, Denmark, England, or against any potentates who were protectors of the true Christian religion. The Duke of Alva and his adherents were designated as the only lawful antagonists. The Prince, moreover, gave minute instructions as to the discipline to be observed in his fleet. The articles of war were to be strictly enforced. Each commander was to maintain a minister on board his ship, who was to preach God's Word, and to preserve Christian piety among the crew. No one was to exercise any command in the fleet save native Netherlanders, unless thereto expressly commissioned by the Prince of Orange. All prizes were to be divided and distributed by a prescribed rule. No persons were to be received on board, either as sailors or soldiers, save "folk of good name and fame." No man who had ever been punished of justice was to be admitted. Such were the principal features in the organisation of that infant navy which, in course of this and the following centuries, was to achieve so many triumphs, and to which a powerful and adventurous mercantile marine had already led the way. "Of their ships," said Cardinal Bentivoglio, "the Hollander make houses, of their houses schools. Here they are born, here educated, here they learn their profession. Their sailors flying from one pole to the other, practising their art wherever the sun displays itself to mortals, become so skilful that they can scarcely be equalled, certainly not surpassed, by any nation in the civilised world."4

The Prince, however, on his return from France, had never been in so forlorn a condition. "Orange is plainly perishing," said one of the friends of the cause. 5 Not only had he no funds to organise new levies, but he was daily exposed to the most clamorously-urged claims, growing out of the army which he had been recently obliged to disband. It had been originally reported in the Netherlands that he had fallen in the battle of Moncontour. "If he have really been taken off," wrote Vigliius, hardly daring to credit the great news, "we shall all of us have less cause to tremble."6 After his actual return, however, lean and beggared, with neither money nor credit, a mere threatening shadow without substance or power, he seemed to justify the sarcasm of Granville. "Vana sine viribus iva," quoted the Cardinal,7 and of a verity it seemed that not a man was likely to stir in Germany in his behalf, now that so deep a gloom had descended upon his cause. The obscure and the oppressed throughout the provinces and Germany still freely contributed out of their weakness and their poverty, and taxed themselves beyond their means to assist enterprises for the relief of the Netherlands. The great ones of the earth, however, those on whom the Prince had relied; those to whom he had given his heart; dukes, princes, and electors, in this fatal change of his fortunes "fell away like water."8 Still his spirit was unbroken. His letters shewed a perfect appreciation of his situation, and of that to which his country was reduced; but they never exhibited a trace of weakness or despair. A modest, but lofty courage; a pious, but unaffected resignation breathed through every document, public or private, which fall from his pen during this epoch. He wrote to his brother John that he was quite willing to go to Frankfurt, in order to give himself up as a hostage to his troops for the payment of their arrears.9 At the same time he begged his brother to move heaven and earth to raise at least one hundred thousand

1 Bor, v. 333, 334. Archives et Correspondance, iii. 363, 364.
2 Ibid., v. 324, 325, 326. Hoofd, v. 198.
3 Ibid., v. 324, 325.
4 Bentivoglio, Guerra di Fiandra, lib., v. 59.
5 "Orangius plane perit."—Languet. ad Caner., 101.
7 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 743.
8 Hoofd, v. 190. Bor, v. 312.—See also Alva's fierce complaints that the people who refused his tenth and twentieth pence contributed voluntarily far greater sums to support the schemes of the Prince of Orange. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. passim. Archives et Correspond., iii. passim.
9 Archives et Correspondance, iii. 355-360.
1571.] Renewed Contest on the Tenth and Twentieth Penny.

is still some of my chapel service remaining." 4 "You will observe that Affenstein is wanting a horse," he wrote on another occasion; "please look him out one and send it to me with the price. I will send you the money. Since he has shewn himself so willing in the cause, one ought to do something for him." 5

The contest between the Duke and the estates, on the subject of the tenth and twentieth penny had been for a season adjusted. The two years' term, however, during which it had been arranged that the tax should be commuted, was to expire in the autumn of 1571. 6 Early therefore in this year the disputes were renewed with greater acrimony than ever. The estates felt satisfied that the King was less eager than the Viceroy. Vigilus was satisfied that the power of Alva was upon the wane. While the King was not likely openly to rebuke his recent measures, it seemed not improbable that the Governor's reitered requests to be recalled might be granted. Fortified by these considerations, the President, who had so long been the supple tool of the tyrant, suddenly assumed the character of a popular tribune. The wranglings, the contradictions, the vituperations, the threatenings, now became incessant in the council. The Duke found that he had exulted prematurely, when he announced to the King the triumphant establishment, in perpetuity, of the lucrative tax. So far from all the estates having given their consent, as he had maintained, and as he had written to Philip, it now appeared that not one of those bodies considered itself bound beyond its quota for the two years. This was formally stated in the council by Berlaymont and other members. 7 The wrath of the Duke blazed forth at this announcement. He berated Berlaymont for maintaining, or for allowing it to be maintained, that the consent of the orders had ever been doubtful. He pro-

1 Archives et Correspondance, iii. 355-360.
2 Archives et Correspondance de la Maison d’Orange, iii. 355-360.
3 Ibid. iii. 349, 350.
4 Archives et Correspondance, iii. 339.
5 Ibid., 349, 350.
tasted that they had un immersedly agreed to the perpetual imposition of the tax as he to its computation during two years. He declared, however, that he was sick of quibbles. The tax should now be collected forthwith, and Treasurer Schouten was ordered to take his measures accordingly. 1

At a conference on the 29th May, the Duke asked Viglius for his opinion. The President made a long reply, taking the ground that the consent of the orde had been only conditional, and appealing to such members of the House as were present to confirm his assertion. It was confirmed by all. The Duke, in a passion, swore that those who dared maintain such a statement should be drowned. 2 Viglius replied that it had always been his custom for councillors to declare their opinion, and that they had never before been threatened with such consequences. If such, however, were his Excellency's sentiments, councillors had better stay at home, hold their tongues and avoid opposition. 3 The Duke controlling himself a little, apologized for the allusion to drowning a man which he disclaimed having intended with reference to councillors whom he had always commanded to the house and of whom his Majesty had much in opinion. At a subsequent meeting the Duke took Viglius aside and counselled him to withdraw to his town, as a messenger which he disclaimed having intended with reference to councillors whom he had always commanded to the house and of whom his Majesty had much in opinion. 4

The daily meetings of the board were almost entirely occupied by this single subject. Although since the arrival of Alva the Council of Blood had usurped nearly all the functions of the state and finance-councils, yet there now seemed a disposition on the part of Alva to seek the countenance, even while he spared them the authority, of other functionaries. He found, however, neither sympathy nor obedience. The President stoutly told him that he was endeavouring to swim against the stream, that the tax was offensive to the people, and that the voice of the people was the voice of God. 5 On the last day of July, however, the Duke issued an edict, by which summary collection of the tenth and twentieth pence was ordered. 6 The whole country was immediately in uproar. The estates of every province, the assemblies of every city, met and remonstrated. The merchants suspended all business, the petty dealers shut up their shops. The people congregated together in masses, vowing resistance to the illegal and cruel impost. 7 Not a farthing was collected. The wise staver people, 8 spies of government, who for that paltry daily stipend were employed to listen for Muster in every tavern, in every huckster's shop, in every alley of every city, were now quite unable to report all the causes which were hourly heard against the tyranny of the Vixy. Evidently, his power was declining. The councillors resisted him, the common people almost defiantly. A weaver, to whom he was indebted for thirty thousand florins' worth of goods, refused to open his shop, lest the tax should be collected

1 Dit. s. xxxvii.
2 Dit. s. xxxviii.
3 Dit. s. 343-345.
4 Dit. s. 197.
on his merchandise. The Duke confiscated his debt, as the mercer had foreseen; but this, being a pecunary sacrifice, seemed preferable to acquiescence in a measure so vague and so boundless that it might easily absorb the whole property of the country.

No man saluted the governor as he passed through the streets. Hardly an attempt was made by the people to disguise their abhorrence of his person. Alva, on his side, gave daily exhibitions of ungovernable fury. At a council held on 25th September 1571, he stated that the King had ordered the immediate enforcement of the edict. Viglius observed that there were many objections to its form. He also stoutly denied that the estates had ever given their consent. Alva fiercely asked the President if he had not himself once maintained that the consent had been granted. Viglius replied that he had never made such an assertion. He had mentioned the conditions and the implied promises on the part of government, by which a partial consent had been extorted. He never could have said that the consent had been accorded, for he had never believed that it could be obtained. He had not proceeded far in his argument when he was interrupted by the Duke — "But you said so, you said so, you said so," cried the exasperated Governor, in a towering passion, repeating many times this flat contradiction to the President's statements. Viglius firmly stood his ground. Alva loudly denounced him for the little respect he had manifested for his authority. He had hitherto done the President good offices, he said, with his Majesty, but certainly should not feel justified in concealing his recent and very unhandsome conduct.

Viglius replied that he had always reverently cherished the Governor, and had endeavoured to merit his favour by diligent obsequiousness. He was bound by his oath, however, to utter in council that which comported with his own sentiments and his Majesty's interests. He had done this heretofore in presence of Emperors, Kings, Queens, and Regents, and they had not taken offence. He did not, at this hour, tremble for his gray head, and hoped his Majesty would grant him a hearing before condemnation. The firm attitude of the President increased the irritation of the Viceroy. Observing that he knew the proper means of enforcing his authority, he dismissed the meeting. Immediately afterwards, he received the visits of his son, Don Frederic of Vargas, and other familiars. To these he recounted the scene which had taken place, raving the while so ferociously against Viglius as to induce the supposition that something serious was intended against him. The report flew from mouth to mouth. The affair became the town talk, so that, in the words of the President, it was soon discussed by every barber and old woman in Brusela. His friends became alarmed for his safety, while, at the same time, the citizens rejoiced that their cause had found so powerful an advocate. Nothing, however, came of these threats and these explosions. On the contrary, shortly afterwards the Duke gave orders that the tenth penny should be remitted upon four great articles—corn, meat, wine, and beer. It was also not to be levied upon raw materials, used in manufactures. Certainly, these were very important concessions. Still the constitutional objections remained. Alva could not be made to understand why the alcabala, which was raised without difficulty in the little town of Alva, should encounter such fierce opposition in the Netherlands. The estates, he informed the King, made a great deal of trouble. They withheld their consent at command of their satrap. The motive which influenced the leading men was not the interest of factories or fisheries, but the fear that for the future they might not be able to dictate the law to

1 Letter of Comte de Bergh to Prince of Orange in Arch. et Correspond. de la Maison d'Oran. Nass., iii. 409, 410. 2 Ibid. 3 Viglii Com., etc., a. xiv. xlvii.

4 Ibid., a. xlvi. 5 Ibid. 6 Arch. de la Maison d'Oran. 7 Ibid. 8 See Bor, v. 345-348. 9 Ibid.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

agent of the conspiracy to Madrid, listened to his disclosures attentively, and, without absolutely committing himself by direct promises, dismissed him with many expressions of encouragement.

On the 12th of July 1571, Philip wrote to the Duke of Alva, giving an account of his interview with Roberto Ridolfi. The envoy, after relating the sufferings of the Queen of Scotland, had laid before him a plan for her liberation. If the Spanish monarch were willing to assist the Duke of Norfolk and his friends, it would be easy to put upon Mary's head the crown of England. She was then to intermarry with Norfolk. The kingdom of England was again to acknowledge the authority of Rome, and the Catholic religion to be everywhere restored. The most favourable moment for the execution of the plan would be in August or September. As Queen Elizabeth would at that season quit London for the country, an opportunity would be easily found for seizing and murdering her. Pius V., to whom Ridolfi had opened the whole matter, highly approved the scheme, and warmly urged Philip's co-operation. Poor and ruined as he was himself, the Pope protested that he was ready to sell his chalices, and even his own vestments, to provide funds for the cause. Philip had replied that few words were necessary to persuade him. His desire to see the enterprise succeed was extreme, notwithstanding the difficulties by which it was surrounded. He would reflect earnestly upon the subject, in the hope that God, whose cause it was, would enlighten and assist him. Thus much he had stated to Ridolfi, but he had informed his council afterwards that he was determined to carry out the scheme by certain means of which the Duke would soon be informed. The end proposed was to kill or to capture Elizabeth, to set at liberty the Queen of Scotland, and to put upon her head the crown of general, sin descerder a cosa particular, mas de que, siendo necesario, aunque estava muy pobre y gastado, pondria hasta los calzados y su propia veste.'—Correspondance de Philippe II, 1088.
England. In this enterprise he instructed the Duke of Alva secretly to assist, without however resorting to open hostilities in his own name or in that of his sovereign. He desired to be informed how many Spaniards the Duke could put at the disposition of the conspirators. They had asked for six thousand arquebusiers for England, two thousand for Scotland, two thousand for Ireland. Besides these troops, the Viceroy was directed to provide immediately four thousand arquebusiers and two thousand corslets. For the expenses of the enterprise Philip would immediately remit two hundred thousand crowns. Alva was instructed to keep the affair a profound secret from his councillors. Even Hopper at Madrid knew nothing of the matter, while the King had only expressed himself in general terms to the nuncio and to Ridolfi, then already on his way to the Netherlands. The King concluded his letter by saying, that from what he had now written with his own hand, the Duke could infer how much he had this affair at heart. It was unnecessary for him to say more, persuaded as he was that the Duke would take as profound an interest in it as himself. Alva perceived all the rashness of the scheme, and felt how impossible it would be for him to comply with Philip’s orders. To send an army from the Netherlands into England for the purpose of dethroning and killing a most popular sovereign, and at the same time to preserve the most amicable relations with the country, was rather a desperate undertaking. A force of ten thousand Spaniards, under Chiappin Vitelli, and other favourite officers of the Duke, would hardly prove a trifle to be overlooked, nor would their operations be susceptible of very friendly explanations. The Governor therefore assured Philip that he “highly applauded his master for his plot. He could not help render-

1 The title of Viceroy, occasionally given to the Duke, is, of course, not strictly correct—the Netherlands not constituting a kingdom.
2 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1088.
3 Ibid., ii. 1041.
4 Yo no puedo dexar de dar le (a Dios) infinitas gracias que me haya hecho vassallo de tal príncipe, y alabar mucho la resolucion que V. M. ha tomado.”—Ibid.
5 “El duque tengo le por fisco y de poco animo.”—Ibid.
6 Ibid., ii. 1043.
General. Alva complained, not unreasonably, of the contradictory demands to which he was subjected. He was to cause no rupture with England, yet he was to send succour to an imprisoned traitor; he was to keep all his operations secret from his council, yet he was to send all his army out of the country, and to organise an expensive campaign. He sneered at the flippancy of Ridolfi, who imagined that it was the work of a moment to seize the Queen of England, to liberate the Queen of Scotland, to take possession of the Tower of London, and to burn the fleet in the Thames. "Were your Majesty and the Queen of England acting together," he observed, "it would be impossible to execute the plan proposed by Ridolfi." The chief danger to be apprehended was from France and Germany. Were those countries not to interfere, he would undertake to make Philip sovereign of England before the winter. Their opposition, however, was sufficient to make the enterprise not only difficult, but impossible. He begged his master not to be precipitate in the most important affair which had been negotiated by man since Christ came upon earth. Nothing less, he said, than the existence of the Christian faith was at stake, for, should his Majesty fail in this undertaking, not one stone of the ancient religion would be left upon another. He again warned the King of the contemptible character of Ridolfi, who had spoken of the affair so freely that it was a common subject of discussion on the Bourse at Antwerp, and he reiterated in all his letters his distrust of the parties prominently engaged in the transaction.

Such was the general tenor of the long despatches exchanged between the King and the Duke of Alva upon this iniquitous scheme. The Duke shewed himself reluctant throughout the whole affair, although he certainly never opposed his master's project by any arguments founded upon good faith, Christian charity, or the sense of honour. To kill the Queen of England, subvert the laws of her realm, burn her fleets, and butcher her subjects, while the mask of amity and entire consideration was sedulously preserved—all these projects were admitted to be strictly meritorious in themselves, although objections were taken as to the time and mode of execution.

Alva never positively refused to accept his share in the enterprise, but he took care not to lift his finger till the catastrophe in England had made all attempts futile. Philip, on the other hand, never positively withdrew from the conspiracy, but, after an infinite deal of writing and intriguing, concluded by leaving the whole affair in the hands of Alva. The only sufferer for Philip's participation in the plot was the Spanish envoy at London, Don Guerau de Espes. This gentleman was formally dismissed by Queen Elizabeth, for having given treacherous and hostile advice to the Duke of Alva and to Philip, but her Majesty at the same time expressed the most profound consideration for her brother of Spain.

Towards the close of the same year, however (December 1571), Alva sent two other Italian assassins to England, bribed by the promise of vast rewards, to attempt the life of Elizabeth, quietly, by poison or otherwise. The envoy, Mondoucet, in apprising the French monarch of this scheme, added that the Duke was so ulcerated and annoyed by the discovery of the previous enterprise, that nothing could exceed his rage. These ruffians were not destined to success, but the attempts of the Duke upon the Queen's life were renewed from time to time. Eighteen months later (August 1573), two Scotchmen, pensioners of Philip, came from Spain, with secret orders to conquenda en toda la Cristianidad piedra sobre piedra en elia."—Ibid.

---

1 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1045.
2 Ibid.
3 Ibid.
4 Por amor de Dios pido a V. M. que su gran celo no le lleve a errar el mayor negocio de Dios que se ha tratado después que el vino a la tierra, porque no pade menos que acabarse su religion, que errandole V. M. no
suit with Alva. They had accordingly much negotiation with the Duke and his secretary, Albornoz. They boasted that they could easily capture Elizabeth, but said that the King's purpose was to kill her. The plan, wrote Monclouest, was the same as it had been before, namely, to murder the Queen of England, and to give her crown to Mary of Scotland, who would thus be in their power, and whose son was to be seized, and bestowed in marriage in such a way as to make them perpetual masters of both kingdoms.

It does not belong to this history to discuss the merits, nor to narrate the fortunes, of that bickering and fruitless alliance which had been entered into at this period by Philip with Venice and the Holy See against the Turk. The revolt of Granada had at last, after a two years' struggle, been subdued, and the remnants of the romantic race which had once swayed the Peninsula been swept into slavery. The Moors had sustained the unequal conflict with a constancy not to have been expected of so gentle a people. "If a nation meek as lambs could resist so bravely," said the Prince of Orange, "what ought not to be expected of a hardy people like the Netherlands?" Don John of Austria having concluded a series of somewhat inglorious forays against women, children, and bedridden old men in Andalusia and Granada, had arrived, in August of this year, at Naples, to take command of the combined fleet in the Levant. The battle of Lepanto had been fought, but the quarrelsome and contradictory conduct of the allies had rendered the splendid victory as barren as the waves upon which it had been won. It was no less true, however, that the blunders of the infidels had previously enabled Philip to extricate himself with better success from the dangers of the Moorish revolt than might have been his fortune. Had the rebels succeeded in holding Granada and the mountains of Andalusia, and had they been supported, as they had a right to expect, by the forces of the Sultan, a different aspect might have been given to the conflict, and one far less triumphant for Spain. Had a prince of vigorous ambition and comprehensive policy governed at that moment the Turkish empire, it would have cost Philip a serious struggle to maintain himself in his hereditary dominions. While he was plotting against the life and throne of Elizabeth, he might have had cause to tremble for his own. Fortunately, however, for his Catholic Majesty, Selim was satisfied to secure himself in the possession of the Isle of Venus, with its fruitful vineyards. "To shed the blood" of Cyprian vines, in which he was so enthusiastic a connoisseur, was to him a more exhilarating occupation than to pursue, amid carnage and hardships, the splendid dream of a re-established Eastern caliphate.

On the 26th Sept. 1571, a commission of Governor-General of the Netherlands was at last issued to John de la Cerda, Duke of Medina Celi, in compliance with the Duke's repeated requests, and perhaps not entirely satisfied with the recent course of events in the provinces, had at last, after great hesitation, consented to Alva's resignation. His successor, however, was not immediately to take his departure, and in the meantime the Duke was instructed to persevere in his faithful services. These services had, for the present, reduced themselves to a perpetual and not very triumphant altercation with his council, with the estates, and with the people, on the subject of his abominable tax. He was entirely alone. They who had stood unsflinchingly at his side when the only business of the administration was to burn heretics, turned their backs upon him now that he had engaged in this desperate con-

---

1 "Mon maistre a bien eu moyen de faire prisonnier la roynne d'Angleterre, mais il la voulloit tuer," etc., etc.—Correspondance Charles IX. et Monclouest. Com. Roy. de l'Hist. iv. 349, sqq.

2 Ibid.

3 Archives et Correspondance, lib. 382.

4 De Thou, liv. i. t. vi. 223, et seq. Cabrera, ix. xxiii. 678, et seq.


6 De Thou, vi. l. 50. Cabrera, lib. ix. etc.

7 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1055.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

The conflict with the whole money power of the country. The King was far from cordial in his support, the councillors much too crafty to retain their hold upon the wheel, to which they had only attached themselves in its ascent. Viglius and Berlaymont, Noircarmes and Aerschot, opposed and almost defied the man they now thought sinking, and kept the King constantly informed of the vast distress which the financial measures of the Duke were causing.1

Quite at the close of the year, an elaborate petition from the estates of Brabant was read before the State Council.2 It contained a strong remonstrance against the tenth penny. Its repeal was strongly urged, upon the ground that its collection would involve the country in universal ruin. Upon this, Alva burst forth in one of the violent explosions of rage to which he was subject. The prosperity of the Netherlands, he protested, was not dearer to the inhabitants than to himself. He swore by the cross, and by the most holy of holies, preserved in the church of Saint Gudule, that had he been but a private individual, living in Spain, he would, out of the love he bore the provinces, have rushed to their defence had their safety been endangered.3 He felt therefore deeply wounded that malevolent persons should thus insinuate that he had even wished to injure the country, or to exercise tyranny over its citizens. The tenth penny, he continued, was necessary to the defence of the land, and was much preferable to quotas. It was highly improper that every man in the rubbish should know how much was contributed, because each individual, learning the gross amount, would imagine that he had paid it all himself.4

In conclusion, he observed that, broken in health and stricken in years as he felt himself, he was now most anxious to return, and was daily looking with eagerness for the arrival of the Duke of Medina Celi.5

During the course of this same year, the Prince of Orange had been continuing his preparations. He had sent his agents to every place where a hope was held out to him of obtaining support. Money was what he was naturally most anxious to obtain from individuals; open and warlike assistance what he demanded from governments. His funds, little by little, were increasing, owing to the generosity of many obscure persons, and to the daring exploits of the beggars of the sea. His mission, however, to the northern courts had failed. His envoys had been received in Sweden and Denmark with barren courtesy.6 The Duke of Alva, on the other hand, never alluded to the Prince but with contempt: knowing not that the ruined outlaw was slowly undermining the very ground beneath the monarch's feet; dreaming not that the feeble strokes which he despised were the opening blows of a century's conflict; foreseeing not that long before its close the chastised province was to expand into a great republic, and that the name of the outlaw was to become almost divine.

Granvelle had already recommended that the young Count de Buren should be endowed with certain lands in Spain, in exchange for his hereditary estates, in order that the name and fame of the rebel William should be for ever extinguished in the Netherlands.7 With the same view, a new sentence against the Prince of Orange was now proposed by the Viceroy. This was to execute him solemnly in effigy, to drag his escutcheon through the streets at the tails of horses, and after having broken it in pieces, and thus cancelled his armorial bearings, to declare him and his descendants, ignoble, infamous, and incapable of holding property or estates.8 Could a leaf or two of future history have been unrolled to King, Cardinal, and Governor, they might have found the destined fortune of the illustrious rebel's house not exactly in accord-

1 Correspondance de Philippe II, li, 1806.
2 Letter from Bishop of Ypres to Philip, 1678.
3 1674 Reports drawn up by Don Francisco de Alava on the state of the provinces, 1697.
4 Letters from Bishops of Ypres, Ghent, Bruges.
5 Ibid., 1807.
6 Ibid., 1809.
7 Ibid., 1810.
8 Ibid., 1811.
arance with the plan of summary ex-
tinction thus laid down.

Not discouraged, the Prince con-
tinued to send his emissaries in every
direction. Diedrich Sonoy, his most
trustworthy agent, who had been chief
of the legation to the Northern
Courts, was now actively canvassing
the governments and peoples of Ger-
many with the same object. Several
remarkable papers from the hand of
Orange were used upon this service.
A letter, drawn up and signed by his
own hand, recited, in brief and strik-
ing language, the history of his cam-
paign in 1683, and of his subsequent
efforts in the sacred cause. It was
now, necessary, he said, that others
besides himself should partake of his
sacrifices. This he stated plainly and
eloquenty. The document was in
truth a letter asking arms for liberty.
"For although all things," said the
Prince, "are in the hand of God, and
although He has created all things out
of nought, yet hath He granted to
different men different means, whereby,
as with various instruments, He
accomplishes His almighty purposes.
Thereto hath He endowed some with
strength of body, others with worldly
wealth, others with still different gifts,
all of which are to be used by their
possessors to His honour and glory, if
they wish not to incur the curse of
the unworthy steward, who buried his
talent in the earth. . . . . Now ye
may easily see," he continued, "that
the Prince cannot carry out this great
work alone, having lost land, people,
and goods, and having already em-
ployed in the cause all which had re-
mained to him, besides incurring heavy
obligations in addition."

Similar instructions were given to
other agents, and a paper called the
Harangue, drawn up according to his
suggestions, was also extensively cir-
culated. This document is important
to all who are interested in his history
and character. He had not before
issued a missive so stamped with the
warm, religious impress of the reform-
ing party. Sadly, but without de-
spondency, the Harangue recalled the
misfortunes of the past, and depicted
the gloom of the present. Earnestly,
but not fanatically, it stimulated hope
and solicited aid for the future.
"Although the appeals made to the
Prince," so ran a part of the docu-
ment, "be of diverse natures, and
various in their recommendations, yet
do they all tend to the advancement
of God's glory, and to the liberation
of the fatherland. This it is which
enables him, and those who think with
him, to endure hunger, thirst, cold,
heat, and all the misfortunes which
Heaven may send. . . . . Our ene-
mies spare neither their money nor
their labour; will ye be colder and
duller than your foes? Let, then, each
church congregation set an example to
the others. We read that King Saul,
when he would liberate the men of
Jabez from the hands of Nahad, the
Ammonite, hewed a yoke of oxen in
pieces, and sent them as tokens over
all Israel, saying, 'Ye who will not
follow Saul and Samuel, with them
shall be dealt even as with these oxen.
And the fear of the Lord came upon
the people, they came forth, and the
men of Jabez were delivered.' Ye
have here the same warning, look to
it, watch well ye that despise it, lest
the wrath of God, which the men
of Israel by their speedy obedience
escaped, descend upon your heads.
. . . . . Ye may say that ye are ba-
nished men. 'Tis true: but thereby
are ye not stripped of all faculty of
rendering service; moreover, your as-
sistance is asked for one who will re-
store ye to your homes. Ye may say
that ye have been robbed of all your
goods; yet many of you have still
something remaining, and of that little
ye should contribute, each his mite.
Ye say that you have given much
already. 'Tis true: but the enemy is
again in the field, fierce for your sub-
jugation, sustained by the largess of
his supporters. Will ye be less coura-
geous, less generous, than your foes?"

1 Bor, vi. 362.
2 See it in Bor, vi. 362, 503.
3 Bor, ubi sup.
4 See the Harangue in Bor, vi. 363-365.
5 Harangue of the Commissioners of my Lord the Prince of Orange, ubi sup.
These urgent appeals did not remain unheard. The strength of the Prince was slowly but steadily increasing. Meanwhile the abhorrence with which Alva was universally regarded had nearly reached to frenzy. In the beginning of the year 1572, Don Francisco de Alava, Philip's ambassador in France, visited Brussels.\(^1\) He had already been enlightened as to the consequences of the Duke's course by the immense immigration of Netherland refugees to France, which he had witnessed with his own eyes. On his journey towards Brussels, he had been met near Cambray by Noircarmes. Even that "cruel animal," as Hoogstraaten had called him, the butcher of Tournay and Valenciennes, had at last been roused to alarm, if not to pity, by the sufferings of the country.

"The Duke will never disburse his mind of this filthy tenth penny,"\(^2\) said he to Alava. He sprang from his chair with great emotion as the ambassador alluded to the flight of merchants and artisans from the provinces. "Señor Don Francisco," cried he, "there are ten thousand more who are on the point of leaving the country, if the Governor does not pause in his career. God grant that no disaster arise beyond human power to remedy!"\(^3\)

The ambassador arrived in Brussels, and took up his lodgings in the palace. Here he found the Duke just recovering from a fit of the gout, in a state of mind sufficiently savage. He became much excited as Don Francisco began to speak of the emigration, and he assured him that there was gross deception on the subject.\(^4\) The envoy replied that he could not be mistaken, for it was a matter which, so to speak, he had 'touched with his own fingers, and seen with his own eyes. The Duke, persisting that Don Francisco had been abused and misinformed, turned the conversation to other topics. Next day the ambassador received visits from Berlaymont and his son, the Seigneur de Hierges. He was taken aside by each of them, separately. "Thank God, you have come hither," said they, in nearly the same words, "that you may fully comprehend the condition of the provinces, and without delay admonish his Majesty of the impending danger."\(^5\) All his visitors expressed the same sentiments. Don Frederic of Toledo furnished the only exception, assuring the envoy that his father's financial measures were opposed by Noircarmes and others, only because it deprived them of their occupation and their influence.\(^6\) This dutiful language, however, was to be expected in one of whom Secretary Albormaz had written, that he was the greatest comfort to his father, and the most divine genius ever known.\(^7\) It was unfortunately corroborated by no other inhabitant of the country. On the third day, Don Francisco went to take his leave. The Duke begged him to inform his Majesty of the impatience with which he was expecting the arrival of his successor.\(^8\) He then informed his guest that they had already begun to collect the tenth penny in Brabant, the most obstinate of all the provinces. "What do you say to that, Don Francisco?" he cried, with exultation. Alava replied that he thought, none the less, that the tax would encounter many obstacles, and begged him earnestly to reflect. He assured him, moreover, that he should, without reserve, express his opinions freely to the King. The Duke used the same language which Don Frederic had held, concerning the motives of those who opposed the tax. "It may be so," said Don Francisco, "but at any rate all have agreed to sing to the same tune." A little startled, the Duke rejoined, "Do you doubt that the cities will keep their promises? Depend upon it, I shall find the means to compel them." "God grant it may be so," said Alava, "but in my poor judgment you will have need of all your prudence and of all your authority."\(^9\)

---

\(^{1}\) Correspondance de Philippe II., II. 1073, 1074.

\(^{2}\) "Desta negra decima."—Ibid., II. 1073.

\(^{3}\) Ibid.

\(^{4}\) Ibid.

\(^{5}\) Ibid.

\(^{6}\) Ibid.

\(^{7}\) "El mas divino Ingenio."—Letter to Cayas. Correspondance de Philippe II., II. 886.

\(^{8}\) Ibid. 1072.

\(^{9}\) Correspondance de Philippe II., II. 1073.
The ambassador did not wait till he could communicate with his sovereign by word of mouth. He forwarded to Spain an ample account of his observations and deductions. He painted to Philip in lively colours the hatred entertained by all men for the Duke. The whole nation, he assured his Majesty, united in one cry, "Let him begone, let him begone, let him begone!" As for the imposition of the tenth penny, that, in the opinion of Don Francis, was utterly impossible. He, moreover, warned his Majesty that Alva was busy in forming secret alliances with the Catholic princes of Europe, which would necessarily lead to defensive leagues among the Protestants.

While thus, during the earlier part of the year 1572, the Prince of Orange, discouraged by no defeat, was indefatigable in his exertions to maintain the cause of liberty, and while at the same time the most stanch supporters of arbitrary power were unanimous in denouncing to Philip the insane conduct of his Vicerey, the letters of Alva himself were naturally full of complaints and expositions. It was in vain, he said, for him to look for a confidential councillor, now that matters which he had wished to keep so profoundly secret that the very earth should not hear of them, had been proclaimed aloud above the tiles of every housetop. Nevertheless, he would be cut into little pieces but his Majesty should be obeyed, while he remained alive to enforce the royal commands. There were none who had been ever faithful but Berlaymont, he said, and even he had been neutral in the aifair of the tax. He had rendered therein neither good nor bad offices, but, as his Majesty was aware, Berlaymont was entirely ignorant of business, and "knew nothing more than to be a good fellow." That being the case, he recommended Hierges, son of the "good fellow," as a proper person to be governor of Friesland.

The deputations appointed by the different provinces to confer personally with the King, received a reprimand upon their arrival, for having dared to come to Spain without permission. Further punishment, however, than this rebuke was not inflicted. They were assured that the King was highly displeased with their venturing to bring remonstrances against the tax, but they were comforted with the assurance that his Majesty would take the subject of their petition into consideration. Thus, the expectations of Alva were disappointed, for the tenth penny was not formally confirmed: and the hopes of the provinces frustrated, because it was not distinctly disavowed.

Matters had reached another crisis in the provinces. "Had we money now," wrote the Prince of Orange, "we should, with the help of God, hope to effect something. This is a time when, with even small sums, more can be effected than at other seasons with ample funds." The citizens were in open revolt against the tax. In order that the tenth penny should not be levied upon every sale of goods, the natural but desperate remedy was adopted—no goods were sold at all. Not only the wholesale commerce of the provinces was suspended, but the minute and indispensable traffic of daily, life was entirely at a stand. The shops were all shut. "The brewers," says a contemporary, "refused to brew, the bakers to bake, the tapsters to tap." Multitudes, thrown entirely out of employment, and wholly dependent upon charity, swarmed in every city. The soldiery, furious for their pay, which Alva had for many months neglected to furnish, grew daily more insolent; the citizens, maddened by outrage and hardened by despair,
a man were to draw the victory for these experiments... and... the arms of the army... to... was to... when... The battalion... covered... without... the... to... at... the... in... of the... us... to... The... of... the... was the... and... to... the... no... of... the... to... the... by... the... the... that... the... the... by... the... to... by... the... the... to... to... to... on... by... to... t...
Alva was the leading object of all these freebooters, and they were usually furnished by the Prince of Orange, in his capacity of sovereign, with letters of marque for that purpose. The Prince, indeed, did his utmost to control and correct an evil which had inevitably grown out of the horrors of the time. His Admiral, William de la Marck, was, however, incapable of comprehending the lofty purposes of his superior. A wild, sanguinary, licentious noble, wearing his hair and beard unshorn, according to ancient Batavian custom, until the death of his relative, Egmont, should have been expiated, a worthy descendant of the Wild Boar of Ardenne, this hirurage and savage corsair seemed an embodiment of vengeance. He had sworn to wreak vengeance upon Alva and upon Poverty the deep revenge owed to them by the Netherlands nobility; and in the cruelties afterwards practised by him upon monks and priests, the Blood Council learned that their example had made at least one ripe scholar among the rebels. He was lying, at this epoch, with his fleet on the southern coast of England, from which advantageous position he was now to be ejected in a summary manner.

The negotiations between the Duke of Alva and Queen Elizabeth had already assumed an amicable tone, and were fast ripening to an adjustment.

...extorques et iuops ex ilium metuentes, in naves se conjecrantes, alisque complices obvias per vim, nacti, auto numero, prae- dabundi oceano et per oram maritimam vagantur. In hanc multitudinem Aurasontes, quantum jus et regimen aberrat, speciem imperii retinebat, distribuitis per codicillos potestatibus."—Grotti Annal. lib. ii. 49.

1 Vide Bor. vi. 365. Y. Meteren, 64. Hoofd, 216, seq.—See also Van Wyn of Wagenar, vi. 66; Van der Vynckt, ii. 127; Groti Ann., lib. ii. 49; Uilca, Comment., i. 60.

2 The practice of effecting marine insurances took a great and rapid extension from these and similar pirates. Renom de France M8. (ii. 12) supposes the system to have been invented by the Antwerp merchants at this epoch. The custom, however, was doubtless established at an earlier period in Flanders, England, Italy, and Spain. The statute 43 Eliz. c. 12, on the subject, speaks of the immemorial usage among merchants, both English and foreign, to procure insurance on ships and goods. The Duke of Alva, at this time, after consultation with the merchants, drew up an edict regulating contracts of assurance; stipulating that the sum insured should be less than the just and common value of the property insured, one-tenth at least remaining at the risk of the insurer, and prescribing the forms for the policies. A public officer was appointed to keep register of these contracts, which, without such registration, were to be invalid. Masters, pilots, and sailors were not allowed to insure their wages, or anything belonging to them. Fraud on the part of the insurers or the insured was punished with death and confiscation. These contracts were, however, entirely insufficient to protect vessels, which were plundered daily by "oe casale de corsaires," which infested every sea and bay. —Renom de France M8. ii. c. 12.

3 Bor. vi. 365, 366.

4 Probably Dover. See in particular Van Wyn op Wag. vi. 77; also Meteren, 63.

5 Bor. ubi sup. Wagenar, vi. 340, seq.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

In the Zeeland, and on Tuesday, the 1st of April, having abandoned their original design, they dropped down towards Zeebrugge, and entered the broad river of the river Meuse. Between the town of Ertie, upon the southern bank of the estuary, and Maasslanden, which was a league distant, upon the northern side, the squadron suddenly appeared at about two o'clock of an April afternoon, to the great astonishment of the inhabitants of both places. It seemed too large a fleet to be a mere collection of trading vessels, nor did they appear to be Spanish ships. Peter Koppelstok, a sagacious ferryman, informed the passengers whom he happened to be conveying across the river, that the strangers were evidently the water beggars. The dread

dreadful name filled his bearers with consternation, and they became eager to escape from so perilous a vicinity. Having duly landed his customers, however, who hastened to spread the news of the impending invasion, and to prepare for defense or flight, the great ferryman, who was secretly favorable to the cause of liberty, rowed boldly out to inquire the destination and purposes of the fleet.

The vessel which he first hailed was commanded by William de Blois, son of Treslong. This adventurer was a noble, whose brother had been executed by the Duke of Alva in 1568, and himself fought by the side of Count Louis at Jemmingen, and, although covered with wounds, had the honor of being one of the few who escaped alive from that terrible carnage. During the intervening period he had become one of the most famous rebels of the waal, and he always had been well known in Bril, where his father had been governor for the King. He at once recognized Koppelstok, and hastened with him on board the Admiral's ship, assuring De la Mark that the ferryman was exactly the man for their purpose. It was absolutely necessary that a landing should be effected, for the people were without the necessaries of life. Captain Martin Brand had visited the ship of Adam van Haren, as soon as they had dropped anchor in the Meuse, begging for food. "I gave him a cheese," said Adam, afterwards relating the occurrence, "and assured him that it was the last article of food to be found in the ship." The other vessels were equally destitute. Under the circumstances, it was necessary to attempt a landing. Treslong, therefore, who was really the hero of this memorable adventure, persuaded De la Mark to send a message to the city of Brill, demanding its surrender. This was a bold summons to be made by a handful of men, three or four hundred at most, who were both metaphorically and literally beggars. The city of Brill was not populous, but it was well walled and fortified. It was, moreover, a most commodious port. Treslong gave his signet ring to the fisherman, Koppelstok, and ordered him, thus accredited as an envoy, to carry their summons to the magistracy. Koppelstok, nothing loath, instantly rowed ashore, pushed through the crowd of inhabitants, who overwhelmed him with questions, and made his appearance in the town-house before the assembled magistrates. He informed them that he had been sent by the Admiral of the fleet and by Treslong, who was well known to them, to demand that two commissioners should be sent out on the part of the city to confer with the patriots. He was bidden, he said, to give assurance that the deputies would be courteously treated. The only object of those who had sent him was to free the land from the tenth penny, and to overthrow the tyranny of Alva and his Spaniards. Hereupon

1 B. t. 64. H. t. 214. H. t. 216, 217.
2 B. t. 64. Wagen. 9. p. 280.
3 H. t. 216. H. t. 217.
4 B. t. 56. Wagen. 9. p. 280.
Capture of Brill.

he was asked by the magistrates, how large a force De la Marck had under his command. To this question the ferryman carelessly replied, that there might be some five thousand in all. This enormous falsehood produced its effect upon the magistrates. There was now no longer any inclination to resist the invaders; the only question discussed being whether to treat with them or to fly. On the whole, it was decided to do both. With some difficulty, two deputies were found sufficiently valiant to go forth to negotiate with the beggars, while in their absence most of the leading burghers and functionaries made their preparations for flight. The envoys were assured by De la Marck and Treelon that no injury was intended to the citizens or to private property, but that the overthrow of Alva’s government was to be instantly accomplished. Two hours were given to the magistrates in which to decide whether or not they would surrender the town, and accept the authority of De la Marck as Admiral of the Prince of Orange. They employed the two hours thus granted in making an ignominious escape. Their example was followed by most of the townspeople. When the invaders, at the expiration of the specified term, appeared under the walls of the city, they found a few inhabitants of the lower class gazing at them from above, but received no official communication from any source.

The whole rebel force was now divided into two parties, one of which, under Treelon, made an attack upon the southern gate, while the other, commanded by the Admiral, advanced upon the northern. Treelon after a short struggle succeeded in forcing his entrance, and arrested, in doing so, the governor of the city, just taking his departure. De la Marck and his men made a bonfire at the northern gate, and then battered down the half-burned portal with the end of an old mast. Thus rudely and rapidly did the Netherland patriots conduct their first successful siege. The two parties, not more perhaps than two hundred and fifty men in all, met before sunset in the centre of the city, and the foundation of the Dutch Republic was laid. The weary spirit of freedom, so long a fugitive over earth and sea, had at last found a resting-place, which rude and even ribald hands had prepared.

The panic created by the first appearance of the fleet had been so extensive, that hardly fifty citizens had remained in the town. The rest had all escaped, with as much propriety as they could carry away. The Admiral, in the name of the Prince of Orange, as lawful stadholder of Philip, took formal possession of an almost deserted city. No indignity was offered to the inhabitants of either sex, but as soon as the conquerors were fairly established in the best houses of the place, the inclination to plunder the churches could no longer be restrained. The altars and images were all destroyed, the rich furniture and gorgeous vestments appropriated to private use. Adam van Haren appeared on his vessel’s deck attired in a magnificent high mass chasuble. Treelon thenceforth used no drinking cups in his cabin save the golden chalices of the sacrament. Unfortunately, their hatred to Popery was not confined to such demonstrations. Thirteen unfortunate monks and priests, who had been unable to effect their escape, were arrested and thrown into prison, from whence they were taken a few days later, by order of the ferocious Admiral, and executed under circumstances of great barbarity.

The news of this important exploit spread with great rapidity. Alva, surprised at the very moment of venting his rage on the butchers and grocers of Brussels, deferred this savage design in order to deal with the new difficulty. He had certainly not expected such a result from the ready compliance of Queen Elizabeth with his request. His rage was excessive; the triumph of the people, by whom he was cor-

1 Hooff, vi. 218.
2 Bor, vi, 366. Hooff, vi. 218.
3 Ibid. Hooff, Wegen,ar.
The Prince had not been extremely satisfied with the enterprise of De la Marek. He thought it premature, and doubted whether it would be practicable to hold the place, as he had not yet completed his arrangements in Germany, nor assembled the force with which he intended again to take the field. More than all, perhaps, he had little confidence in the character of his admiral. Orange was right in his estimating of De la Marek. It had not been that rover's design either to take or to hold the place; and after the descent had been made, the ships victualled, the churches plundered, the booty secured, and a few monks murdered, he had given orders for the burning of the town.

"Voor stad, door slop, door dik en duw."
and for the departure of the fleet. The urgent solicitations of Treslong, however, prevailed, with some difficulty, over De la Marché's original intentions. It is to that bold and intelligent noble, therefore, more than to any other individual, that the merit of laying this cornerstone of the Batavian commonwealth belongs. The enterprise itself was an accident; but the quick eye of Treslong saw the possibility of a permanent conquest, where his superior dreamed of nothing beyond a piratical foray.

Meantime Bosau, baffled in his attempt upon Brill, took his way towards Rotterdam. It was important that he should, at least, secure such other cities as the recent success of the rebels might cause to waver in their allegiance. He found the gates of Rotterdam closed. The authorities refused to comply with his demand to admit a garrison for the King. Prospecting perfect loyalty, the inhabitants very naturally refused to admit a band of sanguinary Spaniards to enforce their obedience. Compelled to parley, Bosau resorted to a pernicious stratagem. He requested permission for his troops to pass through the city without halting. This was granted by the magistrates, on condition that only a corporal's command should be admitted at a time. To these terms the Count assailed his hand and seal. With the admission, however, of the first detachment, a violent onset was made upon the gate by the whole Spanish army. The townspeople, not suspecting treachery, were not prepared to make effective resistance. A stout smith, confronting the invaders at the gate, almost singly, with his sledge-hammer, was stabbed to the heart by Bosau with his own hand. The soldiers having thus gained admittance, rushed through the streets, putting every man to death who offered the slightest resistance. Within a few minutes four hundred citizens were murdered. The fate of the women, abandoned now to the outrage of a brutal soldiery, was worse than death. The capture of Rotterdam is infamous for the same crimes which blacken the record of every Spanish triumph in the Netherlands.

The important town of Flushing, on the Isle of Walcheren, was first to vibrate with the patriotic impulse given by the success at Brill. The Seigneur de Herpt, a warm partisan of Orange, excites theburghers assembled in the market-place to drive the small remnant of the Spanish garrison from the city. A little later upon the same day, a considerable reinforcement arrived before the walls. The Duke had determined, although too late, to complete the fortress which had been commenced long before to control the possession of this important position at the mouth of the western Scheld. The troops who were to resume this too long intermitted work arrived just in time to witness the expulsion of their comrades. De Herpt easily persuaded the burghers that the die was cast, and that their only hope lay in a resolute resistance. The people warmly acquiesced, while a half-drunk, half-witted fellow in the crowd valiantly proposed, in consideration of a pot of beer, to ascend the ramparts and to discharge a couple of pieces of artillery at the Spanish ships. The offer was accepted, and the vagabond merrily mounting the height, discharged the guns. Strange to relate, the shot thus fired by a lunatic's hand put the invading ships to flight. A sudden panic seized the Spaniards, the whole fleet stood away at once in the direction of Middelburg, and were soon out of sight.

The next day, however, Antony of Bourgoigne, governor under Alva for the Island of Walcheren, made his appearance in Flushing. Having a high opinion of his own oratorical powers, he came with the intention of winning back with his rhetoric a city which the Spaniards had thus far been unable to reduce.

2 Hoofd, vi. 219.
3 Bor., vi. 368.
The detachment, two hundred in number, in three small vessels, set sail, accordingly from Brill for Flushing; and a wild crew they were, of reckless adventurers, under command of the bold Treslong. The expedition seemed a fierce but whimsical masquerade. Every man in the little fleet was attired in the gorgeous vestments of the plundered churches, in gold-embroidered cassocks, glittering mass-garments, or the more sombre cowls and robes of Capuchin friars. So sped the early standard-bearers of that furious liberty which had sprung from the fires in which all else for which men cherish their fatherland had been consumed. So swept that resolute but fantastic band along the placid estuaries of Zeeland, waking the stagnant waters with their wild begar songs and cries of vengeance.

That vengeance found soon a distinguished object. Pacheco, the chief engineer of Alva, who had accompanied the Duke in his march from Italy, who had since earned a world-wide reputation as the architect of the Antwerp citadel, had been just despatched in haste to Flushing to complete the fortress whose construction had been so long delayed. Too late for his work, too soon for his safety, the ill-fated engineer had arrived almost at the same moment with Treslong and his crew. He had stepped on shore, entirely ignorant of all which had transpired, expecting to be treated with the respect due to the chief commandant of the place, and to an officer high in the confidence of the Governor-General. He found himself surrounded by an indignant and threatening mob. The unfortunate Italian understood not a word of the opprobrious language addressed to him, but he easily comprehended that the authority of the Duke was overthrown. Observing De Ryk, a distinguished partisan officer and privateer of Amsterdam, whose reputation for bravery and generosity was known to him, he approached him, and drawing

1 Bor. vi. 370. Wagenaer, vi. 351. Van Wyck's Wagen, vi. 34, seq.
2 Bor. vi. 370. Hooi, vi. 224, 225.
3 Bor. vi. 370. Wagenaer, vi. 351.
a seal ring from his finger, kissed it, and handed it to the rebel chieftain. By this dumb-show he gave him to understand that he relied upon his honour for the treatment due to a gentleman. De Ryk understood the appeal, and would willingly have assured him, at least, a soldier's death, but he was powerless to do so. He arrested him, that he might be protected from the fury of the rabble; but Treslong, who now commanded in Flushing, was especially incensed against the founder of the Antwerp citadel, and felt a ferocious desire to avenge his brother's murder upon the body of his destroyer's favourite. Pacheco was condemned to be hanged upon the very day of his arrival. Having been brought forth from his prison, he begged hard but not abjectly for his life. He offered a heavy ransom, but his enemies were greedy for blood, not for money. It was, however, difficult to find an executioner. The city hangman was absent, and the prejudice of the country and the age against the vile profession had assuredly not been diminished during the five horrible years of Alva's administration. Even a condemned murderer, who lay in the town gaol, refused to accept his life in recompense for performing the office. It should never be said, he observed, that his mother had given birth to a hangman. When told, however, that the intended victim was a Spanish officer, the malefactor consented to the task with alacrity, on condition that he might afterwards kill any man who taunted him with the deed.

Arrived at the foot of the gallows, Pacheco complained bitterly of the disgraceful death designed for him. He protested loudly, that he came of a house as noble as that of Egmont or Horn, and was entitled to as honourable an execution as theirs had been. "The sword! the sword!" he frantically exclaimed, as he struggled with those who guarded him. His language was not understood, but the names of Egmont and Horn inflamed still more highly the rage of the rabble, while his cry for the sword was falsely interpreted by a rude fellow who had happened to possess himself of Pacheco's rapier, at his capture, and who now paraded himself with it at the gallows' foot. "Never fear for your sword, Señor," cried this ruffian; "your sword is safe enough, and in good hands. Up the ladder with you, Señor; you have no further use for your sword."

Pacheco, thus outraged, submitted to his fate. He mounted the ladder with a steady step, and was hanged between two other Spanish officers. So perished miserably a brave soldier, and one of the most distinguished engineers of his time; a man whose character and accomplishiments had certainly merited for him a better fate. But while we stigmatise, as it deserves, the atrocious conduct of a few Netherland partisans, we should remember who first unchained the demon of international hatred in this unhappy land; nor should it ever be forgotten that the great leader of the revolt, by word, proclamation, example, by entreaties, threats, and condign punishment, constantly rebuked, and, to a certain extent, restrained the sanguinary spirit by which some of his followers disgraced the noble cause which they had espoused.

Treslong did not long remain in command at Flushing. An officer,

---

1 Hoofd, who afterwards received the ring as a present from Siman de Ryk, son of the officer to whom it was given by the unfortunate Don Pedro Pacheco.
2 Bor. vi. 370.
3 Ibid. Hoofd, vi. 235. Wagenaer, vi. 332. It is erroneously stated by Bentivoglio, lib. v. 92, and Cabrera, lib. ix. 705, that Pacheco was beheaded. Both these writers follow Mendoza. Tassis differs from all other historians. "Sed suspensum sublime pedibus visa privavunt."—J. B. de Tassis, Comment. de Tumultibus Belgicis.

xxvi. 149. There is no doubt, however, that the unfortunate gentleman was hanged by the neck, and not by the legs.
4 It was said, in extenuation of the barbarous punishment which was inflicted upon him, that a paper had been found upon his person, containing a list of a large number of persons in the Netherlands whom the Duke of Alva had doomed to immediate execution. The fact is stated in the "Petition to the King."—Bor. vi. 348-369. Hoofd, vi. 235. Meteor, 71.—Compare Wagenaer, vi. 334, 338; Van Wyn op Wagou, vi. 99, 96.
high in the confidence of the Prince, Jerome van 't Zerait, now arrived at Flushing, with a commission to be Lieutenant-Governor over the whole isle of Walcheren. He was attended by a small band of French infantry, while at nearly the same time the garrison was further strengthened by the arrival of a large number of volunteers from England. 1

CHAPTER VII.

Municipal revolution throughout Holland and Zealand—Characteristics of the movement in various places—Sonoy commissioned by Orange as governor of North Holland—Theory of the provisional government—Instructions of the Prince to his officers—Oath prescribed—Clause of toleration—Surprise of Mons by Count Louis—Exertions of Antony Oliver—Details of the capture—Assembly of the citizens—Speeches of Genlia and of Count Louis—Effect of the various movements upon Alva—Don Frederic ordered to invest Mons—The Duke's impatience to retire—Arrival of Medina Conil—His narrow escape—Capture of the Liébou fleet—Affectation of cordiality between Alva and Medina—Concessions by King and Viceroy on the subject of the tenth penny—Estates of Holland assembled, by summons of Orange, at Dort—Appeals from the Prince to this congress for funds to pay his newly levied army—Theory of the provisional States' assembly—Source and nature of its authority—Speech of St Aldegonde—Liberality of the estates and the provinces—Pledges exchanged between the Prince's representative and the Congress—Commission to De la Marck ratified—Virtual dictatorship of Orange—Limitation of his power by his own act—Count Louis at Mons—Reinforcements led from France by Genlia—Resignation of that officer—His total defeat—Orange again in the field—Boermond taken—Excesses of the patriot army—Proclamation of Orange, commanding respect to all personal and religious rights—His reply to the Emperor's summons—His progress in the Netherland—Hopes entertained from France—Reinforcements under Coligny promised to Orange by Charles IX.—The Massacre of St Bartholomew—The event characterised—Effect in England, in Rome, and in other parts of Europe—Excessive hilarity of Philip—Extravagant eulogium bestowed by him upon Charles IX.—Order sent by Philip to put all French prisoners in the Netherlands to death—Secret correspondence of Charles IX. with his envoy in the Netherlands—Exultation of the Spaniards before Mons—Alva urges by the French envoy, according to his master's commands, to put all the Frenchmen in Mons, and those already captured, to death—Effect of the massacre upon the Prince of Orange—Alva and Medina in the camp before Mons—Hopelessness of the Prince's scheme to obtain battle from Alva—Romero's encomium—Narrow escape of the Prince—Mutiny and dissolution of his army—His return to Holland—His steadfastness—Desperate position of Count Louis in Mons—Sentiments of Alva—Capitulation of Mons—Courteous reception of Count Louis by the Spanish generals—Hypercry of these demonstrations—Nature of the Mons capitulation—Horrible violation of its terms—Noircarmes at Mons—Establishment of a Blood Council in the city—Wholesale executions—Crueity and cupiditiy of Noircarmes—Late discovery of the archives of these crimes—Return of the revolted cities of Brabant and Flanders to obedience—Back of Mechlin by the Spaniards—Details of that event.

The example thus set by Brill and Flushing was rapidly followed. The first half of the year 1572 was distinguished by a series of triumphs rendered still more remarkable by the reverses which followed at its close. Of a sudden, almost as it were by accident, a small but important seaport, the object for which the Prince had so long been hoping, was secured. Instantly afterward, half the island of Walcheren renounced the yoke of Alva. Next, Enkhuijen, the key to the Zuyder Zee, the principal arsenal, and one of the first commercial cities in the Netherlands, rose against the Spanish Admiral, and hung out the banner of Orange on its ramparts. The revolution effected here was purely the work of the people — of the mariners and burghers of the city. Moreover, the magistracy was set aside and the government of Alva repudiated without shedding one drop of blood, without a single wrong to person or property. By the same spontaneous movement, nearly all the important cities of Holland and Zealand raised the standard of him in whom they recognised their deliverer.
The revolution was accomplished under nearly similar circumstances everywhere. With one fierce bound of enthusiasm the nation shook off its chain. Oudewater, Dort, Harlem, Leyden, Gorcum, Loewenstein, Gouda, Medemblik, Horn, Alkmaar, Edam, Monnikendam, Purmerende, as well as Flushing, Veer, and Enkhuizen, all ranged themselves under the government of Orange, as lawful stadholder for the King.¹

Nor was it in Holland and Zeeland alone that the beacon fires of freedom were lighted. City after city in Gelderland, Overyssel, and the See of Utrecht; all the important towns of Friesland, some sooner, some later, some without a struggle, some after a short siege, some with resistance by the functionaries of government, some by amicable compromise, accepted the garrisons of the Prince, and formally recognised his authority.² Out of the chaos which a long and preternatural tyranny had produced, the first struggling elements of a new and a better world began to appear. It was superfluous to narrate the details which marked the sudden restoration of liberty in these various groups of cities. Traits of generosity marked the change of government in some, circumstances of ferocity disfigured the revolution in others. The island of Walcheren, equally divided as it was between the two parties, was the scene of much turbulent and diabolical warfare. It is difficult to say whether the mutual hatred of race or the animosity of religious difference proved the deadlier venom. The combats were perpetual and sanguinary, the prisoners on both sides instantly executed. On more than one occasion, men were seen assisting to hang with their own hands and in cold blood their own brothers, who had been taken prisoners in the enemy’s ranks.³ When the captives were too many to be hanged, they were tied back to back, two and two, and thus hurled into the sea.⁴ The islanders found a fierce pleasure in these acts of cruelty. A Spaniard had ceased to be human in their eyes. On one occasion, a surgeon at Veer cut the heart from a Spanish prisoner, nailed it on a vessel’s prow, and invited the townsmen to come and fasten their teeth in it, which many did with savage satisfaction.⁵

In other parts of the country the revolution was, on the whole, accomplished with comparative calmness. Even traits of generosity were not uncommon. The burgomaster of Gouda, long the supple slave of Alva and the Blood Council, fled for his life as the revolt broke forth in that city. He took refuge in the house of a certain widow, and begged for a place of concealment. The widow led him to a secret closet which served as a pantry. “Shall I be secure there?” asked the fugitive functionary. “Oh yes, sir Burgomaster,” replied the widow, “twas in that very place that my husband lay concealed when you, accompanied by the officers of justice, were searching the house, that you might bring him to the scaffold for his religion. Enter the pantry, your worship; I will be responsible for your safety.”⁶ Thus faithfully did the humble widow of a hunted and murdered Calvinist protect the life of the magistrate who had brought desolation to her hearth.

Not all the conquests thus rapidly achieved in the cause of liberty were destined to endure, nor were any to be retained without a struggle. The little northern cluster of republics which had now restored its honour to the ancient Batavian name was destined, however, for a long and vigorous life. From that bleak isthmus the light of freedom was to stream through many years upon struggling humanity in Europe; a guiding pharos across a stormy sea; and Harlem, Leyden, Alkmaar—names hallowed by deeds of heroism such as have not

¹ Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup. Meteren, 69, et seq. Wagenaer, vi. 363–370.
² Bor, Meteren, Hoofd, Wagenaer, ubi sup.
³ Hoofd, vi. 227.
⁴ “Voorzeten spoelen.”—Hoofd. Wagenaer, vi. 355.
⁵ Hoofd, vi. 228.
⁶ Ibid., vi. 242.
people. No revolutionary standard was displayed.

The written instructions given by the Prince to his Lieutenant Sonoy were to "see that the Word of God was preached, without, however, suffering any hindrance to the Roman Church in the exercise of its religion; to restore fugitives and the banished for conscience sake, and to require of all magistrates and officers of guilds and brotherhoods an oath of fidelity." The Prince likewise prescribed the form of that oath, repeating therein, to his eternal honour, the same strict prohibition of intolerance. "Likewise," said the formula, "shall those of the religion offer no let or hindrance to the Roman Churches." The Prince was still in Germany, engaged in raising troops and providing funds. He directed, however, the affairs of the insurgent provinces in their minutest details, by virtue of the dictatorship inevitably forced upon him both by circumstances and by the people. In the meantime, Louis of Nassau, the Bayard of the Netherlands, performed a most unexpected and brilliant exploit. He had been long in France, negotiating with the leaders of the Huguenots and, more severely, with the court. He was supposed by all the world to be still in that kingdom, when the startling intelligence arrived that he had surprised and captured the important city of Moe. This town, the capital of Holland, situated in a fertile, undulating, and beautiful country, possessed of lofty walls, a triple moat, and a strong castle, was one of the most flourishing and elegant places in the Netherlands. It was, moreover, a spring to the frontiers of where a most important acquisition was the more regrettable. The capture was a most unexpected. A native of was a musician, a geographer, and a diplomat of great ability, he had abandoned himself into the service of Ayva, for whom he had several at different times some
remarkably well-executed maps of the country. Having occasion to visit France, he was employed by the Duke to keep a watch upon the movements of Louis of Nassau, and to make a report as to the progress of his intrigues with the court of France. The painter, however, was only a spy in disguise, being in reality devoted to the cause of freedom, and a correspondent of Orange and his family. His communications with Louis, in Paris, had therefore a far different result from the one anticipated by Alva. A large number of adherents within the city of Mons had already been secured, and a plan was now arranged between Count Louis, Genlis, De la Noue, and other distinguished Huguenot chiefs, to be carried out with the assistance of the brave and energetic artist.  

On the 23d of May, Oliver appeared at the gates of Mons, accompanied by three waggons, ostensibly containing merchandise, but in reality laden with arquebuses. These were secretly distributed among his confederates in the city. In the course of the day, Count Louis arrived in the neighbourhood, accompanied by five hundred horsemen, and a thousand foot soldiers. This force he stationed in close concealment within the thick forests between Maubeuge and Mons. Towards evening he sent twelve of the most trusty and daring of his followers, disguised as wine merchants, into the city. These individuals proceeded boldly to a public house, ordered their supper, and while conversing with the landlord, carelessly inquired at what hour next morning the city gates would be opened. They were informed that the usual hour was four in the morning, but that a trifling present to the porter would ensure admission, if they desired it, at an earlier hour. They explained their inquiries by a statement that they had some casks of wine which they wished to introduce into the city before sunrise. Having obtained all the information which they needed, they soon afterwards left the tavern. The next day they presented themselves very early at the gate, which the porter, on promise of a handsome “drink-penny,” agreed to unlock. No sooner were the bolts withdrawn, however, than he was struck dead, while about fifty dragoons rode through the gate. The Count and his followers now galloped over the city in the morning twilight, shouting, “France! liberty! the town is ours!” “The Prince is coming!” “Down with the tenth penny; down with the murderous Alva!” So soon as a burgher shewed his wondering face at the window, they shot at him with their carbines. They made as much noise, and conducted themselves as boldly as if they had been at least a thousand strong.

Meantime, however, the streets remained empty; not one of their secret confederates shewing himself. Fifty men could surprise, but were too few to keep possession of the city. The Count began to suspect a trap. As daylight approached, the alarm spread; the position of the little band was critical. In his impetuosity, Louis had far outstripped his army, but they had been directed to follow hard upon his footsteps, and he was astonished that their arrival was so long delayed. The suspense becoming intolerable, he rode out of the city in quest of his adherents, and found them wandering in the woods, where they had completely lost their way. Ordering each horseman to take a foot soldier on the crupper behind him, he led them rapidly back to Mons. On the way they were encountered by La Noue, “with the iron arm,” and Genlis, who, meantime, had made an unsuccessful attack to recover Valenciennes, which within a few hours had been won and lost again. As they reached the gates of Mons, they found themselves within a hair’s breadth of being too late; their adherents had not come forth; the citizens had been aroused;
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

The gates were all fast but one—and there the porter was quarrelling with a French soldier about an arquebuss. The drawbridge across the moat was at the moment rising; the last entrance was closing, when Guioty de Chaumont, a French officer, mounted on a light Spanish Barb, sprang upon the bridge as it rose. His weight caused it to sink again, the gate was forced, and Louis with all his men rode triumphantly into the town.¹

The citizens were forthwith assembled by sound of bell in the marketplace. The clergy, the magistracy, and the general council were all present. Genlis made the first speech, in which he disclaimed all intention of making conquests in the interest of France. This pledge having been given, Louis of Nassau next addressed the assembly: "The magistrates," said he, "have not understood my intentions. I protest that I am no rebel to the King; I prove it by asking no new oaths from any man. Remain bound by your old oaths of allegiance; let the magistrates continue to exercise their functions—to administer justice. I imagine that no person will suspect a brother of the Prince of Orange capable of any design against the liberties of the country. As to the Catholic religion, I take it under my very particular protection. You will ask why I am in Mons at the head of an armed force: are any of you ignorant of Alva’s cruelties? The overthrow of this tyrant is as much the interest of the King as of the people; therefore there is nothing in my present conduct inconsistent with fidelity to his Majesty. Against Alva alone I have taken up arms; 'tis to protect you against his fury that I am here. It is to prevent the continuance of a general rebellion that I make war upon him. The only proposition which I have to make to you is this—I demand that you declare Alva de Toledo a traitor to the King, the executioner of the people, an enemy to the country, unworthy of the government, and hereby deprived of his authority."²

The magistracy did not dare to accept so bold a proposition; the general council composing the more popular branch of the municipal government, were comparatively inclined to favour Nassau, and many of its members voted for the downfall of the tyrant. Nevertheless the demands of Count Louis were rejected. His position thus became critical. The civic authorities refused to pay for his troops, who were, moreover, too few in number to resist the inevitable siege. The patriotism of the citizens was not to be repressed, however, by the authority of the magistrates; many rich proprietors of the great cloth and silk manufactories, for which Mons was famous, raised and armed companies at their own expense; many volunteer troops were also speedily organised and drilled, and the fortifications were put in order. No attempt was made to force the reformed religion upon the inhabitants, and even Catholics who were discovered in secret correspondence with the enemy were treated with such extreme gentleness by Nassau as to bring upon him severe reproaches from many of his own party.³

A large collection of ecclesiastical plate, jewellery, money, and other valuables, which had been sent to the city for safe keeping from the churches and convents of the provinces, was seized, and thus, with little bloodshed and no violence, was the important city secured for the insurgents.⁴ Three days afterwards, two thousand infantry, chiefly French, arrived in the place.⁵

In the early part of the following month Louis was still further strengthened by the arrival of thirteen hundred foot and twelve hundred horsemen, under command of Count Mont-

² Paridaens. Mons sous les rapports historiques, statistiques, etc., 68–70 (Mona, 1810). The speech is reported from original documents in the Archives of the city: "fande intitulée Pièces relatives à la Surprise de Mons; déclarations des echelins, etc., etc."—Compare Bor, v. 577. Hoofd, vi. 238.
³ Paridaens, 76, 77.
⁴ Bor, vi. 573. Hoofd, vi. 238.—Compare Bentivoglio, vl. 100, et seq.; Mendoza, v. 130, 121; Grotius.
⁵ Bor, vi. 573. Hoofd, vi. 238.
A Fleet Captured.

gomery, the celebrated officer, whose spear at the tournament had proved fatal to Henry the Second. Thus the Duke of Alva suddenly found himself exposed to a tempest of revolution. One thunderbolt after another seemed descending around him in breathless succession. Brill and Flushing had been already lost; Middelburg was so closely invested that its fall seemed imminent, and with it would go the whole island of Walcheren, the key to all the Netherlands. In one morning he had heard of the revolt of Enkhuizen and of the whole Waterland; two hours later came the news of the Valenciennes rebellion, and next day the astonishing capture of Mons. One disaster followed hard upon another. He could have sworn that the detested Louis of Nassau, who had dealt this last and most fatal stroke, was at that moment in Paris, safely watched by government emissaries; and now he had, as it were, suddenly started out of the earth, to deprive him of this important city, and to lay bare the whole frontier to the treacherous attacks of faithless France. He refused to believe the intelligence when it was first announced to him, and swore that he had certain information that Count Louis had been seen playing in the tennis-court at Paris, within so short a period as to make his presence in Hainault at that moment impossible. Forced, at last, to admit the truth of the disastrous news, he dashed his hat upon the ground in a fury, uttering imprecations upon the Queen Dowager of France, to whose pernicious intrigues he ascribed the success of the enterprise, and pleading himself to send her Spanish thistles enough in return for the Florentine lilies which she had thus bestowed upon him.

In the midst of the perplexities thus thickening around him, the Duke preserved his courage, if not his temper. Blinded, for a brief season, by the rapid attacks made upon him, he had been uncertain whether to direct his vengeance. This last blow in so vital a quarter determined him at once. He forthwith despatched Don Frederic to undertake the siege of Mons, and earnestly set about raising large reinforcements to his army. Don Frederic took possession, without much opposition, of the Bethlehem cloister in the immediate vicinity of the city, and with four thousand troops began the investment in due form.

Alva had, for a long time, been most impatient to retire from the provinces. Even he was capable of human emotions. Through the sevenfold panoply of his pride he had been pierced by the sharpness of a nation's curse. He was wearied with the unceasing execrations which assailed his ears. "The hatred which the people bear me," said he, in a letter to Philip, "because of the chastisement which it has been necessary for me to inflict, although with all the moderation in the world, make all my efforts vain. A successor will meet more sympathy and prove more useful." On the 10th June, the Duke of Medina Celi, with a fleet of more than forty sail, arrived off Blankenburg, intending to enter the Scheld. Julian Romero, with two thousand Spaniards, was also on board the fleet. Nothing, of course, was known to the new-comers of the altered condition of affairs in the Netherlands, nor of the unwelcome reception which they were likely to meet in Flushing. A few of the lighter craft having been taken by the patriot cruisers, the alarm was spread through all the fleet. Medina Celi, with a few transports, was enabled to effect his escape to Sluys, whence he hastened to Brussels in a much less ceremonious manner than he had originally contemplated. Twelve Biscayan ships stood out to sea, descried a large Lisbon fleet, by a singular coincidence, suddenly hearing in sight, changed their course again, and with a favouring breeze bore boldly up the Hond, passed Flushing in spite of a severe cannonade from the forts, and

---

1 Bor, vi. 378.
2 Mendoza, v. 120; vi. 122.
4 Bor, vi. 884. Meteren, iv. 71, 72.
5 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1107.
eventually made good their entrance into Rammekeen, whence the soldiery, about one-half of whom had thus been saved, were transferred at a very critical moment to Middelburg.

The great Lisbon fleet followed in the wake of the Biscayans, with much inferior success. Totally ignorant of the revolution which had occurred in the Isle of Walcheren, it obeyed the summons of the rebel fort to come to anchor, and, with the exception of three or four, the vessels were all taken. It was the richest booty which the insurgents had yet acquired by sea or land. The fleet was laden with spices, money, jewellery, and the richest merchandise. Five hundred thousand crowns of gold were taken; and it was calculated that the plunder altogether would suffice to maintain the war for two years at least. One thousand Spanish soldiers, and a good amount of ammunition, were also captured. The unexpected condition of affairs made a pause natural, and almost necessary, before the government could be decorously transferred. Medina Celi, with Spanish grandiloquence, avowed his willingness to serve as a soldier under a general whom he so much venerated; while Alva ordered that, in all respects, the same outward marks of respect should be paid to his appointed successor as to himself. Beneath all this external ceremony, however, much mutual malice was concealed.

Meantime, the Duke, who was literally "without a single real," was forced at last to smother his pride in the matter of the tenth penny. On the 24th June, he summoned the estates of Holland to assemble on the 15th of the ensuing month. In the missive issued for this purpose, he formally agreed to abolish the whole tax, on condition that the estates-general of the Netherlands would furnish him with a yearly supply of two millions of florins. Almost at the same moment the King had dismissed the deputies of the estates from Madrid, with the public assurance that the tax was to be suspended, and a private intimation that it was not abolished in terms, only in order to save the dignity of the Duke.

These healing measures came entirely too late. The estates of Holland met, indeed, on the appointed day of July, but they assembled not in obedience to Alva, but in consequence of a summons from William of Orange. They met, too, not at the Hague, but at Dort, to take formal measures for renouncing the authority of the Duke. The first congress of the Netherlands commonwealth still professed loyalty to the Crown, but was determined to accept the policy of Orange without a question.

The Prince had again assembled an army in Germany, consisting of fifteen thousand foot and seven thousand horse, besides a number of Netherlands, mostly Walloons, amounting to nearly three thousand more. Before taking the field, however, it was necessary that he should guarantee at least three months' pay to his troops. This he could no longer do, except by giving bonds, endorsed by certain cities of Holland as his securities. He had, accordingly, addressed letters in his own name to all the principal cities, fervently adjuring them to remember, at last, what was due to him, to the fatherland, and to their own character. "Let not a sum of gold," said he in one of these letters, "be so dear to you, that for its sake you will sacrifice your lives, your wives, your children, and all your descendants, to the latest generations; that you will bring sin and shame upon yourselves, un real como el Duque lo esta en esta season."

---

1 Meteren, iv. 65. 66. Hoefl. vii. 239, 240. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1133.
2 Mendoza, vi. 122. — "Hallando so sin
3 Archives, etc., de la Maison d'Orange, iii. 437-442. Mendoza, vi. 127, 128.
4 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1135
6 Ibid. 7 Bor.—Compare Hoefl. vii. 239; Meteren, iv. 71; Bentivoglio, v. 104. 8 Ibid., vi. 289. Hoefl. viii. 269.
and destruction upon us who have so heartily striven to assist you. Think what scorn you will incur from foreign nations, what a crime you will commit against the Lord God, what a bloody yoke ye will impose forever upon yourselves and your children, if you now seek for subterfuges—if you now prevent us from taking the field with the troops which we have enlisted. On the other hand, what inexpressible benefits you will confer on your country, if you now help us to rescue that fatherland from the power of Spanish vultures and wolves.1

This and similar missives, circulated throughout the province of Holland, produced a deep impression. In accordance with his suggestions, the deputies from the nobility and from twelve cities of that province assembled on the 16th July, at Dort. Strictly speaking, the estates or government of Holland, the body which represented the whole people, consisted of the nobles and six great cities. On this occasion, however, Amsterdam being still in the power of the King, could send no deputies, while, on the other hand, all the small towns were invited to send up their representatives to the Congress. Eight accepted the proposal; the rest declined to appoint delegates, partly from motives of economy, partly from timidity.2

These estates were the legitimate representatives of the people, but they had no legislative powers.3 The people had never pretended to sovereignty, nor did they claim it now. The source from which the government of the Netherlands was supposed to proceed was still the Divine mandate. Even now the estates silently conceded, as they had ever done, the supreme legislative and executive functions to the land’s master.4 Upon Philip of Spain, as representative of Count Dirk the First of Holland, had descended, through many tortuous channels, the Divine effluence originally supplied by Charles the Simple of France. That supernatural power was not contested, but it was now ingeniously turned against the sovereign. The King’s authority was invoked against himself in the person of the Prince of Orange, to whom, thirteen years before, a portion of that Divine right had been delegated. The estates of Holland met at Dort on the 15th July, as representatives of the people, but they were summoned by Orange, royally commissioned in 1559 as stadholder, and therefore the supreme legislative and executive officer of certain provinces. This was the theory of the provisional government.5 The Prince represented the royal authority, the nobles represented both themselves and the people of the open country, while the twelve cities represented the whole body of burgchers. Together, they were supposed to embody all authority, both Divine and human, which a congress could exercise. Thus the whole movement was directed against Alva and against Count Bossu, appointed stadholder by Alva in the place of Orange.6 Philip’s name was destined to figure for a long time, at the head of documents by which monies were raised, troops levied, and taxes collected, all to be used in deadly war against himself.

The estates were convened on the 15th July, when Paul Buys, pensionary of Leyden, the tried and confidential friend of Orange, was elected Advocate of Holland.7 The convention was then adjourned till the 18th, when Saint Aldegonde made his appearance, with full powers to act provisionally in behalf of his Highness.8

The distinguished plenipotentiary delivered before the congress a long and very effective harangue. He recalled the sacrifices and efforts of the

---

1 This remarkable letter is published in Kruit Hist. der Hollandische Staatsregering, Decel. 1, bl. 576-579 (Bijlagen).
4 Ibid., I, 50, 52.
6 Bor, Kruit, ubi sup. Wagenaer, vi. 377-380.
8 Bor, vi. 396, 397.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1572.]

that with which they served their destroyer! It was resolved that the requisite amount should be at once raised, partly from the regular imports and current "requests," partly by loans from the rich, from the clergy, from the guilds and brotherhoods, partly from superfluous church ornaments and other costly luxuries. It was directed that subscriptions should be immediately opened throughout the land, that gold and silver plate, furniture, jewellery, and other expensive articles should be received by voluntary contributions, for which inventories and receipts should be given by the magistrates of each city, and that upon these money should be raised, either by loan or sale. An enthusiastic and liberal spirit prevailed. All seemed determined, rather than pay the tenth to Alva, to pay the whole to the Prince.

The estates, furthermore, by unanimous resolution, declared that they recognized the Prince as the King's lawful stadtholder over Holland, Zeeland, Friesland, and Utrecht, and that they would use their influence with the other provinces to procure his appointment as Protector of all the Netherlands during the King's absence. His Highness was requested to accept as Admiral, on whom, with certain deputies from the Water-cities, the conduct of the maritime war should devolve. The conduct of the military operations by land was to be directed by Huydecoper and Hoekhuisen, in connection with the Count de la Noye. A pledge was likewise exchanged between the estates and the Protector that neither party should enter into any treaty with the Spanish except by full consent and concurrence of the other. With regard to wages it was firmly established, that the expenses of Divine worship should be permitted not only to

The Necessity of a dominium," says

"---neque dominium," says

David, vii. 53.
the Reformed Church, but to the Roman Catholic—the clergy of both being protected from all molestation.\footnote{1} After these proceedings, Count de la Marck made his appearance before the assembly. His commission from Orange was read to the deputies, and by them ratified.\footnote{3} The Prince, in that document, authorised “his dear cousin” to enlist troops, to accept the fealty of cities, to furnish them with garrisons, to re-establish all the local laws, municipal rights, and ancient privileges which had been suppressed. He was to maintain freedom of religion, under penalty of death to those who infringed it; he was to restore all confiscated property; he was, with advice of his council, to continue in office such city magistrates as were favourable, and to remove those adverse to the cause.\footnote{2}

The Prince was, in reality, clothed with dictatorial and even regal powers. This authority had been forced upon him by the prayers of the people, but he manifested no eagerness as he partly accepted the onerous station. He was provisionally the depository of the whole sovereignty of the northern provinces, but he cared much less for theories of government than for ways and means. It was his object to release the country from the tyrant who, five years long, had been burning and butchering the people. It was his determination to drive out the foreign soldiery. To do this, he must meet his enemy in the field. So little was he disposed to strengthen his own individual power, that he voluntarily imposed limits on himself, by an act, supplemental to the proceedings of the Congress of Dort. In this important ordinance made by the Prince of Orange, as a provisional form of government,\footnote{4} he publicly announced “that he would do and ordain nothing except by the advice of the estates, by reason that they were best acquainted with the circumstances and the humours of the inhabitants.” He directed the estates to appoint receivers for all public taxes, and ordained that all military officers should make oath of fidelity to him, as stadholder, and to the estates of Holland, to be true and obedient, in order to liberate the land from the Albanian and Spanish tyranny, for the service of his royal Majesty as Count of Holland. The provisional constitution, thus made by a sovereign prince and actual dictator, was certainly as disinterested as it was sagacious.

Meanwhile the war had opened vigorously in Hainault. Louis of Nassau had no sooner found himself in possession of Mons than he had despatched Genlis to France, for those reinforcements which had been promised by royal lips.\footnote{5} On the other hand, Don Frederic held the city closely beleaguered; sharp combats before the walls were of almost daily occurrence, but it was obvious that Louis would be unable to maintain the position into which he had so chivalrously thrown himself unless he should soon receive important succour. The necessary reinforcements were soon upon the way. Genlis had made good speed with his levy, and it was soon announced that he was advancing into Hainault, with a force of Huguenots, whose numbers report magnified to ten thousand veterans.\footnote{4} Louis despatched an earnest message to his confederate to use extreme caution in his approach. Above all things, he urged him, before attempting to throw reinforcements into the city, to effect a junction with the Prince of Orange, who had already crossed the Rhine with his new army.\footnote{7}

Genlis, full of overweening confidence, and desirous of acquiring singly the whole glory of relieving the city, disregarded this advice.\footnote{8} His rashness

\footnote{1} Bor, vi. 388.
\footnote{2} Ibid., 389. Hoofd, vii. 250, 251.
\footnote{3} See the Commission in Bor, vi. 389-391.
\footnote{4} “Ordonnantie ende Instructie van den Prince van Orange, voor die van Hollandt, om by provisi’t Landt daarvoor geregeld to worden.”—Groot Plaatsen Boek, D. ii. bl. 1572.
\footnote{5} Bor, vi. 397. Hoofd, vi. 251.
\footnote{6} Ibid. Ibid. Compare Mendoza, vi. 141; Bentivoglio, v. 102.
\footnote{7} Bentivoglio, v. 102. Bor, vi. 397. Hoofd, vi. 251.
\footnote{8} Bor, Hoofd, Bentivoglio, ubi sup.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

proved his ruin, and the temporary prostration of the cause of freedom. Pushing rapidly forward across the French frontier, he arrived, towards the middle of July, within two leagues of Mona. The Spaniards were aware of his approach, and well prepared to frustrate his project. On the 19th, he found himself upon a circular plain of about a league's extent, surrounded with coppices and forests, and dotted with farm-houses and kitchen gardens. Here he paused to send out a reconnoitring party. The little detachment was, however, soon driven in, with the information that Don Frederic of Toledo, with ten thousand men, was coming instantly upon them. The Spanish force, in reality, numbered four thousand infantry and fifteen hundred cavalry; but three thousand half-armed boors had been engaged by Don Frederic to swell his apparent force. The demonstration produced its effect, and no sooner had the first panic of the intelligence been spread, than Noirarmes came charging upon them at the head of his cavalry. The infantry arrived directly afterwards, and the Huguenots were routed almost as soon as seen. It was a meeting rather than a battle. The slaughter of the French was very great, while but an insignificant number of the Spaniards fell. Chiappin Vitelli was the hero of the day. It was to his masterly arrangements before the combat, and to his animated exertions upon the field, that the victory was owing. Having been severely wounded in the thigh but a few days previously, he caused himself to be carried upon a litter in a recumbent position in front of his troops, and was everywhere seen, encouraging their exertions and exposing himself, crippled as he was, to the whole brunt of the battle. To him the victory nearly proved fatal; to Don Frederic it brought increased renown. Vitelli’s exertions, in his precarious condition, brought on severe inflammation, under which he nearly succumbed, while the son of Alva reaped extensive fame from the total overthrow of the veteran Huguenots, due rather to his lieutenant and to Julian Romero.

The number of dead left by the French upon the plain amounted to at least twelve hundred, but a much larger number was butchered in detail by the peasantry, among whom they attempted to take refuge, and who had not yet forgotten the barbarities inflicted by their countrymen in the previous war. Many officers were taken prisoners, among whom was the Commander-in-chief, Genlis. That unfortunate gentleman was destined to stone for his rashness and obstinacy with his life. He was carried to the castle of Antwerp, where, sixteen months afterwards, he was secretly strangled by command of Alva, who caused the report to be circulated that he had died a natural death. About one hundred foot soldiers succeeded in making their entrance into Mona, and this was all the succour which Count Louis was destined to receive from France, upon which country he had built such lofty and such reasonable hopes.

While this unfortunate event was occurring, the Prince had already put his army in motion. On the 7th of July he had crossed the Rhine at Duisburg, with fourteen thousand foot, seven thousand horse, enlisted in Germany, besides a force of three thousand Walloons. On the 23d of July, he took the city of Roermond, after a sharp cannonade, at which place his troops already began to disgrace the honourable cause in which they were engaged, by imitating the cruelties and barbarities of their antagonists. The persons and property of the burghers were, with a very few exceptions, respected; but many priests and monks were put to death by the soldiery under circumstances of great barbarity. The Prince, incensed at such conduct, but being unable to exercise very stringent

---

1 Mendoza, vi. 139.
2 Hoefl, vi. 251. Mendoza, vi. 139.
3 Bentivoglio, v. 102.
4 Strada, vi. 364.
6 Bor, vi. 997, 998. Hoefl, vi. 251, 252.
7 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1283.
8 Hoefl, vi. 251. Meteren, iv. 71.
9 Bor, vi. 998.
10 Ibid., vi. 999. Hoefl, viii. 259, 260.
authority over troops whose wages he was not yet able to pay in full, issued a proclamation, denouncing such excesses, and commanding his followers, upon pain of death, to respect the rights of all individuals, whether Papist or Protestant, and to protect religious exercises both in Catholic and Reformed churches.\(^1\)

It was hardly to be expected that the troops enlisted by the Prince in the same great magazine of hireling soldiers, Germany, from whence the Duke also derived his annual supplies, would be likely to differ very much in their propensities from those enrolled under Spanish banners; yet there was a vast contrast between the characters of the two commanders. One leader inculcated the practice of robbery, rape, and murder, as a duty, and issued distinct orders to butcher "every mother's son" in the cities which he captured; the other restrained every excess to the utmost of his ability, protecting not only life and property, but even the ancient religion.

The Emperor Maximilian had again issued his injunctions against the military operations of Orange. Bound to the monarch of Spain by so many family ties, being at once cousin, brother-in-law, and father-in-law of Philip, it was difficult for him to maintain the attitude which became him, as chief of that Empire to which the peace of Passau had assured religious freedom. It had, however, been sufficiently proved that remonstrances and intercessions addressed to Philip were but idle breath. It had therefore become an insult to require pacific conduct from the Prince on the ground of any past or future mediation. It was a still grosser mockery to call upon him to discontinue hostilities because the Netherlands were included in the Empire, and therefore protected by the treaties of Passau and Augsburg. Well did the Prince reply to his Imperial Majesty's summons in a temperate but cogent letter,\(^2\) which he addressed to him from his camp, that all intercessions had proved fruitless, and that the only help for the Netherlands was the sword.

The Prince had been delayed for a month at Roermonde, because, as he expressed it, "he had not a single soul,"\(^3\) and because, in consequence, the troops refused to advance into the Netherlands. Having at last been furnished with the requisite guarantees from the Holland cities for three months' pay, on the 27th of August, the day of the publication of his letter to the Emperor, he crossed the Meuse and took his circuitous way through Diest, Tuirlemont, Sichem, Louvain, Mechlin, Termonde, Oudenarde, Nivelles.\(^4\) Many cities and villages accepted his authority and admitted his garrisons. Of these Mechlin was the most considerable, in which he stationed a detachment of his troops. Its doom was sealed in that moment. Alva could not forgive this act of patriotism on the part of a town which had so recently excluded his own troops. "This is a direct permission of God," he wrote, in the spirit of dire and revengeful prophesy, "for us to punish her as she deserves, for the image-breaking and other misdeeds done there in the time of Madame de Parme, which our Lord was not willing to pass over without chastisement."\(^5\)

Meantime the Prince continued his advance. Louvain purchased its neutrality\(^6\) for the time with sixteen thousand ducats; Brussels obstinately refused to listen to him, and was too powerful to be forcibly attacked at that juncture; other important cities, convinced by the arguments and won by the eloquence of the various proclamations which he scattered as he advanced, ranged themselves spontaneously and even enthusiastically upon his side. How different would have been the result of his campaign but for the unexpected earthquake which at that instant was to appal Christendom, and to scatter all his

---

\(^1\) Bor, vi, 399, 400. Hooft, vii, 259, 260.
\(^2\) See it in Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii, 65, et seq.
\(^3\) Green v. Prinxt, Archives, etc., iii, 400.
\(^4\) Bor, vi, 400-402. Hooft, vii, 260, et seq.
\(^5\) Correspondance de Philippe II., 115d.
\(^6\) Hooft, vii, 260.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

The Prince proceeded in his march, during which the heavy news had been brought to him, but he felt convinced that, with the very arrival of the army, the fate of that campaign was sealed, and the fall of Mons inevitable. In this event language, he had been struck to the heart with the bow of a sledge hammer. Nor did the enemy draw a different anger from the great events which had occurred.

The crime was not committed with the connivance of the Spanish government. On the contrary, the two courts were at the moment bitterly hostile to each other. In the beginning of the summer, Charles IX. and his advisers were false to Philip, as at the end of it they were treacherous to Coligny and Orange. The massacre of the Huguenots had not even the merit of being a well-contrived and intelligently executed scheme. We have seen how steadily, seven years before, Catharine de Medici had rejected the advances of Alva towards the arrangement of a general plan for the extermination of all heretics within France and the Netherlands at the same moment. We have seen the disgust which Alva returned from the wretched young king at Rheims, when he expressed the meaning that to take arms against the law alone was wholly out of the power, and could only be followed by disaster. It is easy to see why they were so united. We could not write Alva in a manner that would not have resembled those of Alva and his associates. We could not imagine his associates with a bloodless head. The massacre is only the event of taking the principles in the first.
lead in the internecine struggle, were employed with Medicean art, and with entire success. The King was lashed into a frenzy. Starting to his feet, with a howl of rage and terror, "I agree to the scheme," he cried, "provided not one Huguenot be left alive in France to reproach me with the deed." 1

That night the slaughter commenced. The long premeditated crime was executed in a panic, but the work was thoroughly done. The King, who a few days before had written with his own hand to Louis of Nassau, expressing his firm determination to sustain the Protestant cause both in France and the Netherlands, who had employed the counsels of Coligny in the arrangement of his plans, and who had sent French troops, under Genlis and La Noue, to assist their Calvinist brethren in Flanders, now gave the signal for the general massacre of the Protestants, and with his own hands, from his own palace windows, shot his subjects with his arquebuse as if they had been wild beasts.

Between Sunday and Tuesday, according to one of the most moderate calculations, five thousand Parisians of all ranks were murdered. Within the whole kingdom, the number of victims was variously estimated at from twenty-five thousand to one hundred thousand. 2 The heart of Protestant Europe, for an instant, stood still with horror. The Queen of England put on mourning weeds, and spurned the apologies of the French envoy with contempt. 3 At Rome, on the contrary, the news of the massacre created a joy beyond description. The Pope, accompanied by his cardinals, went solemnly to the church of Saint Mark to render thanks to God for the grace thus singularly vouchsafed to the Holy See and to all Christendom; and a Te Deum was performed in presence of the same august assemblage. 4

But nothing could exceed the satisfaction which the event occasioned in the mind of Philip the Second. There was an end now of all assistance from the French government to the Netherlands Protestants. "The news of the events upon Saint Bartholomew's-day," wrote the French envoy at Madrid, Saint Goard, to Charles IX., "arrived on the 7th September. The King, on receiving the intelligence, showed, contrary to his natural custom, so much gaiety, that he seemed more delighted than with all the good fortune or happy incidents which had ever before occurred to him. He called all his familiars about him in order to assure them that your Majesty was his good brother, and that no one else deserved the title of Most Christian. He sent his secretary Cayas to me with his felicitations upon the event, and with the information that he was just going to Saint Jerome to render thanks to God, and to offer his prayers that your Majesty might receive Divine support in this great affair. I went to see him next morning, and as soon as I came into his presence he began to laugh, and with demonstrations of extreme contentment, to praise your Majesty as deserving your title of Most Christian, telling me there was no King worthy to be your Majesty's companion, either for valour or prudence. He praised the steadfast resolution and the long dissimulation of so great an enterprise, which all the world would not be able to comprehend." 5 6 7 "I thanked him," continued the ambassador, "and I said that I thanked God for enabling your Majesty to prove to his Master that his apprentices had learned his trade, and deserved his title of most Christian King. I added, that he ought to confess that he owed the preservation of the Netherlands to your Majesty." 8

Nothing, certainly, could, in Philip's apprehension, be more delightful than this most unexpected and most opportune intelligence. Charles IX., whose

---

1 Von Raumer, Geschichte Europas seit dem Ende des fünfzehnten Jahrhunderts (Leipzig, 1853), ii. 355.
2 Von Raumer, ii. 280.—Compare de Thou, t. vi. i. ii. 420; Bor, vi. 402, 405; Mertens, iv. 74.
3 Von Raumer, ii. 263.
4 De Thou, t. vi. i. lii. 442.
5 Groen v. Prinss., Archives, etc., Supplement, 120.
intrigues in the Netherlands he had long known, had now been suddenly converted by this stupendous crime into his most powerful ally, while at the same time the Protestants of Europe would learn that there was still another crowned head in Christendom more deserving of abhorrence than himself. He wrote immediately to Alva, expressing his satisfaction that the King of France had disembarassed himself of such pernicious men, because he would now be obliged to cultivate the friendship of Spain, neither the English Queen nor the German Protestants being thenceforth capable of trusting him. He informed the Duke, moreover, that the French envoy, Saint Goard, had been urging him to command the immediate execution of Genlis and his companions, who had been made prisoners, as well as all the Frenchmen who would be captured in Mons, and that he fully concurred in the propriety of the measure. "The sooner," said Philip, "these noxious plants are extirpated from the earth, the less fear there is that a fresh crop will spring up." The monarch therefore added, with his own hand, to the letter, "I desire that you have not already disembarassed the world of them, you will do it immediately, and inform me thereof, for I see no reason why it should be deferred."

This is the demonical picture painted by the French ambassador, and by Philip's own hand, of the Spanish monarch's joy that his "Most Christian" brother had just murdered twenty-five thousand of his own subjects. In this cold-blooded way, too, did his Catholic Majesty order the execution of some thousand Huguenots additionally, in order more fully to carry out his royal brother's plans; yet Philip could write of himself, "that all the world recognised the gentleness of his nature, and the mildness of his intentions." 3

In truth, the advice thus given by Saint Goard on the subject of the French prisoners in Alva's possessions was a natural result of the Saint Bartholomew. Here were officers and soldiers whom Charles IX. had himself sent into the Netherlands to fight for the Protestant cause against Philip and Alva. Already the papers found upon them had placed him in some embarrassment, and exposed his duplicity to the Spanish government, before the great massacre had made such signal reparation for his delinquency. He had ordered Mondoucoet, his envoy in the Netherlands, to use dissimulation to an unstinted amount, to continue his intrigues with the Protestants, and to deny stoutly all proofs of such connivance. "I see that the papers found upon Genlis," he wrote 4 twelve days before the massacre, "have been put into the hands of Assonville, and that they know everything done by Genlis to have been committed with my consent. Nevertheless, you will tell the Duke of Alva that these are lies invented to excite suspicion against me. You will also give him occasional information of the enemy's affairs, in order to make him believe in your integrity. Even if he does not believe you, my purpose will be answered, provided you do it dexterously. At the same time you must keep up a constant communication with the Prince of Orange, taking great care to prevent discovery of your intelligence with him." 5

We were not these masterstrokes of diplomacy worthy of a King whom his mother, from boyhood upwards, had caused to study Macchiavelli's "Prince,"


2 "Y asi el holgare que si ya no les ubiere deshechado del mundo lo hasais luego, y me avisais dello, pues que no voy que aya causa ni la pueda aver por que esto se dey de haver."—Letter of Philip, 18th September 1572, ubi sup.


4 These remarkable letters exchanged between Charles IX. and Mondoucoet have recently been published by M. Emile Gachet (chef du bureau paléographique aux Archives de Belgique) from a manuscript discovered by him in the library at Rheims.—Compte Rendu de la Com. Roy. d'Hist., lv. 346, sqq.

5 "Encore qu'il ne y adjoute fos, toutes fois cela servira à mon intention, pour eue que ce fais d'estrement."—Ibid.

6 Ibid.
and who had thoroughly taken to heart
the maxim, often repeated in those
days, that the "Science of reigning
was the science of lying"?1

The joy in the Spanish camp before
Mons was unbounded. It was as if
the only bulwark between the Nether-
land rebels and total destruction had
been suddenly withdrawn. With an-
thems in Saint Gudule,2 with bonfires,
festive illuminations, roaring artillery,
with trumpets also, and with shawms,
as was the glorious holiday celebrated in
court and camp, in honour of the vast
murder committed by the Most Chris-
tian King upon his Christian subjects;
and was a moment lost in appraising
the Huguenot soldiers shut up with
Louis of Nassau in the beleaguered
city of the great catastrophe which was
to render all their valor fruitless. "'Twas
a punishment," said a Spanish soldier,
who fought most courageously before
Mons, and who elaborately described
the siege afterwards, "well worthy of
a king whose title in 'The Most Chris-
tian,' and it was still more honourable
to inflict it with his own hands as he
did."3 Nor was the observation a
pithy sarcasm, but a frank expression
of opinion, from a man celebrated alike
for the skill with which he handled
both his sword and his pen.

The French envoy in the Nether-
lands was, of course, immediately in-
formed by his sovereign of the great
event. Charles IX. gave a very pithy
account of the transaction. "To pre-
vent the success of the enterprise
planned by the Admiral," wrote the
King on the 26th of August, with
hands yet reeking, and while the havoc
throughout France was at its height,
"I have been obliged to permit the
said Guises to rush upon the said Ad-
miral,4 which they have done; the said
Admiral having been killed and all his
adherents. A very great number of
those belonging to the new religion
have also been massacred and cut to
pieces. It is probable that the fire
thus kindled will spread through all
the cities of my kingdom, and that all
those of the said religion will be made
sure of."5 Not often, certainly, in his-
tory, has a Christian king spoken thus
calmly of butchering his subjects while
the work was proceeding all around
him. It is to be observed, moreover,
that the usual excuse for such enormi-
ties, religious fanaticism, cannot be
even suggested on this occasion.

Catherine, in times past had favoured
Huguenots as much as Catholics, while
Charles had been, up to the very mo-
ment of the crime, in strict alliance
with the heretics of both France and
Flanders, and furthering the schemes
of Orange and Nassau. Nay, even at
this very moment, and in this very
letter in which he gave the news of
the massacre, he charged his envoy
still to maintain the closest but most
secret intelligence with the Prince of
Orange; taking great care that the
Duke of Alva should not discover
these relations. His motives were, of
course, to prevent the Prince from
abandoning his designs, and from com-
ing to make a disturbance in France.
The King, now that the deed was
done, was most anxious to reap all the
fruits of his crime. "Now, M. de
Mondoucet, it is necessary in such
affairs," he continued, "to have an eye
to every possible contingency. I know
that this news will be most agreeable
to the Duke of Alva, for it is most
favourable to his designs. At the
same time, I don't desire that he alone
should gather the fruit. I don't choose
that he should, according to his excel-
lent custom, conduct his affairs in such
wise as to throw the Prince of Orange
upon my hands, besides sending back
to France Genlis and the other pris-
oners, as well as the French now shut up
in Mons."6

---

1 "Qui nescit dissimulare nescit regnare."
2 Letter of Mondoucet, ubi sup. Strada,
vii. 366. — "In Hispanorum castra sub pri-
mas tenebras, ingentis hostiae signs hostes
edera, sclerorum explosione ter repetita,
lento tympanorum tabarumque curto, ac
to toto circito valls festus ignibus collumisco," etc., etc.
3 Mendoza, vi. 166.
4 "J'ai été contraint permettre et donner
moyen auxdits de Guise de courir sus audit
Ambal," etc.—Correspondance de Mon-
doucet, etc., ubi sup.
5 Correspondance de Mondoucet.
6 Ibid.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

This was a sufficiently plain hint, when Mendoza could not well misunderstand. "Inform the Duke of the circumstances exactly when you give him this message," added the King, "and let me know his reply." In order, however, that there might be no mistake about the matter, Charles wrote upon the Morland, five days afterwards, instantly stating the urgent case, when I should feel if Alva would not take the city of Mos, or if he would take it by assault. "Tell the Duke," said he, "that it is most important for the service of his master and of the new states, that the Frenchmen and Spaniards in Mos be cut in pieces." He wrote another letter upon the same day, which was his anxiety upon the subject, instructing the envoy to urge upon Alva the necessity of chastising those rebels to the French crown. "If he relents," continued Charles, "that time is totally requiring him to put to death all the French prisoners now in hand, as well as cut in pieces every new in Mos, you will say to him that this is exactly what he ought to do, and that he will be guilty of a great wrong to Christianity if he does otherwise." Certainly, the Duke, having been thus distinctly ordered, both by his own master and by his Christian Majesty, to put every one of these Frenchmen to death, had a sufficiency of royal warrant. Nevertheless, he was not able to execute entirely these ferocious instructions. The prisoners already in his power were not destined to escape, but the city of Mos, in his own language, "proved to have sharper teeth than he supposed."

Mendoza but no time in placing before Alva the urgent necessity of accomplishing the extensive and cold-blooded massacre thus proposed. "The Duke has replied," wrote the envoy to his sovereign, "that he is executing his prisoners every day, and that he has but a few left. Nevertheless, for some reason which he does not mention, he is reserving the principal men and chiefs." His afterwards informed his master that Genlis, Jemt, and the other leaders, had engaged, if Alva would grant them a reasonable ransom, to induce the French in Mos to leave the city; but that the Duke, although his language was growing less confident, still hoped to take the town by assault. "I have urged him," he added, "to put them all to death, assuring him that he would be responsible for the consequences of a contrary course." Why does not your Most Christian master," asked Alva, "order these Frenchmen in Mos to come to him under oath to make no disturbance? Then my prisoners will be at my discretion and I shall get my city." Because," answered the envoy, "they will not trust his Most Christian Majesty, and will prefer to die in Mos." This certainly was a most sensible reply, but it is instructive to witness the cynicism with which the envoy accepts this position for his master, while coldly recording the results of all these sanguinary conversations.

Such was the condition of affairs when the Prince of Orange arrived at Péronne, between Binche and the Duke of Alva's entrenchments. The besieging army was rich in notabilities of elevated rank. Don Frederic of Toledo had hitherto commanded; but, on the 27th of August, the Dukes of Medina Conde and of Alva had arrived in the camp. Directly afterwards came the warlike Archbishop of Cologne, at the head of two thousand cavalry. There was but one chance for the Prince of Orange, and experience had taught him, four years before, its slenderness. He might still provoke his adversary into a pitched battle, and he relied upon God for the result. In his own words, "he trusted that the great God of armies was with him, and would fight in the midst of his forces." So long as Alva

1 Correspondances de Mondesook.
2 1162.
3 Mondesook to Charles IX., 14th September 1572.
4 Ibid. (24th Sept.)
5 Mondesook to Charles IX., 15th September 1572.

6 Correspondances de Philippe II., ii. 1158.
7 Hoofd, vii. 282.
8 Ibid., vii. 257.
9 Correspondances de Philippe II., ii. 1158.
10 Bow, vi. 492.
11 Letter of John of Nassau. Archives, etc., iii. 481.
remained in his impregnable camp, it
was impossible to attack him, or to
throw reinforcements into Mons. The
Prince soon found, too, that Alva was
far too wise to hazard his position by a
superfluous combat. The Duke
knew that the cavalry of the Prince
was superior to his own. He
expressed himself entirely unwilling
play into the Prince's hands, in-
stead of winning the game which was
no longer doubtful. The Huguenot
soldiers within Mons were in despair
and mutiny; Louis of Nassau lay in
his bed consuming with a dangerous
fever; Genlis was a prisoner, and his
army cut to pieces; Coligny was mur-
dered, and Protestant France para-
lyzed; the troops of Orange, enlisted
but for three months, were already
rebellious, and sure to break into open
insubordination when the consequences
of the Paris massacre should become
entirely clear to them; and there were,
therefore, even more cogent reasons
than in 1568, why Alva should remain
perfectly still, and see his enemy's
cause founder before his eyes. The
valiant Archbishop of Cologne was
most eager for the fray. He rode daily
at the Duke's side, with harness on his
back and pistols in his holsters, armed
and attired like one of his own troopers,
and urging the Duke, with vehemence,
to a pitched battle with the Prince.
The Duke commended, but did not
yield to, the prelate's enthusiasm.

"Tis a fine figure of a man, with
his corset and pistols," he wrote to
Philip, "and he shew's a great affection
for your Majesty's service."

The issue of the campaign was in-
evitable. On the 11th September, Don
Frederic, with a force of four thousand
picked men, established himself at Saint
Florian, a village near the Havre gate
of the city, while the Prince had encam-
ped at Hermigny, within half a
league of the same place, whence he
attempted to introduce reinforcements
into the town. On the night of the
11th and 12th, Don Frederic hazarded
an *encamisada* upon the enemy's camp,
which proved eminently successful, and
had nearly resulted in the capture of
the Prince himself. A chosen band of
six hundred arquebusiers, attired, as
was customary in these nocturnal ex-
peditions, with their shirts outside
their armour, that they might recog-
nise each other in the darkness, were
led by Julian Romero, within the lines
of the enemy. The sentinels were cut
down, the whole army surprised, and
for a moment powerless, while, for two
hours long, from one o'clock in the
morning until three, the Spaniards
butchered their foes, hardly aroused
from their sleep, ignorant of how
small a force they had been thus sud-
denly surprised, and unable in the con-
fusion to distinguish between friend
and foe. The boldest, led by Julian
in person, made at once for the Prince's
tent. His guards and himself were in
profound sleep, but a small spaniel,
who always passed the night upon his
bed, was a more faithful sentinel. The
creature sprang forward, barking fur-
iously at the sound of hostile footsteps,
and scratching his master's face with
his paws. There was but just time
for the Prince to mount a horse which
was ready saddled, and to effect his
escape through the darkness, before
his enemies sprang into the tent. His
servants were cut down, his master of
the horse and two of his secretaries,
who gained their saddles a moment
later, all lost their lives; and for the
little dog's watchfulness, William
of Orange, upon whose shoulders the
whole weight of his country's fortunes
depended, would have been led within
a week to an ignominious death. To
his dying day, the Prince ever after-
wards kept a spaniel of the same race
in his bed-chamber. The midnight
slaughter still continued, but the Span-
iards in their fury, set fire to the tents.
The glare of the conflagration shewed
the Orangists by how paltry a force
they had been surprised. Before they
could rally, however, Romero led off

---

1 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1158.
2 Ibid.
5 Hooff, vii. 204.
6 Ibid., vii. 263. In the statues of the
Prince, a little dog is frequently sculptured
at his feet.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1572.

The massacre did not alter the plans of the Prince; for those plans had already been frustrated. The whole honor of his enterprise had been destroyed in an instant by the massacre of St. Bartholomew. He retreated to Picardy and Nivelles, an assassin named Heist, a German, by birth, but a French chevalier, following him secretly in his camp, pledged to take his life for a large reward promised by Alva—an enterprise not destined, however, to be successful. The soldiers flatly refused to remain an hour longer in the field, or even to furnish an escort for Count Louis, if, by chance, he could be brought out of the town.

The Prince was obliged to inform his brother of the desperate state of his affairs, and to advise him to capitulate on the best terms which he could make. With a heavy heart, he left the chivalrous Louis besieged in the city which he had so gallantly captured, and took his way across the Meuse towards the Rhine. A furious mutiny broke out among his troops. His life was, with difficulty, saved from the brutal soldiers infuriated at his inability to pay them, except in the overdue securities of the Holland cities—by the exertions of the officers who still regarded him with veneration and affection. Crossing the Rhine at Orsay, he disbanded his army and betook himself, almost alone, to Holland.

Yet even in this hour of distress and defeat, the Prince seemed more heroic than many a conqueror in his day of triumph. With all his hopes blasted, with the whole fabric of his country's fortunes shattered by the colossal crime of his royal ally, he never lost his confidence in himself nor his unaltering trust in God. All the cities which, but a few weeks before, had so eagerly raised his standard, now fell off at once. He went to Holland, the only province which remained true, and which still looked up to him as its saviour, but he went thither expecting and prepared to perish. "There will make my sepulture," was his simple and sublime expression in a private letter to his brother.

He had advanced to the rescue of Louis, with city after city opening its arms to receive him. He had expected to be joined on the march by Coligny, at the head of a chosen army, and he was now obliged to leave his brother to his fate, having the massacre of the Admiral and his confederates substituted for their expected army of assistance, and with every city and every province forsaking his cause as eagerly as they had so lately embraced it. "It has pleased God," he said, "to take away every hope which we could have founded upon man; the King has published that the massacre was by his orders, and has forbidden all his subjects, upon pain of death, to assist me; he has, moreover, sent succour to Alva. Had it not been for this, we had been masters of the Duke, and should have made him capitulate at our pleasure." Yet even then he was not cast down.

Nor was his political sagacity liable to impeachment by the extent to which he had been thus deceived by the French court. "So far from being reprehensible that I did not suspect such a crime," he said, "I should rather bechargeable with malignity had I been capable of so sinister a suspicion. 'Tis not an ordinary thing to conceal such enormous deliberations.
Meeting of Count Louis and Don Frederic.

under the plausible cover of a marriage festival." 1

Meanwhile, Count Louis lay confined to his couch with a burning fever. His soldiers refused any longer to hold the city, now that the altered intentions of Charles IX. were known 2 and the forces of Orange withdrawn. Alva offered the most honourable conditions, and it was therefore impossible for the Count to make longer resistance. The city was so important, and time was at that moment so valuable, that the Duke was willing to forego his vengeance upon the rebel whom he so cordially detested, and to be satisfied with depriving him of the prize which he had seized with such audacity. "It would have afforded me sincere pleasure," wrote the Duke, "over and above the benefit to God and your Majesty, to have had the Count of Nassau in my power. I would overlap every obstacle to seize him, such is the particular hatred which I bear the man." 3 

Under the circumstances, however, he acknowledged that the result of the council of war could only be to grant liberal terms.

On the 19th September, accordingly, articles of capitulation were signed between the distinguished De la Noue with three others on the one part, and the Seigneur de Noircarmes and three others on the side of Spain. The town was given over to Alva, but all the soldiers were to go out with their weapons and property. Those of the townsmen who had borne arms against his Majesty, and all who still held to the Reformed religion, were to retire with the soldiery. The troops were to pledge themselves not to serve in future against the Kings of France or Spain, but from this provision Louis,

1 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, etc., iii. 501-507.
2 Ibid. Vie De la Noue, 75.
3 Letter of Alva to Philippe II. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1169.
5 "So hatten auch Don Frederico, le grand Prieur gemacht (which he certainly was not, however) und der Herzog de Medina Celi mit sonder ehrerbietung Graf Ludwig in dem Albanischen Lager selbst persönlich

with his English and German soldiers, was expressly excepted, the Count indignantly repudiating the idea of such a pledge, or of discontinuing his hostilities for an instant. It was also agreed that convoys should be furnished, and hostages exchanged, for the due observance of the terms of the treaty. The preliminaries having been thus settled, the patriot forces abandoned the town. 4

Count Louis, rising from his sickbed, paid his respects in person to the victorious generals, at their request. He was received in Alva's camp with an extraordinary show of admiration and esteem. The Duke of Medina Coeli overwhelmed him with courtesies and "basolomano," while Don Frederic assured him, in the high-flown language of Spanish compliment, that there was nothing which he would not do to serve him, and that he would take a greater pleasure in executing his slightest wish than if he had been his next of kin. 5

As the Count next day, still suffering with fever, and attired in his long dressing-gown, was taking his departure from the city, he ordered his carriage to stop at the entrance to Don Frederic's quarters. That general, who had been standing incognito near the door, gazing with honest admiration at the hero of so many a hard-fought field, withdrew as he approached, that he might not give the invalid the trouble of alighting. 6 Louis, however, recognizing him, addressed him with the Spanish salutation, "Perdone nuestra Señora la piedad," and paused at the gate. 7 Don Frederic, from politeness to his condition, did not present himself, but sent an aide-de-camp to express his compliments and good wishes. Having exchanged

an gesprochen und haben den Don Fed. viel basolomanos gemacht und unter andern sich erbotten wo er Graf Ludwigs freundschaft und angenehmen willen warte zu erzeigen wissen, soll sein Gnad: sich das zu ihm gewisslich versehen das er solchs so gem und willig thun wolte als ob er S. Gn. nechster verwandter ware."—Schwartz to Landgrave Will. of Hesse. Appendix to vol. iv. Archives de la Maison d'Orange, 17. 7 Hoofd, vii. 265.

6 Arch. de la Maison d'Orange, iii. 515, 518.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

Louis left the city, conveyed, as had been agreed upon, by a guard of Spanish troops. There was a deep meaning in the respect with which the Spanish generals had treated the rebel chieftain. Although the massacre of Saint Bartholomew met with Alva’s entire approbation, yet it was his cue to affect a holy horror at the event, and he avowed that he would “rather cut off both his hands than be guilty of such a deed.”

—as if those hangman’s hands had the right to protest against any murder, however wholesale. Count Louis suspected at once, and soon afterwards thoroughly understood, the real motives of the chivalrous treatment which he had received.

He well knew that these very men would have sent him to the scaffold, had he fallen into their power, and he therefore estimated their courtesy at its proper value.

It was distinctly stated, in the capitulation of the city, that all the soldiers, as well as such of the inhabitants as had borne arms, should be allowed to leave the city, with all their property. The rest of the people, it was agreed, might remain without molestation to their persons or estates.

It has been the general opinion of historians that the articles of this convention were maintained by the conquerors in good faith.

Never was a more signal error. The capitulation was made late at night, on the 30th September, without the provision which Charles IX. had hoped for: the massacre, namely, of De la Noue and his companions. As for Genlis, and those who had been taken prisoners at his defeat, their doom had already been sealed. The city was evacuated on the 21st September. Alva entered it upon the 24th.

Most of the volunteers departed with the garrison, but many who had, most unfortunately, prolonged their farewells to their families, trusting to the word of the Spanish Captain Molinos, were thrown into prison.

Noirarmes, the butcher of Valenciennes, now made his appearance in Mons. As grand bailiff of Hainault, he came to the place as one in authority, and his deeds were now to complete the infamy which must for ever surround his name. In brutal violation of the terms upon which the town had surrendered, he now set about the work of massacre and pillage. A Commission of Troubles, in close imitation of the famous Blood Council at Brussels, was established, the members of the tribunal being appointed by Noirarmes, and all being inhabitants of the town. The council commenced proceedings by condemning all the volunteers, although expressly included in the capitulation. Their wives and children were all banished; their property all confiscated. On the 15th December, the executions commenced. The intrepid De Leste, silk manufacturer, who had commanded a band of volunteers, and sustained during the siege the assaults of Alva’s troops with remarkable courage at a very critical moment, was one of the earliest victims.

In consideration “that he was a gentleman, and not among the most malicious,” he was executed by sword. In respect that he heard the mass, and made a sweet and Catholic end,” it was allowed that he should be “buried in consecrated earth.” Many others followed in quick succession. Some were beheaded, some were hanged, some were burned alive. All who had borne arms or

---

1 Letter of Louis of Nassau to Charles IX. (1st June 1572). Groen v. Prins., Archives de la Maison, etc., v. 85, &c. seq. The letter is taken from the Archives of Simancas.

2 Et que c’est la seule cause de la courteisie et fidelite dont le Duc d’Albe a use envers le Comte à la prise de la ville de Monta; comme il a depuis quitte a plusieurs que c’est pour montrer qu’il ne voudroit pas avoir fait ung si mechant acte qu’avoir fait le Roy de France.” &c. &c. —Ibid.

3 Mendoza, vil. 157vo, 158vo. Bor, vil. 408, 409.

4 Bor, Le Petit, Guicciardini, et al.

5 Mons; sous les Rapports Historiques et Statistiques, etc., par P. Paridaens (Mons, 1819), 77, seq.

6 Paridaens, 77-87.

7 Ibid.

8 Sentence against Pierre de Leste apud Alteyne — Une Succursale au Tribunal de Sang, 113, note 8.

9 Ibid. —“ En consideration de sa belles fin, douce et catholique avec grande reconnois-
sance et repentance, Monsq. de Vaulx accorda la terre sainte et son corps porté
aux cordeliers.”
1572.]

Confiscation and Murder. 45

He desired the estate of François de Glarges, Seigneur d’Ealesmes. The gentleman had committed no offence of any kind, and, moreover, lived beyond the French frontier. Nevertheless, in contempt of international law, the neighbouring territory was invaded, and d’Ealesmes dragged before the blood tribunal of Mons. Noirarmes had drawn up beforehand, in his own handwriting, both the terms of the accusation and of the sentence. The victim was innocent and a Catholic, but he was rich. He confessed to have been twice at the preaching, from curiosity, and to have omitted taking the sacrament at the previous Easter. For these offences he was beheaded, and his confiscated estate adjudged at an almost nominal price to the secretary of Noirarmes, bidding for his master.10 "You can do me no greater pleasure," wrote Noirarmes to the council, "than to make quick work with all these rebels, and to proceed with the confiscation of their estates, real and personal. Don’t fail to put all those to the torture out of whom anything can be got."11

Notwithstanding the unexampled docility of the commissioners, they found it difficult to extract from their redoubted chief a reasonable share in the wages of blood. They did not scruple, therefore, to display their own infamy, and to enumerate their own crimes, in order to justify their demand for higher salaries. "Consider," they said, in a petition to this end, "consider closely all that is odious in our office, and the great number of banishments and of executions which we have pronounced among all our own relations and friends."12

1 Paridaens. Sentence du 6ème Mars 1573, et autres.
2 Altmeier, 120, from the Archives Judiciaires de Hainaut. Régistre contenant les sentences criminelles.
3 Ibid.
4 Sentences du 6ème Mars 1573, et autres, apud Paridaens, 82.
5 Paridaens.
6 Ibid., Sentences du 6ème Mars, et autres.
8 Ibid.
9 Ibid., 94. Lettres aux Commissaires des 1er Juin et 24ème Nov. 1573.
11 Altmeier, 115, from the Archives de Hainaut.
12 "Considérer de près tout l’odieux de notre charge et le grand nombre de banishments et d’exécutions que nous avons prononcées au milieu de tous nos parents et amis."—Lettres des Commissaires du 2ème Juin 1573; apud Paridaens, 86; from the Greffe de Mons.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

It may be added, moreover, as a slight palliation for the enormous crimes committed by these men, that, becoming at last weary of their business, they urged Noirarmes to desist from the work of proscription. Longehaye, one of the commissioners, even waited upon him personally, with a plea for mercy in favour of “the poor people, even beggars, who, although having borne arms during the siege, might then be pardoned.” Noirarmes, in a rage at the proposition, said that “if he did not know the commissioners to be honest men, he should believe that their palms had been oiled,” and forbade any farther words on the subject. When Longehaye still ventured to speak in favour of certain persons “who were very poor and simple, not charged with duplicity, and good Catholics besides,” he fared no better. “Away with you!” cried Noirarmes in a great fury, adding that he had already written to have execution done upon the whole of them. “Whereupon,” said poor blood-councillor Longehaye, in his letter to his colleagues, “I retired, I leave you to guess how.”

Thus the work went on day after day, month after month. Till the 27th August of the following year (1572) the executioner never rested; and when Requesens, successor to Alva, caused the prisons of Mons to be opened, there were found still seventy-five individuals condemned to the block, and awaiting their fate.

It is the most dreadful commentary upon the times in which these transactions occurred, that they could sink so soon into oblivion. The culprits took care to hide the records of their guilt, while succeeding horrors, on a more extensive scale, at other places, effaced the memory of all these comparatively obscure murders and spoliations. The prosperity of Mons, one of the most flourishing and wealthy manufacturing towns in the Netherlands, was annihilated, but there were so many cities in the same condition that its misery was hardly remarkable. Nevertheless, in our own days, the fall of a mouldering tower in the ruined Chateau de Naast at last revealed the archives of all these crimes. How the documents came to be placed there remains a mystery, but they have at last been brought to light.

The Spaniards had thus recovered Mons, by which event the temporary revolution throughout the whole Southern Netherlands was at an end. The keys of that city unlocked the gates of every other in Brabant and Flanders. The towns which had so lately embraced the authority of Orange now hastened to disavow the Prince, and to return to their ancient, hypocritical, and cowardly allegiance. The new oaths of fidelity were in general accepted by Alva, but the beautiful archiepiscopal city of Mechlin was selected for an example and a sacrifice.

There were heavy arrears due to the Spanish troops. To indemnify them, and to make good his blasphemous prophecy of Divine chastisement for its past misdeeds, Alva now abandoned this town to the licence of his soldiery. By his command, Don Frederic advanced to the gates, and demanded its surrender. He was answered by a few shots from the garrison. Those cowardly troops, however, having thus plunged the city still more deeply into the disgrace which, in Alva’s eyes, they had incurred by receiving rebels within their walls after having but just before refused admittance to the Spanish forces, decamped during the night, and left the place defenceless.

Early next morning there issued from the gates a solemn procession of priests, with banner and crozier, followed by a long and suppliant throng of citizens, who attempted by this
1572.] Indiscriminate Destruction. 47
demonstration to avert the wrath of the victor. While the penitent psalms were resounding, the soldiers were busily engaged in heaping dried branches and rubbish into the masts. Before the religious exercises were concluded, thousands had forced the gates or climbed the walls, and entered the city with a celerity which only the hope of rapine could inspire. The sack instantly commenced. The property of friend and foe, of Papist and Calvinist, was indiscriminately rifled. Everything was dismantled and destroyed. “Hardly a nail,” said a Spaniard, writing soon afterwards from Brussels, “was left standing in the walls.” The troops seemed to imagine themselves in a Turkish town, and wreaked the Divine vengeance which Alva had denounced upon the city with an energy which met with his fervent applause. 1

Three days long the horrible scene continued, one day for the benefit of the Spaniards, two more for that of the Walloons and Germans. All the churches, monasteries, religious houses of every kind, were completely sacked. Every valuable article which they contained, the ornaments of altars, the reliquaries, chalices, embroidered curtains, and carpets of velvet or damask, the golden robes of the priests, the repositories of the host, the precious vessels of chiasm and extreme unction, the rich clothing and jewellery adorning the effigies of the Holy Virgin, all were indiscriminately rifled by the Spanish soldiers. The holy wafers were trampled underfoot, the sacramental wine was poured upon the ground, and, in brief, all the horrors which had been committed by the iconoclasts in their wildest moments, and for a thousandth part of which enormities heretics had been burned in droves, were now repeated in Mechlin by the especial soldiers of Christ, by Roman Catholics who had been sent to the Netherlands to avenge the insults offered to the Roman Catholic faith. The motive, too, which inspired the sacrilegious crew was not fanaticism, but the desire of plunder. The property of Romanists was taken as freely as that of Calvinists, of which sect there were, indeed, but few in the archiepiscopal city. Cardinal Granvelle’s house was rifled. The pauper funds deposited in the convents were not respected. The beds were taken from beneath sick and dying women, whether lady abbess or hospital patient, that the sacking might be torn to pieces in search of hidden treasure. 2

The iconoclasts of 1566 had destroyed millions of property for the sake of an idea, but they had appropriated nothing. Moreover, they had scarcely injured a human being: confining their wrath to graven images. The Spaniards at Mechlin spared neither man nor woman. The murders and outrages would be incredible, were they not attested by most respectable Catholic witnesses. Men were butchered in their houses, in the streets, at the altars. Women were violated by hundreds in churches and in grave-yards. 3 Moreover, the deed had been as deliberately arranged as it was thoroughly performed. It was sanctioned by the highest authority. Don Frederic, son of Alva, and General Noirarmes were both present at the scene, and applications were in vain respectez les repositoires et cyboires où estoyent les saintes hosties et précieux corps de notre seigneur et redempteur, ny les vaissiaux des saint chresme et extrêmes unctions, qui ont esté ravis par les soldats Espagnols — tiré déhors le ciboire, goutant en terre les saintes hosties,” etc., etc.

“Et y a la mator des noires-sceurs ha perdu 6 florins de son espargne — et par-dessus ha esté tiré à la dicte mator, gisant malade, son lic de dessous elle; comme aussi ha est fait avec infinité de femmes accouchées et d’autres avortées et de ma-lades.” — Discours, etc., 409.

1 Bor. vi. 406. Hoofd, vil. 206, 207. Correspondance de Philippe II., li. 1185. “Bref il n’y a eut égale, ny monastere, soit d’hommes ou de femmes, hospital ny lieu sacré auquel l’on aye porté respect, que tout n’aye esté sacqué jusques aux lianges et deniers d’espargne des povres.” — Discours du Pillage de Malines, 2me Octobre 1572, p. 409; apud Willemsa. Mengelingen van historisch-waereldsten inboum (Antwerpen, 1587—1820). The author of this contemporary account was a citizen of Mechlin, and a Catholic.

2 Discours du Pillage de Malines, 2me Octobre 1572, 406, 407. “Voizres ne ont esté
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

made to them that the havoc might be stayed. "They were seen whispering to each other in the ear on their arrival," says an eye-witness and a Catholic, "and it is well known that the affair had been resolved upon the preceding day. The two continued together as long as they remained in the city." The work was, in truth, fully accomplished. The ultra-Catholic, Jean Richardot, member of the Grand Council, and nephew of the Bishop of Arras, informed the State Council that the sack of Mechlin had been so horrible that the poor and unfortunate mothers had not a single morsel of bread to put in the mouths of their children, who were dying before their eyes—so insane and cruel had been the avarice of the plunderers. "He could say more," he added, "if his hair did not stand on end, not only at recounting, but even at remembering the scene." 1

Three days long the city was abandoned to that trinity of furies which ever wait upon War's footsteps—Murder, Lust, and Rapine—under whose promptings human beings become so much more terrible than the most ferocious beasts. In his letter to his master, the Duke congratulated him upon these foul proceedings as upon a pious deed well accomplished. He thought it necessary, however, to excuse himself before the public in a document, which justified the sack of Mechlin by its refusal to accept his garrison a few months before, and by the shots which had been discharged at his troops as they approached the city. 2

For these offences, and by his express order, the deed was done. Upon his head must the guilt for ever rest. 3

CHAPTER VIII.

Affairs in Holland and Zealand—Siege of Tergoes by the patriots—Importance of the place—Difficulty of relieving it—Its position—Audacious plan for sending succour across the "Drowned Land"—Brilliant and successful expedition of Mondragon—The siege raised—Horrible sack of Zutphen—Base conduct of Count Van den Berg—Refusal of Naarden to surrender—Subsequent unsuccessful deputation to make terms with Don Frederic—Don Frederic before Naarden—Treachery of Romero—The Spaniards admitted—General massacre of the garrison and burghers—The city burned to the ground—Warm reception of Orange in Holland—Secret negotiations with the Estates—Desperate character of the struggle between Spain and the provinces—Don Frederic in Amsterdam—Plans for reducing Holland—Skirmish on the ice at Amsterdam—Preparation in Harlem for the expected siege—Description of the city—Early operations—Complete investment—Numbers of besiegers and besieged—Mutual barbarities—Determined repulse of the first assault—Failure of Batensburg's expedition—Cruelties in city and camp—Mining and countermining—Second assault victoriously repelled—Suffering and disease in Harlem—Disposition of Don Frederic to retire—Memorable rebuke by Alva—Efforts of Orange to relieve the place—Songy's expedition—Exploit of John Haring—Cruel execution of prisoners on both sides—Quiryn Dinkzoon and his family put to death in the city—Plots upon the lake—Defeat of the patriot armed—Dreadful suffering and starvation in the city—Parley with the besiegers—Despair of the city—Appeal to Orange—Expedition under Batensburg to relieve the city—His defeat and death—Desperate condition of Harlem—Its surrender at discretion—Sanguinary executions—General massacre—Expense of the victory in blood and money—Joy of Phillip the news.

While thus Brabant and Flanders were scourged back to the chains

1 D'Argens, etc., 411, 412, 424. 2 Letter of Jean Richardot, apud Receard; Rapport au Ministre de l'Intérieur sur les Archives de Lille, 284, 285, 410. 3 Ver. 4, 410, 297. 4 Ibid. 50, 185, 286, 287.—Compare Bentivoglio, vi. 114. Mendoza, vi. 161. The latter historian endeavours to exonerate the Duke, by imputing all the blame to the insubordination of his soldiers. Unfortunately the Commander which they had so recently broken, the affairs of the Prince of Orange letters shew that he had deliberately ordered the sack, and was highly satisfied with the faithful manner in which it was accomplished: "donde quedaba (los soldados) al presente executando el castigo que évidentemente parece que Dios ha sido servido darle." With the blasphemy customary upon such occasions, the Almighty was, of course, represented as the chief perpetrator and instigator of these diabolical crimes—Vide Correspondance de Philippe II, ii. 1165.
were not improving in Zealand. Never was a twelvemonth so marked by contradictory fortune, never were the promises of a spring followed by such blight and disappointment in autumn than in the memorable year 1572. On the island of Walcheren, Middelburg and Arnemuiden still held for the King—Campveer and Flushing for the Prince of Orange. On the island of South Beveland, the city of Goes or Tergoes was still stoutly defended by a small garrison of Spanish troops. As long as the place held out, the city of Middelburg could be maintained. Should that important city fall, the Spaniards would lose all hold upon Walcheren and the province of Zeeland.

Jerome de Zeracter, a brave, faithful, but singularly unlucky officer, commanded for the Prince in Walcheren. He had attempted by various hastily planned expeditions to give employment to his turbulent soldiery, but fortune had refused to smile upon his efforts. He had laid siege to Middelburg and failed. He had attempted Tergoes and had been compelled ingloriously to retreat. The citizens of Flushing, on his return, had shut the gates of the town in his face, and for several days refused to admit him or his troops. To retrieve this disgrace, which had sprung rather from the insubordination of his followers and the dislike which they bore his person than from any want of courage or conduct on his part, he now assembled a force of seven thousand men, marched again to Tergoes, and upon the 26th of August laid siege to the place in form. The garrison was very insufficient, and although they conducted themselves with great bravery, it was soon evident that unless reinforced they must yield. With their overthrow it was obvious that the Spaniards would lose the important maritime province of Zealand, and the Duke accordingly ordered D'Avila, who commanded in Antwerp, to throw succour into Tergoes without delay.

Attempts were made, by sea and by land, to this effect, but were all unsuccessful. The Zealander commanded the waters with their fleet, and were too much at home among those gulfs and shallows not to be more than a match for their enemies. Baffled in their attempt to relieve the town by water or by land, the Spaniards conceived an amphibious scheme. Their plan led to one of the most brilliant feats of arms which distinguishes the history of this war.

The Scheld, flowing past the city of Antwerp and separating the provinces of Flanders and Brabant, opens wide its two arms in nearly opposite directions, before it joins the sea. Between these two arms lie the isles of Zealand, half floating upon, half submerged by the waves. The town of Tergoes was the chief city of South Beveland, the most important part of this archipelago, but South Beveland had not always been an island. Fifty years before, a tempest, one of the most violent recorded in the stormy annals of that exposed country, had overthrown all barriers, the waters of the German Ocean, lashed by a succession of north winds, having been driven upon the low coast of Zealand more rapidly than they could be carried off through the narrow straits of Dover. The dykes of the island had burst, the ocean had swept over the land, hundreds of villages had been overwhelmed, and a tract of country torn from the province and buried for ever beneath the sea. This "Drowned Land," as it is called, now separated the island from the main. At low tide it was, however, possible for experienced pilots to ford the estuary, which had usurped the place of the land. The average depth was between four and five feet at low water, while the tide rose and fell at least ten feet; the bottom was muddy and treacherous, and it was moreover traversed by three living streams or channels, always much too deep to be fordable.

---

1 Bor, vi. 392.
2 Ibid., vi. 394.
3 Ibid.
5 "Verdroten Land."—Bor, vi. 394.
6 Bor, Hooff, Mendoza, Bentivoglio, etc., etc.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

Captain Plommaert, a Fleming of great experience and bravery, warmly attached to the King's cause, conceived the plan of sending reinforcements across this drowned district to the city of Tergoes. Accompanied by two peasants of the country, well acquainted with the track, he twice accomplished the dangerous and difficult passage, which, from dry land to dry land, was nearly ten English miles in length. Having thus satisfied himself as to the possibility of the enterprise, he laid his plan before the Spanish colonel, Mondragon.

That courageous veteran eagerly embraced the proposal, examined the ground, and after consultation with Sancho d'Avila, resolved in person to lead an expedition along the path suggested by Plommaert. Three thousand picked men, a thousand from each nation, Spaniards, Walloons, and Germans, were speedily and secretly assembled at Bergen op Zoom, from the neighbourhood of which city, at a place called Aggier, it was necessary that the expedition should set forth. A quantity of sacks were provided, in which a supply of biscuit and of powder was placed, one to be carried by each soldier upon his head. Although it was already late in the autumn, the weather was propitious; the troops not yet informed as to the secret enterprise for which they had been selected, were already assembled at the edge of the water, and Mondragon, who, notwithstanding his age, had resolved upon heading the hazardous expedition, now briefly, on the evening of the 28th October, explained to them the nature of the service. His statement of the dangers which they were about to encounter rather inflamed than diminished their ardour. Their enthusiasm became unbounded, as he described the importance of the city which they were about to save, and alluded to the glory which would be won by those who thus courageously came forward to its rescue. The time of about half ebb-tide having arrived, the veteran, preceded only by the guides and Plommaert, plunged gaily into the waves, followed by his army, almost in single file. The water was never lower than the breast, often higher than the shoulder. The distance to the island, three and a half leagues at least, was to be accomplished within, at most, six hours, or the rising tide would overwhelm them for ever. And thus, across the quaking and uncertain slime, which often refused them a footing, that adventurous band, five hours long, pursued their midnight march, sometimes swimming for their lives, and always struggling with the waves which every instant threatened to engulf them.

Before the tide had risen to more than half-flood, before the day had dawned, the army set foot on dry land again, at the village of IJSeken. Of the whole three thousand, only nine unlucky individuals had been drowned; so much had courage and discipline availed in that dark and perilous passage through the very bottom of the sea. The Duke of Alva might well pronounce it one of the most brilliant and original achievements in the annals of war. The beacon fires were immediately lighted upon the shore, as agreed upon, to inform Sancho d'Avila, who was anxiously awaiting the result at Bergen op Zoom, of the safe arrival of the troops. A brief repose was then allowed. At the approach of daylight, they set forth from IJSeken, which lay about four leagues from Tergoes. The news that a Spanish army had thus arisen from the depths of the sea, flew before them as they marched. The besieging force commanded the water with their fleet, the land with their army; yet had these indomitable Spaniards found a path which was neither land nor water, and had thus stolen upon them in the silence of night. A panic preceded them as they fell upon a foe much superior in number to their own forces. It was impossible for 't Zerarts to induce his soldiers to offer resistance.

---

1 Hoofd, vi. 270, 271. Bentivoglio, vi. 3.
2 Bentivoglio, vi. 112.
3 Bor, vi. 394.
4 Bentivoglio, Mendoza, Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup. Meteren, iv. 76, 77.
5 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1179.
The patriot army fled precipitately and ignominiously to their ships, hotly pursued by the Spaniards, who overtook and destroyed the whole of their rear-guard before they could embark. This done, the gallant little garrison which had so successfully held the city, was reinforced with the courageous veterans who had come to their relief. His audacious project thus brilliantly accomplished, the "good old Mondragon," as his soldiers called him, returned to the province of Brabant.

After the capture of Mons and the sack of Mechlin, the Duke of Alva had taken his way to Nimwegen, having despatched his son, Don Frederic, to reduce the northern and eastern country, which was only too ready to submit to the conqueror. Very little resistance was made by any of the cities which had so recently, and with such enthusiasm, embraced the cause of Orange. Zutphen attempted a feeble opposition to the entrance of the King's troops, and received a dreadful chastisement in consequence. Alva sent orders to his son to leave not a single man alive in the city, and to burn every house to the ground. The Duke's command was almost literally obeyed. Don Frederic entered Zutphen, and without a moment's warning put the whole garrison to the sword. The citizens next fell a defenceless prey; some being stabbed in the streets, some hanged on the trees which decorated the city, some stripped stark naked, and turned out into the fields to freeze to death in the wintry night. As the work of death became too fatiguing for the butchers, five hundred innocentburghers were tied two and two, back to back, and drowned like dogs in the river Yssel. A few stragglers who had contrived to elude pursuit at first, were afterwards taken from their hiding places, and hung upon the gallows by the feet, some of which victims suffered four days and nights of agony before death came to their relief. It is superfluous to add that the outrages upon women were no less universal in Zutphen than they had been in every city captured or occupied by the Spanish troops. These horrors continued till scarcely chastity or life remained, throughout the miserable city.

This attack and massacre had been so suddenly executed, that assistance would hardly have been possible, even if there had been disposition to render it. There was, however, no such disposition. The whole country was already cowering again, except the provinces of Holland and Zeeland. No one dared approach, even to learn what had occurred within the walls of the town, for days after its doom had been accomplished. "A wail of agony was heard above Zutphen last Sunday," wrote Count Nieuwener, "a sound as of a mighty massacre, but we know not what has taken place."

Count Van den Bergh, another brother-in-law of Orange, proved himself signal against the illustrious race to which he was allied. He had, in the earlier part of the year, received the homage of the cities of Gelderland and Overijssel, on behalf of the patriot Prince. He now basely abandoned the field where he had endeavoured to gather laurels while the sun of success had been shining. Having written from Kampen, whither he had retired, that he meant to hold the city to the last gasp, he immediately afterwards fled secretly and precipitately from the country. In his flight he was plundered by his own people, while his wife, Mary of Nassau, then far advanced in pregnancy, was left behind, disguised as a peasant girl, in an obscure village.

1 "El bueno viejo Mondragon."—Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1179.
2 Bentivoglio, Bor., Mendoza, Hoofd, Meteor, ubi sup.
3 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1180.
5 Meteor, iv. 78.—Compare Mendoza, viii. 172, and Bentivoglio, vi. 114, who glides rapidly over these scenes of horror with a smoothness all his own.
6 "'Aussi dict on que dimanche passé on a ouy ung grand jammergeschrey et tuerie dedans Zutien, mais on ne sait ce que c'est."—Comte Nieuwencr to Louis of Nassau. Archives de la Maison d'Orange, etc. iv. 28.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

With the flight of Van den Bergh, all the cities which, under his guidance, had raised the standard of Orange, deserted the cause at once. Friesland, too, where Robles obtained a victory over six thousand patriots, again submitted to the yoke. But if the ancient heart of the free Frisians was beating thus feebly, there was still spirit left among their brethren on the other side of the Zuyder Zee. It was not while William of Orange was within her borders, nor while her sister provinces had proved recreant to him, that Holland would follow their base example. No rebellion being left, except in the north-western extremities of the Netherlands, Don Frederic was ordered to proceed from Zutphen to Amsterdam, thence to undertake the conquest of Holland. The little city of Naarden, on the coast of the Zuyder Zee, lay in his path, and had not yet formally submitted. On the 22d of November, a company of one hundred troopers was sent to the city gates to demand its surrender. The small garrison which had been left by the Prince was not disposed to resist, but the spirit of the burghers was stouter than their walls. They answered the summons by a declaration that they had thus far held the city for the King and the Prince of Orange, and, with God’s help, would continue so to do. As the horsemen departed with this reply, a lunatic, called Adrian Kranthoef, mounted the ramparts, and discharged a culverine among them. No man was injured, but the words of defiance, and the shot fired by a madman’s hand, were destined to be fearfully answered.

Meanwhile, the inhabitants of the place, which was at best far from strong, and ill provided with arms, ammunition, or soldiers, despatched importunate messages to Sonoy, and to other patriot generals nearest to them, soliciting reinforcements. Their messengers came back almost empty-handed. They brought a little powder and a great many promises, but not a single man-at-arms, not a ducat, not a piece of artillery. The most influential commanders, moreover, advised an honourable capitulation, if it were still possible. Thus baffled, the burghers of the little city found their proud position quite untenable. They accordingly, on the 1st of December, despatched the burgomaster and a senator to Amersfoort, to make terms, if possible, with Don Frederic. When these envoys reached the place, they were refused admission to the general’s presence. The army had already been ordered to move forward to Naarden, and they were directed to accompany the advance guard, and to expect their reply at the gates of their own city. This command was sufficiently ominous. The impression which it made upon them was confirmed by the warning voices of their friends in Amersfoort, who entreated them not to return to Naarden. The advice was not lost upon one of the two envoys. After they had advanced a little distance on their journey, the burgomaster, Laurenszoon, slid privately out of the sledge in which they were travelling, leaving his cloak behind him. "Adieu; I think I will not venture back to Naarden at present," said he calmly, as he abandoned his companion to his fate. The other, who could not so easily desert his children, his wife, and his fellow-citizens in the hour of danger, went forward as calmly to share in their impending doom.

The army reached Bussem, half a league distant from Naarden, in the evening. Here Don Frederic established his headquarters, and proceeded to invest the city. Senator Gerrit was then directed to return to Naarden, and to bring out a more numerous deputation on the following morning, duly empowered to surrender the place. The envoy accordingly returned next day, accompanied by Lambert Hortensius, rector of a Latin academy, together with four other citizens. Before this deputation had reached Bussem, they were met by Julian Romero, who informed them

---

1 Bor. vi. 417.
2 Ibid.
4 "Adieu, ik kom niet weder binnen Naarden voor dit pas."—Bor. vi. 417.
that he was commissioned to treat with them on the part of Don Frederic. He demanded the keys of the city, and gave the deputation a solemn pledge that the lives and property of all the inhabitants should be sacredly respected. To attest this assurance, Don Julian gave his hand three several times to Lambert Hortensius. A soldier's word thus plighted, the commissioners, without exchanging any written documents, surrendered the keys, and immediately afterwards accompanied Romero into the city, who was soon followed by five or six hundred musketeers.  

To give these guests a hospitable reception, all the housewives of the city at once set about preparing for a sumptuous feast, to which the Spaniards did ample justice, while the colonel and his officers were entertained by Senator Gerrit at his own house. As soon as this conviviality had come to an end, Romero, accompanied by his host, walked into the square. The great bell had been meantime ringing, and the citizens had been summoned to assemble in the Gast Huis Church, then used as a town hall. In the course of a few minutes five hundred had entered the building, and stood quietly awaiting whatever measures might be offered for their deliberation. Suddenly a priest, who had been pacing to and fro before the church door, entered the building, and bade them all prepare for death; but the announcement, the preparation, and the death, were simultaneous. The door was flung open, and a band of armed Spaniards rushed across the sacred threshold. They fired a single volley upon the defenseless herd, and then sprang in upon them with sword and dagger. A yell of despair arose as the miserable victims saw how hopelessly they were engaged, and beheld the ferocious faces of their butchers. The carnage within that narrow space was compact and rapid. Within a few minutes all were despatched, and among them Senator Gerrit, from whose table the Spanish commander had but just risen. The church was then set on fire, and the dead and dying were consumed to ashes together.  

Infamed but not satiated, the Spaniards then rushed into the streets, thirsty for fresh horrors. The houses were all rifled of their contents, and men were forced to carry the booty to the camp, who were then struck dead as their reward. The town was then fired in every direction, that the skulking citizens might be forced from their hiding-places. As fast as they came forth they were put to death by their impatient foes. Some were pierced with rapiers, some were chopped to pieces with axes, some were surrounded in the blazing streets by troops of laughing soldiers, intoxicated, not with wine but with blood, who tossed them to and fro with their lances, and derived a wild amusement from their dying agonies. Those who attempted resistance were crimped alive like fishes, and left to gasp themselves to death in lingering torture. The soldiers becoming more and more insane, as the foul work went on, opened the veins of some of their victims, and drank their blood as if it were wine. Some of the burghers were for a time spared, that they might witness the violation of their wives and daughters, and were then butchered in company with these still more unfortunate victims. Miracles of brutality were accomplished. Neither church nor hearth was sacred. Men were slain, women outraged at the altars, in the streets, in their blazing homes. The life of Lambert Hortensius was spared, out of regard to his learning and genius, but he hardly could thank his foes for the boon, for they struck his only son dead, and tore his heart out before his father's eyes.  

Hardly any man or woman survived.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

except by accident. A body of some hundred burghers made their escape across the snow into the open country. They were, however, overtaken, stripped stark naked, and hung upon the trees by the feet, to freeze, or perish by a more lingering death. Most of them soon died, but twenty, who happened to be wealthy, succeeded, after enduring much torture, in purchasing their lives of their inhuman persecutors. The principal burgomaster, Heinrich Lambertszoon, was less fortunate. Known to be affluents, he was tortured by exposing both soles of his feet to a fire until they were almost consumed. On promise that his life should be spared, he then agreed to pay a heavy ransom; but hardly had he furnished the stipulated sum when, by express order of Don Frederic himself, he was hanged in his own doorway, and his dismembered limbs afterwards nailed to the gates of the city. 1

Nearly all the inhabitants of Naarden, soldiers and citizens, were thus destroyed; and now Don Frederic issued peremptory orders that no one, on pain of death, should give lodging or food to any fugitive. He likewise forbade to the dead all that could now be forbidden them—a grave. Three weeks long did these unburied bodies pollute the streets, nor could the few wretched women who still cowered within such houses as had escaped the flames ever move from their lurking-places without treading upon the festering remains of what had been their husbands, their fathers, or their brethren. Such was the express command of him whom the flatterers called the "most divine genius ever known." Shortly afterwards came an order to dismantle the fortifications which had certainly proved sufficiently feeble in the hour of need, and to raze what was left of the city from the surface of the earth. The work was faithfully accomplished, and for a long time Naarden ceased to exist. 2

Alva wrote, with his usual complacency in such cases, to his sovereign, that "they had cut the throats of the burghers and all the garrison, and that they had not left a mother's son alive." 3 The statement was almost literally correct, nor was the cant with which these bloodhounds commented upon their crimes less odious than their guilt. "It was a permission of God," said the Duke, "that these people should have undertaken to defend a city, which was so weak that no other persons would have attempted such a thing." 4

Nor was the reflection of Mendoza less pious. "The sack of Naarden," said that really brave and accomplished cavalier, "was a chastisement which must be believed to have taken place by express permission of a Divine Providence; a punishment for having been the first of the Holland towns in which heresy built its nest, whence it has taken flight to all the neighbouring cities.

It is not without reluctance, but still with a stern determination, that the historian should faithfully record these transactions. To extenuate would be base; to exaggerate impossible. It is good that the world should not forget how much wrong has been endured by a single harmless nation at the hands of despotism, and in the sacred name of God. There have persons of quality who were reserved. Then the city was pillaged, after which a fire was lighted, "qui la consomma entierement."—Hist. des Causes des Revoltes des Pays Bas, M3, ii. xx.

Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1186.

Mendoza, viii. 173.—The details of these acts of iniquity have only been preserved by the Dutch writers. Mendoza, and Cabrera (who always follows Mendoza), dismiss the sackings of such successive cities with a phrase and a pious ejaculation. Alva briefly condenses the principal horrors in a few energetic lines.—Compare Wagenaer, Vat. Hist. vi. 403-406;Meteren, lv. 78;Bentivoglio, vi. 118.
been tongues and pens enough to narrate the excesses of the people, bursting from time to time out of slavery into madness. It is good, too, that those crimes should be remembered, and freshly pondered; but it is equally wholesome to study the opposite picture. Tyranny, ever young and ever old, constantly reproducing herself with the same stony features, with the same imposing mask which she has worn through all the ages, can never be too minutely examined, especially when she paints her own portrait, and when the secret history of her guilt is furnished by the confessions of her lovers. The perusal of her traits will not make us love popular liberty the less.

The history of Alva's administration in the Netherlands is one of those pictures which strike us almost dumb with wonder. Why has the Almighty suffered such crimes to be perpetrated in His sacred name? Was it necessary that many generations should wade through this blood in order to acquire for their descendants the blessings of civil and religious freedom? Was it necessary that an Alva should ravage a peaceful nation with sword and flame—that desolation should be spread over a happy land, in order that the pure and heroic character of a William of Orange should stand forth more conspicuously, like an antique statue of spotless marble against a stormy sky?

After the army which the Prince and so unsuccessfully led to the relief of Mons had been disbanded, he had himself repaired to Holland. He had come to Kampen shortly before its defection from his cause. Thence he had been escorted across the Zuyder Zee to Eekhuizen. He came to that province, the only one which through good and ill report remained entirely faithful to him, not as a conqueror but as an unsuccessful, proscribed man. But there were warm hearts beating within those cold lagunes, and no conqueror returning from a brilliant series of victories could have been received with more affectionate respect than William in that darkest hour of the country's history. He had but seventy horsemen at his back, all which remained of the twenty thousand troops which he had a second time levied in Germany, and he felt that it would be at that period hopeless for him to attempt the formation of a third army. He had now come thither to share the fate of Holland, at least, if he could not accomplish her liberation. He went from city to city, advising with the magistrates and with the inhabitants, and arranging many matters pertaining both to peace and war. At Harlem the States of the Provinces, according to his request, had been assembled. The assembly begged him to lay before them, if it were possible, any schemes and means which he might have devised for further resistance to the Duke of Alva. Thus solicited, the Prince, in a very secret session, unfolded his plans, and satisfied them as to the future prospects of the cause. His speech has nowhere been preserved. His strict injunctions as to secrecy, doubtless, prevented or effectually concealed any record of the session. It is probable, however, that he entered more fully into the state of his negotiations with England, and into the possibility of a resumption by Count Louis of his private intercourse with the French court, than it was safe, publicly, to divulge.

While the Prince had been thus occupied in preparing the stout-hearted province for the last death-struggle with its foe, that mortal combat was already fast approaching; for the aspect of the contest in the Netherlands was not that of ordinary warfare. It was an encounter between two principles, in their nature so hostile to each other that the absolute destruction of one was the only possible issue. As the fight went on, each individual combatant seemed inspired by direct personal malignity, and men found a

---

1 Bor. vi. 414. Hoofd, vii. 284.
2 Letter of St Aldegondis in Archives de la Maison d'Orange, liv. 22.
pleasure in deeds of cruelty, from which generations not educated to
slaughter recoil with horror. To murder defenceless prisoners; to drink,
not metaphorically but literally, the heart’s blood of an enemy; to exercise
a devilish ingenuity in inventions of mutual torture, became not only a
duty but a rapture. The Liberty of the Netherlands had now been hunted
to its lair. It had taken its last refuge among the sands and thickets where
its savage infancy had been nurtured,
and had now prepared itself to crush
its tormentor in a last embrace, or to
die in the struggle.

After the conclusion of the sack and
massacre of Naarden, Don Frederic
had hastened to Amsterdam,1 where
the Duke was then quartered, that he
might receive the paternal benediction
for his well-accomplished work. The
royal approbation was soon afterwards
added to the applause of his parent,
and the Duke was warmly congratulat-
ed in a letter written by Philip as
soon as the murderouss deed was
known, that Don Frederic had so
plainly shewn himself to be his fa-
ther’s son.2 There was now more
work for father and son. Amsterdam
was the only point in Holland which
held for Alva, and from that point it
was determined to recover the whole
province. The Prince of Orange was
established in the southern district;
Diedrich Sonoy, his lieutenant, was
stationed in North Holland.3 The
important city of Harlem lay between
the two, at a spot where the whole
breadth of the territory, from sea to
sea, was less than an hour’s walk.
With the fall of that city the province
would be cut in twain, the rebellious
forces utterly dispossessed, and all fur-
ther resistance, it was thought, ren-
dered impossible.

The inhabitants of Harlem felt
their danger. Bossu, Alva’s stadholder
for Holland, had formally announced
the system hitherto pursued at Mech-
lin, Zutphen, and Naarden as the de-
liberate policy of the government.
The King’s representative had for-
maclingly proclaimed the extermination of
man, woman, and child in every city
which opposed his authority,4 but the
promulgation and practice of such a
system had an opposite effect to the
one intended. The hearts of the Holl-
landers were rather steeled to resist-
ance than awed into submission by the
fate of Naarden.5 A fortunate
event, too, was accepted as a lucky
omen for the coming contest. A little
fleet of armed vessels, belonging to
Holland, had been frozen up in the
neighbourhood of Amsterdam. Don
Frederic, on his arrival from Naarden,
despatched a body of picked men over
the ice to attack the imprisoned
vessels. The crews had, however, fortified
themselves by digging a wide trench around
the whole fleet, which thus became
from the moment an almost impreg-
nable fortress. Out of this frozen
citadel a strong band of well-armed and
skilful musketeers saluted forth
upon skates as the besieging force ad-
vanced. A rapid, brilliant, and slip-
pery skirmish succeeded, in which the
Hollander, so accustomed to such
sports, easily vanquished their anti-
gonists, and drove them off the field,
with the loss of several hundred left
dead upon the ice.6 “Twas a thing
never heard of before to-day,” said
Alva, “to see a body of arquebusiers
thus skirmishing upon a frozen sea.”7

In the course of the next four-and-
twenty hours, a flood and a rapid thaw
released the vessels, which all escaped
to Enkhuyzen, while a frost, immedi-
ately and strangely succeeding, made
pursuit impossible.8

The Spaniards were astonished at
these novel manoeuvres upon the ice.
It is amusing to read their elaborate
descriptions of the wonderful appen-
dages which had enabled the Holland-
ers to glide so glibly into battle with
a superior force, and so rapidly to

---

1 Bor, vi. 420, 421.
2 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1197.
3 Bor, vi. 424.
4 Ibid., 417.
5 Ibid., vi. 420. Hooff, vii. 280, 281. Me-
teren, iv. 78. Bentivoglio, vi. 115.
6 Mendoza, vii. 173.
7 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1186.
8 “Que me parece la mas nueva cosa que
hasta oy se ha oido, escaramuzar arcoabuzería
sobre la mer alna.”
9 Hooff, vii. 264.
glance away, after achieving a signal triumph. Nevertheless, the Spaniards could never be dismayed, and were always apt scholars, even if an enemy were the teacher. Alva immediately ordered seven thousand pairs of skates, and his soldiers soon learned to perform military evolutions with these new accoutrements as audaciously, if not as adroitly, as the Hollanders.¹

A portion of the Harlem magistracy, notwithstanding the spirit which pervaded the province, began to tremble as danger approached. They were base enough to enter into secret negotiations with Alva, and to send three of their own number to treat with the Duke at Amsterdam. One was wise enough to remain with the enemy. The other two were arrested on their return, and condemned, after an impartial trial, to death.² For, while these emissaries of a cowardly magistracy were absent, the stout commandant of the little garrison, Ripperda, had assembled the citizens and soldiers in the market-place. He warned them of the absolute necessity to make a last effort for freedom. In startling colours he held up to them the fate of Mechlin, of Zutphen, of Naarden, as a prophetic mirror, in which they might read their own fate should they be base enough to surrender the city. There was no composition possible, he urged, with foes who were as false as they were sanguinary, and whose foul passions were stimulated, not slaked, by the horrors with which they had already feasted themselves.³

Ripperda addressed men who could sympathise with his bold and lofty sentiments. Soldiers and citizens cried out for defence instead of surrender, as with one voice, for there were no abject spirits at Harlem save among the magistracy; and Saint Aldegonde, the faithful minister of Orange, was soon sent to Harlem by the Prince to make a thorough change in that body.⁴

Harlem, over whose ruins the Spanish tyranny intended to make its entrance into Holland, lay in the narrowest part of that narrow isthmus which separates the Zuyder Zee from the German Ocean. The distance from sea to sea is hardly five English miles across. Westerly from the city extended a slender strip of land, once a morass, then a fruitful meadow, maintained by unflagging fortitude in the very jaws of a stormy ocean. Between the North Sea and the outer edge of this pasture surged those wild and fantastic downs, heaped up by wind and wave in mimicry of mountains; the long coils of that rope of sand, by which, plaited into additional strength by the slenderest of bulrushes,⁵ the waves of the North Sea were made to obey the command of man. On the opposite, or eastern side, Harlem looked towards Amsterdam. That already flourishing city was distant but ten miles. The two cities were separated by an expanse of inland water, and united by a slender causeway. The Harlem Lake, formed less than a century before by the bursting of four lesser meres during a storm which had threatened to swallow the whole Peninsula, extended itself on the south and east; a sea of limited dimensions, being only fifteen feet in depth with seventy square miles of surface, but, exposed as it lay to all the winds of heaven, often lashed into storms as dangerous as those of the Atlantic.⁶

Beyond the lake, towards the north, the waters of the Y nearly swept across the Peninsula. This inlet of the Zuyder Zee was only separated from the Harlem mere by a slender thread of land. Over this ran the causeway between the two sister cities, now so unfortunately in arms against each other. Midway between the two, the dyke was pierced and closed again.

³ Ibid. Ibid., vii. 283. Ibid.
⁴ Bor, Hooff, Mendoza, ubi sup.
⁵ Arundo arenaria.
⁶ Bentivoglio, vii. 118. Mendoza, viii. 175. Bor, vi. 422. Muteren, iv. 78.—This lake, the scene of so many romantic events during the period with which we are occupied, has, within the last few years, been converted into dry land. The magnificent undertaking was completed in the year 1835.
with a system of sluice-works, which when opened admitted the waters of the lake into those of the estuary, and caused an inundation of the surrounding country.1

The city was one of the largest and most beautiful in the Netherlands. It was also one of the weakest.2 The walls were of antique construction, turreted, but not strong. The extent and feebleness of the defences made a large garrison necessary, but, unfortunately, the garrison was even weaker than the walls. The city’s main reliance was on the stout hearts of the inhabitants. The streets were, for that day, spacious and regular; the canals planted with limes and poplars. The ancient church of Saint Bavon, a large imposing structure of brick, stood almost in the centre of the place, the most prominent object, not only of the town but of the province, visible over leagues of sea and of land more level than the sea, and seeming to gather the whole quiet little city under its sacred and protective wings. Its tall open-work leaden spire was surmounted by a colossal crown, which an exalted imagination might have regarded as the emblematic guerdon of martyrdom held aloft over the city, to reward its heroism and its agony.

It was at once obvious that the watery expanse between Harlem and Amsterdam would be the principal theatre of the operations about to commence. The siege was soon begun. The fugitive burgomaster, De Fries, had the effrontery, with the advice of Alva, to address a letter to the citizens, urging them to surrender at discretion. The messenger was hanged—a cruel but practical answer, which put an end to all further traitorous communications.3 This was in the first week of December. On the 10th, Don Frederic sent a strong detachment to capture the fort and village of Sparendam, as an indispensable preliminary to the commencement of the siege. A peasant having shewn Zapata, the commander of the expedition, a secret passage across the flooded and frozen meadows, the Spaniards stormed the place gallantly, routed the whole garrison, killed three hundred, and took possession of the works and village. Next day, Don Frederic appeared before the walls of Harlem, and proceeded regularly to invest the place. The misty weather favoured his operations, nor did he cease reinforcing himself, until at least thirty thousand men, including fifteen hundred cavalry, had been encamped around the city. The Germans, under Count Overstein, were stationed in a beautiful and extensive grove of limes and beeches, which spread between the southern walls and the shore of Harlem Lake. Don Frederic, with his Spaniards, took up a position on the opposite side, at a place called the House of Kleef, the ruins of which still remain. The Walloons and other regiments were distributed in different places, so as completely to encircle the town.4 On the edge of the mere the Prince of Orange had already ordered a cluster of forts to be erected, by which the command of its frozen surface was at first secured for Harlem.5 In the course of the siege, however, other forts were erected by Don Frederic, so that the aspect of things suffered a change.

Against this immense force, nearly equal in number to that of the whole population of the city, the garrison within the walls never amounted to more than four thousand men.6 In the beginning it was much less numerous. The same circumstances, how-

---

1 Bor, Meteren, Bentivoglio, Mendoza, ubi sup.
2 Bor, vi. 422.
3 Hoofd, vii. 284.
4 Pierre Sterlinx: Eene gorte Waerschutige Beschryvinghe van alle Geschiedenis, Anschlagen, Stormen, Schemutsingen onde Schoosten voor de vrome Stadt Haerlem in Holland geschicht, etc., etc.—Delft, 1574.
5 This is by far the best contemporary account of the famous siege. The author was a citizen of Antwerp, who kept a daily journal of the events as they occurred at Harlem. It is a dry, curt register of horrors, jotted down without passion or comment.—Compare Bor, vi. 422, 423; Meteren, iv. 79; Mendoza, viii. 174, 175; Wagenaer, Vad. Hist., vi. 413, 414.
6 Bor, Hoofd, Mendoza. Wagenaer, vi. 415.
First Cannonade.

ever, which assisted the initiatory operations of Don Frederic, were of advantage to the Harlemers. A dense frozen fog hung continually over the surface of the lake. Covered by this curtain, large supplies of men, provisions, and ammunition were daily introduced into the city, notwithstanding all the efforts of the besieging force. Sledges skimming over the ice, men, women, and even children, moving on their skates as swiftly as the wind, all brought their contributions in the course of the short dark days and long nights of December, in which the wintry siege was opened.

The garrison at last numbered about one thousand pioneers or delivery, three thousand fighting men, and about three hundred fighting women. The last was a most efficient corps, all females of respectable character, armed with sword, musket, and dagger. Their chief, Kenua Hasselaer, was a widow of distinguished family and unblemished reputation, about forty-seven years of age, who, at the head of her amazons, participated in many of the most fiercely contested actions of the siege, both within and without the walls.

When such a spirit animated the maids and matrons of the city, it might be expected that the men would hardly surrender the place without a struggle. The Prince had assembled a force of three or four thousand men at Leyden, which he sent before the middle of December towards the city under the command of De la Marck. These troops were, however, attacked on the way by a strong detachment under Bosn, Noircarmes, and Romero. After a sharp action in a heavy snow-storm, De la Marck was completely routed. One thousand of his soldiers were cut to pieces, and a large number carried off as prisoners to the gibbets, which were already conspicuously erected in the Spanish camp, and which from the commencement to the close of the siege were never bare of victims.

Among the captives was a gallant officer, Baptist van Trier, for whom De la Marck in vain offered two thousand crowns and nineteen Spanish prisoners. The proposition was refused with contempt. Van Trier was hanged upon the gallows by one leg until he was dead, in return for which barbarity the nineteen Spaniards were immediately gibbeted by De la Marck.

With this interchange of cruelties the siege may be said to have opened.

Don Frederic had stationed himself in a position opposite to the gate of the Cross, which was not very strong, but fortified by a ravelin. Intending to make a very short siege of it, he established his batteries immediately, and on the 18th, 19th, and 20th December directed a furious cannonade against the Cross-gate, the St John’s gate, and the curtain between the two. Six hundred and eighty shots were discharged on the first, and nearly as many on each of the two succeeding days. The walls were much shattered, but men, women, and children worked night and day within the city, repairing the breaches as fast as made. They brought bags of sand, blocks of stone, cart-loads of earth from every quarter, and they stripped the churches of all their statues, which they threw by heaps into the gaps. They sought thus a more practical advantage from those sculptured saints than they could have gained by only imploving their interposition. The fact, however, excited horror among the besiegers. Men who were daily butchering their fellow-beings, and hanging their prisoners in cold blood, affected to shudder at the enormity of the offence thus exercised against graven images.

After three days’ cannonade, the assault was ordered, Don Frederic only intending a rapid massacre, to

---

1 Hooffd.  
5 Bor. vi. 494.  
7 Hooffd, vii. 286. P. Sterlinx.  
9 Meteren, iv. 79. Hooffd.  
10 Bor. Bentivoglio. P. Sterlinx.  
11 Vide Bentivoglio, vil. 121. Mendoza, passim.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic

... in his achievements at Zutphen and Naarden. The place, he thought, would fall in a week, and after another week of sacking, killing, and raveling, he might sweep on to Pastures new. Holland was overwhelmed. Remore advanced to the breach, followed by a numerous storming party, but met with a resistance which astonished the Spaniards. The church bells rang the alarm throughout the city, and the whole population swarmed to the walls. The besiegers were encountered not only with sword and musket, but with every implement which the burghers' hands could find. Heavy stones, boiling oil, live coals, were hurled upon the heads of the soldiers; hoops, smeared with pitch and set on fire, were dextrously thrown upon their necks. Even Spanish courage and Spanish force were obliged to shrink before the steady determination of a whole population animated by a single spirit. Remore lost an eye in the conflict, many officers were killed and wounded, and three or four hundred soldiers left dead in the breach, while only three or four of the townsmen lost their lives. The signal of recall was reluctantly given, and the Spaniards abandoned the assault. Don Federico was now aware that Harlem would not fall at his feet at the first sound of his trumpet. It was obvious that a siege must proceed the massacre. He gave orders, therefore, that the ravelin should be undermined, and doubted not that, with a few days' delay, the place would be in his hands.

Meantime, the Prince of Orange, from his headquarters at Sassenheim, on the southern extremity of the moat, made a fresh effort to throw succour into the place. Two thousand men, with seven field-pieces, and many wagon-loads of munitions, were sent forward under Batenburg. This officer had replaced De la Mareck, whom the Prince had at last deprived of his commission. The reckless and unprincipled freebooter was no longer to serve a cause which was more sullied by his barbarity than it could be advanced by his desperate valor. Batenburg's expedition was, however, not more successful than the one made by his predecessor. The troops, after reaching the vicinity of the city, lost their way in the thick mist which almost perpetually enveloped the scene. Cannons were fired, fog-bells were rung, and beacon fires were lighted on the ramparts, but the party was irretrievably lost. The Spaniards fell upon them before they could find their way to the city. Many were put to the sword, others made their escape in different directions; a very few succeeded in entering Harlem. Batenburg brought off a remnant of the forces, but all the provisions so much needed were lost, and the little army entirely destroyed.

De Koning, the second in command, was among the prisoners. The Spaniards cut off his head and threw it over the walls into the city, with this inscription: "This is the head of Captain de Koning, who is on his way with reinforcements for the good city of Harlem." The citizens retorted with a practical jest, which was still more barbarous. They cut off the heads of eleven prisoners and put them into a barrel, which they threw into the Spanish camp. A label upon the barrel contained these words: "Deliver these ten heads to Duke Alva in payment of his tempey tax, with one additional head for interest." With such ghastly merriment did besiegers and besieged vary the monotonous horror of that winter's siege. As the sallies and skirmishes were of daily occurrence, there was a constant supply of prisoners, upon whom both parties might exercise their ingenuity, so that the gallows in camp or city was perpetually garnished.

Since the assault of the 21st De-

---

2 Hood, vii, 320. Bor, vii, 441.
3 See all the proceedings and speeches in the
Assaults.

ember, Don Frederic had been making his subterranean attack by regular approaches. As fast, however, as the Spaniards mined, the citizens countermined. Spaniard and Netherlander met daily in deadly combat within the bowels of the earth. Desperate and frequent were the struggles within gangways so narrow that nothing but daggers could be used, so obscure that the dim lanterns hardly lighted the death-stroke. They seemed the conflicts, not of men, but of evil spirits. Nor were these hand-to-hand battles all. A shower of heads, limbs, mutilated trunks, the mangled remains of hundreds of human beings, often spouted from the earth as if from an invisible volcano. The mines were sprung with unexampled frequency and determination. Still the Spaniards toiled on with unimpaired zeal, and still the besieged, undismayed, delved below their works, and checked their advance by sword and spear, and horrible explosions.1

The Prince of Orange, meanwhile, encouraged the citizens to persevere, by frequent promises of assistance. His letters, written on extremely small bits of paper, were sent into the town by carrier pigeons.2 On the 28th of January he despatched a considerable supply of the two necessaries, powder and bread, on one hundred and seventy sledges across the Harlem Lake, together with four hundred veteran soldiers.3 The citizens continued to contest the approaches to the ravelin before the Cross-gate; but it had become obvious that they could not hold it long. Secretly, steadfastly, and swiftly they had, therefore, during the long wintry nights, been constructing a half moon of solid masonry on the inside of the same portal.4 Old men, feeble women, tender children, united with the able-bodied to accomplish this work, by which they hoped still to maintain themselves after the ravelin had fallen.5

On the 31st of January, after two or three days' cannonade against the gates of the Cross and of Saint John, and the intervening curtains, Don Frederic ordered a midnight assault.6 The walls had been much shattered, part of the John's-gate was in ruins; the Spaniards mounted the breach in great numbers; the city was almost taken by surprise; while the Commander-in-chief, sure of victory, ordered the whole of his forces under arms to cut off the population who were to stream panic-struck from every issue. The attack was unexpected, but the forty or fifty sentinels defended the walls while they sounded the alarm. The tocsin bells tolled, and the citizens, whose sleep was not apt to be heavy during that perilous winter, soon manned the ramparts again. The daylight came upon them while the fierce struggle was still at its height. The besieged, as before, defended themselves with musket and rapier, with melted pitch, with firebrands, with clubs and stones. Meantime, after morning prayers in the Spanish camp, the trumpet for a general assault was sounded. A tremendous onset was made upon the gate of the Cross, and the ravelin was carried at last. The Spaniards poured into this fort, so long the object of their attack, expecting instantly to sweep into the city with sword and fire. As they mounted its wall they became for the first time aware of the new and stronger fortification which had been secretly constructed on the inside.7 The reason why the ravelin had been at last conceded was revealed. The half moon, whose existence they had not suspected, rose before them bristling with cannon. A sharp fire was

1 P. Sterlinex. Bor. vi. 431. Mendoza, ix. 182. "Assi mismo consumian las minas mucha gente y soldados—y en las mismas que se labraran, se combatio algunas vezes, por la estracheza del lugar, con espada y rodela, por no poder aprovechar de otras armas." "Daer onstond dan een yselijk schouwspel en slachtoegang van hoefden, armen, beesen een slechten van ingerwan,

stantly opened upon the besiegers, while at the same instant the ravelin, which the citizens had undermined, blew up with a severe explosion, carrying into the air all the soldiers who had just entered it so triumphantly. This was the turning point. The retreat was sounded, and the Spaniards fled to their camp, leaving at least three hundred dead beneath the walls. Thus was a second assault, made by an overwhelming force and led by the most accomplished generals of Spain, signal and gloriously repelled by the plainburghers of Harlem.1

It became now almost evident that the city could be taken neither by regular approaches nor by sudden attack. It was therefore resolved that it should be reduced by famine. Still, as the winter wore on, the immense army without the walls were as great sufferers by that scourge as the population within. The soldiers fell in heaps before the diseases engendered by intense cold and insufficient food, for, as usual in such sieges, these deaths far outnumbered those inflicted by the enemy’s hand. The sufferings inside the city necessarily increased day by day, the whole population being put on a strict allowance of food.2 Their supplies were daily diminishing, and with the approach of the spring and the thawing of the ice on the lake, there was danger that they would be entirely cut off. If the possession of the water were lost, they must yield or starve; and they doubted whether the Prince would be able to organize a fleet. The gaunt spectre of Famine already rose before them with a menace which could not be misunderstood. In their misery they longed for the assaults of the Spaniards, that they might look in the face of a less formidable foe. They paraded the ramparts daily, with drums beating, colours flying, taunting the besiegers to renewed attempts. To inflame the religious animosity of their antagonists, they attired themselves in the splendid, gold-embroidered vestments of the priests, which they took from the churches, and moved about in mock procession, bearing aloft images bedizened in ecclesiastical finery, relics, and other symbols, sacred in Catholic eyes, which they afterwards hurled from the ramparts, or broke, with derisive shouts, into a thousand fragments.3

It was, however, at that season earnestly debated by the enemy whether or not to raise the siege.4 Don Frederic was clearly of opinion that enough had been done for the honour of the Spanish arms. He was weary with seeing his men perish helplessly around him, and considered the prize too paltry for the lives it must cost. His father thought differently. Perhaps he recalled the siege of Metz, and the unceasing regret with which, as he believed, his imperial master had remembered the advice received from him. At any rate, the Duke now sent back Don Bernardino de Mendoza, whom Don Frederic had despatched to Nimwegen, soliciting his father’s permission to raise the siege, with this reply:—“Tell Don Frederic,” said Alva, “that if he be not decided to continue the siege till the town be taken, I shall no longer consider him my son, whatever my opinion may formerly have been. Should he fall in the siege, I will myself take the field to maintain it; and when we have both perished, the Duchess, my wife, shall come from Spain to do the same.”5

Such language was unequivocal, and hostilities were resumed as fiercely as before. The besieged welcomed them with rapture, and, as usual, made daily the most desperate sallies. In one outbreak the Harlemers, under cover of a thick fog, marched up to the enemy’s chief battery, and attempted to spike the guns before his face. They were all slain at the cannon’s mouth, whither patriotism, not vainglory, had led them, and lay dead around the battery, with their hammers and spikes

3 Bentivoglio, vii. 121.
4 Mendoza, ix. 185, 186. Bentivoglio, vii. 124, 125.
5 Mendoza, ix. 192.
in their hands. The same spirit was
daily manifested. As the spring ad-
vanced the kine went daily out of the
gates to their peaceful pasture, not-
withstanding all the turmoil within
and around; nor was it possible for
the Spaniards to capture a single one
of these creatures, without paying at
least a dozen soldiers as its price."
"These citizens," wrote Don Frederic,
"do as much as the best soldiers in
the world could do."*

The frost broke up by the end of
February. Count Boesu, who had
been building a fleet of small vessels
in Amsterdam, soon afterwards suc-
cceeded in entering the lake with a few
gun-boats, through a breach which he
had made in the Overtoom, about half
a league from that city.† The pos-
session of the lake was already imperilled.
The Prince, however, had not been idle,
and he, too, was soon ready to
send his flotilla to the mere.‡ At
the same time, the city of Amsterdam was
in almost as hazardous a position as
Harlem. As the one on the lake, so
did the other depend upon its dyke
for its supplies. Should that great
artificial road which led to Muyden
and Utrecht be cut asunder, Amster-
dam might be starved as soon as Har-
lem. "Since I came into the world,"
wrote Alva, "I have never been in
such anxiety. If they should succeed
in cutting off the communication along
the dykes, we should have to raise the
siege of Harlem, to surrender, hands
crossed, or to starve."§ Orange was
fully aware of the position of both
places, but he was, as usual, sadly
deserted in men and means. He wrote
imploringly to his friends in England,
in France, in Germany. He urged
his brother Louis to bring a few sol-
diers, if it were humanly possible.
"The whole country longs for you," he
wrote to Louis, "as if you were the
archangel Gabriel."*

The Prince, however, did all that it
was possible for man, so hampered, to
do. He was himself, while anxiously
writing, and hoping, and waiting for
supplies of troops from Germany or
France, doing his best with such volun-
teers as he could raise. He was still
established at Sassenheim, on the south
of the city, while Sonoy with his slen-
der forces was encamped on the north.
He now sent that general with as large
a party as he could muster to attack
the Diemerdyk.8 His men entrenched
themselves as strongly as they could
between the Diemer and the Y, at
the same time opening the sluices and
breaking through the dyke. During
the absence of their commander, who
had gone to Edam for reinforcements,
they were attacked by a large force
from Amsterdam. A fierce ampli-
bious contest took place, partly in
boats, partly on the slippery causeway,
partly in the water, resembling in cha-
acter the frequent combats between
the ancient Batavians and Romans
during the wars of Cifieia. The pa-
triotts were eventually overpowered.

Sonoy, who was on his way to their
rescue, was frustrated in his design by
the unexpected faint-heartedness of
the volunteers whom he had enlisted
at Edam.9 Braving a thousand perilis,
he advanced, almost unattended, in
his little vessel, but only to witness
the overthrow and expulsion of his
band.10 It was too late for him singly
to attempt to rally the retreating
troops. They had fought well, but
had been forced to yield before su-
perior numbers, one individual of the
little army having performed prodigies
of valour. John Haring, of Horn, had
planted himself entirely alone upon the
dyke, where it was so narrow between
the Y on the one side and the Diemer
Lake on the other, that two men could
hardly stand abreast. Here, armed
with sword and shield, he had actually
opposed and held in check one thou-
sand of the enemy, during a period
long enough to enable his own men, if
they had been willing, to rally, and ef-

---

* Mendoza, ix. 182.
† Hooff, viii. 308.
‡ "Todo lo que humanamente podían
hacer los mejores soldados del mundo."—
Correspondence de Philippe II., II. 1217.
§ Bor, vi. 459.
8 Ibid., vi. 436, 437.
4 Correspondance de Philippe II., II. 1245.
7 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 74.
8 Bor, vi. 457.
9 Ibid. Hooff, viii. 300.
10 Bor, Hooff.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

It was too late—the battle was too far lost to be restored; but still the brave soldier held the post, till, by his devotion, he had enabled all those of his compatriots who still remained in the entrenchments to make good their retreat. He then plunged into the sea, and, untouched by spear or bullet, effected his escape. Had he been a Greek or a Roman—Horatius or a Chabrias—his name would have been famous in history; his statue erected in the market-place; for the bold Dutchman on his dyke had manifested as much valor in a sacred cause as the most classic heroes of antiquity.

This unsuccessful attempt to cut off the communication between Amsterdam and the country strengthened the hopes of Alva. Several hundreds of the patriots were killed or captured, and among them was Antony Oliver, the painter, through whose agency Lord of Nassau had been introduced into Morsum. His head was cut off by the envoy to Alva’s service, who resorted to the plan which had been set upon it by two thousand cavaliers. It was then labelled with its owner’s name, and thrown into the city of Harlem. At the same time, a new garrison was erected in the Spanish camp; before the city, in a conspicuous position upon which all the prisoners were assembled, some by the neck, some by the hand, in full view of their countrymen. The most illustrious of the inhabitants of the old board of burgomasters, belonging to the Spanish nation, was now confined at Harlem. The wife of a merchant and his son were now confounded. The wife of a rich merchant and his son, went by a new creation, to mediocrity, became a beggar, became a pauper, wandered

lace and his ignominious doom. The rabble, irritated by such boldness, were not satisfied with wreaking their vengeance on the principal victims, but after the execution had taken place, they hunted the wife and daughter into the water, where they both perished. It is right to record these instances of cruelty, sometimes perpetrated by the patriots as well as by their oppressors—a cruelty rendered almost inevitable by the incredible barbarity of the foreign invader. It was a war of wolfish malignity. In the words of Mendoza, every man within and without Harlem "seemed inspired by a spirit of special and personal vengeance." The innocent blood poured out in Mechlin, Zutphen, Naarden, and upon a thousand scaffolds, had been crying too long from the ground. The Hollander must have been more or less than men not to be sometimes betrayed into acts which justice and reason must denounce.

The singular mood which has been recorded of a high-spirited officer of the garrison, Captain Curey, illustrated the horror with which such scenes of carnage were regarded by noble natures. Of a gentle disposition originally, but inflamed almost to insanity by a contemplation of Spanish cruelty, he had taken up the profession of arms, to which he had a natural repugnance. Brave to recklessness, he led his men on every daring outbreak, on every perilous midnight adventure. Armed only with his rapier, without defensive armour, he was ever found where the battle raged most fiercely, and numerous were the victims who fell before his sword. On returning, however, from such excursions, he invariably shift himself in his quarters, took to his bed, and lay for days, sick with remorse, and bitterly lamenting all that bloodshed in which he had so deeply participated, and which a cruel fate seemed to render necessary. As

---

1 Ibid. Metten, iv. 80. P. Sterlinx.
2 P. Sterlinx. Corte Bascr.
4 Mendoza, ix. 101.
Battles on the Lake.

the gentle mood subsided, his frenzy would return, and again he would rush to the field, to seek new havoc and fresh victims for his rage. 1

The combats before the walls were of almost daily occurrence. On the 25th March, one thousand of the besieged made a brilliant sally, drove in all the outposts of the enemy, burned three hundred tents, and captured seven cannon, nine standards, and many waggon-loads of provisions, all which they succeeded in bringing with them into the city. 2 Having thus reinforced themselves, in a manner not often practised by the citizens of a beleaguered town, in the very face of thirty thousand veterans—having killed eight hundred of the enemy, which was nearly one for every man engaged, while they lost but four of their own party—the Harlemers, on their return, erected a trophy of funereal but exulting aspect. A mound of earth was constructed upon the ramparts, in the form of a colossal grave, in full view of the enemy's camp, and upon it were planted the cannon and standards so gallantly won in the skirmish, with the taunting inscription floating from the centre of the mound, "Harlem is the grave-yard of the Spaniards." 3

Such were the characteristics of this famous siege during the winter and early spring. Alva might well write to his sovereign, that "it was a war such as never before was seen or heard of in any land on earth." 4 Yet the Duke had known near sixty years of warfare. He informed Philip that "saw never a place defended with such skill and bravery as Harlem, either by rebels or by men fighting for their lawful Prince." 5 Certainly his son had discovered his mistake in asserting that the city would yield in a week; while the father, after nearly six years' experience, had found this "people of butter" less malleable than even those "iron people" whom he boasted of having tamed. It was seen that neither the skies of Greece or Italy, nor the sublime scenery of Switzerland, were necessary to arouse the spirit of defiance to foreign oppression—a spirit which beat as proudly among the wintry mists and the level meadows of Holland as it had ever done under sunnier atmospheres and in more romantic lands.

Mendoza had accomplished his mission to Spain, and had returned with supplies of money within six weeks from the date of his departure. 6 Owing to his representations, and Alva's entreaties, Philip had, moreover, ordered Requesens, governor of Milan, to send forward to the Netherlands three veteran Spanish regiments, which were now more required at Harlem than in Italy. 7 While the land force had thus been strengthened, the fleet upon the lake had also been largely increased. The Prince of Orange had, on the other hand, provided more than a hundred sail of various descriptions, 8 so that the whole surface of the mere was now alive with ships. Sea fights and skirmishes took place almost daily, and it was obvious that the life and death struggle was now to be fought upon the water. So long as the Hollanders could hold or dispute the possession of the lake, it was still possible to succour Harlem from time to time. Should the Spaniards overcome the Prince's fleet, the city must inevitably starve.

At last, on the 28th of May, a decisive engagement of the fleets took place. The vessels grappled with each other, and there was a long, fierce, hand-to-hand combat. Under Bossu were one hundred vessels; under Martin Brand, admiral of the patriot fleet, nearly one hundred and fifty, but of lesser dimensions. Batensberg commanded the troops on board the Dutch vessels. After a protracted conflict, in which several thousands were killed, the victory was decided

1 Hooff, vii. 302. 2 Ibid.
3 Ibid.
4 P. Sterlins. Hooff, ubi sup.
5 "Es guerra que hasta oy se ha visto by
VOL. II.
6 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1198.
7 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1192.
8 Ibid.
9 Bor, vi. 485.
in favour of the Spaniard. Twenty-two of the Prince’s vessels being captured, and the rest totally routed. Bossu swept across the lake in triumph. The forts belonging to the patriots were immediately taken, and the Harlemers, with their friends, entirely excluded from the lake.\footnote{Bor. vi. 436, 437. Hooff. viii. 308, 307.}

This was the beginning of the end. Despair took possession of the city. The whole population had been long subsisting upon an allowance of a pound of bread to each man, and half a-pound for each woman; but the bread was now exhausted, the famine had already begun,\footnote{Ibid., vi. 437. Ibid., viii. 309.} and with the loss of the lake starvation was close at their doors. They sent urgent entreaties to the Prince to attempt something in their behalf. Three weeks more they assigned as the longest term during which they could possibly hold out.\footnote{Letter of Prince of Orange to his brothers, 16th May, 1573.—Archives, etc. iv. 95.} He sent them word by carrier pigeons to endure yet a little time, for he was assembling a force, and would still succeed in furnishing them with supplies.\footnote{Bor. vi. 436, 438. Hooff. viii. 310.} Meanwhile, through the month of June the sufferings of the inhabitants increased hourly. Ordinary food had long since vanished. The population now subsisted on linseed and rape-seed; as these supplies were exhausted they devoured cats, dogs, rats, and mice; and when at last these unclean animals had been all consumed, they boiled the hides of horses and oxen; they ate shoe-leather; they plucked the nettles and grass from the graveyards, and the weeds which grew between the stones of the pavement, that with such food they might still support life a little longer, till the promised succour should arrive. Men, women, and children fell dead by scores in the streets, perishing of pure starvation, and the survivors had hardly the heart or the strength to bury them out of their sight. They who yet lived seemed to flit like shadows to and fro, envying those whose sufferings had already been terminated by death.\footnote{Ibid., vi. 436, 437. Ibid., viii. 309, 310. Meloren, iv. 89. Bentivoglio, viil. 126.}

Thus wore away the month of June. On the 1st of July the burghers consented to a parley. Deputies were sent to confer with the besiegers, but the negotiations were abruptly terminated, for no terms of compromise were admitted by Don Frederic.\footnote{Hooff. viii. 310. Mendiza, ix. 202, 208.} On the 3d a tremendous cannonade was reopened upon the city. One thousand and eight balls were discharged—the most which had ever been thrown in one day since the commencement of the siege.\footnote{Wagenaar, vi. 426.} The walls were severely shattered, but the assault was not ordered, because the besiegers were assured that it was physically impossible for the inhabitants to hold out many days longer.\footnote{Letter of Don Frederic to Duke of Alva, 5th and 9th June 1573.—Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1289.} A last letter, written in blood,\footnote{Hooff. viii. 308, 310.} was now despatched to the Prince of Orange, stating the forlorn condition to which they were reduced. At the same time, with the derision of despair, they flung into the hostile camp the few loaves of bread which yet remained within the city walls. A day or two later, a second and third parley were held, with no more satisfactory result than had attended the first. A black flag was now hoisted on the cathedral tower, the signal of despair to friend and foe, but a pigeon soon afterwards flew into the town with a letter from the Prince, begging them to maintain themselves two days longer, because succour was approaching.\footnote{Bor. vi. 439, 440.}

The Prince had indeed been doing all which, under the circumstances, was possible. He assembled the citizens of Delft in the market-place, and announced his intention of marching in person to the relief of the city, in the face of the besieging army, if any troops could be obtained.\footnote{Bor. vi. 439, 440.} Soldiers there were none; but there was the deepest sympathy for Harlem throughout its sister cities, Delft, Rotterdam, Gouda. A numerous mass of burghers,
many of them persons of station, all people of respectability, volunteered to march to the rescue. The Prince highly disapproved of this miscellaneous army, whose steadfastness he could not trust. As a soldier, he knew that for such a momentous enterprise enthusiasm could not supply the place of experience. Nevertheless, as no regular troops could be had, and as the emergency allowed no delay, he drew up a commission, appointing Paulus Buys to be governor during his absence, and provisional stadtholder, should he fall in the expedition. Four thousand armed volunteers, with six hundred mounted troopers, under Carlo de Noot, had been assembled, and the Prince now placed himself at their head. There was, however, a universal cry of remonstrance from the magistrates and burghers of all the towns, and from the troops themselves, at this project. They would not consent that a life so precious, so indispensable to the existence of Holland, should be needlessly hazarded. It was important to succour Harlem, but the Prince was of more value than many cities. He at last reluctantly consented, therefore, to abandon the command of the expedition to Baron Batenburg, the less willingly from the want of confidence which he could not help feeling in the character of the forces. On the 8th of July, at dusk, the expedition set forth from Sassenheim. It numbered nearly five thousand men, who had with them four hundred waggon-loads of provisions and seven field-pieces. Among the volunteers, Oldenbarnevald, afterwards so illustrious in the history of the Republic, marched in the ranks, with his musket on his shoulder. Such was a sample of the spirit which pervaded the population of the province.

Batenburg came to a halt in the woods of Nordwyk, on the south side of the city, where he remained till midnight. All seemed still in the enemy’s camp. After prayers, he gave orders to push forward, hoping to steal through the lines of his sleeping adversaries and accomplish the relief by surprise. He was destined to be bitterly disappointed. His plans and his numbers were thoroughly known to the Spaniards, two doves, bearing letters which contained the details of the intended expedition, having been shot and brought into Don Frederico’s camp.

The citizens, it appeared, had broken through the curtain work on the side where Batenburg was expected, in order that a sally might be made in co-operation with the relieving force, as soon as it should appear. Signal fires had been agreed upon, by which the besieged were to be made aware of the approach of their friends. The Spanish Commander accordingly ordered a mass of green branches, pitch, and straw, to be lighted opposite to the gap in the city wall. Behind it he stationed five thousand picked troops. Five thousand more, with a force of cavalry, were placed in the neighbourhood of the downs, with orders to attack the patriot army on the left. Six regiments, under Romero, were ordered to move eastward, and assail their right. The dense mass of smoke concealed the beacon lights displayed by Batenburg from the observation of the townpeople, and hid the five thousand Spaniards from the advancing Hollanders. As Batenburg emerged from the wood, he found himself attacked by a force superior to his own, while a few minutes later he was entirely enveloped by overwhelming numbers. The whole Spanish army was, indeed, under arms, and had been expecting him for two days.

---

1 See his letter of 16th July 1573, in Bor, vi. 440.
2 This commission is published in Kuitz. Hof. Staatsreg., iii. 425-427 Bijligen.
3 Hooff, viii. 311.
4 Bor, vi. 489. Hooff.
5 Bor, Hooff, ubi sup. Meteren, iv. 80.
6 Bor, Hooff.
7 Bor, ubi sup.
8 Hooff (viii. 811), to whose father Oldenbarnevald related the anecdote.
9 Bor, Hooff, viii. 311.
10 Bor, vi. 498. Hooff, viii. 811.
11 Hooff, viii. 311. Mendoza, ix. 203.
12 Ibid.
13 Ibid. Wagenraer, vi. 428.
14 Hooff, viii. 812. Wagenraer.
15 Hooff, Wagenraer. Bor, vi. 439.
nothing which the Harlemers could not do or dare. He feared lest they should set fire to their city, and consume their houses, themselves, and their children, to ashes together; and he was unwilling that the fruits of his victory, purchased at such a vast expense, should be snatched from his hand as he was about to gather them. A letter was accordingly, by his order, sent to the magistracy and leading citizens, in the name of Count Overstein, commander of the German forces in the besieging army. This despatch invited a surrender at discretion, but contained the solemn assurance that no punishment should be inflicted except upon those who, in the judgment of the citizens themselves, had deserved it, and promised ample forgiveness if the town should submit without further delay. At the moment of sending this letter, Don Frederic was in possession of strict orders from his father not to leave a man alive of the garrison, excepting only the Germans, and to execute besides a large number of the burgheers. These commands he dared not disobey, even if he had felt any inclination to do so. In consequence of the semi-official letter of Overstein, however, the city formally surrendered at discretion on the 12th July.

The great bell was tolled, and orders were issued that all arms in the possession of the garrison or the inhabitants should be brought to the town-house. The men were then ordered to assemble in the cloister of Zyl, the women in the cathedral. On the same day Don Frederic, accompanied by Count Bossu and a numerous staff, rode into the city. The scene which met his view might have moved a heart of stone. Everywhere was evidence of the misery which had been so bravely endured during that seven months' siege. The smouldering ruins of houses which had been set on fire by balls, the shattered fortifications, the felled trunks of trees, upturned pavements, broken images, and other materials for repairing gaps made by the daily cannonade, strewn around in all directions, the skeletons of unclean animals from which the flesh had been gnawed, the unburied bodies of men and women who had fallen dead in the public thoroughfares—more than all, the gaunt and emaciated forms of those who still survived, the ghosts of their former selves—all might have induced at least a doubt whether the suffering inflicted already were not a sufficient punishment, even for crimes so deep as heresy and schism. But this was far from being the sentiment of Don Frederic. He seemed to read defiance as well as despair in the sunken eyes which glared upon him as he entered the place, and he took no thought of the pledge which he had informally but sacredly given.

All the officers of the garrison were at once arrested. Some of them had anticipated the sentence of their conqueror by a voluntary death. Captain Bordet, a French officer of distinction, like Brutus, compelled his servant to hold the sword upon which he fell, rather than yield himself alive to the vengeance of the Spaniards. 

---

1 Hoofd, viii. 313.  
3 Bor, vi. 440. Hoofd, viii. 313.—Even Mendoza admits that a message promising mercy, was sent into the city in order to induce the besieged to abandon their desperate resolution. "Se embio aviso del campo que todos los que quisiesen quedar en la villa a merced, se usaría con ellos de misericordia."—ix. 504. The assurance in Count Overstein’s letter, according to the uniform testimony of Dutch historians, was to the effect stated in the text. "Dat er alamo vergiffenis ten beeste was, Zoo zy tot overgift vertaasen wilden; ende niemand gestraet zoude worden, oft hy hadde ’t nia hu

---

8 P. Sterlinx. Bor, vi. 441. Hoofd, viii. 314, 815.  
9 Ibid. Bor, Hoofd Mendoza, ix. 205.  
10 Bor, vi. 440. Hoofd, Meteren, Mendoza. According to Pierre Sterlinx, the instrument of death selected was an arquebus. Bordet’s words to his servant being: “Et toy, mon ami, qui m’aves faict plusieurs services, faite moy achatre la derniere; mo donnant un coup d’arquebouse”—“Et

---
of generosity were not wanting. Instead of Peter Hasselaer, a young officer who had displayed remarkable bravery throughout the siege, the Spaniards by mistake arrested his cousin Nicholas. The prisoner was suffering himself to be led away to the inevitable scaffold without remonstrance, when Peter Hasselaer pushed his way violently through the ranks of the captors. "If you want Ensign Hasselaer, I am the man. Let this innocent person depart," he cried. Before the sun set his head had fallen. All the officers were taken to the House of Kleef, where they were immediately executed. Captain Ripperda, who so heroically rebuked the craven conduct of the magistracy, whose eloquence had inflamed the soldiers and citizens to resistance, and whose skill and courage had sustained the siege so long, was among the first to fall. A natural son of Cardinal Granvelle, who could have easily saved his life by proclaiming a parentage which he loathed, and Lancelot Brederode, an illegitimate scion of that ancient house, were also among these earliest victims.

The next day Alva came over to the camp. He rode about the place, examining the condition of the fortifications from the outside, but returned to Amsterdam without having entered the city. On the following morning the massacre commenced. The plunder had been commuted for two hundred and forty thousand guilders, which the citizens bound themselves to pay in four instalments; but murder was an indispensable accomplishment of victory, and admitted of no compromise. Moreover, Alva had already expressed the determination to effect a general massacre upon this occasion. The garrison, during the siege, had been reduced from four thousand to eighteen hundred. Of these the Germans, six hundred in number, were, by Alva's order, dismissed, on a pledge to serve no more against the King. All the rest of the garrison were immediately butchered, with at least as many citizens. Drummers went about the city daily, proclaiming that all who harboured persons having, at any former period, been fugitives, were immediately to give them up, on pain of being instantly hanged themselves in their own doors. Upon these refugees and upon the soldiers fell the brunt of the slaughter; although, from day to day, reasons were perpetually discovered for putting to death every individual at all distinguished by service, station, wealth, or liberal principles; for the carnage could not be accomplished at once, but, with all the industry and heartiness employed, was necessarily protracted through several days. Five executioners, with their attendants, were kept constantly at work; and when at last they were exhausted with fatigue, or perhaps sickened with horror, three hundred wretched were tied two and two, back to back, and drowned in the Harlem Lake.

At last, after twenty-three hundred human creatures had been murdered in cold blood, within a city where so}

---

Compare Mendoza, ix. 205; Bentivoglio, v. 129; Correspondance de Philippe II, 1257; Cabrera, Filipe Segundo, x. 784-750. —Even Bentivoglio is shocked at the barbarities committed after the surrender of the city. "Pitt di 2 mille furono giustiziati e nell' operazione restarono 6 stracciol, 6 satii, 6 inhorriditi per maniera i carnacel stese — resto in dubbio, se fossero stati pit strec, 6 da una parte fai commessi 6 dall'altra i supplici eseguiti." —Bentivoglio, ubi sup. Cabrera, on the contrary, expresses great disgust that any one should be moved to compassion for the fate of these heretics. 10 This is the number given by Alva. (Correspondance de Philippe II, ii. 1257.) The Dutch historians make the amount of
many thousands had previously perished by violent or by lingering deaths; the blasphemous farce of a pardon was enacted. 1 Fifty-seven of the most prominent burghers of the place were, however, excepted from the act of amnesty, and taken into custody as security for the future good conduct of the other citizens. Of these hostages some were soon executed, some died in prison, and all would have been eventually sacrificed, had not the naval defeat of Basseu soon afterwards enabled the Prince of Orange to rescue the remaining prisoners. 2 Ten thousand two hundred and fifty-six shots had been discharged against the walls during the siege. 3 Twelve thousand of the besieging army had died of wounds or disease, during the seven months and two days, between the investment and the surrender. 4 In the earlier part of August, 5 after the executions had been satisfactorily accomplished, Don Frederic made his triumphal entry, and the first chapter in the invasion of Holland was closed. Such was the memorable siege of Harlem, an event in which we are called upon to wonder equally at human capacity to inflict and to endure misery.

The Spaniards celebrated a victory, while in Utrecht they made an effigy of the Prince of Orange, which they carried about in procession, broke upon the wheel, and burned. 6 It was, however, obvious, that if the reduction of Harlem were a triumph, it was one which the conquerors might well exchange for a defeat. At any rate, it was certain that the Spanish empire was not strong enough to sustain many more such victories. If it had required thirty thousand choice troops, among which were three regiments called by Alva respectively, the “Invincibles,” the “Immortals,” and the “None-such,” 7 to conquer the weakest city of Holland in seven months, and with the loss of twelve thousand men; how many men, how long a time, and how many deaths would it require to reduce the rest of that little province? For, as the sack of Naarden had produced the contrary effect from the one intended, inflaming rather than subduing the spirit of Dutch resistance, so the long and glorious defence of Harlem, notwithstanding its tragical termination, had only served to strain to the highest pitch the hatred and patriotism of the other cities in the province. Even the treasures of the New World were inadequate to pay for the conquest of that little sand-bank. Within five years, twenty-five millions of florins had been sent from Spain for war expenses in the Netherlands. 8 Yet this amount, with the addition of large sums annually derived from confiscations, 9 of five millions, at which the proceeds of the hundredth penny was estimated, and the two millions yearly, for which the tenth and twentieth pence had been compounded, was insufficient to save the treasury from begging and the unpaid troops from mutiny.

Nevertheless, for the moment the joy created was intense. Philip was lying dangerously ill at the wood of Segovia, 10 when the happy tidings of the reduction of Harlem, with its accompanying butchery, arrived. The account of all this misery, minutely detailed to him by Alva, acted like...
magie. The blood of twenty-three hundred of his fellow-creatures—coldly murdered, by his orders, in a single city—proved for the sanguinary monarch the elixir of life: he drank and was refreshed. "The principal medicine which has cured his Majesty," wrote Secretary Cayas from Madrid to Alva, "is the joy caused to him by the good news which you have communicated of the surrender of Harlem."¹ In the height of his exultation, the King forgot how much dissatisfaction he had recently felt with the progress of events in the Netherlands; how much treasure had been annually expended with an insufficient result. "Knowing your necessity," continued Cayas, "his Majesty instantly sent for Doctor Velasco, and ordered him to provide you with funds, if he had to descend into the earth to dig for it."² While such was the exultation of the Spaniards, the Prince of Orange was neither dismayed nor despondent. As usual, he trusted to a higher power than man. "I had hoped to send you better news," he wrote, to Count Louis, "nevertheless, since it has otherwise pleased the good God, we must conform ourselves to His Divine will. I take the same God to witness that I have done everything according to my means, which was possible, to succour the city."³ A few days later, writing in the same spirit, he informed his brother that the Zealanders had succeeded in capturing the castle of Rammekens, on the isle of Walcheren. "I hope," he said, "that this will reduce the pride of our enemies, who, after the surrender of Harlem, have thought that they were about to swallow us alive. I assure myself, however, that they will find a very different piece of work from the one which they expect."⁴

CHAPTER IX.

Position of Alva—Hatred entertained for him by elevated personages—Quarrels between him and Medina Celi—Departure of the latter—Complaints to the King by each of the other—Attempts at conciliation addressed by government to the people of the Netherlands—Grotesque character of the address—Mutinous demonstration of the Spanish troops new saucy disposed to Orange—Obedience, with difficulty, restored by Alva—Commencement of the siege of Alkmaar—Sanguinary massacres of the Duke—Encouraging and enthusiastic language of the Prince—Preparations in Alkmaar for defence—The first assault steadily repulsed—Refusals of the soldiers to storm a second time—Expedition of the Carpenter-envoy—Orders of the Prince to flood the country—The Carpenter's despatches in the enemy's hands—Effect produced upon the Spaniards—the siege raised—Negotiations of Count Louis with France—Uneasiness and secret correspondence of the Duke—Convention with the English government—Objects pursued by Orange—Cruelty of De la Marche—His dismissal from office and, subsequent death—Negotiations with France—Altered tone of the French court with regard to the St. Bartholomew—II effects of the crime upon the royal projects—Hypocrisy of the Spanish government—Letter of Louis to Charles IX.—Complaints of Charles IX.—Secret aspirations of that monarch and of Philip—Intrigues concerning the Polish election—Renewed negotiations between Schomberg and Count Louis, with consent of Orange—Conditions prescribed by the Prince—Articles of secret alliance—Remarkable letter of Count Louis to Charles IX.—Responsible and isolated situation of Orange—The "Address" and the "Epistle"—Religious sentiments of the Prince—Naval action on the Zuider Zee—Captivity of Bozen and of Saint Aldegonde—Odiouse position of Alva—His unceasing cruelty—Execution of Vithoven—Fraud practised by Alva upon his creditors—Arrival of Requesens, the new Governor-General—Departure of Alva—Concluding remarks upon his administration.

¹ Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1259. ² Ibid. ³ Groen v. Prinse, Archives, etc., iv. 175. ⁴ Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 181.
While he continued to be the object of a popular hatred as intense as ever glowed, he had gradually lost his hold upon those who, at the outset of his career, had been loudest and lowest in their demonstrations of respect. "Believe me," wrote Secretary Albornoz to Secretary Cayas, "this people abhor our nation worse than they abhor the Devil. As for the Duke of Alva, they foam at the mouth when they hear his name." ¹ Viglius, although still maintaining smooth relations with the Governor, had been, in reality, long since estranged from him. Even Aerschot, for whom the Duke had long maintained an intimacy half affectionate, half contemptuous, now began to treat him with a contumely which it was difficult for so proud a stomach to digest.²

But the main source of discomfort was doubtless the presence of Medina Coeli. This was the perpetual thorn in his side, which no cunning could extract. A successor who would not and could not succeed him, yet who attended him as his shadow and his evil genius—a confidential colleague who betrayed his confidence, mocked his projects, derided his authority, and yet complained of ill treatment—a rival who was neither compeer nor subaltern, and who affected to be his censor—a functionary of a purely anomalous character, sheltering himself under his abnegation of an authority which he had not dared to assume, and criticising measures which he was not competent to grasp;—such was the Duke of Medina Coeli, in Alva's estimation.

The bickering between the two Dukes became unceasing and disgraceful. Of course, each complained to the King, and each, according to his own account, was a martyr to the other's tyranny; but the meekness manifested by Alva, in all his relations with the new comer, was wonderful, if we are to believe the accounts furnished by himself and by his confidential secretary.³ On the other hand, Medina Coeli wrote to the King, complaining of Alva in most unmitigated strains, and asserting that he was himself never allowed to see any dispatches, nor to have the slightest information as to the policy of the government.⁴ He reproached the Duke with shrinking from personal participation in military operations, and begged the royal forgiveness if he withdrew from a scene where he felt himself to be superfluous.⁵

Accordingly, towards the end of November, he took his departure, without paying his respects. The Governor complained to the King of this unceremonious proceeding, and assured His Majesty that never were courtesy and gentleness so ill requited as his had been by this ingrate and cankered Duke. "He told me," said Alva, "that if I did not stay in the field, he would not remain with me in peaceful cities, and he asked me if I intended to march into Holland with the troops which were to winter there. I answered, that I should go wherever it was necessary, even should I be obliged to swim through all the canals of Holland."⁶ After giving these details, the Duke added, with great appearance of candour and meekness, that he was certain Medina Coeli had only been influenced by extreme zeal for His Majesty's service, and that, finding so little for him to do in the Netherlands, he had become dissatisfied with his position.⁷

Immediately after the fall of Harlem, another attempt was made by Alva to win back the allegiance of the other cities by proclamations. It had become obvious to the Governor, that so determined a resistance on the part of the first place besieged augured many long campaigns before the whole province could be subdued. A circular was accordingly issued upon the 26th July from Utrecht, and published immediately afterwards in all the cities of the Netherlands. It was a paper of singular character, commingling an affection of almost ludicrous clemency,
with honest and hearty brutality, There was consequently something very grotesque about the document. Philip, in the outside, was made to sustain towards his undutiful subjects the characters of the brooding hen and the prodigal's father; a range of impersonation hardly to be allowed him, even by the most obtrusive flattery. "Ye are well aware," thus ran the address, "that the King has, over and over again, manifested his willingness to receive his children, in however forlorn a condition the prodigals might return. His Majesty assures you once more that your sins, however black they may have been, shall be forgiven and forgotten in the plenitude of royal kindness, if you repent and return in season to his Majesty's embrace. Notwithstanding your manifold crimes, his Majesty still seeks, like a hen calling her chickens, to gather you all under the parental wing. The King hereby warns you once more, therefore, to place yourselves in his royal hands, and not to quail for his rage, cruelty, and fury, and the approach of his army."  

The affectionate character of the address, already fading towards the end of the preamble, soon changes to bitterness. The domestic maternal fowl dilates into the sanguinary dragon as the address proceeds. "But if," continues the monarch, "ye disregard these offers of mercy, receiving them with closed ears, as heretofore, then we warn you that there is no rigour, nor cruelty, however great, which you are not to expect by laying waste, starvation, and the sword, in such manner that nowhere shall remain a relic of that which at present exists, but his Majesty will strip bare and utterly depopulate the land, and cause it to be inhabited again by strangers; since otherwise his Majesty could not believe that the will of God and of his Majesty had been accomplished." 1

It is almost superfluous to add that this circular remained fruitless. The royal wrath, thus blasphemously identifying itself with Divine vengeance, inspired no terror, the royal blandishments no affection.

The next point of attack was the city of Alkmaar, situate quite at the termination of the Peninsula, among the lagoons and redeemed prairies of North Holland. The Prince of Orange had already provided it with a small garrison. 2 The city had been summoned to surrender by the middle of July, and had returned a bold refusal. 3 Meantime, the Spaniards had retired from before the walls, while the surrender and chastisement of Harlem occupied them during the next succeeding weeks. The month of August, moreover, was mainly consumed by Alva in quelling a dangerous and protracted mutiny, which broke out among the Spanish soldiers at Harlem, 4 between three and four thousand of them having been quartered upon the ill-fated population of that city. 5 Unceasing misery was endured by the inhabitants at the hands of the ferocious Spaniards, flushed with victory, mutinous for long arrears of pay, and greedy for the booty which had been denied. At times, however, the fury of the soldiery was more violently directed against their own commanders than against the enemy. A project was even formed by the malcontent troops to deliver Harlem into the hands of Orange. A party of them, disguised as Baltic merchants, waited upon the Prince at Delft, and were secretly admitted to his bedside before he had risen. They declared to him that they were Spanish soldiers, who had compassion on his cause, were dissatisfied with their own government, and were ready, upon receipt of forty thousand guilders, to deliver the city into his hands. The Prince took the matter into consideration, and promised to accept the offer if he could raise the required sum. This, however, he found himself unable to do within the stipulated time, and thus, for want of so paltry a sum, the offer was of necessity declined." 6

1 The document is published in Bor, vi. 445, 446.

2 Ibid., vi. 444.

3 Ibid., viii. 444, 465.


5 Bor, vi. 449.

6 Muteren, iv. 81. Hoekl (viii. 318) also tells the story, but does not vouch for it.
Alkmaar Invested.

Various were the excesses committed by the insubordinate troops in every province in the Netherlands upon the long-suffering inhabitants. "Nothing," wrote Alva, "had given him so much pain during his forty years of service." He avowed his determination to go to Amsterdam in order to offer himself as a hostage to the soldiery, if by so doing he could quell the mutiny. He went to Amsterdam accordingly, where by his exertions, ably seconded by those of the Marquis Vitelli, and by the payment of thirty crowns to each soldier —fourteen on account of arrearages, and sixteen as his share in the Harlem compensation money — the rebellion was appeased, and obedience restored.

There was now leisure for the General to devote his whole energies against the little city of Alkmaar. On that bank and isle, the extreme verge of habitable earth, the spirit of Holland's Freedom stood at bay. The grey towers of Egmont Castle and of Egmont Abbey rose between the city and the sea, and there the troops sent by the Prince of Orange were quartered during the very brief period in which the citizens wavered as to receiving them. The die was soon cast, however, and the Prince's garrison admitted. The Spaniards advanced, burned the village of Egmont to the ground as soon as the patriots had left it, and on the 21st of August, Don Frederic, appearing before the walls, proceeded formally to invest Alkmaar. In a few days this had been so thoroughly accomplished, that, in Alva's language, "it was impossible for a sparrow to enter or go out of the city." The odds were somewhat unequal. Sixteen thousand veteran troops constituted the besieging force.

Within the city were a garrison of eight hundred soldiers, together with thirteen hundred burghers, capable of bearing arms. The rest of the population consisted of a very few refugees, besides the women and children. Two thousand one hundred able-bodied men, of whom only about one-third were soldiers, to resist sixteen thousand regulars!

Nor was there any doubt as to the fate which was reserved for them, should they succumb. The Duke was vociferous at the ingratitude with which his clemency had hitherto been requited. He complained bitterly of the ill success which had attended his monitory circulars; reproached himself with incredible vehemence for his previous mildness; and protested that, after having executed only twenty-three hundred persons at the surrender of Harlem, besides a few additional burghers since, he had met with no correspondent demonstrations of affection. He promised himself, however, an ample compensation for all this ingratitude in the wholesale vengeance which he purposed to wreak upon Alkmaar. Already he gloated in anticipation over the havoc which would soon be let loose within those walls. Such ravings, if invented by the pen of fiction, would seem a puerile caricature; proceeding, authentically, from his own, they still appear almost too exaggerated for belief. "If I take Alkmaar," he wrote to Philip, "I am resolved not to leave a single creature alive; the knife shall be put to every throat. Since the example of Harlem has proved of no use, perhaps an example of cruelty will bring the other

The author, who was a magistrate and a pensionary of the city, observes that his "slumberous and sleepy fellow burghers were converted into experienced soldiers by the Spaniard, who summoned them every moment out of bed to the walls." — P. 41.

Compare Hoefl, viii. 217-319 Wagenaar, vi. 441.

1 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1269.
2 Ibid.
3 Hoefl, viii. 518. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1564.

This is much the most important and detailed account of the siege of Alkmaar. The story is told with vigour and tersely, by a man who was daily and nightly on the walls during the whole siege, and who wrote his narrative as soon as the Spaniards had been repulsed.

5 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1264.
6 Wagenaar, vi. 441. Hoefl, viii. 321.
7 Wagenaar, viii. 441, 442. Hoefl.
8 Ibid. Hoefl, viii. 321.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

He took occasion also to read a lecture to the party of conciliation in Madrid, whose counsels, as he believed, his sovereign was beginning to heed. Nothing, he maintained, could be more senseless than the idea of pardon and clemency. This had been sufficiently proved by recent events. It was easy for people at a distance to talk about gentleness; but those upon the spot knew better. 

Gentleness had produced nothing, so far; violence alone could succeed in future. "Let your Majesty," he said, "be charmed of the impression, that with kindness anything can be done with these people. Already have matters reached such a point that many of those born in the country, who have hitherto advocated clemency, are now declared, and acknowledge their mistake. They are of opinion that not a living soul should be left in Alkmaar, but that every individual should be put to the sword." At the same time, he took occasion, even in these fiery letters, which seem dripping with blood, to commend his own natural benignity of disposition. "Your Majesty may be certain," he said, "that no man on earth desires the path of clemency more than I do, notwithstanding my particular hatred for heretics and traitors." It was therefore with regret that he saw himself obliged to take the opposite course, and to stifle all his gentler sentiments.

Upon Dietrich Sonoy, Lieutenant-Governor for Orange in the province of North Holland, devolved the immediate responsibility of defending this part of the country. As the storm rolled slowly up from the south, even that experienced officer became uneasy at the unequal conflict impending. He despatched a letter to his chief, giving a gloomy picture of his position. All looked instinctively towards the Prince, as to a God in their time of danger; all felt as if upon his genius and fortitude depended the whole welfare of the fatherland. It was hoped, too, that some resource had been provided in a secret foreign alliance. "If your princely grace," wrote Sonoy, "have made a contract for assistance with any powerful potentate, it is of the highest importance that it should be known to all the cities, in order to put an end to the emigration and to console the people in their affliction." The answer of the Prince was full of lofty enthusiasm. He reprimanded with gentle but earnest eloquence the despondency and little faith of his lieutenant and other adherents. He had not expected, he said, that they would have so soon forgotten their manly courage. They seemed to consider the whole fate of the country attached to the city of Harlem. He took God to witness that he had spared no pains, and would willingly have spared no drop of his blood to save that devoted city. "But as, notwithstanding our efforts," he continued, "it has pleased God Almighty to dispose of Harlem according to His Divine will, shall we, therefore, deny and deride His holy Word? Has the strong arm of the Lord thereby grown weaker? Has His Church therefore come to nought? You ask if I have entered into a firm treaty with any great king or potentate, to which I answer, that before I ever took up the cause of the oppressed Christians in these provinces, I had entered into a close alliance with the King of kings; and I am firmly convinced that all who put their trust in Him shall be saved by His almighty hand. The God of armies will raise up armies for us, to do battle with our enemies and His own." In conclusion, he stated his preparations for attacking the enemy by sea as well as by land, and encouraged his lieutenant and the citizens of the northern quarter to desear más el camino de la blandura que yo; aunque es odio particular el que tengo con los herejes y traidores," etc., etc.—Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1294.

1 V. M. sea cierto que nadie en la tierra

* * *

1 Hoofl, viii. 921. Bor, vi. 451, 452.

2 Bor (vi. 448, 449) publishes the letter.

3 Bor, ubi sup.
maintain a bold front before the advancing foe.\(^1\)

And now, with the dismantled and desolate Harlem before their eyes, a prophetic phantom, perhaps, of their own imminent fate, did the handful of people shut up within Alkmaar prepare for the worst. Their main hope lay in the friendly sea. The vast sluices called the Zyp, through which an inundation of the whole northern province could be very soon effected, were but a few miles distant. By opening these gates, and by piercing a few dykes, the ocean might be made to fight for them. To obtain this result, however, the consent of the inhabitants was requisite, as the destruction of all the standing crops would be inevitable. The city was so closely invested, that it was a matter of life and death to venture forth, and it was difficult, therefore, to find an envoy for this hazardous mission. At last, a carpenter in the city, Peter Van der Mey by name, undertook the adventure,\(^2\) and was entrusted with letters to Sonoy, to the Prince of Orange, and to the leading personages in several cities of the province. These papers were enclosed in a hollow walking-staff, carefully made fast at the top.\(^3\)

Affairs soon approached a crisis within the beleaguered city. Daily skirmishes, without decisive result, had taken place outside the walls. At last, on the 18th of September, after a steady cannonade of nearly twelve hours, Don Frederic, at three in the afternoon, ordered an assault.\(^4\) Notwithstanding his seven months' experience at Harlem, he still believed it certain that he should carry Alkmaar by storm. The attack took place at once upon the Frisian gate and upon the red tower on the opposite side. Two choice regiments, recently arrived from Lombardy, led the onset, rending the air with their shouts, and confident of an easy victory. They were sustained by what seemed an overwhelming force of disciplined troops. Yet never, even in the recent history of Harlem, had an attack been received by more dauntless breasts. Every living man was on the walls. The storming parties were assaulted with cannon, musketry, with pistols. Boiling water, pitch and oil, molten lead, and unslaked lime, were poured upon them every moment. Hundreds of tarred and burning hoops were skilfully quoited around the necks of the soldiers, who struggled in vain to extricate themselves from these fiery ruffs, while as fast as any of the invaders planted foot upon the breach, they were confronted face to face with sword and dagger by the burghers, who hurled themselves headlong into the moat below.\(^5\)

Thrice was the attack renewed with ever-increasing rage—thrice repulsed with unflinching fortitude. The storm continued four hours long. During all that period, not one of the defenders left his post, till he dropped from it dead or wounded.\(^6\) The women and children, unscarred by the balls flying in every direction, or by the hand-to-hand conflicts on the ramparts, passed steadily to and fro from the arsenals to the fortifications, constantly supplying their fathers, husbands, and brothers with powder and ball.\(^7\) Thus, every human being in the city that could walk had become a soldier. At last darkness fell upon the scene. The trumpet of recall was sounded, and the Spaniards, utterly discomfited, retired from the walls, leaving at least one thousand dead in the trenches,\(^8\) while only thirteen burghers and twenty-four of the garrison lost their lives.\(^9\) Thus was Alkmaar preserved for a little longer—thus a large and well-appointed army signally defeated by a handful of men fighting for their firesides and altars.

---

1 See this remarkable and eloquent letter, dated Dort, August 9, 1573, in Bor, vi. 447, 448.
2 Bor, vi. 452.
3 Ibid.
5 Nanning van Forest, p. 34. Bor, vi. 453. Hoofd, viii. 323.
6 Bor, Hoofd.—Compare Mendoza, x. 216–219. N. van Forest.
7 Nanning van Forest, 33. Hoofd, viii. 324.
8 Bor, vi. 453. Hoofd, viii. 324.
9 Hoofd. Nanning van Forest, 33.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

83.

In the autumn of Spain, it was thought no

sufficient, that the land upon which they were

shut, would continue to protect his

children. Neither the absence nor

the manner of Don Frederico was of

any avail. Several soldiers allowed

themselves to be seen through the

wall by their own officers, rather than

advance to the walls, and the assault

was accordingly precipitated to an

indine period.

Meanwhile, as Governor Sonoy had

opened many of the dykes, the land in

the neighbourhood of the camp was

becoming plashy, although as yet the

threatened inundation had not taken

place. The soldiers were already very

uncomfortable and very refractory.

The carpenter-escort had not been

idle, having, upon the 28th September,

arrived at Sonoy’s quarters, bearing

letters from the Prince of Orange.

These despatches gave distinct direc-
tions to Sonoy to flood the country at

all risks rather than allow Alkmaar to

fall into the enemy’s hands. The

dykes and sluices were to be protected

by a strong guard, lest the peasants,
in

order to save their crops, should repair

or close them in the night-time. The

letters of Orange were copied, and,
together with fresh communications from

Sonoy, delivered to the carpenter. A

note on the margin of the Prince’s let-
ter directed the citizens to kindle four

beacon lights in specified places as soon

as it should prove necessary to resort
to extreme measures. When that mo-

dent should arrive, it was solemnly

promised that an inundation should be

created which should sweep the whole

Spanish army into the sea. The work

had, in fact, been commenced. The

dykes and sluices had already been

opened, and a vast body of water,

driven by a strong north-west wind,

had rushed in from the ocean. It

threatened that the great dykes

would be forced to render the deluge

complete. The

inundation was used to destruction,

and a vast loss of property resu-

lting.
The Siege raised.

Spaniards, if this last measure were taken, must fly, or perish to a man. This decisive blow having been thus ordered and promised, the carpenter set forth towards the city. He was, however, not so successful in accomplishing his entrance unmolested as he had been in effecting his departure. He narrowly escaped with his life in passing through the enemy’s lines, and while occupied in saving himself was so unlucky, or, as it proved, so fortunate, as to lose the stick in which his despatches were enclosed. He made good his entrance into the city, where, by word of mouth, he encouraged his fellow-burghers as to the intentions of the Prince and Bonoy. In the meantime, his letters were laid before the general of the besieging army. The resolution taken by Orange, of which Don Frederic was thus unintentionally made aware, to flood the country far and near, rather than fail to protect Alkmaar, made a profound impression upon his mind. It was obvious that he was dealing with a determined leader, and with desperate men. His attempt to carry the place by storm had signally failed, and he could not deceive himself as to the temper and disposition of his troops ever since that repulse. When it should become known that they were threatened with submersion in the ocean, in addition to all the other horrors of war, he had reason to believe that they would retire ignominiously from that remote and desolate sand hook, where, by remaining, they could only find a watery grave. These views having been discussed in a council of officers, the result was reached that sufficient had been already accomplished for the glory of Spanish arms. Neither honour nor loyalty, it was thought, required that sixteen thousand soldiers should be sacrificed in a contest, not with man, but with the ocean.

On the 8th of October, accordingly, the siege, which had lasted seven weeks, was raised, and Don Frederic rejoined his father in Amsterdam. Ready to die in the last ditch, and to overwhelm both themselves and their foes in a common catastrophe, the Hollanders had at last compelled their haughty enemy to fly from a position which he had so insolently assumed.

These public transactions and military operations were not the only important events which affected the fate of Holland and its sister provinces at this juncture. The secret relations which had already been renewed between Louis of Nassau, as plenipotentiary of his brother, and the French court, had for some time excited great uneasiness in the mind of Alva. Count Louis was known to be as skilful a negotiator as he was valiant and accomplished as a soldier. His frankness and boldness created confidence. The “brave spirit in the loyal breast,” inspired all his dealing; his experience and quick perception of character prevented his becoming a dupe of even the most adroit politicians, while his truth of purpose made him incapable either of overreaching an ally or of betraying a trust. His career indicated that diplomacy might be sometimes

\[1\] Bor, vi. 454. Hoofd, viii. 325. Mendoza, x. 219, 220.
\[2\] Bor and Hoof, ubi sup. — Compare Mendoza, x. 219, 220.

Pypen en trommeln gingen dner schoon.
Men speide dner vroomde dunsen.
De Spangaerde stonden dar vergaar.
Zy tansten eec nieuwe Spaanske balsam.
"Maar sy vergeten te komen in de schans-
sen," — etc., etc.

With double-quick time the Spaniard proud
Against Alkmaar advances.
The piping and drumming are merry and loud,
We play them the best of dances.
The Spaniards stop — though they look very big —
They dance a very new Spanish jigm:
But forgot the use of their lances,—etc., etc.
successful, even although founded upon sincerity.
Alva secretly expressed to his sovereign much suspicion of France. He reminded him that Charles IX., during the early part of the preceding year, had given the assurance that he was secretly dealing with Louis of Nassau, only that he might induce the Count to pass over to Philip's service. At the same time Charles had been doing all he could to succour Mons, and had written the memorable letter which had fallen into Alva's hands on the capture of Genlis, and which expressed such a fixed determination to inflict a deadly blow upon the King, whom the writer was thus endeavouring to cajole. All this the Governor recalled to the recollection of his sovereign. In view of this increasing repugnance of the English court, Alva recommended that fair words should be employed; hinting, however, that it would be by no means necessary for his master to consider himself very strictly bound by any such pledges to Elizabeth, if they should happen to become inconveniently pressing. "A monarch's promises," he delicately suggested, "were not to be considered so sacred as those of humbler mortals." Not that the king should directly violate his word, but at the same time, "continued the Duke, "I have thought all my life, and I have learned it from the Emperor, your Majesty's father, that the negotiations of kings depend upon different principles from those of us private gentlemen who walk the world; and in this manner I always observed that your Majesty's father, who was so great a gentleman and so powerful a prince, conducted his affairs." The Governor took occasion, likewise, to express his regrets at the awkward manner in which the Ridolfi scheme had been managed. Had he been consulted at an earlier day, the affair could have been treated much more delicately; as it was, there could be little doubt but that the discovery of the plot had prejudiced the mind of Elizabeth against Spain. "From that dust," concluded the Duke, "has resulted all this dirt." It could hardly be matter of surprise, either to Philip or his Viceroy, that the discovery by Elizabeth of a plot upon their parts to take her life and place the crown upon the head of her hated rival, should have engendered unamiable feelings in her bosom towards them. For the moment, however, Alva's negotiations were apparently successful.

On the first of May 1573, the articles of convention between England and Spain, with regard to the Netherlands difficulty, had been formally published in Brussels. The Duke, in communicating the termination of these arrangements, quietly recommended his master thenceforth to take the English ministry into his pay. In particular he advised his Majesty to bestow an annual bribe upon Lord Burleigh, "who hold the kingdom in his hand; for it has always been my opinion," he continued, "that it was an excellent practice for princes to give pensions to the ministers of other potentates, and to keep those at home who took bribes from nobody." 6

On the other hand, the negotiations of Orange with the English court were not yet successful, and he still found it almost impossible to raise the requisite funds for carrying on the war. Certainly, his private letters showed that neither he nor his brothers were self-seekers in their negotiations. "You know," said he in a letter to his brothers, "that my intention has never been to seek my private advantage. I have only aspired for the liberty of the country, in conscience and in polity, which foreigners have sought to oppress. I have no other articles to

---

1 Correspondance de Philippe II., iv. 1211.
2 Ibid.
3 Ibid., ii. 399, note.
4 Ibid., ii. 1211.
5 "Que las negociaciones de los reyes pendrian de muy diferentes cabos que los negocios de los particulares cavalleros que andamos por el mundo, y desta manera lo

vi tratar a su padre de V. M. que era tan gran cavallero y tan príncipe,"

6 "Porque V. M. sea cierto que de aquellos polvos han salido todos esos lodos."—Ibid.
7 Ibid., ii. 333, 334. Meteren.
8 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1221.
1573.]

Departure of De la Marck.

propose, save that religion, reformed according to the Word of God, should be permitted, that then the commonwealth should be restored to its ancient liberty, and, to that end, that the Spaniards and other soldiery should be compelled to retire.\(^1\)

The restoration of civil and religious liberty, the establishment of the great principle of toleration in matters of conscience, constituted the purpose to which his days and nights were devoted, his princely fortune sacrificed, his life-blood risked. At the same time, his enforcement of toleration to both religions excited calumny against him among the bigoted adherents of both. By the Catholics he was accused of having instigated the excesses which he had done everything in his power to repress. The enormities of De la Marck, which had inspired the Prince's indignation, were even laid at the door of him who had risked his life to prevent and to chastise them. De la Marck had, indeed, more than countergbalanced his great service in the taking of Brill, by his subsequent cruelties. At last, Father Cornelius Musius, pastor of Saint Agatha, at the age of seventy-two, a man highly esteemed by the Prince of Orange, had been put to torture and death by this barbarian, under circumstances of great atrocity. The horrid deed cost the Prince many tears, aroused the indignation of the estates of Holland, and produced the demission of the perpetrator from their service. It was considered expedient, however, in view of his past services, his powerful connexions, and his troublesome character, that he should be induced peaceably to leave the country.\(^3\)

It was long before the Prince and the estates could succeed in ridding themselves of this encumbrance. He created several riots in different parts of the province, and boasted that he had many fine ships of war and three thousand men devoted to him, by whose assistance he could make the estates “dance after his pipe.” At the beginning of the following year (1574), he was at last compelled to leave the provinces, which he never again troubled with his presence. Some years afterwards, he died of the bite of a mad dog; an end not inappropriate to a man of so rabid a disposition.\(^2\)

While the Prince was thus steadily striving for a lofty and generous purpose, he was, of course, represented by his implacable enemies as a man playing a game which, unfortunately for himself, was a losing one. “That poor prince,” said Granvelle, “has been ill advised. I doubt now whether he will ever be able to make his peace, and I think we shall rather try to get rid of him and his brother as if they were Turks.” The marriage with the daughter of Maurice, unde mala et quia ipse talis, and his brothers have done him much harm. So have Schwendi and German intimacies. I saw it all very plainly, but he did not choose to believe me.”\(^4\)

Ill-starred, worse counsellel William of Orange! Had he but taken the friendly Cardinal’s advice, kept his hand from German marriages and his feet from conventicles—had he assisted his sovereign in burning heretics and hunting rebels, it would not then have become necessary “to treat him like a Turk.” This is unquestionable. It is equally so that there would have been one great lamp the less in that strait and difficult pathway which leads to the temple of true glory.

The main reliance of Orange was upon the secret negotiations which his brother Louis was then renewing with the French Government. The Prince had felt an almost insurmountable repugnance towards entertaining any relation with that blood-stained court, since the massacre of Saint Bartholomew. But a new face had recently streekte den pleeger selve trap tot sijno onderzynk.”—Brundt. Hoofl.

\(^{1}\) Archives de la Maison d’Orange, iv. 50.

\(^{2}\) Hoofl. vii. 281, 292. Bor. vi. 422. Brandt, Hist. der Bel., x. 558-540. (d. 1.)


\(^{4}\) Cardinal Granvelle to Morillon, 18th March 1573, in Groen van Prinxt., Archives, iv. 85*.
been put upon that transaction. Instead of glorying in their crime, the King and his mother now assumed a tone of compunction, and averred that the deed had been unpremeditated; that it had been the result of a panic or an ecstasy of fear inspired by the suddenly discovered designs of the Huguenots; and that, in the instinct of self-preservation, the King, with his family and immediate friends, had plunged into a crime which they now bitterly lamented. The French envoys at the different courts of Europe were directed to impress this view upon the minds of the monarchs to whom they were accredited. It was certainly a very different instruction from that which they had at first received. Their cue had originally been to claim a full meed of praise and thanksgiving in behalf of their sovereign for his meritorious exploit. The salvoes of artillery, the illuminations and rejoicings, the solemn processions and masses by which the auspicious event had been celebrated, were yet fresh in the memory of men. The ambassadors were sufficiently embarrassed by the distinct and determined approbation which they had recently expressed. Although the King, by formal proclamation, had assumed the whole responsibility, as he had notoriously been one of the chief perpetrators of the deed, his agents were now to stultify themselves and their monarch by representing, as a deplorable act of frenzy, the massacre which they had already extolled to the echo as a skillfully executed and entirely commendable achievement.

To humble the power of Spain, to obtain the hand of Queen Elizabeth for the Duke d'Alençon, to establish an insidious kind of protectorate over the Protestant princes of Germany, to obtain the throne of Poland for the Duke of Anjou, and even to obtain the imperial crown for the house of Valois—all these cherished projects seemed dashed to the ground by the Paris massacre and the abhorrence which it had created. Charles and Catharine were not slow to discover the false position in which they had placed themselves, while the Spanish jocularity at the immense error committed by France was visible enough through the assumed mask of holy horror.

Philip and Alva listened with mischievous joy to the howl of execration which swept through Christendom upon every wind. They rejoiced as heartily in the humiliation of the malefactors as they did in the perpetration of the crime. “Your Majesty,” wrote Louis of Nassau, very bluntly, to King Charles, “see how the Spaniard, your mortal enemy, feasts himself full with the desolation of your affairs; how he laughs, to split his sides, at your misfortunes. This massacre has enabled him to weaken your Majesty more than he could have done by a war of thirty years.”

Before the year had revolved, Charles had become thoroughly convinced of the fatal impression produced by the event. Bitter and almost abject were his whinings at the Catholic King’s desertion of his cause. “He knows well,” wrote Charles to Saint George, “that if he can terminate these troubles and leave me alone in the dance, he will have leisure and means to establish his authority, not only in the Netherlands but elsewhere, and that he will render himself more grand and formidable than he has ever been. This is the return they render for the good received from me, which is such as every one knows.”

Gaspar de Schönberg, the adroit and honourable agent of Charles in estudo à entrerrius les troubles en son royaume; s’assurant avec bonne raison que c’est le seul moyen de parvenir à ses fins sans empêcher le peuple de participe de ses bénéfices, se rapprocha des cours de ses malheureux, et employa tout son industrie et
1573.]

Bigotry Fearsable.

Germany, had at a very early day warned his royal master of the ill effect of the massacre upon all the schemes which he had been pursuing, and especially upon those which referred to the crowns of the Empire and of Poland. The first project was destined to be soon abandoned. It was reserved neither for Charles nor Philip to divert the succession in Germany from the numerous offspring of Maximilian; yet it is instructive to observe the unprincipled avidity with which the prize was sought by both. Each was willing to effect its purchase by abjuring what were supposed his most cherished principles. Philip of Spain, whose mission was to extirpate heresy throughout his realms, and who, in pursuance of that mission, had already perpetrated more crimes, and waged more deeply in the blood of his subjects, than monarch had often done before; Philip, for whom his apologists have never found any defence, save that he believed it his duty to God rather to depopulate his territories than to permit a single heretic within their limits—now entered into secret negotiations with the princes of the Empire. He pledged himself, if they would confer the crown upon him, that he would withdraw the Spaniards from the Netherlands; that he would tolerate in those provinces the exercise of the Reformed religion; that he would recognize their union with the rest of the German Empire, and their consequent claim to the benefits of the Paasen treaty; that he would restore the Prince of Orange “and all his accomplices” to their former possessions, dignities, and condition; and that he would cause to be observed, throughout every realm incorporated with the Empire, all the edicts and ordinances which had been constructed to secure religious freedom in Germany. 1 In brief, Philip was willing, in case the crown of Charlemagne should be promised him, to undo the work of his life, to reinstate the arch-rebel whom he had hunted and proscribed, and to bow before that Reformation whose disciples he had so long burned and butchered. So much extent and no more had that religious conviction by which he had for years had the effrontery to excuse the enormities practised in the Netherlands. God would never forgive him so long as one heretic remained unburned in the provinces; yet give him the Imperial sceptre, and every heretic, without forsaking his heresy, should be purged with hyssop and become whiter than snow.

Charles IX., too, although it was not possible for him to recall to life the countless victims of the Parisian wedding, was yet ready to explain those murders to the satisfaction of every unprejudiced mind. This had become strictly necessary. Although the accession of either his Most Christian or Most Catholic Majesty to the throne of the Casarsa was a most improbable event, yet the humbler elective throne actually vacant was indirectly in the gift of the same powers. It was possible that the crown of Poland might be secured for the Duke of Anjou. 2 That key unlocks the complicated policy of this and the succeeding year. The Polish election is the clue to the labyrinthine intrigues and royal conversations during the period of the interregnum. Sigismund Augustus, last of the Jagellons, had died on the 7th July 1572. 3 The prominent candidates to succeed him were the Archduke Ernest, son of the Emperor, and Henry of Anjou. The Prince of Orange was not forgotten. A strong

1 2 — le roy d’Espagne à l’estat de l’Empereur veut les bóstaffe offres qu’il leur propose, a savoir si les princes veulent consentir à l’ensemble Empereur, il promet qu’avant que d’entre en estoé dignité, il oétera les Espagnols du Pays Bas; qu’il réunira le dict Pays Bas au corps de l’Empire, qu’il renverra le Prince d’Orange et tous ses complices en leur bien et premier estat, et qu’il fera observer et maintenir dagiers tous les pays de son obes-

2 Compare de Thou, t. vi. lib. iv.

3 Ibid., t. vii. lib. ii. 448.
party were in favour of compassing his election, as the most signal triumph which Protestantism could gain, but his ambition had not been excited by the prospect of such a prize. His own work required all the energies of all his life. His influence, however, was powerful, and eagerly sought by the partisans of Anjou. The Lutherans and Moravians in Poland were numerous, the Protestant party there and in Germany holding the whole balance of the election in their hands.

It was difficult for the Prince to overcome his repugnance to the very name of the man whose crime had at once made France desolate, and blighted the fair prospects under which he and his brother had, the year before, entered the Netherlands. Nevertheless, he was willing to listen to the statements by which the King and his ministers endeavoured, not entirely without success, to remove from their reputations, if not from their souls, the guilt of deep design. It was something that the murderers now affected to expiate their offence in sackcloth and ashes—it was something that, by favouring the pretensions of Anjou, and by listening with indulgence to the repentance of Charles, the siege of Rochelle could be terminated, the Huguenots restored to freedom of conscience, and an alliance with a powerful nation established, by aid of which the Netherlands might once more lift their heads. The French government, deeply hostile to Spain, both from passion and policy, was capable of rendering much assistance to the revolted provinces. "I entreat you most humbly, my good master," wrote Schönberg to Charles IX., "to beware of allowing the electors to take into their heads that you are favouring the affairs of the King of Spain in any manner whatsoever. Commit against him no act of open hostility, if you think that imprudent; but look sharp! if you do not wish to be thrown clean out of your saddle. I should split with rage if I should see you, in consequence of the wicked calumnies of your enemies, fail to secure the prize."  

Orange was induced, therefore, to accept, however distrustfully, the expression of a repentance which was to be accompanied with healing measures. He allowed his brother Louis to resume negotiations with Schönberg, in Germany. He drew up and transmitted to him the outlines of a treaty which he was willing to make with Charles. The main conditions of this arrangement illustrated the disinterested character of the man. He stipulated that the King of France should immediately make peace with his subjects, declaring expressly that he had been abused by those who, under pretence of his service, had sought their own profit at the price of ruin to the crown and people. The King should make religion free. The edict to that effect should be confirmed by all the parliaments and estates of the kingdom, and such confirmations should be distributed without reserve or deceit among all the princes of Germany. If his Majesty were not inclined to make war for the liberation of the Netherlands, he was to furnish the Prince of Orange with one hundred thousand crowns at once, and every three months with another hundred thousand. The Prince was to have liberty to raise one thousand cavalry and seven thousand infantry in France. Every city or town in the provinces which should be conquered by his arms, except in Holland or Zeeland, should be placed under the sceptre, and in the hands of the King of France. The provinces of Holland and Zeeland should also be placed under his protection, but should be governed by their own gentlemen and citizens. Perfect religious liberty and maintenance of the ancient constitutions, privileges, and charters were to be guaranteed "without any cavilling whatsoever."  

1 Letters in Groen v. Prinst., Archivos, etc., iv. part ii. passim.—Compares De Thou, vi. 1. 52 and 55 et al.
2 Groen v. Prinst., Archivos, etc., iv. 15°, 16°.
3 Ibid., iv. 116-118.
or the estates of Holland or Zealand, were to reimburse his Christian Majesty for the sums which he was to advance. In this last clause was the only mention which the Prince made of himself, excepting in the stipulation that he was to be allowed a levy of troops in France. His only personal claims were to enlist soldiers to fight the battles of freedom, and to pay their expense, if it should not be provided for by the estates. At nearly the same period, he furnished his secret envoys, Lumbres and Doctor Taijaert, who were to proceed to Paris, with similar instructions.¹

The indefatigable exertions of Schömberg, and the almost passionate explanations on the part of the court of France, at length produced their effect. "You will constantly assure the princes," wrote the Duke of Anjou to Schömberg, "that the things written to you concerning that which had happened in this kingdom are true; that the events occurred suddenly, without having been in any manner premeditated; that neither the King nor myself have ever had any intelligence with the King of Spain, against those of the religion, and that all is utter imposture which is daily said on this subject to the princes."²

Count Louis required peremptorily, however, that the royal repentance should bring forth the fruit of salvation for the remaining victims. Out of the nettles of these dangerous intrigues his fearless hand plucked the "flower of safety" for his down-trodden cause. He demanded not words, but deeds, or at least pledges. He maintained with the agents of Charles and with the monarch himself the same hardy scepticism which was manifested by the Huguenot deputies in their conferences with Catharine de Medicis. "Is the word of a king," said the dowager to the commissioners, who were insisting upon guarantees, "is the word of a king not sufficient?"³

"No, madam," replied one of them, "by Saint Bartholomew, no!"² Count Louis told Schömberg roundly, and repeated it many times, that he must have in a very few days a categorical response, "not to consist in words alone, but in deeds, and that he could not, and would not, risk for ever the honour of his brother, nor the property, blood, and life of those poor people who favoured the cause."⁴

On the 23d March 1573, Schömberg had an interview with Count Louis, which lasted seven or eight hours. In that interview the enterprises of the Count, "which," said Schömberg, "are assuredly grand and beautiful," were thoroughly discussed, and a series of conditions, drawn up partly in the hand of one, partly in that of the other negotiator, definitely agreed upon.⁵ These conditions were on the basis of a protectorate over Holland and Zealand for the King of France, with sovereignty over the other places to be acquired in the Netherlands. They were in strict accordance with the articles furnished by the Prince of Orange. Liberty of worship for those of both religions, sacred preservation of municipal charters, and stipulation of certain annual subsidies on the part of France, in case his Majesty should not take the field, were the principal features.⁶

Ten days later, Schömberg wrote to his master that the Count was willing to use all the influence of his family to procure for Anjou the crown of Poland, while Louis, having thus completed his negotiations with the agent, addressed a long and earnest letter to the royal principal.⁷ This remarkable despatch was stamped throughout with the impress of the writer's frank and fearless character. "Thus diddest thou" has rarely been addressed to anointed monarch in such unequivocal tones. The letter painted the favourable position in which the king had been placed previously to

² Groot v. Prinxt., Archives, etc., iv. 29* and 27*.
⁴ Groot v. Prinxt., Archives, etc. iv. 55*.
⁵ Ibid., iv. 48*, et seq.
⁶ Ibid., iv. 48*—48*.
⁷ Ibid., iv. 56*, 54*.
⁸ June 1st, 1573.—Groot v. Prinxt., Archives, etc., iv. 81*—90*.
the fatal summer of 1572. The Queen of England was then most amicably disposed towards him, and inclined to a yet closer connexion with his family. The German princes were desirous to elect him King of the Romans, a dignity for which his grandfather had so fruitlessly contended. The Dutch, driven to despair by the tyranny of their own sovereign, were eager to throw themselves into his arms. All this had been owing to his edict of religious pacification. How changed the picture now! Who now did reverence to a King so criminal and so fallen? "Your Majesty to-day," said Louis, earnestly and plainly, "is near to ruin. The State, crumbling on every side and almost abandoned, is a prey to any one who wishes to seize upon it; the more so, because your Majesty, having, by the late excess and by the wars previously made, endeavoured to force men's consciences, is now so destitute, not only of nobility and soldiery, but of that which constitutes the strongest column of the throne, the love and good wishes of the lieges, that your Majesty resembles an ancient building propped up, day after day, with piles, but which it will be impossible long to prevent from falling to the earth." Certainly, here were wholesome truths told in straightforward style.

The Count proceeded to remind the King of the joy which the "Spaniard, his mortal enemy," had conceived from the desolation of his affairs, being assured that he should, by the troubles in France, be enabled to accomplish his own purposes without striking a blow. This, he observed, had been the secret of the courtesy with which the writer himself had been treated by the Duke of Alva at the surrender of Mons. Louis assured the King, in continuation, that if he persevered in these oppressive courses towards his subjects of the new religion, there was no hope for him, and that his two brothers would to no purpose take their departure for England and for Poland, leaving him with a difficult and dangerous war upon his hands. So long as he maintained a hostile attitude towards the Protestants in his own kingdom, his fair words would produce no effect elsewhere. "We are beginning to be vexed," said the Count, "with the manner of negotiation practised by France. Men do not proceed roundly to business there, but angle with their dissimulation as with a hook." He bluntly reminded the King of the deceit which he had practised towards the Admiral—a sufficient reason why no reliance could in future be placed upon his word. Signal vengeance on those concerned in the attempted assassination of that great man had been promised; in the royal letters to the Prince of Orange, just before St Bartholomew. "Two days afterwards," said Louis, "your Majesty took that vengeance, but in rather ill fashion." It was certain that the King was surrounded by men who desired to work his ruin, and who, for their own purposes, would cause him "to bathe still deeper than he had done before in the blood of his subjects." This ruin his Majesty could still avert, by making peace in his kingdom, and by ceasing to torment his poor subjects of the religion.

In conclusion, the Count, with a few simple but eloquent phrases, alluded to the impossibility of chaining men's thoughts. The soul, being immortal, was beyond the reach of kings. Conscience was not to be conquered, nor the religious spirit imprisoned. This had been discovered by the Emperor Charles, who had

---

1 "Qu'elle ressemble à un viole bâtiment qu'on appuye tous les jours de quelques pilotes, mais enfin on ne le peut empêcher de tomber."—Groot v. Prinit., Archives, etc., iv. 85.*
2 Ibid.
3 Letter of Count Louis to Charles IX., June 1st, 1573. Groot v. Prinit., Archives, etc., iv. 96*.
4 "Descouvront qu'on ne procède point de dissimulation, comme ung hameçon."—Ibid., 88*.
5 "A deux jours de là elle la fist assassiner."—Ibid., 88*.
6 "Mais pour la faire, plus que devant, baigner au sang de ses sujets."—Ibid., 89*.
7 Ibid.
taken all the cities and great personages of Germany captive, but who had, nevertheless, been unable to take religion captive. "That is a sentiment," said Louis, "deeply rooted in the hearts of men, which is not to be plucked out by force of arms. Let your Majesty, therefore, not be deceived by the flattery of those who, like bad physicians, keep their patients in ignorance of their disease, whence comes their ruin."

It would be impossible, without insight into these private and most important transactions, to penetrate the heart of the mystery which enveloped at this period the relations of the great powers with each other. Enough has been seen to silence for ever the plea, often entered in behalf of religious tyranny, that the tyrant acts in obedience to a sincere conviction of duty; that, in performing his deeds of darkness, he believes himself to be accomplishing the will of Heaven. Here we have seen Philip offering to restore the Prince of Orange, and to establish freedom of religion in the Netherlands, if by such promises he can lay hold of the Imperial diadem. Here also we have Charles IX. and his mother—their hands reeking with the heretic blood of St Bartholomew—making formal engagements with heretics to protect heresy everywhere, if by such pledges the crown of the Jagellons and the hand of Elizabeth can be secured.

While Louis was thus busily engaged in Germany, Orange was usually established at Delft. He felt the want of his brother daily; for the solitude of the Prince, in the midst of such fiery trials, amounted almost to desolation. Not often have circumstances invested an individual with so much responsibility and so little power. He was regarded as the protector and father of the country; but from his own brains and his own resources he was to furnish himself with the means of fulfilling those high functions. He was anxious thoroughly to discharge the duties of a dictatorship, without grasping any more of its power than was indispensable to his purpose. But he was alone on that little isthmus, in single combat with the great Spanish monarchy. It was to him that all eyes turned, during the infinite horrors of the Harlem siege, and in the more prosperous league of Alkmaar. What he could do he did. He devised every possible means to succour Harlem, and was only restrained from going personally to its rescue by the tears of the whole population of Holland. By his decision, and the spirit which he diffused through the country, the people were lifted to a pitch of heroism by which Alkmaar was saved. Yet, during all this harassing period, he had no one to lean upon but himself.

"Our affairs are in pretty good condition in Holland and Zeeland," he wrote, "if I only had some aid. 'Tis impossible for me to support alone so many labours, and the weight of such great affairs as come upon me hourly—financial, military, political. I have no one to help me, not a single man, wherever I leave you to suppose in what trouble I find myself."

For it was not alone the battles and sieges which furnished him with occupation and filled him with anxiety. Alone, he directed in secret the politics of the country, and, powerless and outlawed though he seemed, was in daily correspondence not only with the estates of Holland and Zeeland, whose deliberations he guided, but with the principal governments of Europe. The estates of the Netherlands, moreover, had been formally assembled by Alva in September, at Brussels, to devise ways and means for continuing the struggle.

It seemed to the Prince a good opportunity to make an appeal to the patriotism of the whole country. He furnished the province of Holland, accordingly, with the outlines of an address which was forthwith despatched in their own and his name, to the general assembly of the Netherlands. The document was a nervous and rapid

---

1 Grote v. Prinst., Archives, etc., iv. 996.
2 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 74, 177, 191.
review of the course of late events in the provinces, with a cogenet statement of the reasons which should influence them all to unite in the common cause against the common enemy. It referred to the old affection and true-heartedness with which they had formerly regarded each other, and to the certainty that the inquisition would be for ever established in the land, upon the ruins of all their ancient institutions, unless they now united to overthrow it for ever. It demanded of the people, thus assembled through their representatives, how they could endure the tyranny, murders, and extortions of the Duke of Alva. The princes of Flanders, Burgundy, Brabant, or Holland, had never made war or peace, coined money, or exacted a silver from the people without the consent of the estates. How could the nation now consent to the daily impositions which were practised? Had Amsterdam and Middelburg remained true; had those important cities not allowed themselves to be seduced from the cause of freedom, the northern provinces would have been impregnable. "Tis only by the Netherlands that the Netherland are crushed," said the appeal. "Whence has the Duke of Alva the power of which he boasts, but from yourselves—from Netherland cities? Whence his ships, supplies, money, weapons, soldiers? From the Netherland people. Why has poor Netherland thus become degenerate and bastard? Whither has fled the noble spirit of our brave forefathers, that never brooked the tyranny of foreign nations, nor suffered a stranger even to hold office within our borders? If the little province of Holland can thus hold at bay the power of Spain, what could not all the Netherlands—Brabant, Flanders, Friesland, and the rest united—accomplish?"

In conclusion, the estates-general were earnestly adjured to come forward like brothers in blood, and join hands with Holland, that together they might rescue the fatherland and restore its ancient prosperity and bloom.

At almost the same time the Prince drew up and put in circulation one of the most vigorous and impassioned productions which ever came from his pen. It was entitled, an "Epistle, in form of supplication, to his royal Majesty of Spain, from the Prince of Orange and the estates of Holland and Zealand." The document produced a profound impression throughout Christendom. It was a loyal appeal to the monarch's loyalty—a demand that the land-privileges should be restored, and the Duke of Alva removed. It contained a startling picture of his atrocities and the nation's misery, and, with a few energetic strokes, demolished the pretense that these sorrows had been caused by the people's guilt. In this connection the Prince alluded to those acts of condemnation which the Governor-General had promulgated under the name of pardons, and treated with scorn the hypothesis that any crimes had been committed for Alva to forgive. "We take God and your Majesty to witness," said the epistle, "that if we have done such misdeeds as are charged in the pardon, we neither desire nor deserve the pardon. Like the most abject creatures which crawl the earth, we will be content to stone for our misdeeds with our lives. We will not murmur, O merciful King, if we be seized one after another, and torn limb from limb, if it can be proved that we have committed the crimes of which we have been accused."

After having thus set forth the tyranny of the government and the innocence of the people, the Prince, in his own name and that of the estates, announced the determination at which they had arrived. "The tyrant," he continued, "would rather stain every river and brook with our blood, and hang our bodies upon every tree in the country, than not feed to the full his vengeance, and steep him-
self to the lips in our misery. Therefore we have taken arms against the Duke of Alva and his adherents, to free ourselves, our wives and children, from his bloodthirsty hands. If he prove too strong for us, we will rather die an honourable death, and leave a praiseworthy fame, than bend our necks, and reduce our dear fatherland to such slavery. Herein are all our cities pledged to each other to stand every siege, to dare the utmost, to endure every possible misery, yes, rather to set fire to all our homes, and be consumed with them into ashes together, than ever submit to the decrees of this cruel tyrant.”

1

These were brave words, and destined to be bravely fulfilled, as the life and death of the writer, and the records of his country proved, from generation unto generation. If we seek for the mainspring of the energy which thus sustained the Prince in the unequal conflict to which he had devoted his life, we shall find it in the one pervading principle of his nature —confidence in God. He was the champion of the political rights of his country, but before all he was the defender of its religion. Liberty of conscience for his people was his first object. To establish Luther’s axiom, that thoughts are toll-free, was his determination. The Peace of Passau, and far more than the Peace of Passau, was the goal for which he was striving. Freedom of worship for all denominations, toleration for all forms of faith, this was the great good in his philosophy. For himself, he had now become a member of the Calvinist, or Reformed Church, having delayed for a time his public adhesion to this communion, in order not to give offence to the Lutherans and to the Emperor. He was never a dogmatist, however, and he sought in Christianity for that which unites rather than for that which separates Christians. In the course of October he publicly joined the church at Dort.

1 Sendbrief, etc., Bor, vi. 471.
2 Archives de la Maison d’Orange, iv. 286.
3 Bor, vi. 456.

The happy termination of the siege of Alkmaar was followed, three days afterwards, by another signal success on the part of the patriots. Count Bossu, who had constructed or collected a considerable fleet at Amsterdam, had, early in October, sailed into the Zuyder Zee, notwithstanding the sunken wrecks and other obstructions by which the patriots had endeavoured to render the passage of the Y impracticable. The patriots of North Holland had, however, not been idle, and a fleet of five-and-twenty vessels, under Admiral Dirkzoon, was soon cruising in the same waters. A few skirmishes took place, but Bossu’s ships, which were larger, and provided with heavier cannon, were apparently not inclined for the close quarters which the patriots sought.4 The Spanish Admiral, Hollander as he was, knew the mettle of his countrymen in a close encounter at sea, and preferred to trust to the calibre of his cannon. On the 11th October, however, the whole patriot fleet, favoured by a strong easterly breeze, bore down upon the Spanish armada, which, numbering now thirty sail of all denominations, was lying off and on in the neighbourhood of Horn and Enkhuyzen. After a short and general engagement, nearly all the Spanish fleet retired with precipitation, closely pursued by most of the patriot Dutch vessels. Five of the King’s ships were eventually taken—the rest effected their escape. Only the Admiral remained, who scorned to yield, although his forces had thus basely deserted him.5 His ship, the Inquisition,6 for such was her insolent appellation, was far the largest and best manned of both the fleets. Most of the enemy had gone in pursuit of the fugitives, but four vessels of inferior size had attacked the Inquisition at the commencement of the action. Of these, one had soon been silenced, while the other three had grappled themselves inextricably to her sides and prow. The four drifted together,

5 Bor, vi. 456. Hoofı, viii. 326, 327.
Letters of Alva to Philip, and of Bossu to Alva.—Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1274, and pp. 420, 421, notes.
6 Bor, vi. 456. Hoofı, viii. 326.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

Before wind and tide, a severe and savage action going on incessantly, during which the navigation of the ships was entirely abandoned. No scientific gunnery, no military or naval tactics were displayed or required in such a conflict. It was a life-and-death combat, such as always occurred when Spaniard and Netherlander met, whether on land or water. Bossu and his men, armed in bullet-proof coats of mail, stood with shield and sword on the deck of the Inquisition, ready to repel all attempts to board. The Hollander, as usual, attacked with pitch hoops, boiling oil, and molten lead. Repeatedly they effected their entrance to the Admiral's ship, and as often they were repulsed and slain in heaps, or hurled into the sea. The battle began at three in the afternoon, and continued without intermission through the whole night. The vessels, drifting together, struck on the shoal called the Nek, near Wydeness. In the heat of the action the occurrence was hardly heeded. In the morning twilight, John Haring, of Horn, the hero who had kept one thousand soldiers at bay upon the Diemer dyke, clambered on board the Inquisition, and hauled her colours down. The gallant but premature achievement cost him his life. He was shot through the body, and died on the deck of the ship, which was not quite ready to strike her flag. In the course of the forenoon, however, it became obvious to Bossu that further resistance was idle. The ships were aground near a hostile coast, his own fleet was hopelessly dispersed, three-quarters of his crew were dead or disabled, while the vessels with which he was engaged were constantly recruited by boats from the shore, which brought fresh men and ammunition, and removed their killed and wounded. At eleven o'clock, Admiral Bossu surrendered, and with three hundred prisoners was carried into Holland. Bossu was himself imprisoned at Horn, in which city he was received, on his arrival, with great demonstrations of popular hatred. The massacre of Rotterdam, due to his cruelty and treachery, had not yet been forgotten or forgiven.¹

This victory, following so hard upon the triumph at Alkmaar, was as gratifying to the patriots as it was galling to Alva. As his administration drew to a close, it was marked by disaster and disgrace on land and sea. The brilliant exploits by which he had struck terror into the heart of the Netherlands, at Jemmingen and in Brabant, had been effaced by the value of a handful of Hollanders, without discipline or experience. To the patriots, the opportune capture of so considerable a personage as the Admiral and Governor of the northern province was of great advantage. Such of the hostages from Harlem as had not yet been executed, now escaped with their lives. Moreover, Saint Aldegunde, the eloquent patriot and confidential friend of Orange, who was taken prisoner a few weeks later, in an action at Maeslandeluis,² was preserved from inevitable destruction by the same cause. The Prince hastened to assure the Duke of Alva that the same measure would be dealt to Bossu as should be meted to Saint Aldegonde.³ It was, therefore, impossible for the Governor-General to execute his prisoner, and he was obliged to submit to the vexation of seeing a leading rebel and heretic in his power, whom he dared not strike. Both the distinguished prisoners eventually regained their liberty.

The Duke was, doubtless, lower sunk in the estimation of all classes than he had ever been before, during his long and generally successful life. The reverses sustained by his army, the belief that his master had grown cold towards him, the certainty that his career in the Netherlands was closing without a satisfactory result, the natural weariness produced upon men's minds by the contemplation of so monotonous and unmutilated a tyranny during so many years, all contrib-

¹ Bor. Hoof. Letters of Alva and of Bossu, ubi sup. Mendoza, x. 214.
² Hoofd, viii. 331. Correspondance de
³ Hoofd, viii. 331.
buted to diminish his reputation. He felt himself odious alike to princes and to plebeians. With his cabinet councillors he had long been upon unsatisfactory terms. President Tismaq had died early in the summer, and Viglius, much against his will, had been induced, provisionally, to supply his place. But there was now hardly a pretence of friendship between the learned Frisian and the Governor. Each cordially detested the other. Alva was weary of Flemish and Frisian advisers, however subservient, and was anxious to fill the whole council with Spaniards of the Vargas stamp. He had forced Viglius once more into office, only that, by a little delay, he might expel him and every Netherlander at the same moment. "Till this ancient set of dogmatists be removed," he wrote to Philip, "with Viglius, their chief, who teaches them all their lessons, nothing will go right. 'Tis of no use adding one or two Spaniards to fill vacancies; that is only pouring a flasket of good wine into a leghell of vinegar; it changes to vinegar likewise." Your Majesty will soon be able to reorganise the council at a blow; so that Italians or Spaniards, as you choose, may entirely govern the country.

Such being his private sentiments with regard to his confidential advisers, it may be supposed that his intercourse with his council during the year was not like to be amicable. Moreover, he had kept himself, for the most part, at a distance from the seat of government. During the military operations in Holland, his head-quarters had been at Amsterdam. Here, at the year drew to its close, he had become as unpopular as in Brussels. The time-serving and unpatriotic burghers, who, at the beginning of the spring, set up his bust in their houses, and would give large sums for his picture in little, now broke his images, and tore his portrait from their walls; for it was evident that the power of his name was gone, both with prince and people. Yet, certainly, those fierce demonstrations which had formerly surrounded his person with such an atmosphere of terror had not slackened or become less frequent than heretofore. He continued to prove that he could be barbarous, both on a grand and a minute scale. Even as in preceding years, he could ordain wholesale massacres with a breath; and superintend in person the executions of individuals. This was illustrated, among other instances, by the cruel fate of Uitenhoove. That unfortunate nobleman, who had been taken prisoner in the course of the summer, was accused of having been engaged in the capture of Brill, and was, therefore, condemned by the Duke to be roasted to death before a slow fire. He was, accordingly, fastened by a chain, a few feet in length, to a stake, around which the fagots were lighted. Here he was kept in slow torture for a long time, insulted by the gibes of the laughing Spaniards who surrounded him — until the executioner and his assistants, more humane than their superior, despatched the victim with their spears—a mitigation of punishment which was ill received by Alva. The Governor had, however, no reason to remain longer in Amsterdam. Harlem had fallen; Alkmaar was relieved; and Leyden—destined in its second siege to furnish so signal a chapter to the history of the war—was belenguered, it was true, but, because known to be imperfectly supplied, was to be reduced by blockade rather than by active operations. Don Francis Valdez was accordingly left in command of the siege, which, however, after no memorable occurrences, was raised, as will soon be related. The Duke had contracted in Amsterdam an enormous amount of debt,

---

1 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1234, p. 339, note.
2 Ibid., ii. 1234. — "Yendo los poniendo poco a poco, los que estan gastan a los que estan, que es como hacer un jarro de buen vino con cumbre de vinagre, que lo convierte luego en vinagre." 3 Ibid.
both public and private. He accordingly, early in November, caused a proclamation to be made throughout the city by sound of trumpet, that all persons having demands upon him were to present their claims, in person, upon a specified day. During the night preceding the day so appointed, the Duke and his train very noiselessly took their departure, without notice or beat of drum. By this masterly generalship his unhappy creditors were foiled upon the very eve of their anticipated triumph; the heavy accounts which had been contracted on the faith of the King and the Governor, remained for the most part unpaid, and many opulent and respectable families were reduced to beggary. Such was the consequence of the unlimited confidence which they had reposed in the honour of their tyrant.

On the 17th of November, Don Luis de Requesens y Cufiga, Grand Commander of Saint Jago, the appointed successor of Alva, arrived in Brussels, where he was received with great rejoicings. The Duke, on the same day, wrote to the King, “kissing his feet” for thus relieving him of his functions. There was, of course, a profuse interchange of courtesy between the departing and the newly-arrived Governors. Alva was willing to remain a little while, to assist his successor with his advice, but preferred that the Grand Commander should immediately assume the reins of office. To this Requesens, after much respectful reluctance, at length consented. On the 29th of November he accordingly took the oaths, at Brussels, as Lieutenant-Governor and Captain-General, in presence of the Duke of Aerschot, Baron Berlaymont, the President of the Council, and other functionaries.4

On the 18th of December the Duke of Alva departed from the provinces for ever.5 With his further career this history has no concern, and it is not desirable to enlarge upon the personal biography of one whose name certainly never excites pleasing emotions. He had kept his bed for the greater part of the time during the last few weeks of his government—partly on account of his gout, partly to avoid being seen in his humiliation, but mainly, it was said, to escape the pressing demands of his creditors. He expressed a fear of travelling homeward through France, on the ground that he might very probably receive a shot out of a window as he went by. He complained pathetically that, after all his labours, he had not “gained the approbation of the King,” while he had incurred “the malevolence and universal hatred of every individual in the country.” Mondoucet, to whom he made the observation, was of the same opinion, and informed his master that the Duke “had engendered such an extraordinary hatred in the hearts of all persons in the land, that they would have fire-works in honour of his departure if they dared.”7

On his journey from the Netherlands, he is said to have boasted that he had caused eighteen thousand six hundred inhabitants of the provinces to be executed during the period of

---

1 Hoofd, viii. 329, 330.
2 Ibid.—Compare Correspondence Charles IX. and Mondoucet; Com. Roy. de l’Hist., iv. 340, sqq.—“Et craignant,” says the envoy, “toutes sortes de personnes à qu’il cest deu argent que so tenir ainsi resseré no soit ung commencement pour peu, à peu se partir tout en une coup sans dire adieu, manquant son crédit et Anvers et autres comme il vient qu’il fait. Ce que je ne puis croyre qu’il veulliaire, et que avec la disgrace des affaires publicques qu’il laisse en mauvais estat, il veulliau plus engager son particular. Nous verrous,” etc., etc.
3 Hoofd, viii. 329, 330.
5 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1291.
7 Corresp. de Charles IX. et Mondoucet. Com. Roy. de l’Hist., iv. 340, sqq.—The Duke used nearly the language which the poet, at a little later epoch, was placing in the mouth of another tyrant—

‘‘There is no creature loves me, And, if I die, no soul will pity me.’’

—King Richard III.
his government. The number of those who had perished by battle, siege, starvation, and massacre, defied computation. The Duke was well received by his royal master, and remained in favour until a new adventure of Don Frederic brought father and son into disgrace. Having deceived and abandoned a maid of honour, he suddenly espoused his cousin, in order to avoid that reparation by marriage which was demanded for his offence. In consequence, both the Duke and Don Frederic were imprisoned and banished, nor was Alva released till a general of experience was required for the conquest of Portugal. Thither, as it were with fetters on his legs, he went. After having accomplished the military enterprise entrusted to him, he fell into a lingering fever, at the termination of which he was so much reduced that he was only kept alive by milk, which he drank from a woman's breast. Such was the gentle second childhood of the man who had almost literally been drinking blood for seventy years. He died on the 12th December, 1582.

The preceding pages have been written in vain, if an elaborate estimate be now required of his character. His picture has been painted, as far as possible, by his own hand. His deeds, which are not disputed, and his written words, illustrate his nature more fully than could be done by the most eloquent pen. No attempt has been made to exaggerate his crimes, or to extenuate his superior qualities. Virtues he had none, unless military excellence be deemed, as by the Romans, a virtue. In war, both as a science and a practical art, he excelled all the generals who were opposed to him in the Netherlands, and he was inferior to no commander in the world during the long and belligerent period to which his life belonged. Louis of Nassau possessed high reputation throughout Europe as a skilful and daring general. With raw volunteers he had overthrown an army of Spanish regulars, led by a Netherlands chieftain of fame and experience; but when Alva took the field in person the scene was totally changed. The Duke dealt him such a blow at Jemmingen as would have disheartened for ever a less indomitable champion. Never had a defeat been more absolute. The patriot army was dashed out of existence, almost to a man, and its leader, naked and beggared, though not disheartened, sent back into Germany to construct his force and his schemes anew.

Having thus flashed before the eyes of the country the full terrors of his name, and vindicated the ancient military renown of his nation, the Duke was at liberty to employ the consummate tactics, in which he could have given instruction to all the world, against his most formidable antagonist. The country, paralysed with fear, looked anxiously but supinely upon the scientific combat between the two great champions of Despotism and Protestantism which succeeded. It was soon evident that the conflict could terminate in but one way. The Prince had considerable military abilities, and enthusiastic courage; he lost none of his well-deserved reputation by the unfortunate issue of his campaign; he measured himself in arms with the great commander of the age, and defied him day after day, in vain, to mortal combat; but it was equally certain that the Duke's quiet game was played in the most masterly manner. His positions and his encampments were taken with faultless judgment, his skirmishes wisely and coldly kept within the prescribed control, while the inevitable dissolution of the opposing force took place exactly as he had foreseen, and within the limits which he had predicted. Nor in the disastrous commencement of the year 1572 did the Duke less signally manifest his military genius. Assailed as he was at every point, with the soil suddenly upheaving all around him, as by an earthquake, he did not lose his firmness nor his perspicacity. Certainly, if he had not been so soon assisted by that
other earthquake, which on Saint Bartholomew’s Day caused all Christendom to tremble, and shattered the recent structure of Protestant Freedom in the Netherlands, it might have been worse for his reputation. With Moos safe, the Flemish frontier guarded, France faithful, and thirty thousand men under the Prince of Orange in Brabant, the heroic brothers might well believe that the Duke was “at their mercy.” The treason of Charles IX. “smote them as with a club,” as the Prince exclaimed in the bitterness of his spirit. Under the circumstances, his second campaign was a predestined failure, and Alva easily vanquished him by a renewed application of those dilatory arts which he so well understood.

The Duke’s military fame was unquestionable when he came to the provinces, and both in stricken fields and in long campaigns, he shewed how thoroughly it had been deserved; yet he left the Netherlands a baffled man. The Prince might be many times defeated, but he was not to be conquered. As Alva penetrated into the heart of the ancient Batavian land he found himself outmatched as he had never been before, even by the most potent generals of his day. More audacious, more inventive, more desperate than all the commanders of that or any other age, the spirit of national freedom now taught the oppressor that it was invincible, except by annihilation. The same lesson had been read in the same thickets by the Nervit to Julius Caesar, by the Batavians to the legions of Vespasian; and now a loftier and a purer flame than that which inspired the national struggles against Rome glowed within the breasts of the descendants of the same people, and inspired them with the strength which comes from religious enthusiasm. More experienced, more subtle, more politic than Hermann; more devoted, more patient, more magnanimous than Civilius, and equal to either in valour and determination, William of Orange was a worthy embodiment of the Christian national resistance of the German race to a foreign tyranny. Alva had entered the Netherlands to deal with them as with conquered provinces. He found that the conquest was still to be made, and he left the land without having accomplished it. Through the sea of blood, the Hollanders felt that they were passing to the promised land. More royal soldiers fell during the seven months’ siege of Harlem than the rebels had lost in the defeat of Jemmingen, and in the famous campaign of Brabant. At Alkmaar the rolling waves of insolent conquest were stayed, and the tide then ebbed for ever.

The accomplished soldier struggled hopelessly with the wild and passionate hatred which his tyranny had provoked. Neither his legions nor his consummate strategy availed him against an entirely desperate people. As a military commander, therefore, he gained, upon the whole, no additional laurels during his long administration of the Netherlands. Of all the other attributes to be expected in a man appointed to deal with a free country, in a state of incipient rebellion, he manifested a signal deficiency. As a financier, he exhibited a wonderful ignorance of the first principles of political economy. No man before, ever gravely proposed to establish confiscation as a permanent source of revenue to the state; yet the annual product from the escheated property of slaughtered heretics was regularly relied upon, during his administration, to replenish the King’s treasury, and to support the war of extermination against the King’s subjects. Nor did statesman ever before expect a vast income from the commerce of a nation devoted to almost universal massacre. During the daily decimation of the people’s lives, he thought a daily decimation of their industry possible. His persecutions swept the land of those industrious classes which had made it the rich and prosperous commonwealth it had been so lately; while, at the same time, he found a “Peruvian mine,” as he pretended, in the imposition of a tenth penny upon every one of its
commercial transactions. He thought that a people, crippled as this had been by the operations of the Blood Council, could pay ten per cent, not annually but daily; not upon its income, but upon its capital; not once only, but every time the value constituting the capital changed hands. He had boasted that he should require no funds from Spain, but that, on the contrary, he should make annual remittances to the royal treasury at home, from the proceeds of his imposts and confiscations; yet, notwithstanding these resources, and notwithstanding twenty-five millions of gold in five years, sent by Philip from Madrid, the exchequer of the provinces was barren and bankrupt when his successor arrived. Requesens found neither a penny in the public treasury nor the means of raising one.

As an administrator of the civil and judicial affairs of the country, Alva at once reduced its institutions to a frightful simplicity. In the place of the ancient laws of which the Dutch were proud, he substituted the Blood Council. This tribunal was even more arbitrary than the Inquisition. Never was a simpler apparatus for tyranny devised, than this great labour-saving machine. Never was so great a quantity of murder and robbery achieved with such despatch and regularity. Sentences, executions, and confiscations, to an incredible extent, were turned out daily with appalling precision. For this invention, Alva is alone responsible. The tribunal and its councillors were the work and the creatures of his hand, and faithfully did they accomplish the dark purpose of their existence. Nor can it be urged, in extenuation of the Governor's crimes, that he was but the blind and fanatically loyal slave of his sovereign. A noble nature could not have contaminated itself with such slaughterhouse work, but might have sought to mitigate the royal policy, without forsaking allegiance. A nature less rigid than iron would at least have manifested compunction, as it found itself converted into a fleshy instrument of massacre. More decided than his master, however, he seemed, by his promptness, to rebuke the dilatory genius of Philip. The King seemed, at times, to loiter over his work, teasing and tantalising his appetite for vengeance, before it should be gratified. Alva, rapid and brutal, scorned such epicureanism. He strode with gigantic steps over haughty statutes and popular constitutions; crushing alike the magnates who claimed a bench of monarchs for their jury, and the ignoble artisans who could appeal only to the laws of their land. From the pompous and theatrical scaffolds of Egmont and Horn, to the nineteen halteres prepared by Master Karl, to hang up the chief bakers and brewers of Brussels on their own thresholds—from the beheading of the twenty nobles on the Horse-market, in the opening of the Governor's career, to the roasting alive of Uitenhoove at its close—from the block on which fell the honoured head of Antony Straalen, to the obscure chair in which the ancient gentleswoman of Amsterdam suffered death for an act of vicarious mercy—from one year's end to another's—from the most signal to the most squalid scenes of sacrifice, the eye and hand of the great master directed, without weariness, the task imposed by the sovereign.

No doubt the work of almost indiscriminate massacre had been duly mapped out. Not often in history has a governor arrived to administer the affairs of a province, where the whole population, three millions strong, had been formally sentenced to death. As time went on, however, he even surpassed the bloody instructions which he had received. He waved aside the recommendations of the Blood Council to mercy; he dissuaded the monarch from attempting the path of clemency, which, for secret reasons, Philip was inclined at one period to attempt. The Governor had, as he assured the King, been using gentleness in vain, and he was now determined to try what a little wholesome severity could effect. These words were written immediately after the massacres at Harlem.
We: tv: all the bishopsho: at Mons, and
Ne: en, and Mechlin, and by the
Council of Tournay, daily, for six
years long, still crying from the
ground, he taxed himself with a mis-
placed and foolish tenderness to the
people. He assured the King that
when Alkmaar should be taken, he
would not spare a “living soul among
its whole population;” and, as his
parting advice, he recommended that
every city in the Netherlands should be
burned to the ground, except a few
which could be occupied permanently
by the royal troops. On the whole,
so finished a picture of a perfect and
absolute tyranny has rarely been pre-
sented to mankind by history, as in
Alva’s administration of the Nether-
lands.

The tens of thousands in those
miserable provinces who fell victims
to the gallowes, the sword, the stake,
the living grave, or to living banis-
ishment, have never been counted; for
those statistics of barbarity are often
effaced from human record. Enough,
however, is known, and enough has
been recited in the preceding pages.
No mode in which human beings have
ever caused their fellow-creatures to
suffer, was omitted from daily practice.
Men, women, and children, old and
young, nobles and paupers, opulent
burgers, hospital patients, lunatics,
dead bodies, all were indiscriminately
made to furnish food for the scaffold
and the stake. Men were tortured,
beheaded, hanged by the neck and by
the legs, burned before slow fires,
pitched to death with red-hot tongs,
broken upon the wheel, starved, and
put to flight alive. Their skins, stripped
from the living body, were stretched upon
drums, to be beaten in the march of
their brethren to the gallowes. The
bodies of many who had died a natural
death were exhumed, and their fester-
ing remains hanged upon the gibbet.

——

1 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1278.
2 “plakken, roeven en ruisen, ver-
jagen en veroorzaken, it’t vangen en spannen,
in’t bannen, verstrieven en geëxtra-
quieren, ja it’t branden en blanken, bangen,
kappen, hakken, menbijzien met afschuwelijke
formen en gevormingen en vermenigvuldigen de eeu-
van niet, också en onskele, arm en als

on pretext that they had died without
receiving the sacrament, but in reality
that their property might become the
legitimate prey of the treasury. Mar-
rriages of long standing were dissolved
by order of government, that rich
heiresses might be married against
their will to foreigners whom they
abhorred. Women and children were
executed for the crime of assisting
their fugitive husbands and parents
with a penny in their utmost need, and
even for consoling them with a
letter in their exile. Such was the
regular course of affairs as administered
by the Blood Council. The additional
barbarities committed amid the sack
and ruin of those blazing and starving
cities, are almost beyond belief; un-
born infants were torn from the living
bodies of their mothers; women and
children were violated by thousands;
and whole populations burned and
hacked to pieces by soldiers in every
mode which cruelty, in its wanton
ingeniousness, could devise. Such was
the administration, of which Vargas
affirmed, at its close, that too much
mercy, “nimia misericordia,” had been
its ruin.

Even Philip, inspired by secret views,
became weary of the Governor, who,
at an early period, had already given
discourse by his arrogance. To com-
memorate his victories, the Viceroy had
erected a colossal statue, not to his
monarch, but to himself. To proclaim
the royal pardon, he had seated himself
upon a golden throne. Such insolent
airs could be ill forgiven by the abso-
lute King. Too cautious to provoke
an open rupture, he allowed the Gov-
ernor, after he had done all his work,
and more than all his work, to retire
without disgrace, but without a tri-
umph. For the sins of that adminis-
istration, master and servant are in equal
measure responsible.

The character of the Duke of Alva,
rijke, jonk als oud, weduwen en weenen,
mannen, vrouwen en meesten.” — Send-
brieven, ede. in boek van Suplicatie, etc., in Bor,
v. 467.
5 Ibid. 6 Ibid. 6 Ibid. 7 Ibid.
8 Motters, iv. 88.
so far as the Netherlands are concerned, seems almost like a caricature. As a creation of fiction, it would seem grotesque: yet even that hardy, historical scepticism, which delights in reversing the judgment of centuries, and in re-establishing reputations long since degraded to the dust, must find it difficult to alter this man's position. No historical decision is final; an appeal to a more remote posterity, founded upon more accurate evidence, is always valid; but when the verdict has been pronounced upon facts which are undisputed, and upon testimony from the criminal's lips, there is little chance of a reversal of the sentence. It is an affectation of philosophical candour to extenuate vices which are not only avowed, but claimed as virtues.

NOTE.

As specimens of the songs made by the people while Alva was making their laws, the author ventures the following translations of popular ballads. The originals may be found, the one in the collection of Ernst Münch; Niederländisches Museum, I., 125, 126: the other in Van Vloten's excellent republication of Netherland Historical Songs—Nederlandsche Geschiedzangen, I., 393. Professor Altmeier has also quoted them in his "Succursale du Tribunal de Sang."

"Slaet op den tromele, van dirre dom deyne; Slaet op den tromele, van dirre dom doz; Slaet op den tromele, van dirre dom deyne, Vive le gens! is nu de loe.

"De Spaensche Inquisitie, voor Godt sal, De Spaensche Inquisitie, als draex bloet fe; De Spaensche Inquisitie ghevoelt punitie, De Spaensche Inquisitie ontsaat haer spel.

"Vive le gens! wilt chrestenyk leven, Vive le gens! houdt fraye moest; Vive le gen! Godt behoedt voor sneven, Vive le gen! edel chresten bloedt."

TRANSLATION.

Beat the drum gaily, rub a dow, rub a dub; Beat the drum gaily, rub a dow, rub a dub;— Long live the Beggars! is the watchword now.

The Spanish Inquisition, without intermission—

The Spanish Inquisition has drunk our blood;

The Spanish Inquisition, may God's mal- ediction Blast the Spanish Inquisition and all her brood.

Long live the Beggars! with thou Christ's word cherish—

Long live the Beggars! be bold of heart and hand;

Long live the Beggars! God will not see thee perish;

Long live the Beggars! oh noble Christian band.

"De Paus en Papisten, Gods handt doet leven, De Paus en Papisten syn t' eyenden haer rast; De Paus en Papisten wreest boven schreven, Ghy Paus en Papisten, soet nu offer.

"Twaert is getrokken, certoyn godts wreec moest, Twaert is getrokken, daer Joannes a schryft; banishment pronounced by him during his reign, have been copied from the official records—these in themselves would be a sufficient justification of all the charges ever brought by the most bitter contemporary of Holland or Flanders. If the investigator should remain sceptical, however, let him examine the "Registre des Condamnés et Bannis à cause des Troubles des Pays Bas," in three, together with the Records of the "Conseil des Troubles," in forty-three folio volumes, in the Royal Archives at Brussels. After going through all these chronicles of iniquity, the most determined historic doubter will probably throw up the case.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

The bitter blasphemy of the following is but a faint expression of the hatred which the tyranny of Alva had excited in the popular heart. It is called the Ghent Paternoster (Gentse Vaderzen), and is addressed to the Duke of Alva.

GENTSE VADERZEN.

"Hoe feroel, hoe feroel,
Het vorst van Brussel zy.
Hoe feroel, hoe feroel,
Het vorst van Brussel zy.
Vreemde vorsten, die zy vervolgen,
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
Waar hun beneden te dagen zyt.
PART IV.

ADMINISTRATION OF THE GRAND COMMANDER.

1573–1576.

CHAPTER I.

Previous career of Requesens—Philip's passion for detail—Apparent and real purposes of government—Universal desire for peace—Correspondence of leading royalists with Orange—Bankruptcy of the exchequer at Alva's departure—Expensive nature of the war—Premises of mildness on the part of the Commander—His private views—Distress of Mondragon at Middelburg—Crippled condition of Holland—Orange's secret negotiations with France—St Aldegondo's views in captivity—Expedition to relieve Middelburg—Counter preparations of Orange—Defeat of the expedition—Capitulation of Mondragon—Plans of Orange and his brothers—An army under Count Louis crosses the Rhine—Measures taken by Requesens—Manoeuvres of Avila and of Louis—The two armies in face at Mock—Battle of Mock-haest—Overtake and death of Count Louis—The phantom battle—Character of Louis of Nassau—Painful uncertainty as to his fate—Periodical mutinies of the Spanish troops characterised—Mutiny after the battle of Mock—Antwerp attacked and occupied—Insolent and oppressive conduct of the mutineers—Offers of Requesens refused—Mutiny in the citadel—Exploits of Salvatierra—Terms of composition—Soldiers' feast on the mere—Successful expedition of Admiral Boisot.

The horrors of Alva's administration had caused men to look back with fondness upon the milder and more vacillating tyranny of the Duchess Margaret. From the same cause the advent of the Grand Commander was hailed with pleasure¹ and with a momentary gleam of hope. At any rate, it was a relief that the man in whom was an almost impossible perfection of cruelty seemed embodied was at last to be withdrawn. It was certain that his successor, however ambitious of following in Alva's footsteps, would never be able to rival the intensity and the unswerving directness of purpose which it had been permitted to the Duke's nature to attain. The new Governor-General was, doubtless, humane, and it had been long since the Netherlanders imagined anything in common between themselves and the late Viceroy.

Apart from this hope, however, there was little encouragement to be derived from anything positively known of the new functionary, or the policy which he was to represent. Don Luis de Requesens and Cujiga, Grand Commander of Castile and late Governor of Milan, was a man of mediocre abilities, who possessed a reputation for moderation and sagacity which he hardly deserved. His military prowess had been chiefly displayed in the bloody and barren battle of Lepanto, where his conduct and counsel were supposed to have contributed, in some measure, to the victorious result.² His administration at Milan had been cha-

¹ Bor vii. 477.
² Strada, viii. 405–408. Mendoza, x. 222, 223.
of the master was considered the only one which could duly superintend these estates and those interests. Much incapacity to govern was revealed in this inordinate passion to administer. His mind, constantly fatigued by petty labours, was never enabled to survey his wide domains from the height of majesty.

In Alva, certainly, he had employed an unquestionable reality; but Alva, by a fortunate coincidence of character, had secured his second self. He was now gone, however, and although the royal purpose had not altered, the royal circumstances were changed. The moment had arrived when it was thought that the mask and cothurn might again be assumed with effect; when a grave and conventional personage might decorously make his appearance to perform an interlude of democracy and moderation with satisfactory result. Accordingly, the Grand Council, hurriedly summoned, was assigned to assume the government which Alva had been permitted to resign.

It had been monstrously divulged that a change of policy was intended. This was supposed by the more sagacious that the Duke had resolved to give a show of munificence and of munificence was a discreet course in his return to the court, which argued that he had accomplished his design; and it was perceived that under such circumstances the more moderate, however, were not much moved by the prospect of an apparent assurance. Since, however, he was under the necessity of requiring at once his presence there, his arrival was expected with very little anxiety at court.
that he had arrived at the conclusion that the royal chagrin was but disimulation, intended to dispose the Netherlands to thoughts of an impossible peace, and that he considered the present merely a breathing time, in which still more active preparations might be made for crushing the rebellion. It was now evident to the world that the revolt had reached a stage in which it could be terminated only by absolute conquest or concession.

To conquer the people of the provinces, except by extermination, seemed difficult—to judge by the seven years of execution, sieges, and campaigns, which had now passed without a definite result. It was, therefore, thought expedient to employ concession. The new Governor accordingly, in case the Netherlands would abandon every object for which they had been so heroically contending, was empowered to concede a pardon. It was expressly enjoined upon him, however, that no conciliatory measures should be adopted in which the King's absolute supremacy, and the total prohibition of every form of worship but the Roman Catholic, were not assumed as a basis. Now, as the people had been contending at least ten years long for constitutional rights against prerogative, and at least seven for liberty of conscience against papistry, it was easy to foretell how much effect any negotiations thus commenced were likely to produce.

Yet, no doubt, in the Netherlands there was a most earnest longing for peace. The Catholic portion of the population were desirous of a reconciliation with their brethren of the new religion. The universal vengeance which had descended upon heresy had not struck the heretics only. It was difficult to find a fireside, Protestant or Catholic, which had not been made desolate by execution, banishment, or confiscation. The common people and the grand seigniors were alike weary of the war. Not only Aerschot and Viglius, but Noircarmes and Berlaymont, were desirous that peace should be at last compassed upon liberal terms, and the Prince of Orange fully and unconditionally pardoned. Even the Spanish commanders had become disgusted with the monotonous butchery which had stained their swords. Julian Romero, the fierce and unscrupulous soldier upon whose head rested the guilt of the Naarden massacre, addressed several letters to William of Orange, full of courtesy and good wishes for a speedy termination of the war, and for an entire reconciliation of the Prince with his sovereign. Noircarmes also opened a correspondence with the great leader of the revolt, and offered to do all in his power to restore peace and prosperity to the country. The Prince answered the courtesy of the Spaniard with equal, but barren, courtesy, for it was obvious that no definite result could be derived from such informal negotiations. To Noircarmes he responded in terms of gentle but grave rebuke, expressing deep regret that a Netherland noble of such eminence, with so many others of rank and authority, should so long have supported the King in his tyranny. He, however, expressed his satisfaction that their eyes, however late, had opened to the enormous iniquity which had been practised in the country, and he accepted the offers of friendship as frankly as they had been made. Not long afterwards, the Prince furnished his correspondent with a proof of his sincerity, by forwarding to him two letters which had been intercepted, from certain agents of government to Alva, in which Noircarmes and others who had so long supported the King against their own country were spoken of in terms of menace and distrust.

1 Letter of Saint Glorg, Archives, etc., iv. 461.
2 Letter of Philip II. to Requesens, 30th March 1574. Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 263.
3 Letter of Requesens to Philip II. Gachard, Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1253.
4 Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 94. et seq.
The Law of the Jewish Republic.

In the account that had been kept, he had been very careful to make no mistakes against himself, and that he had retired with wealth, not of honour, from an long and terrible administration. The account, on the contrary, accused the King of ingratitude, in permitting at the elder to ruin himself, not only in health, but in fortune, for want of proper recompense during an active administration. At any rate, it is very certain that the rebellion had already been an expensive matter to the crown. The army in the Netherland numbered more than sixty-two thousand, with eight thousand being Canadians, the rest Williams and Germans. Forty millions of dollars had already been sunk, and it seemed probable that it would require nearly the whole annual produce of the American mines to sustain the war. The transatlantic gold and silver, disinterred from the depths where they had lain buried for ages, were employed not to expand the current of a healthy, life-giving commerce, but to be melted into blood. The sweat and the tortures of the King's pagan subjects in the primeval forests of the New World were made subsidiary to the extermination of his Netherland people, and the destruction of an ancient civilisation. To this end had Columbus discovered a hemisphere for Castile and Aragon, and the New Indies revealed their hidden treasure.

Forty millions of ducats had been spent. Six and a half millions of arrearages were due to the army, while its current expenses were six hundred thousand a month. The military expenses alone of the Netherlands were accordingly more than seven millions of dollars yearly, and the mines of the New World produced, during the half century of Philip's reign, an average of only eleven. Against this constantly increasing deficit, there was not a silver in the exchequer, nor the means of rais-
ing one. The tenth penny had been long virtually extinct, and was soon to be formally abolished. Confiscation had ceased to afford a permanent revenue, and the estates obstinately refused to grant a dollar. Such was the condition to which the relentless tyranny and the financial experiments of Alva had reduced the country.

It was, therefore, obvious to Requesens that it would be useful at the moment to hold out hopes of pardon and reconciliation. He saw, what he had not at first comprehended, and what few bigotted supporters of absolutism in any age have ever comprehended, that national enthusiasm, when profound and general, makes a rebellion more expensive to the despot than to the insurgents. "Before my arrival," wrote the Grand Commander to his sovereign, "I did not understand how the rebels could maintain such considerable fleets, while your Majesty could not support a single one. It appears, however, that men who are fighting for their lives, their firesides, their property, and their false religion, for their own cause, in short, are contented to receive rations only, without receiving pay." The moral which the new Governor drew from his correct diagnosis of the prevailing disorder was, not that this national enthusiasm should be respected, but that it should be deceived. He deceived no one but himself, however. He censured Noircarmes and Romero for their intermeddling, but held out hopes of a general pacification. He repudiated the idea of any reconciliation between the King and the Prince of Orange, but proposed at the same time a settlement of the revolt. He had not yet learned that the revolt and William of Orange were one. Although the Prince himself had repeatedly offered to withdraw for ever from the country, if his absence would expedite a settlement satisfactory to the provinces, there was not a patriot in the Netherlands who could contemplate his departure without despair. Moreover, they all knew better than did Requesens, the inevitable result of the pacific measures which had been daily foreshadowed.

The appointment of the Grand Commander was in truth a desperate attempt to deceive the Netherlands. He approved distinctly and heartily of Alva's policy, but wrote to the King that it was desirable to amuse the people with the idea of another and a milder scheme. He affected to believe, and perhaps really did believe, that the nation would accept the destruction of all their institutions, provided that penitent heretics were allowed to be reconciled to the Mother Church, and obdurate ones permitted to go into perpetual exile, taking with them a small portion of their worldly goods. For being willing to make this last and almost incredible concession, he begged pardon sincerely of the King. If censurable, he ought not, he thought, to be too severely blamed, for his loyalty was known. The world was aware how often he had risked his life for his Majesty, and how gladly and how many more times he was ready to risk it in future. In his opinion, religion had, after all, but very little to do with the troubles, and so he confidentially informed his sovereign. Egmont and Horn had died Catholics, the people did not rise to assist the Prince's invasion in 1568, and the new religion was only a lever by which a few artful demagogues had attempted to overthrow the King's authority.

Such views as these revealed the measure of the new Governor's capacity. The people had really refused to rise in 1568, not because they were without sympathy for Orange, but because they were paralysed by their fear of Alva. Since those days, however, the new religion had increased and multiplied everywhere, in the blood which had rained upon it. It

---

1 Letter of Requesens. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1283.
2 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1291.
3 Ibid. ii. 1393.
4 Ibid.
with regard to the pardon. The learned Viglius sided with Alva, although manifestly against his will. "It is both the Duke's opinion and my own," wrote the Commander, "that Viglius does not dare to express his real opinion, and that he is secretly desiring of an arrangement with the party." With a good deal of hesitation, the Governor was disposed, not only with those who opposed his plans, but with those who favored them. He was angry with Viglius, who, it is said, had discovered the pardon, and with Norbert, Arschin, and others, who had written a letter for a protestation. Viglius characterized the letter as "false and abominable," and, while he did not deny that it was written, he said that it was never intended as a protestation. He had written it in order to make Schalk, the Duke's PREFET, understand his views. Norbert, Arschin, and others, who had written the letter, had been summoned by the Governor, who said that they never thought it was a protestation, but a letter that would make the Prefect understand their views. The letter was written in the early hours of the morning, and was sent by a carrier who was in receipt of a small fee for his services. The letter was written in a language that was not understood by the Prefect, who had it translated by a friend who was skilled in languages. The letter was not intended as a protestation, but as a means of making the Prefect understand the views of the writers. Viglius and his associates were not aware that the letter was intended to be a protestation, but as a means of making the Prefect understand their views.
mice, dogs, cats, and such repulsive substitutes for food, to support life withal. It was necessary to take immediate measures to relieve the place.

On the other hand, the situation of the patriots was not very encouraging. Their superiority on the sea was unquestionable, for the Hollanders and Zealanders were the best sailors in the world, and they asked of their country no payment for their blood, but thanks. The land forces, however, were usually mercenaries, who were apt to mutiny at the commencement of an action if, as was too often the case, their wages could not be paid. Holland was entirely cut in twain by the loss of Harlem and the league of Leyden, no communication between the dissevered portions being possible, except with difficulty and danger. The estates, although they had done much for the cause, and were prepared to do much more, were too apt to wrangle about economical details. They irritated the Prince of Orange by huckstersing about subsidies to a degree which his proud and generous nature could hardly brook. He had strong hopes from France. Louis of Nassau had held secret interviews with the Duke of Alençon and the Duke of Anjou, now King of Poland, at Blamont. Alençon had assured him secretly, affectionately, and warmly, that he would be as sincere a friend to the cause as were his two royal brothers. The Count had even received one hundred thousand livres in hand, as an earnest of the favourable intentions of France, and was now busily engaged, at the instance of the Prince, in levying an army in Germany for the relief of Leyden and the rest of Holland, while William, on his part, was omitting nothing, whether by representations to the estates or by secret foreign missions and corres-

ence, to further the cause of the suffering country.

At the same time, the Prince dreaded the effect of the promised pardon. He had reason to be distrustful of the general temper of the nation when a man like Saint Aldegonde, the enlightened patriot, and his own tried friend, was influenced by the discouraging and dangerous position in which he found himself to abandon the high ground upon which they had both so long and so firmly stood. Saint Aldegonde had been held a strict prisoner since his capture at Maeslandsluis, at the close of Alva’s administration. It was, no doubt, a predicament attended with much keen suffering and positive danger. It had hitherto been the uniform policy of the government to kill all prisoners, of whatever rank. Accordingly, some had been drowned, some had been hanged, some beheaded, some poisoned in their dungeons—all had been murdered. This had been Alva’s course. The Grand Commander also highly approved of the system, but the capture of Count Bossu by the patriots had necessitated a suspension of such rigour. It was certain that Bossu’s head would fall as soon as Saint Aldegonde’s, the Prince having expressly warned the government of this inevitable result. Notwithstanding that security, however, for his eventual restoration to liberty, a Netherlands rebel in a Spanish prison could hardly feel himself at ease. There were so many foot-marks into the cave, and not a single one coming forth. Yet it was not singular, however, that the Prince should read with regret the somewhat insincere casualty with which Saint Aldegonde sought to persuade himself and his fellow-countrymen, that a reconciliation with the monarch was desirable, even upon unworthy terms. He was somewhat shocked at so valiant and eloquent a

1 Letter of De la Klusen in Groen v. Prins., Archives, etc., iv. 307, 308.
4 Archives et Correspondance, iv. 281.

7 Ibid., vii. 481, 482. Archives et Correspondance, iv. 237.
8 Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1291, 445.
9 Ibid.
10 Bor., vii. 492.
The Prince of Orange, however, not to be indebted only by the capricious and capricious of an ill-wish a friend, speeded on his path of duty. He abandoned, indeed, the affairs of foreign troops in the present, the restoration of his constitutional privileges, and the formalities of renunciation in the state, but the indispensable condition of any convention. It was only to him that the Spaniards were ready to grant these conditions, and he felt confident that he could accomplish the release of Saint Augustine, without degrading to an unworthy price.

The next pressing matter, upon the Prince's command in default, was obvious to the city of Middelburg, for which a Dutch fleet was sent, to be obliged to the Dutch, who should promptly obey the Prince, accord ing to the conventions, which were placed in the hands of Admiral van Scult and in the hands of the President. As soon as the news of the arrival of the English fleet was heard, the citizens of Middelburg declared to the Prince, that they would receive it with the most cordial hospitality, and that they would be happy to receive it in such a manner that it might be the means of re-establishing the liberties of the city. The Prince accordingly, with the utmost propriety, declared that he would receive the Dutch fleet with the warmest hospitality, and that he would be happy to receive it in such a manner that it might be the means of re-establishing the liberties of the city. The Prince accordingly, with the utmost propriety, declared that he would receive the Dutch fleet with the warmest hospitality, and that he would be happy to receive it in such a manner that it might be the means of re-establishing the liberties of the city.
of blood in their veins but they would sustain the Prince and the country; and they solemnly vowed not only to serve, if necessary, without wages, but to sacrifice all that they possessed in the world rather than abandon the cause of their fatherland. Having by his presence and his language aroused their valour to so high a pitch of enthusiasm, the Prince departed for Delft, to make arrangements to drive the Spaniards from the siege of Leyden.

On the 28th of January, the fleet of Romero sailed from Bergen, disposed in three divisions, each numbering twenty-five vessels of different sizes. As the Grand Commander stood on the dyke of Schakeroo to witness the departure, a general salute was fired by the fleet in his honour, but with most unfortunate augury. The discharge, by some accident, set fire to the magazines of one of the ships, which blew up with a terrible explosion, every soul on board perishing. The expedition, nevertheless, continued its way. Opposite Romerswaal, the fleet of Boisot awaited them, drawn up in battle array. As an indication of the spirit which animated this hardy race, it may be mentioned that Schot, captain of the flagship, had been left on shore, dying of a pestilential fever. Admiral Boisot had appointed a Flush- ingr, Klaaszoom, in his place. Just before the action, however, Schot, "sorely able to blow a feather from his mouth," staggered on board his ship, and claimed the command. There was no disputing a precedence which he had risen from his death-bed to vindicate. There was, however, a short discussion, as the enemy's fleet approached, between these rival captains regarding the manner in which the Spaniards should be received.

Klaaszoom was of opinion that most of the men should go below till after the enemy's first discharge. Schot insisted that all should remain on deck, ready to grapple with the Spanish fleet, and to board them without the least delay. The sentiment of Schot prevailed, and all hands stood on deck, ready with boarding-pikes and grappling-irons.

The first division of Romero came nearer, and delivered its first broadside, when Schot and Klaaszoom both fell mortally wounded. Admiral Boisot lost an eye, and many officers and sailors in the other vessels were killed or wounded. This was, however, the first and last of the cannonading. As many of Romero's vessels as could be grappled with in the narrow estuary found themselves locked in close embrace with their enemies. A murderous hand-to-hand conflict succeeded. Battle-axe, boarding-pike, pistol, and dagger were the weapons. Every man who yielded himself a prisoner was instantly stabbed and tossed into the sea by the remorseless Zeelanders. Fighting only to kill, and not to plunder, they did not even stop to take the gold chains which many Spaniards wore on their necks. It had, however, been obvious from the beginning that the Spanish fleet were not likely to achieve that triumph over the patriots which was necessary before they could relieve Middelburg. The battle continued a little longer; but after fifteen ships had been taken and twelve hundred royalists slain, the remainder of the enemy's fleet retreated into Bergen. Romero himself, whose ship had grounded, sprang out of a port-hole and swam ashore, followed by such of his men as were able to imitate him. He landed at the very feet of the Grand Commander, who, wet and cold, had

---

1 Letter of De la Klunder in Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 247—"Tellement encouragés les soldats que tous d'une même voix répondirent qu'ils étôient prêts d'aller à sa Majesté à son Excellence jusqu'à la dernière pointe de leur sang, et que plus tout que d'abandonner la cause, aymeroient mieux de servir en sa sans recevoir mailla, voire à échanger tout ce qu'ils ont en ce monde."

2 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 247, et seq.
been standing all day upon the dyke of Schakelo, in the midst of a pouring rain, only to witness the total defeat of his armada at last. "I told your Excellency," said Romero, coolly, as he climbed, all dripping, on the bank, "that I was a land-fighter and not a sailor. If you were to give me the command of a hundred fleets, I believe that none of them would fare better than this has done." The Governor and his discomfited but philosophical lieutenant, then returned to Bergen, and thence to Brussels, acknowledging that the city of Middelburg must fall; while Sancho d'Avila, hearing of the disaster which had befallen his countrymen, brought his fleet, with the greatest expedition, back to Antwerp. Thus the gallant Mondragon was abandoned to his fate.

That fate could no longer be protracted. The city of Middelburg had reached, and passed, the starvation point. Still Mondragon was determined not to yield at discretion, although very willing to capitulate. The Prince of Orange, after the victory of Bergen, was desirous of an unconditional surrender, believing it to be his right, and knowing that he could not be supposed capable of practising upon Middelburg the vengeance which had been wreaked on Naarden, Zutphen, and Harlem. Mondragon, however, swore that he would set fire to the city in twenty places, and perish with every soldier and burgher in the flames together, rather than abandon himself to the enemy's mercy. The Prince knew the brave Spaniard was entirely capable of executing his threat. He granted honourable conditions, which, on the 18th February, were drawn up in five articles, and signed. It was agreed that Mondragon and his troops should leave the place, with their arms, ammunition, and all their personal property. The citizens who remained were to take oath of fidelity to the Prince, as stadholder for his Majesty, and were to pay besides a subsidy of three hundred thousand florins. Mondragon was, furthermore, to procure the discharge of Saint Aldegonde, and of four other prisoners of rank, or, failing in the attempt, was to return within two months, and constitute himself prisoner of war. The Catholic priests were to take away from the city none of their property but their clothes. In accordance with this capitulation, Mondragon, and those who wished to accompany him, left the city on the 21st of February, and were conveyed to the Flemish shore at Neuz. It will be seen in the sequel that the Governor neither granted him the release of the five prisoners, nor permitted him to return, according to his parole. A few days afterwards, the Prince entered the city, re-organised the magistracy, received the allegiance of the inhabitants, restored the ancient constitution, and liberally remitted two-thirds of the sum in which they had been mulcted.

The Spaniards had thus been successfully driven from the Isle of Walcheren, leaving the Hollanders and Zealander's masters of the sea-coast. Since the siege of Alkmaar had been raised, however, the enemy had remained within the territory of Holland. Leyden was closely invested, the country in a desperate condition, and all communication between its different cities nearly suspended. It was comparatively easy for the Prince of Orange to equip and man his fleets. The genius and habits of the people made them at home upon the water, and inspired them with a feeling of superiority to their adversaries. It was
not so upon land. Strong to resist, patient to suffer, the Hollanders, although terrible in defence, had not the necessary discipline or experience to meet the veteran legions of Spain, with confidence, in the open field. To raise the siege of Leyden, the main reliance of the Prince was upon Count Louis, who was again in Germany. In the latter days of Alva's administration, William had written to his brothers, urging them speedily to arrange the details of a campaign, of which he forwarded them a sketch. As soon as a sufficient force had been levied in Germany, an attempt was to be made upon Maestricht. If that failed, Louis was to cross the Meuse, in the neighbourhood of Stochom, make his way towards the Prince's own city of Gertruidenberg, and thence make a junction with his brother in the neighbourhood of Delft. They were then to take up a position together between Harlem and Leyden. In that case, it seemed probable that the Spaniards would find themselves obliged to fight at a great disadvantage, or to abandon the country. "In short," said the Prince, "if this enterprise be arranged with due diligence and discretion, I hold it as the only certain means for putting a speedy end to the war, and for driving these devils of Spaniards out of the country, before the Duke of Alva has time to raise another army to support them." 5

In pursuance of this plan, Louis had been actively engaged all the earlier part of the winter in levying troops and raising supplies. He had been assisted by the French princes with considerable sums of money, as an earnest of what he was in future to expect from that source. He had made an unsuccessful attempt to effect the capture of Requesens, on his way to take the government of the Netherlands. He had then passed to the frontier of France, where he had held his important interview with Catharine de Medici and the Duke of Anjou, then on the point of departure to ascend the throne of Poland. He had received liberal presents, and still more liberal promises. Anjou had assured him that he would go as far as any of the German princes in rendering active and sincere assistance to the Protestant cause in the Netherlands. The Duc d'Alençon — soon, in his brother's absence, to succeed to the chieftainship of the new alliance between the "politiques" and the Huguenots—had also pressed his hand, whispering in his ear, as he did so, that the government of France now belonged to him, as it had recently done to Anjou, and that the Prince might reckon upon his friendship with entire security. 6

These fine words, which cost nothing when whispered in secret, were not destined to fructify into a very rich harvest, for the mutual jealousy of France and England, lest either should acquire ascendency in the Netherlands, made both governments prodigal of promises, while the common fear entertained by them of the power of Spain, rendered both languid, insincere, and mischievous allies. Count John, however, was indefatigable in arranging the finances of the proposed expedition, and in levying contributions among his numerous relatives and allies in Germany, while Louis had profited by the occasion of Anjou's passage into Poland, to acquire for himself two thousand German and French cavalry, who had served to escort that Prince, 4 and who, being now thrown out of employment, were glad to have a job offered them by a general who was thought to be in funds. Another thousand of cavalry and six thousand foot were soon assembled, 5 from those ever-swarming nurseries of mercenary warriors, the smaller German states. With these, towards the end of February, Louis crossed the Rhine in a heavy snowstorm, and bent his course towards Maestricht. All the three brothers of the Prince accompanied this little

---

1 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, iv. 246, 247, seq.
2 Ibid.
3 Letter of Count Louis to Prince of Orange, Archives, etc., iv. 278-281.
4 Hoofd, ix. 384. Mendoza, xi. 231.
5 Merton, v. 60.—Compare Bosc, vii. 489; Mendoza, xi. 231.
army, besides Duke Christopher, son of the Elector Palatine.1

Before the end of the month the army reached the Meuse, and encamped within four miles of Maastricht, on the opposite side of the river.2 The garrison, commanded by Montesdoa, was weak, but the news of the warlike preparations in Germany had preceded the arrival of Count Louis. Ropesens, feeling the gravity of the occasion, had issued orders for an immediate levy of eight thousand cavalry in Germany, with a proportionate number of infantry. At the same time he had directed Don Bernardino de Mendoza, with some companies of cavalry, then stationed in Brab, to throw himself without delay into Maastricht. Don Sambo d’Avila was entrusted with the general care of resisting the hostile expedition. That general had forthwith collected all the troops which could be spared from every town where they were stationed, had strengthened the cities of Antwerp, Ghent, Nimwe- gen, and Valencia, where there were known to be many secret adherents of Orange; and with the remainder of his forces he had put himself in motion, to oppose the entrance of Louis into Brabant, and his junction with his brother in Holland. Braccamonte had been despatched to Leyden, in order instantly to draw off the forces which were besieging the city. Thus Louis had already effected something of importance by the very news of his approach.3

Meantime the Prince of Orange had raised six thousand infantry, whose rendezvous was the Isle of Bommel. He was disappointed at the paucity of the troops which Louis had been able to collect, but he sent messengers immediately to him, with a statement of his own condition, and with directions to join him in the Isle of Bommel, as soon as Maastricht should be reduced. It was, however, not in the destiny of Louis to reduce Maastricht. His expedition had been marked with disaster from the beginning. A dark and threatening prophecy had, even before its commencement, enveloped Louis, his brethren, and his little army, in a funeral pall. More than a thousand of his men had deserted before he reached the Meuse. When he encamped, opposite Maastricht, he found the river neither frozen nor open, the ice obstructing the navigation, but being too weak for the weight of an army.4

While he was thus delay'd and embarrassed, Mendoza arrived in the city with reinforcements. It seemed already necessary for Louis to abandon his hopes of Maastricht, but he was at least desirous of crossing the river in that neighbourhood, in order to effect his junction with the Prince at the earliest possible moment. While the stream was still encumbered with ice, however, the enemy removed all the boats. On the 3d of March, Avila arrived with a large body of troops at Maastricht, and on the 18th Mendoza crossed the river in the night, giving the patriots so severe an encomium, that seven hundred were killed, at the expense of only seven of his own party. Harrassed, but not dissipated by these disasters, Louis broke up his camp on the 21st, and took a position farther down the river, at Fauchegent and Guipen, castles in the Duchy of Limburg. On the 3d of April, Braccamonte arrived at Maastricht, with twenty-five companies of Spaniards and three of cavalry, while on the same day Mondragon reached the scene of action with his sixteen companies of veterans.5

It was now obvious to Louis, not only that he should not take Maastricht, but that his eventual junction with his brother was at least doubtful, every soldier who could possibly be spared seeming in motion to oppose his progress. He was, to be sure, not yet outnumbered, but the enemy was increasing, and his own force diminishing daily. Moreover, the Spaniards were highly disciplined and experienced troops; while his own soldiers...

---

1 Bor, vii. 489, 490.
4 Bor, vii. 490. Mendoza, xi. 235.
Battle of Mookerheyde.

were mercenaries, already clamorous and insubordinate. On the 8th of April he again shifted his encampment, and took his course along the right bank of the Meuse, between that river and the Rhine, in the direction of Nimwegen. Avila promptly decided to follow him, upon the opposite bank of the Meuse, intending to throw himself between Louis and the Prince of Orange, and by a rapid march to give the Count battle, before he could join his brother. On the 8th of April, at early dawn, Louis had left the neighbourhood of Maastricht; and on the 13th he encamped at the village of Mook, on the Meuse, near the confines of Cleves. Sending out his scouts, he learned, to his vexation, that the enemy had outmarched him, and were now within cannon-shot. On the 13th, Avila had constructed a bridge of boats, over which he had effected the passage of the Meuse with his whole army, so that on the Count’s arrival at Mook, he found the enemy facing him, on the same side of the river, and directly in his path. It was, therefore, obvious that, in this narrow space between the Waal and the Meuse, where they were now all assembled, Louis must achieve a victory, or be compelled to abandon his expedition, and leave the Hollanders to despair.

He was distressed at the position in which he found himself, for he had proposed to reduce Maastricht, and to come to terms with his brother in Holland. Together, they could, at least, have expelled the Spaniards from that territory, in which case it was probable a large part of the population in the different provinces would have remained. According to present aspects, the destiny of the country, for some time to come, was likely to hang upon the issue of a battle which he had not prepared, and for which he was not even prepared. Still he was not the man to be disheartened, nor had he ever possessed the courage to refuse a battle when offered. Upon this occasion, it would be difficult to retreat without disaster and disgrace, but it was equally difficult to achieve a victory. Thrust, as he was, like a wedge into the very heart of a hostile country, he was obliged to force his way through, or to remain in his enemy’s power. Moreover, and worst of all, his troops were in a state of mutiny for their wages. While he talked to them of honour, they howled to him for money. It was the custom of these mercenaries to mutiny on the eve of battle—of the Spaniards, after it had been fought. By the one course, a victory was often lost which might have been achieved; by the other, when won, it was rendered fruitless.

Avila had chosen his place of battle with great skill. On the right bank of the Meuse, upon a narrow plain which spread from the river to a chain of hills within cannon-shot on the north, lay the little village of Mook. The Spanish general knew that his adversary had the superiority in cavalry, and that within this compressed space it would not be possible to derive much advantage from the circumstance.

On the 14th, both armies were drawn up in battle array at earliest dawn, Louis having strengthened his position by a deep trench, which extended from Mook, where he had stationed ten companies of infantry, which thus rested on the village and the river. Next came the bulk of his infantry, disposed in a single square. On their right was his cavalry, arranged in four squadrons, as well as the narrow limits of the field would allow. A small portion of them, for want of space, were stationed on the hillside.

Opposite, the forces of Don Sancho were drawn up in somewhat similar fashion. Twenty-five companies of Spaniards were disposed in four bodies

---

2. Bor, vii. 490.
3. Mendoza, xi. 238.
4. Ibid., xi. 239. Bor, vii. 490.
5. Ibid., xi. 238, 239.
6. Ibid., vi. 239. Bor, vii. 490. Hoofd, ix. 27.
7. Meteren, v. 91.
8. Mendoza, xi. 239. Bentivoglio, viii. 142, 143.
of pikemen and musketeers; their right resting on the river. In their front were the cavalry, disposed by Mendoza in the form of a half-moon—the horse guarded by two small bodies of dragoons. In the front ranks of the cavalry were the mounted gentlemen of Schenk. Behind were the Spanish horse. The village of Medmenham lay between the two forces.  

The assault began at early dawn with a charge upon the trench, and commenced some hours, without breaking out into a general engagement. The only sound that came from the Spaniards was the crackling of muskets, and the Spaniards were disordered, and many were killed, while men and horses were overthrown and bleeding. The order was not maintained, yet the English had no news of the Spaniards, and the passage of the stream and that union with his brother which had been thus far so successfully prevented. This reasoning prevailed, and the skirmishing at the trench was renewed with redoubled vigour, an additional force being sent against it. After a short and fierce struggle it was carried, and the Spaniards rushed into the village, but were soon dislodged by a larger detachment of infantry, which Count Louis sent to the rescue. The battle now became general at this point.  

Nearly all the patriot infantry were employed to defend the post; nearly all the Spanish infantry were ordered to assault it. The Spaniards, dropping on their knees, according to custom, and a Te Deum and an Ave Maria, and then rushing in mass to the attack, after a short but sharp action, the Spaniards were again carried, and the patriots commenced to retire. Then this Louis advanced with all his forces over the summit, which they had reached in disorder. 

The next scene was the mounted horsemen. Louis, commanding his vanguard, was seen and died. The good heart below was at first distressed, but from the cornfield all the men turned where they were and the noise of the noise and the noise of the noise was the only indication that they were not above it. The Spaniards were greatly depressed and immediately retreated.
troopers, among whom were his brother Count Henry, and Duke Christopher, and together they made a final and desperate charge. It was the last that was ever seen of them on earth. They all went down together, in the midst of the fight, and were never heard of more. The battle terminated, as usual in those conflicts of mutual hatred, in a horrible butchery, hardly any of the patriot army being left to tell the tale of their disaster. At least four thousand were killed, including those who were slain on the field, those who were suffocated in the marshes or the river, and those who were burned in the farm-houses where they had taken refuge. It was uncertain which of those various modes of death had been the lot of Count Louis, his brother, and his friend. The mystery was never solved. They had, probably, all died on the field, but, stripped of their clothing, with their faces trampled upon by the hooves of horses, it was not possible to distinguish them from the less illustrious dead. It was the opinion of many that they had been drowned in the river—of others, that they had been burned. There was a vague tale that Louis, bleeding, but not killed, had struggled forth from the heap of corpses where he had been thrown, had crept to the river-side, and, while washing his wounds, had been surprised and butchered by a party of rustics. The story was not generally credited, but no man knew, or was destined to learn, the truth.

A dark and fatal termination to this last enterprise of Count Louis had been anticipated by many. In that superstitious age, when emperors and princes daily investigated the future, by alchemy, by astrology, and by books of fate, filled with formulae as gravely and precisely set forth as algebraical equations—when men of every class, from monarch to peasant, implicitly believed in supernatural portents and prophecies—it was not singular that a somewhat striking appearance, observed in the sky some weeks previously to the battle of Mookerheyde, should have inspired many persons with a shuddering sense of impending evil.

Early in February, five soldiers of the burgheer guard at Utrecht, being on their midnight watch, beheld in the sky above them the representation of a furious battle. The sky was extremely dark, except directly over their heads, where, for a space equal in extent to the length of the city, and in breadth to that of an ordinary chamber, two armies, in battle array, were seen advancing upon each other. The one moved rapidly up from the north-west, with banners waving, spears flashing, trumpets sounding, and while washing his wounds, had

2. Mendosa, xi. 145.—Compare Cabrera, x. 781—789; Mendosa, Hooff, ubi sup. According to Mendosa, but forty of the Spanish army were killed; according to the Dutch historians, about two hundred.
3. Ibid., v. 91. Bor, vii. 491, 492. Hooff, Bemtivoglio, ubi sup. The Walloon historian, occasionally cited in these pages, has a more summary manner of accounting for the fate of these distinguished personages. According to his statement, the leaders of the Protestant forces dined and made merry at a convent in the neighbourhood upon Good Friday, five days before the battle, using the sacramental chalices at the banquet, and mixing consecrated wafers with their wine. As a punishment for this sacrilege, the army was utterly overthrown, and the Devil himself flew away with the electors, body and soul. Qui de Dieu permet que cinq jours après ne restât de leurs principaux chefs un seul vii; que plus est, entre les corps morts

II
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

accompanied by heavy artillery, and by squadrons of cavalry. The other came slowly forward from the southeast, as if from an entrenched camp, to encounter their assailants. There was a fierce action for a few moments, the shouts of the combatants, the heavy discharge of cannon, the rattle of musketry, the tramp of heavy-armed foot soldiers, the rush of cavalry, being distinctly heard. The firmament trembled with the shock of the contending hosts, and was lurid with the rapid discharges of their artillery. After a short, fierce engagement, the north-western army was beaten back in disorder, but rallied again, after a breathing-time, formed again into solid column, and again advanced. Their foes, arrayed, as the witnesses affirmed, in a square and closely serried grove of spears and muskets, again awaited the attack. Once more the aerial cohorts closed upon each other, all the signs and sounds of a desperate encounter being distinctly recognised by the eager witnesses. The struggle seemed but short. The lances of the south-eastern army seemed to snap “like hemp-stalks,” while their firm columns all went down together in mass, beneath the onset of their enemies. The overthrow was complete—victors and vanquished had faded, the clear blue space, surrounded by black clouds, was empty, when suddenly its whole extent, where the conflict had so lately raged, was streaked with blood, flowing athwart the sky in broad crimson streams, nor was it till the five witnesses had fully watched and pondered over these portents that the vision entirely vanished.1

So impressed were the grave magistrates of Utrecht with the account given next day by the sentinels, that a formal examination of the circumstances was made, the deposition of each witness, under oath, duly recorded,2 and a vast deal of consultation of soothsayers’ books and other auguries employed to elucidate the mystery. It was universally considered typical of the anticipated battle between Count Louis and the Spaniards.

When, therefore, it was known that the patriots, moving from the south-east, had arrived at Mookerheide, and that their adversaries, crossing the Maas at Grave, had advanced upon them from the north-west, the result of the battle was considered inevitable; the phantom battle of Utrecht its infallible precursor.

Thus perished Louis of Nassau in the flower of his manhood, in the midst of a career already crowded with events such as might suffice for a century of ordinary existence. It is difficult to find in history a more frank and loyal character. His life was noble; the elements of the heroic and the genial so mixed in him that the imagination contemplates him, after three centuries, with an almost affectionate interest. He was not a great man. He was far from possessing the subtle genius or the expansive views of his brother; but, called as he was to play a prominent part in one of the most complicated and imposing dramas ever enacted by man, he, nevertheless, always acquitted himself with honour. His direct, fearless, and energetic nature commanded alike the respect of friend and foe. As a politician, a soldier, and a diplomatist, he was busy, bold, and true. He accomplished by sincerity what many thought could only be compassed by trickery. Dealing often with the most adroit and most treacherous of princes and statesmen, he frequently carried his point, and he never stooped to flattery. From the time when, attended by his “twelve disciples,” he assumed the most prominent part in the negotiations with Margaret of Parma, through all the various scenes of the revolution, through all the conferences with Spaniards, Italians, Huguenots, Malignants, Flemish councillors, or German princes, he was the consistent and unflinching supporter of religious liberty and constitutional law. The battle of Heiliger Lee and the capture since the magistrates of Utrecht considered the subject worthy of a formal investigation.

—ix. 392.
1574.

Anxiety.

of Mons were his most signal triumphs, but the fruits of both were annihilated by subsequent disaster. His headlong courage was his chief foible. The French accused him of losing the battle of Moncontour by his impatience to engage; yet they acknowledged that to his masterly conduct it was owing that their retreat was effected in so successful, and even so brilliant a manner. He was censured for rashness and precipitancy in this last and fatal enterprise, but the reproach seems entirely without foundation. The expedition, as already stated, had been deliberately arranged, with the full co-operation of his brother, and had been preparing several months. That he was able to set no larger force on foot than that which he led into Gueudres was not his fault. But for the floating ice which barred his passage of the Meuse, he would have surprised Maastricht; but for the mutiny, which rendered his mercenary soldiers cowards, he might have defeated Avila at Mookerheyde. Had he done so he would have joined his brother in the Isle of Bommel in triumph; the Spaniards would, probably, have been expelled from Holland, and Leyden saved the horrors of that memorable siege which she was soon called upon to endure. These results were not in his destiny. Providence had decreed that he should perish in the midst of his usefulness; that the Prince, in his death, should lose the right hand which had been so swift to execute his various plans, and the faithful fraternal heart which had always responded so readily to every throb of his own.

In figure, he was below the middle height, but martial and noble in his bearing. The expression of his countenance was lively; his manner frank and engaging. All who knew him personally loved him, and he was the idol of his gallant brethren. His mother always addressed him as her dearly beloved, her heart's-cherished Louis. "You must come soon to me," she wrote in the last year of his life, "for I have many matters to ask your advice upon; and I thank you beforehand, for you have loved me as your mother the last days of your life; for which may God Almighty have you in His holy keeping." 2

It was the doom of this high-born, true-hearted dame to be called upon to weep oftener for her children than is the usual lot of mothers. Count Adolphus had already perished in his youth on the field of Heiligier Lee, and now Louis and his young brother Henry, who had barely attained his twenty-sixth year, and whose short life had been passed in that faithful service to the cause of freedom which was the instinct of his race, had both found a bloody and an unknown grave. Count John, who had already done so much for the cause, was fortunately spared to do much more. Although of the expedition, and expecting to participate in the battle, he had, at the urgent solicitation of all the leaders, left the army for a brief season, in order to obtain at Cologne a supply of money for the mutinous troops. He had started upon this mission two days before the action 3 in which he, too, would otherwise have been sacrificed. The young Duke Christopher, "optimus indolis et magnum spei adolscens," 4 who had perished on the same field, was sincerely mourned by the lovers of freedom. His father, the Elector, found his consolation in the Scriptures, and in the reflection that his son had died in the bed of honour, fighting for the cause of God. "Twas better thus," said that stern Calvinist, whose dearest wish was to "Calvinise the world," 5 "than to have passed his time in idleness, which is the Devil's pillow." 6

Vague rumours of the catastrophe had spread far and wide. It was soon certain that Louis had been defeated,
The Rise of the Dutch Republic. [1574.

was claimed with supreme power, but particularly to exercise it. He was surrounded by counsellors who watched in every minute, read all his correspondence, and assured at all his conferences with the counsellors were themselves narrowly watched by the community. These movements were, however, in general, marked by the most exemplary order. Anarchy became a system of government: rebellion, enacted, and enforced, was the most usual and serious crime of discipline: theft, drunkenness, violence to women, were severely punished. As soon as the mutiny broke out, the first object was to seize possession of the nearest city, where the Diet was usually convened, in the town house, and the soldiers quartered upon the citizens. Nothing in the shape of food or lodging was too good for the marauders. Men, who had lived for years on camp victuals—cows and hens that had held them in check compelled to handle the muskets—now slept in fine linen, and demanded from the trembling burgesses the daintiest viands. They ate the fine bread like a swarm of bees. Chickens and partridges," says the diarist chronicler of Antwerp, "were served with dried or boiled peas, and chickens, hares and rabbits, two kinds of wine: for oranges, apples and olives, citrons and oranges, spices and sweets, wheaten bread, for their dogs, and even wine to wash the feet of their horses;—such was the entertainment demanded and obtained by the mutinous troops. They were very willing both to enjoy the luxury of this forage, and to injure the citizens, from weariness of affording compelled hospitality, to submit to a taxation by which the military claims might be liquidated.

A city thus occupied was at the mercy of a foreign soldier, which had renounced all authority but that of self-imposed laws. The King's officers were degraded, perhaps murdered;

specimen of a system, from which many important consequences were destined to flow at different periods, the subject demands special attention.

2 Bentivoglio, viii. 147.
3 Metternich, v. 103.
while those chosen to supply their places had only a nominal control. The Eletto, day by day, proclaimed from the balcony of the town-house the latest rules and regulations. If satisfactory, there was a clamour of applause; if objectionable, they were rejected with a tempest of hisses, with discharges of musketry. The Eletto did not govern; he was a dictator who could not dictate, but could only register decrees. If too honest, too firm, or too dull for his place, he was deprived of his office, and sometimes of his life. Another was chosen in his room, often to be succeeded by a series of others, destined to the same fate. Such were the main characteristics of those formidable mutinies, the result of the unthriftiness and dishonesty by which the soldiery engaged in these interminable hostilities were deprived of their dearly earned wages. The expense of the war was bad enough at best, but when it is remembered that of three or four dollars sent from Spain, or contributed by the provinces for the support of the army, hardly one reached the pockets of the soldier, the frightful expenditure which took place may be imagined. It was not surprising that so much peculation should engender revolt.

The mutiny which broke out after the defeat of Count Louis was marked with the most pronounced and inflammatory of these symptoms. Three years' pay was due to the Spaniards, who, having just achieved a signal victory, were disposed to reap its fruits by fair means or by force. On receiving nothing but promises, in answer to their clamorous demands, they mutinied to a man, and crossed the Meuse to Grave, whence, after accomplishing the usual elections, they took their course to Antwerp. Being in such strong force, they determined to strike at the capital. Rumour flew before them. Champagny, brother of Granvelle, and royal governor of the city, wrote in haste to apprise Requesens of the approaching danger. The Grand Commander, attended only by Vitelli, repaired instantly to Antwerp. Champagny advised throwing up a breastwork with bales of merchandise, upon the esplanade, between the citadel and the town; for it was at this point, where the connexion between the fortifications of the castle and those of the city had never been thoroughly completed, that the invasion might be expected. Requesens hesitated. He trembled at a conflict with his own soldiery. If successful, he could only be so by trampling upon the flower of his army. If defeated, what would become of the King's authority, with rebellious troops triumphant in rebellious provinces? Surely perplexed, the Commander could think of no expedient. Not knowing what to do, he did nothing. In the meantime, Champagny, who felt himself odious to the soldiery, retreated to the Newtown, and barricaded himself, with a few followers, in the house of the Baltic merchants.

On the 26th of April, the mutinous troops, in perfect order, marched into the city, effecting their entrance precisely at the weak point where they had been expected. Numbering at least three thousand, they encamped on the esplanade, where Requesens appeared before them alone on horseback, and made them an oration. They listened with composure, but answered briefly and with one accord, "Diners y non palabras"—dollars not speeches. Requesens promised profusely, but the time was past for promises. Hard silver dollars would alone content an army which, after three years of bloodshed and starvation, had at last taken the law into their own hands. Requesens withdrew to consult the Broad Council of the city. He was without money himself, but he demanded four hundred thousand crowns of the city. This was at first refused, but the troops

---

1 Requesens to Philip. Correspondance de Philippe II., ii. 1292, p. 457.
2 Mendoza, Bentivoglio, Bor, Hooff, Meteren, ubi sup.
3 Bor, vii. 494.
4 Bentivoglio, Bor, Meteren, et al.
6 Meteron, v. 92. Hooff, Bor, ubi sup.
knew the strength of their position, for these mutinies were never repressed, and rarely punished. On this occasion the Commander was afraid to employ force, and the burgheers, after the army had been quartered upon them for a time, would gladly pay a heavy ransom to be rid of their odious and expensive guests. The mutineers foreseeing that the work might last a few weeks, and determined to proceed leisurely, took possession of the great square. The Eletto, with his staff of councillors, was quartered in the town-house, while the soldiers distributed themselves among the houses of the most opulent citizens, no one escaping a billet who was rich enough to receive such company—bishop or burgomaster, mar- grave or merchant. 2 The most famous kitchens were naturally the most eagerly sought, and sumptuous apartments, luxurious dishes, delicate wines, were daily demanded. The burgheers dared not refuse. 3

The six hundred Waloons, who had been previously quartered in the city, were expelled, and for many days the mutiny reigned paramount. Day after day the magistracy, the heads of guilds, all the representatives of the citizens, were assembled in the Broad Council. The Governor-General insisted on his demand of four hundred thousand crowns, representing, with great justice, that the mutineers would remain in the city until they had eaten and drunk to that amount, and that there would still be the arrears, for which the city would be obliged to raise the funds. On the 9th of May, the authorities made an offer, which was duly communicated to the Eletto. That functionary stood forth on a window-sill of the town-house, and addressed the soldiery. He informed them that the Grand Commander proposed to pay ten months' arrears in cash, five months' in silks and woolen cloths, and the balance in promises, to be fulfilled within a few days. 4 The terms were not considered satisfactory, and were received with groans of derision. The Eletto, on the contrary, declared them very liberal, and reminded the soldiers of the perilous condition in which they stood, guilty to a man of high treason, with a rope around every neck. It was well worth their while to accept the offer made them, together with the absolute pardon for the past, by which it was accompanied. For himself, he washed his hands of the consequences if the offer were rejected. The soldiers answered by deposing the Eletto and choosing another in his room. 5

Three days after, a mutiny broke out in the citadel—an unexampled occurrence. 6 The rebels ordered Sancho d'Avila, the commandant, to deliver the keys of the fortress. He refused to surrender them but with his life. They then contented themselves with compiling his lieutenant to leave the citadel, and with sending their Eletto to confer with the Grand Commander, as well as with the Eletto of the army. After accomplishing his mission, he returned, accompanied by Chiappin Vitelli, as envoy of the Governor-General. No sooner, however, had the Eletto set foot on the drawbridge than he was attacked by Ensign Salviaterra of the Spanish garrison, who stabbed him to the heart and threw him into the moat. The ensign, who was renowned in the army for his ferocious courage, and who wore embroidered upon his tunic the inscription, "El castigador de los Flamencos," then rushed upon the sergeant-major of the mutineers, despatched him in the same way, and tossed him likewise into the moat. These preliminaries being settled, satisfactory arrangement was negotiated between Vitelli and the rebellion garrison. Pardon for the past, payment upon the same terms as those offered in the city, were accepted.
the mutiny of the citadel was quelled.\textsuperscript{1} It was, however, necessary that Salvatierra should conceal himself for a long time, to escape being torn to pieces by the incensed soldiery.

Meantime, affairs in the city were more difficult to adjust. The mutineers raised an altar of chests and tables upon the public square, and celebrated mass under the open sky, solemnly swearing to be true to each other to the last.\textsuperscript{2} The scenes of carousing and merry-making were renewed at the expense of the citizens, who were again exposed to nightly alarms from the boisterous mirth and ceaseless mischief-making of the soldiers. Before the end of the month, the Broad Council, exhausted by the incumbrance which had afflicted them so many weeks, acceded to the demand of Requesens. The four hundred thousand crowns were furnished, the Grand Commander accepting them as a loan, and giving in return bonds duly signed and countersigned, together with a mortgage upon all the royal domains.\textsuperscript{3} The citizens received the documents, as a matter of form, but they had handled such securities before, and valued them but slightly. The mutineers now agreed to settle with the Governor-General, on condition of receiving all their wages, either in cash or cloth, together with a solemn promise of pardon for all their acts of insubordination. This pledge was formally rendered with appropriate religious ceremonies, by Requesens, in the cathedral.\textsuperscript{4} The payments were made directly afterwards, and a great banquet was held on the same day, by the whole mass of the soldiery, to celebrate the event. The feast took place on the place of the Meer, and was a scene of furious revelry. The soldiers, more thoughtless than children, had arrayed themselves in extemporaneous costumes, cut from the cloth which they had at last received in payment of their sufferings and their blood.

Broadcloths, silks, satins, and gold-embroidered brocades, worthy of a queen’s wardrobe, were hung in fantastic drapery around the sinewy forms and bronzed faces of the soldiers, who, the day before, had been clothed in rags. The mirth was fast and furious; and scarce was the banquet finished before every drum-head became a gaming-table, around which gathered groups eager to sacrifice in a moment their dearly-bought gold.\textsuperscript{5}

The fortunate or the prudent had not yet succeeded in entirely plundering their companions, when the distant booming of cannon was heard from the river. Instantly, accosted as they were in their holiday and fantastic costumes, the soldiers, no longer mutinous, were summoned from banquet and gaming-table, and were ordered forth upon the dykes. The patriot Admiral Boisot, who had so recently defeated the fleet of Bergen, under the eyes of the Grand Commander, had unexpectedly sailed up the Scheld, determined to destroy the fleet of Antwerp, which upon that occasion had escaped. Between the forts of Lillo and Callao, he met with twenty-two vessels under the command of Vice-admiral Haemstedt. After a short and sharp action, he was completely victorious. Fourteen of the enemy’s ships were burned or sunk, with all their crews, and Admiral Haemstedt was taken prisoner. The soldiers opened a warm fire of musketry upon Boisot from the dyke, to which he responded with his cannon.

The distance of the combatants, however, made the action unimportant, and the patriots retired down the river, after achieving a complete victory. The Grand Commander was farther than ever from obtaining that foothold on the sea, which, as he had informed his sovereign, was the only means by which the Netherlands could be reduced.\textsuperscript{6}

\textsuperscript{1} Mendonza, Meteoron, Hoofd.
\textsuperscript{2} Hoofd, ix. 359.
\textsuperscript{3} Bor, viii. 404, 405.
\textsuperscript{4} Bentivoglio, viii. 149.
\textsuperscript{5} Hoofd, ix. 359, 360.
\textsuperscript{6} Bor, vii. 405, 406. Hoofd, ix. 359, 360. Bentivoglio, viii. 149. Letter of the Prince of Orange, in Archivis, etc., v. 11, 12.
CHAPTER II.


The invasion of Louis of Nassau had, as already stated, effected the raising of the first siege of Leyden. That leaguer had lasted from the 31st of October 1573, to the 21st of March 1574, when the soldiers were summoned away to defend the frontier. By an extraordinary and culpable carelessness, the citizens, neglecting the advice of the Prince, had not taken advantage of the breathing time thus afforded them to victual the city and strengthen the garrison. They seemed to reckon more confidently upon the success of Count Louis than he had even done himself; for it was very probable that, in case of his defeat, the siege would be instantly resumed. This natural result was not long in following the battle of Mookherheyds.

On the 26th of May, Valdez reappeared before the place, at the head of eight thousand Walloons and Germans, and Leyden was now destined to pass through a fiery ordeal. This city was one of the most beautiful in the Netherlands. Placed in the midst of broad and fruitful pastures, which had been reclaimed by the hand of industry from the bottom of the sea, it was fringed with smiling villages, blooming gardens, fruitful orchards. The ancient and, at last, decrepit Rhine, flowing languidly towards its sandy deathbed, had been multiplied into innumerable artificial currents, by which the city was completely interlaced. These watery streets were shaded by lime trees, poplars, and willows, and crossed by one hundred and forty-five bridges, mostly of hammered stone. The houses were elegant, the squares and streets spacious, airy and clean, the churches and public edifices imposing, while the whole aspect of the place suggested thrift, industry, and comfort. Upon an artificial elevation, in the centre of the city, rose a ruined tower of unknown antiquity. By some it was considered to be of Roman origin, while others preferred to regard it as a work of the Anglo-Saxon Hengist, raised to commemorate his conquest of England. Surrounding by fruit-trees, and overgrown in the centre with oaks, it afforded, from its mouldering battlements, a charming prospect over a wide expanse of level country, with the spires of neighbouring cities rising in every direction. It was from this commanding height, during the long and terrible summer days which were approaching, that many an eye was to be strained anxiously seaward, watching if yet the ocean had begun to roll over the land.

Commandant of the city. The tower, which is doubtless a Roman one, presents, at the present day, almost precisely the same appearance as that described by the contemporaneous historians of the siege. The verses of the Commandant shew the opinion, that the Anglo-Saxon conquerors of Britain went from Holland, to have been a common one in the sixteenth century.
Valdez lost no time in securing himself in the possession of Maeslandsluis, Vlaardingen, and the Hague. Five hundred English, under command of Colonel Edward Chester, abandoned the fortress of Valkenburg, and fled towards Leyden. Refused admittance by the citizens, who now, with reason, distrusted them, they surrendered to Valdez, and were afterwards sent back to England. In the course of a few days, Leyden was thoroughly invested, no less than sixty-two redoubts, some of them having remained undestroyed from the previous siege, now girdling the city, while the besiegers already numbered nearly eight thousand, a force to be daily increased. On the other hand, there were no troops in the town, save a small corps of "free-booters," and five companies of the burgher guard. John Van der Does, Seigneur of Nordwyck, a gentleman of distinguished family, but still more distinguished for his learning, his poetical genius, and his valour, had accepted the office of military commandant.

The main reliance of the city, under God, was on the stout hearts of its inhabitants within the walls, and on the sleepless energy of William the Silent without. The Prince, hastening to comfort and encourage the citizens, although he had been justly irritated by their negligence in having omitted to provide more sufficiently against the emergency while there had yet been time, now reminded them that they were not about to contend for themselves alone, but that the fate of their country and of unborn generations would, in all human probability, depend on the issue about to be tried. Eternal glory would be their portion if they manifested a courage worthy of their race and of the sacred cause of religion and liberty. He implored them to hold out at least three months, assuring them that he would, within that time, devise the means of their deliverance. The citizens responded, courageously and confidentl, to these missives, and assured the Prince of their firm confidence in their own fortitude and his exertions.

And truly they had a right to rely on that calm and unflinching soul, as on a rock of adamant. All alone, without a being near him to consult, his right arm struck from him by the death of Louis, with no brother left to him but the untiring and faithful John, he prepared without delay for the new task imposed upon him. France, since the defeat and death of Louis, and the busy intrigues which had followed the accession of Henry III., had but small sympathy for the Netherlands. The English government, relieved from the fear of France, was more cold and haughty than ever. An Englishman, employed by Requesens to assassinate the Prince of Orange, had been arrested in Zealand, who impudently pretended that he had undertaken to perform the same office for Count John, with the full consent and privity of Queen Elizabeth. The provinces of Holland and Zealand were stanch and

---

1 Mendoza, xii. 251, who says that the lives of those English prisoners were spared at his express solicitation. He was at that juncture sent by the Grand Commander on a mission to Queen Elizabeth, and obtained this boon of his superior as a personal favour to himself.


3 Archives et Correspondance, v. 10.

4 Letter of Orange in Bor, vil. 505.

5 Ibid. Hoofd, ix. 365, 364.

6 The story was incredible so far as the Queen was implicated; but its invention by the assassin indicated the estimate entertained, in general, of her sentiments towards the Netherlands. "Depuis cesto escripte," wrote the Prince to his brother, "Jen m'a ley envoyé de Zeelande ung Anglais prisonnier, lequel entre autres confesso d'avoir esté apporté du nouveau Gouvemeur pour me tuer. Et avoit aussi, par charge du dit Gouvemeur, entreprins de vous tuer à Coulouque, passé dix ou douze jours. Et toutes foiz il dit le tout avoir esté fait par consentement et avec intelligence de la R-yne d'Angleterre, pour tant mieux descouvrir les dessous des ennemis."—Archives de la Maison d'Orange, v. 12, 13.
The single condition of the amnesty assumed, in a phrase, which Spino had fruitlessly striven to establish by a hundred battles, and the Hollanders had not faced their enemy on land and sea for seven years to submit to a phrase at last.

Moreover, the peace came from the wrong direction. The unifier of gravity extended leniency to his victims. Although the Hollanders had not yet been accustomed to think of the Government of the Republic as the people, they naturally considered themselves outrun by the worst of all their enemies. They were appalled and concluded that this was the end of all their wealth, progress, commerce, and buried on time the very foundation, now to be built on another, but not by the same process. Not in sackcloth, but in a palace, and with robes, was the man to whose head, did the people, wear itself violently attack the cause of his crime. That he was drawn and even in the hearts of those who were many in the world was often at such times as this, and that even had had through and had even weak of - the nation had, it was not to be seen in the promise sufficiently, though it was likely to be understood by the nation by a papal edict of April by a man who that day had been raised for the peace of the realm and that he in so short a space of time, although he had he had more than seven

---

nable suffering, but the event proved him wrong. It was received with universal and absolute contempt. No man came forward to take advantage of its conditions, save one brewer in Utrecht, and the son of a refugee pederast from Leyden. With these exceptions, the only ones recorded, Holland remained deaf to the royal voice. The city of Leyden was equally cold to the messages of mercy, which were especially addressed to its population by Valdez and his agents. Certain Netherlanders, belonging to the King's party, and familiarly called “Glippers,” despatched from the camp many letters to their rebellious acquainances in the city. In these epistles the citizens of Leyden were urgently and even pathetically exhorted to submission by their loyal brethren, and were implored “to take pity upon their poor old fathers, their daughters, and their wives.” But the burghers of Leyden thought that the best pity which they could shew to those poor old fathers, daughters, and wives, was to keep them from the clutches of the Spanish soldiery; so they made no answer to the Glippers, save by this single line, which they wrote on a sheet of paper, and forwarded, like a letter, to Valdez:

"Fistula dule canit, volucrum cum desipit ascept."  

According to the advice early given by the Prince of Orange, the citizens had taken an account of their provisions of all kinds, including the live stock. By the end of June, the city was placed on a strict allowance of food, all the provisions being purchased by the authorities at an equitable price. Half a pound of meat and half a pound of bread was allotted to a full grown man, and to the rest a due proportion. The city being strictly invested, no communication, save by carrier pigeons, and by a few swift and skillful messengers, called jumpers, was possible. Sorties and fierce combats were, however, of daily occurrence, and a handsome bounty was offered to any man who brought into the city gates the head of a Spaniard. The reward was paid many times, but the population was becoming so excited, and so apt, that the authorities felt it dangerous to permit the continuance of these conflicts. Lest the city, little by little, should lose its few disciplined defenders, it was now proclaimed, by sound of church-bell, that in future no man should leave the gates.

The Prince had his head-quarters at Delft and at Rotterdam. Between those two cities, an important fortress called Polderwaert, secured him in the control of the alluvial quadrangle, watered on two sides by the Yssel and the Meuse. On the 29th June, the Spaniards, feeling its value, had made an unsuccessful effort to carry this fort by storm. They had been beaten off, with the loss of several hundred men, the Prince remaining in possession of the position, from which alone he could hope to relieve Leyden. He still held in his hand the keys with which he could unlock the ocean gates, and let the waters in upon the land, and he had long been convinced that nothing could save the city but to break the dykes. Leyden was not upon the sea, but he could send the sea to Leyden, although an army fit to encounter the besieging force under Valdez could not be levied. The battle of Mookerheide had, for the present, quite settled the question of land relief, but it was possible to besiege the besiegers with the waves of the ocean. The Spaniards occupied the coast from the Hague to Vlaardingen, but the dykes along the Meuse and Yssel were in possession of the Prince. He determined that these should be pierced, while, at the same authority for the details of the memorable siege which it describes. It was the main source of the historian Pieter Bor. Compare Metoren, v. 94. Hoofd. x. 386.

3 Jan Fruyters. Corte Beschryvinge van der strenghe Belegginghe en wonderebaddijckhe Verloosinge der stadt Leyden—met byvoeghe alle de Brieven die an de van der Stadt ges-braven zijn.—Gedrukt tot Delft. A. d. 1577. This contemporary and very rare volume is much the best.

4 Bor. vii. 548.
time, the great sluices at Rotterdam, Schiedam, and Delfshaven should be opened. The damage to the fields, villages, and growing crops would be enormous, but he felt that no other course could rescue Leyden, and with it the whole of Holland, from destruction. His clear expositions and impassioned eloquence at last overcame all resistance. By the middle of July, the estates fully consented to his plan, and its execution was immediately undertaken. "Better a drowned land than a lost land," cried the patriots, with enthusiasm, as they devoted their fertile fields to desolation. The enterprise for restoring their territory, for a season, to the waves, from which it had been so patiently rescued, was conducted with as much regularity as if it had been a profitable undertaking.

A capital was formally subscribed, for which a certain number of bonds were issued, payable at a long date. In addition to this preliminary fund, a monthly allowance of forty-five guilders was voted by the estates, until the work should be completed, and a large sum was contributed by the ladies of the land, who freely furnished their plate, jewellery, and costly furniture to the furtherance of the scheme.

Meantime, Valdez, on the 30th July, issued most urgent and ample offers of pardon to the citizens if they would consent to open their gates and accept the King's authority, but his overtures were received with silent contempt, notwithstanding that the population was already approaching the starvation point. Although not yet fully informed of the active measures taken by the Prince, yet they still chose to rely upon his energy and their own fortitude, rather than upon the honored words which had formerly been heard at the gates of Harlem and of Naarden. On the 1st of August, the Prince, ac-

2 "Lieve bedorven dan verloren land." Fruytiers, 16. Meteren, Hoofd, ubi sup.
4 Hoofd, ix. 370.
6 "We tenen, of eerst te maendren met brood, en de derde maend met armoede."— Jan Fruytiers.
Illness of the Prince.

Werf, knowing the sensibility of his countrymen to music, ordered the city musicians to perambulate the streets, playing lively melodies and martial airs. Salvos of cannon were likewise fired, and the starving city for a brief space put on the aspect of a holiday, much to the astonishment of the besieging forces, who were not yet aware of the Prince's efforts. They perceived very soon, however, as the water everywhere about Leyden had risen to the depth of ten inches, that they stood in a perilous position. It was no trifling danger to be thus attacked by the waves of the ocean, which seemed about to obey with docility the command of William the Silent. Valdez became anxious and uncomfortable at the strange aspect of affairs; for the besieging army was now in its turn beleaguered, and by a stronger power than man's. He consulted with the most experienced of his officers, with the country-people, with the most distinguished among the Glippers, and derived encouragement from their views concerning the Prince's plan. They pronounced it utterly futile and hopeless. The Glippers knew the country well, and ridiculed the desperate project in unmeasured terms.1

Even in the city itself, a dull distrust had succeeded to the first vivid gleam of hope, while the few royalists among the population boldly taunted their fellow-citizens to their faces with the absurd vision of relief which they had so fondly welcomed. "Go up to the tower, ye Beggars," was the frequent and taunting cry, "go up to the tower, and tell us if ye can see the ocean coming over the dry land to your relief," 2—and day after day they did go up to the ancient tower of Hengist, with heavy heart and anxious eye, watching, hoping, praying, fearing, and at last almost despairing of relief by God or man. On the 27th they addressed a desponding letter to the estates, complaining that the city had been forgotten in its utmost need, and on the same day a prompt and warm-hearted reply was received, in which the citizens were assured that every human effort was to be made for their relief. "Rather," said the estates, "will we see our whole land and all our possessions perish in the waves, than forsake thee, Leyden. We know full well, moreover, that with Leyden all Holland must perish also." They excused themselves for not having more frequently written, upon the ground that the whole management of the measures for their relief had been intrusted to the Prince, by whom alone all the details had been administered, and all the correspondence conducted.3

The fever of the Prince had, meanwhile, reached its height. He lay at Rotterdam, utterly prostrate in body, and with mind agitated nearly to delirium, by the perpetual and almost unassisted schemes which he was constructing. Relief, not only for Leyden, but for the whole country, now apparently sinking into the abyss, was the vision which he pursued as he tossed upon his restless couch. Never was illness more unseasonable. His attendants were in despair, for it was necessary that his mind should for a time be spared the agitation of business. The physicians who attended him agreed, as to his disorder, only in this, that it was the result of mental fatigue and melancholy, and could be cured only by removing all distressing and perplexing subjects from his thoughts; but all the physicians in the world could not have succeeded in turning his attention for an instant from the great cause of his country. Leyden lay, as it were, anxious and despairing at his feet, and it was impossible for him to close his ears to her cry. Therefore, from his sick-bed he continued to dictate words of counsel and encouragement to the city; to Admiral Boisot, commanding the fleet, minute directions and precautions.4 Towards the end of August a vague report had found its way into his sick chamber

---

1 Hoofd, ix. 372. Bor, vil. 551.
3 See the letter in Bor, vil. 551, 552.
4 Letters of N. Brumynck, Arch. et Correspond., v. 39, 46. Bor, vil. 551, 552.
that Leyden had fallen, and although he refused to credit the tale, yet it served to harass his mind, and to heighten fever. Cornelius Van Mercer, Receiver-General of Holland, had occasion to visit him at Rotterdam, and, strange to relate, found the house almost deserted. Penetrating, unattended, to the Prince’s bed-chamber, he found him lying quite alone. Inquiring what had become of all his attendants, he was answered by the Prince, in a very feeble voice, that he had sent them all away. The Receiver-General seems, from this, to have rather hastily arrived at the conclusion that the Prince’s disorder was the pest, and that his servants and friends had all deserted him from cowardice. This was very far from being the case. His private secretary and his maître d’hôtel watched, day and night, by his couch, and the best physicians of the city were in constant attendance. By a singular accident, all had been despatched on different errands, at the express desire of their master, but there had never been a suspicion that his disorder was the pest, or pestilential. Nerves of steel, and a frame of adamant could alone have resisted the constant anxiety and the consuming fatigue to which he had so long been exposed. His illness had been aggravated by the rumour of Leyden’s fall, a fiction which Cornelius Mercer was now enabled flatly to contradict. The Prince began to mend from that hour. By the end of the first week of September, he wrote a long letter to his brother, assuring him of his convalescence, and expressing, as usual, a calm confidence in the Divine decrees — “God will ordain for me,” said he, “all which is necessary for my good and my salvation. He will lead me with no more afflictions than the fragility of this nature can sustain.”

The preparations for the relief of Ley

1 Bor. vii. 561. Hooff, ix. 872, 373. — Such was the information given by him to the historin Bor, whose account is followed by Hooff and others. The letters of Secretary Brunyock and of Nuytenaer prove, on the contrary, the solitude with which the Prince was attended in his illness. Archives et Correspondance, v. 55-50.

2 Archives et Correspondance, etc., 48.


4 Meteren, v. 94. Bor. vii. 552.

5 Bor. vii. 552-554. Hooff, ix. 375.
Gradual Advance of the Fleet.

1574.

it was necessary to break through this two-fold series of defences. Between the Land-scheiding and Leyden were several dykes, which kept out the water; upon the level territory, thus encircled, were many villages, together with a chain of sixty-two forts, which completely occupied the land. All these villages and fortresses were held by the veteran troops of the King; the besieging force being about four times as strong as that which was coming to the rescue.

The Prince had given orders that the Land-scheiding, which was still one-and-a-half foot above water, should be taken possession of, at every hazard. On the night of the 10th and 11th of September this was accomplished, by surprise, and in a masterly manner. The few Spaniards who had been stationed upon the dyke were all despatched or driven off, and the patriots fortified themselves upon it, without the loss of a man. As the day dawned the Spaniards saw the fatal error which they had committed in leaving this bulwark so feebly defended, and from two villages which stood close to the dyke, the troops now rushed in considerable force to recover what they had lost. A hot action succeeded, but the patriots had too securely established themselves. They completely defeated the enemy, who retired, leaving hundreds of dead on the field, and the patriots in complete possession of the Land-scheiding. This first action was marauding and desperate. It gave an earnest of what these people, who came to relieve their brethren by sacrificing their property and their lives, were determined to effect. It gave a revolting proof, too, of the intense hatred which roused their arms. A Zealander, having struck down a Spaniard on the dyke, knelt on his bleeding enemy, tore his heart from his bosom, fastened his teeth in it for an instant, and then threw it to a dog, with the exclamation, "Tis too bitter." The Spanish heart was, however, rescued, and kept for years, with the marks of the soldier’s teeth upon it, a sad testimonial of the ferocity engendered by this war for national existence.

The great dyke having been thus occupied, no time was lost in breaking it through in several places, a work which was accomplished under the very eyes of the enemy. The fleet sailed through the gaps; but, after their passage had been effected in good order, the Admiral found, to his surprise, that it was not the only rampart to be carried. The Prince had been informed, by those who claimed to know the country, that, when once the Land-scheiding had been passed, the water would flood the country as far as Leyden, but that the "Green-way," another long dyke, three-quarters of a mile farther inward, now rose at least a foot above the waters, to oppose their further progress. Fortunately, by a second and still more culpable carelessness, this dyke had been left by the Spaniards in as unprotected a state as the first had been. Promptly and audaciously Admiral Boisot took possession of this barrier also, levelled it in many places, and brought his flotilla, in triumph, over its ruins. Again, however, he was doomed to disappointment. A large mere, called the Fresh-water Lake, was known to extend itself directly in his path about midway between the Land-scheiding and the city. To this piece of water, into which he expected to have instantly floated, his only passage lay through one deep canal. The sea which had thus far borne him on, now diffusing itself over a very wide surface, and under the influence of an adverse wind, had become too shallow for his ships. The canal alone was deep enough, but it led directly to

1 The army of Valdez numbered at least ten thousand.—Hooft, ix. 387.
2 Jan Frystiern.—Compare Bor, vii. 554. Hooft, ix. 375.
3 Bor, vii. 554. Hooft, ix. 375, 376.
5 "Zit gebeten herte met den takselen der aderen is binnin Delf door na van velo

One of the "carmina" thus alluded to by the historian, was a Latin poem by the Commandant Van der Does, in which the progress of the siege is described with much spirit and elegance.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

their feet, while on the waves rode a
fotilla, manned by a determined race,
whose courage and ferocity were
known throughout the world. The
Spanish soldiers, brave as they were
on land, were not sailors, and in the
naval contests which had taken place
between them and the Hollanders, had
been almost invariably defeated. It
was not surprising, in these amphibious
skirmishes, where discipline was of
little avail, and habitual audacity
fostered at the vague dangers which
encumbered them, that the foreign troops
should lose their presence of mind.

Three barriers, one within the other,
had now been passed, and the fotilla,
advancing with the advancing waves,
and driving the enemy steadily before
it, was drawing nearer to the belea-
gnered city. As one circle after another
was passed, the besieging army found
itself compressed within a constantly
contracting field. The "Ark of Delft,"
an enormous vessel, with shot-proof
bulwarks, and moved by paddle-wheels,
turned by a crank, now arrived at Zoe-
termee, and was soon followed by the
whole fleet. After a brief delay, suf-
ficient to allow the few remaining
vandals to escape, both Zoetermeer
and Beithuizer, with the fortifica-
tions, were set on fire, and abandoned
to their fate. The blaze lighted up
the deserted and waterside waste around,
and was seen at Leyden, where it was
lauded as the beacon of hope.

Without further impediment, the armada
proceeded to North Aa: the enemy
retreating from this position also, and
sailing to Zoeterwoude, a strongly fortif-
ced village but a mile and three quar-
ters from the city walls. It was now
swarming with troops, for the bulk of
the besieging army had gradually been
sworn into a narrow circle of forts,
with the immediate neighbourhood
of the city. Besides Zoeterwoude, the
villages where they were principally
lodged were Lammen and Leyden,
within three hundred rods
from the town. At Leyden were
the quarters of Valdez; Colon

V. STRACK, xi. 263.
V. ST. B. ii. viii. 536. Hadd.
V. MILAN xi. 262.
Boys commanded in the very strong fortress of Lammen.\textsuperscript{1}

The fleet was, however, delayed at North Aa by another barrier, called the "Kirk-way." The waters, too, spreading once more over a wider space, and diminishing under an east wind, which had again arisen, no longer permitted their progress, so that very soon the whole armada was stranded anew. The waters fell to the depth of nine inches, while the vessels required eighteen and twenty. Day after day the fleet lay motionless upon the shallow sea. Orange, rising from his sick bed as soon as he could stand, now came on board the fleet. His presence diffused universal joy; his words inspired his desponding army with fresh hope. He rebuked the impatient spirits who, weary of their compulsory idleness, had shown symptoms of ill-timed ferocity; and those eight hundred mad Zealanders, so frantic in their hatred to the foreigner who had so long profaned their land, were as docile as children to the Prince. He reconnoitred the whole ground, and issued orders for the immediate destruction of the Kirk-way, the last important barrier which separated the fleet from Leyden. Then, after a long conference with Admiral Boisot, he returned to Delft.\textsuperscript{2}

Meantime, the besieged city was at its last gasp. Theburghers had been in a state of uncertainty for many days; being aware that the fleet had set forth for their relief, but knowing full well the thousand obstacles which it had to surmount. They had guessed its progress by the illumination from the blazing villages; they had heard its salvos of artillery on its arrival at North Aa; but since then, all had been dark and mournful again, hope and fear, in sickening alternation, distracting every breast. They knew that the wind was unfavourable, and, at the dawn of each day, every eye was turned wistfully to the vane of the steeples. So long as the easterly breezes prevailed, they felt, as they anxiously stood on towers and house-tops, that they must look in vain for the welcome ocean. Yet, while thus patiently waiting, they were literally starving; for even the misery endured at Harlem had not reached that depth and intensity of agony to which Leyden was now reduced. Bread, malt-cake, horse-flesh, had entirely disappeared; dogs, cats, rats, and other vermin, were esteemed luxuries. A small number of cows, kept as long as possible, for their milk, still remained; but a few were killed from day to day, and distributed in minute proportions, hardly sufficient to support life among the famishing population. Starving wretches swarmed daily around the shambles where these cattle were slaughtered, contending for any morsel which might fall, and lapping eagerly the blood as it ran along the pavement; while the hides, chopped and boiled, were greedily devoured. Women and children, all day long, were seen searching gutters and dung-hills for morsels of food, which they disputed fiercely with the famishing dogs. The green leaves were stripped from the trees, every living herb was converted into human food, but these expedients could not avert starvation. The daily mortality was frightful—in infants starved to death on the maternal breasts, which famine had parched and withered; mothers dropped dead in the streets, with their dead children in their arms. In many a house the watchmen, in their rounds, found a whole family of corpses, father, mother, and children, side by side; for a disorder called the plague, naturally engendered of hardship and famine, now came, as if in kindness, to abridge the agony of the people. The pestilence stalked at noonday through the city, and the doomed inhabitants fell like grass beneath its scythe. From six thousand to eight thousand human beings sank before this scourge alone, yet the people resolutely held out—women and men mutually encouraging each other to resist the entrance of their foreign foe—an evil more horrible than pest or famine.\textsuperscript{3}

\textsuperscript{1} Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup. Mendosa.
\textsuperscript{2} Bor, vi. 558. Hoofd, ix. 320.
\textsuperscript{3} Jan Fruytiers. Bor, vii. 557. Hoofd, ix. 281. Meteor, v. 91. Mendosa's esti-
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

...only alternative. Your menace moves me not: my life is at your disposal; here is my sword, plunge it into my breast, and divide my flesh among you. Take my body to appease your hunger, but expect no surrender as long as I remain alive."1

The words of the stout burgomaster inspired a new courage in the hearts of those who heard him, and a shout of applause and defiance arose from the vanishing but enthusiastic crowd. They left the place, after exchanging new vows of fidelity with their magistrate, and again ascended tower and battlement to watch for the coming fleet. From the ramparts they hurled renewed defiance at the enemy. "Ye call us rat-eaters and dog-eaters," they cried, "and it is true. So long, then, as ye hear the bark or cat meow within the walls, ye may know that the city holds out. And when all has perished but ourselves, be sure that we will with cheer use our left arms, retaining our right to defend our women, our liberty and our religion against the enemy's laws. Should God, in His wrath, be wroth with the whole nation for our impiety, we know not what awaits us, even then will we refuse ourselves to appear against your armies. When that last hour has come, when we have lost the last ounce of strength, we will, as our ancestors, meet the enemy, men, women, and children, in the town square, that our enemies may see that, in the midst of the storm of death, our children as well as men stood true to their religion. So, to witness the Prince of Orange as he beholds the stern spectacle of war, we are prepared to sacrifice our lives ...
flew into the city, bringing a letter from Admiral Boisot. In this despatch, the position of the fleet at North Aa was described in encouraging terms, and the inhabitants were assured that, in a very few days at furthest, the long-expected relief would enter their gates. The letter was read publicly upon the market-place, and the bells were rung for joy. Nevertheless, on the morrow, the waves pointed to the east, the waters, so far from rising, continued to sink, and Admiral Boisot was almost in despair. He wrote to the Prince, that if the spring-tide, now to be expected, should not, together with a strong and favourable wind, come immediately to their relief, it would be in vain to attempt anything further, and that the expedition would of necessity be abandoned. The tempest came to their relief. A violent equinoctial gale, on the night of the 1st and 2d of October, came storming from the north-west, shifting after a few hours full eight points, and then blowing still more violently from the south-west. The waters of the North Sea were piled in vast masses upon the southern coast of Holland, and then dashed furiously landward, the ocean rising over the earth, and sweeping with unrestrained power across the ruined dykes.

In the course of twenty-four hours, the fleet at North Aa, instead of nine inches, had more than two feet of water. No time was lost. The Kirkway, which had been broken through, according to the Prince's instructions, was now completely overflowed, and the fleet sailed at midnight, in the midst of the storm and darkness. A few sentinel vessels of the enemy challenged them as they steadily rowed towards Zoeterwoude. The answer was a flash from Boisot's cannon, lighting up the black waste of waters. There was a fierce naval midnight battle—a strange spectacle among the branches of those quiet orchards, and with the chimney-stacks of half-submerged farm houses rising around the contending vessels. The neighbouring village of Zoeterwoude shook with the discharges of the Zealanders' cannon, and the Spaniards assembled in that fortress knew that the rebel Admiral was at last afloat, and on his course. The enemy's vessels were soon sunk, their crews hurled into the waves. On went the fleet, sweeping over the broad waters which lay between Zoeterwoude and Zwieten. As they approached some shallows, which led into the great mere, the Zealanders dashed into the sea, and with sheer strength shouldered every vessel through. Two obstacles lay still in their path—the forts of Zoeterwoude and Lammen, distant from the city five hundred and two hundred and fifty yards respectively. Strong doubts, both well supplied with troops and artillery, they were likely to give a rough reception to the light flotilla; but the panic, which had hitherto driven their foes before the advancing patriots, had reached Zoeterwoude. Hardly was the fleet in sight, when the Spaniards, in the early morning, poured out from the fortress, and fled precipitately to the left, along a road which led in a westerly direction towards the Hague. Their narrow path was rapidly vanishing in the waves, and hundreds sank beneath the constantly deepening and treacherous flood. The wild Zealanders, too, sprang from their vessels upon the crumbling dyke, and drove their re-treating foes into the sea. They hurled their harpoons at them, with an accuracy acquired in many a polar chase; they plunged into the waves in the keen pursuit, attacking them with boat-hook and dagger. The numbers who thus fell beneath these corsairs, cheerful, and almost jocular. The writer claims the hospitality of the Commandant, assuring him that he shall soon arrive in Leyden, to be a guest in his house.—Archives de la Maison d'Orange, v. 67, 68.

om Leyden te ontzetten als het hen huiden mogelijk was te sterren metter hand te reiken en grijpen."—Bor. viii. 537.
1 Bor. vili. 537.—See also the text of the letter transmitted on the same day and in the same manner, from the Admiral to the Commandant Nordwijk, in Groen v. Prinsterer. The tone of the letter is spirited, end 1885. Mendoza, xii. 285.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

who neither gave nor took quarter, were never counted, but probably not less than a thousand perished. The rest effected their escape to the Hague.1

The first fortress was thus seized, dismantled, set on fire, and passed, and a few strokes of the oars brought the whole fleet close to Lammen. This last obstacle rose formidable and frowning directly across their path. Swarming as it was with soldiers, and bristling with artillery, it seemed to defy the armada either to carry it by storm or to pass under its guns into the city.2 It appeared that the enterprise was, after all, to founder within sight of the long expecting and expected haven. Boisot anchored his fleet within a respectful distance, and spent what remained of the day in carefully reconnoitring the fort, which seemed only too strong. In conjunction with Leyderdorp, the head-quarters of Valdez, a mile and a half distant on the right, and within a mile of the city, it seemed so insuperable an impediment that Boisot wrote in despondent tone to the Prince of Orange. He announced his intention of carrying the fort, if it were possible, on the following morning, but if obliged to retreat, he observed, with something like despair, that there would be nothing for it but to wait for another gale of wind. If the waters should rise sufficiently to enable them to make a wide detour, it might be possible—if, in the meantime, Leyden did not starve or surrender—to enter its gates from the opposite side.3

Meantime, the citizens had grown wild with expectation. A dove had been despatched by Boisot, informing them of his precise position, and a number of citizens accompanied the burgomaster, at nightfall, toward the tower of Hengist—"Yonder," cried the magistrate, stretching out his hand towards Lammen, "yonder, behind that fort, are bread and meat, and brethren in thousands. Shall all this be destroyed by the Spanish guns, or shall we rush to the rescue of our friends?" "We will tear the fortress to fragments with our teeth and nails," was the reply, "before the relief, so long expected, shall be wrested from us."4 It was resolved that a sortie, in conjunction with the operations of Boisot, should be made against Lammen with the earliest dawn. Night descended upon the scene, a pitch-dark night, full of anxiety to the Spaniards, to the armada, to Leyden. Strange sights and sounds occurred at different moments to bewilder the anxious sentinels. A long procession of lights issuing from the fort was seen to float across the black face of the waters, in the dead of night, and the whole of the city wall, between the Cow-gate and the Tower of Burgundy, fell with a loud crash. The horror-struck citizens thought that the Spaniards were upon them at last; the Spaniards imagined the noise to indicate a desperate sortie of the citizens.5 Everything was vague and mysterious.

Day dawned, at length, after the feverish night, and the Admiral prepared for the assault. Within the fortress reigned a death-like stillness, which inspired a sickening suspicion. Had the city, indeed, been carried in the night; had the massacre already commenced; had all this labour and audacity been expended in vain? Suddenly a man was descried, wading breast-high through the water from Lammen towards the fleet, while at the same time, one solitary boy was seen to wave his cap from the summit of the fort. After a moment of doubt, the happy mystery was solved. The Spaniards had fled, panic-struck, during the darkness. Their position would still have enabled them, with firmness, to frustrate the enterprise of the patriots, but the hand of God, which had sent the ocean and the tempest to the deliverance of Leyden, had struck her enemies with terror likewise. The lights which had been seen moving

3 Ibid. Ibid., ix. 385.
4 Bor, vii. 559.
during the night were the lanterns of the retreating Spaniards, and the boy who was now waving his triumphant signal from the battlements had alone witnessed the spectacle. So confident was he in the conclusion to which it led him, that he had volunteered at daybreak to go thither all alone. The magistrates, fearing a trap, hesitated for a moment to believe the truth, which soon, however, became quite evident. Valdez, flying himself from Leyderdorp, had ordered Colonel Borgia to retire with all his troops from Lammen. Thus, the Spaniards had retreated at the very moment that an extraordinary accident had laid bare a whole side of the city for their entrance. The noise of the wall, as it fell, only inspired them with fresh alarm; for they believed that the citizens had saluted forth in the darkness to aid the advancing flood in the work of destruction. All obstacles being now removed, the fleet of Boisot swept by Lammen, and entered the city on the morning of the 8th of October. Leyden was relieved.

The quays were lined with the famishing population, as the fleet rowed through the canals, every human being who could stand coming forth to greet the preservers of the city. Bread was thrown from every vessel among the crowd. The poor creatures who for two months had tasted no wholesome human food, and who had literally been living within the jaws of death, snatched eagerly the blessed gift, at last too liberally bestowed. Many choked themselves to death, in the greediness with which they devoured their bread; others became ill with the effects of plenty thus suddenly succeeding starvation; — but these were isolated cases, a repetition of which was prevented. The Admiral, stepping aehore, was welcomed by the magistracy, and a solemn procession was immediately formed. Magistrates and citizens, wild Zealanders, emancipated burgher guards, sailors, soldiers, women, children,—nearly every living person within the walls, all repaired without delay to the great church, stout Admiral Boisot leading the way. The starving and heroic city, which had been so firm in its resistance to an earthly king, now bent itself in humble gratitude before the King of kings. After prayers, the whole vast congregation joined in the thanksgiving hymn. Thousands of voices raised the song, but few were able to carry it to its conclusion, for the universal emotion, deepened by the music, became too full for utterance. The hymn was abruptly suspended, while the multitude wept like children. This scene of honest pathos terminated, the necessary measures for distributing the food and for relieving the sick were taken by the magistracy. A note despatched to the Prince of Orange was received by him at two o’clock, as he sat in church at Delft. It was of a somewhat different purport from that of the letter which he had received early in the same day from Boisot—the letter in which the admiral had informed him that the success of the enterprise depended, after all, upon the desperate assault upon a nearly impregnable fort. The joy of the Prince may be easily imagined, and so soon as the sermon was concluded, he handed the letter just received to the minister, to be read to the congregation. Thus, all participated in his joy, and united with him in thanksgiving.

The next day, notwithstanding the urgent entreaties of his friends, who were anxious lest his life should be endangered by breathing, in his scarcely convalescent state, the air of the city where so many thousands had been dying of the pestilence, the Prince repaired to Leyden. He, at least, had never doubted his own or his country’s fortitude. They could, therefore, most sincerely congratulate each other, now that the victory had been achieved.

“If we are doomed to perish,” he had said a little before the commencement of the siege, “in the name of God, be

2 Ibid. Ibid., vii. 599. Hoofd, Meteren, ubi sup.
In his precipitate retreat before the advancing rebels, the Commander had just found time for this elegant effusion, and for his parting instructions to Colonel Borgias, that the fortress of Lammen was to be forthwith abandoned. These having been reduced to writing, Valdez had fled so speedily as to give rise to much censure and more scandal. He was even accused of having been bribed by the Hollanders to desert his post, a tale which many repeated, and a few believed. On the 4th of October, the day following that on which the relief of the city was effected, the wind shifted to the north-east and again blew a tempest. It was as if the waters, having now done their work, had been rolled back to the ocean by an omnipotent force. Yet in the course of a few days the level was once again, and the work of re-marrting the dykes completed.

And a brief interval of repose,

A very brief interval of repose,

After having been for several days without a fresh of the sea, the first which admitted the city, as a report was firmly believed, was that of the people of the town, who had been told of the departure of the Dutch. The Governor was of the opinion that the assault of the enemy would soon be expected, and that there was not a moment to be lost, for the time was near that

and the back...
afterwards so illustrious, was thus founded in the very darkest period of the country’s struggle. The university was endowed with a handsome revenue, principally derived from the ancient abbey of Egmont, and was provided with a number of professors, selected for their genius, learning, and piety, among all the most distinguished scholars of the Netherlands. The document by which the institution was founded was certainly a masterpiece of ponderous irony, for, as the fiction of the King’s sovereignty was still maintained, Philip was gravely made to establish the university, as a reward to Leyden for rebellion to himself. “Considering,” said this wonderful charter, “that during these present wearisome wars within our provinces of Holland and Zealand, all good instruction of youth in the sciences and liberal arts is likely to come into entire oblivion. . . . . Considering the difference of religion—considering that we are inclined to gratify our city of Leyden, with its burghers, on account of the heavy burthen sustained by them during this war with such faithfulness—we have resolved, after riperely deliberating with our dear cousin, William, Prince of Orange, stadholder, to erect a free public school and university,” etc., etc., etc. So ran the document establishing this famous academy, all needful regulations for the government and police of the institution being entrusted by Philip to his “above-mentioned dear cousin of Orange.”

The university having been founded, endowed, and supplied with its teachers, it was solemnly consecrated in the following winter, and it is agreeable to contemplate this scene of harmless pedantry, interposed, as it was, between the acts of the longest and dreariest tragedy of modern time. On the 5th of February 1575, the city of Leyden, so lately the victim of famine and pestilence, had crowned itself with flowers. At seven in the morning, after a solemn religious celebration in the Church of St. Peter, a grand procession was formed. It was preceded by a military escort, consisting of the burgher militia and the five companies of infantry stationed in the city. Then came, drawn by four horses, a splendid triumphal chariot, on which sat a female figure, arrayed in snow-white garments. This was the Holy Gospel. She was attended by the Four Evangelists, who walked on foot at each side of her chariot. Next followed Justice, with sword and scales, mounted, blindfold, upon a unicorn; while those learned doctors, Julian, Papinian, Ulpian, and Tribonian, rode on either side, attended by two lackeys and four men-at-arms. After these came Medicine, on horseback, holding in one hand a treatise on the healing art, in the other a garland of drugs. The curative goddess rode between the four eminent physicians, Hippocrates, Galen, Dioscorides, and Theophrastus, and was attended by two footmen and four pike-bearers. Last of the allegorical personages came Minerva, prancing in complete steel, with lance in rest, and bearing her Medusa shield. Aristotle and Plato, Cicero and Virgil, all on horseback, with attendants in antique armour at their back, surrounded the daughter of Jupiter, while the city band, discoursing eloquent music from hautboy and viol, came upon the heels of the allegory. Then followed the mace-bearers and other officials, escorting the orator of the day, the newly appointed professors and doctors, the magistrates and dignitaries, and the body of the citizens generally completing the procession.

Marshalled in this order, through triumphal arches, and over a pavement strewed with flowers, the procession moved slowly up and down the different streets, and along the quiet canals of the city. As it reached the Nuns’ Bridge, a barge of triumph, gorgeously decorated, came floating slowly down the sluggish Rhine. Upon its deck, under a canopy enwreathed with laurels and oranges, and adorned with tapestry, sat Apollo, attended by the

1 Bor, viii. 503.
2 See the text of the Octroy by which the university was established, in Bor, viii. 593, 594.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1574.

Nine Muses, all in classical costume; at the helm stood Neptune with his trident. The Muses executed some beautiful concerted pieces; Apollo twanged his lute. Having reached the landing-place, this deputation from Parnassus stepped on shore, and stood awaiting the arrival of the procession. Each professor, as he advanced, was gravely embraced and kissed by Apollo and all the Nine Muses in turn, who greeted their arrival besides with the recitation of an elegant Latin poem. This classical ceremony terminated, the whole procession marched together to the cloister of Saint Barbara, the place prepared for the new university, where they listened to an eloquent oration by the Rev. Caspar Kolhas, after which they partook of a magnificent banquet. With this memorable feast, in the place where famine had so lately reigned, the ceremonies were concluded.

CHAPTER III.

Latter days of the Blood Council—Informal and insincere negotiations for peace—Characteristics of the negotiators and of their diplomatic correspondence—Dr Junius—Secret conferences between Dr Leoninus and Orange—Steadfastness of the Prince—Changes in the internal government of the northern provinces—Generosity and increasing power of the municipalities—Incipient jealousy in regard to Orange rebuked—His offer of resignation refused by the Estates—His elevation to almost unlimited power—Renewed mediation of Maximilian—Views and positions of the parties—Advice of Orange—Opening of negotiations at Breda—Propositions and counter-propositions—Adroitness of the plenipotentiaries on both sides—Insincere diplomacy and unsatisfactory results—Union of Holland and Zealand under the Prince of Orange—Act defining his powers—Charlotte de Bourbon—Character, fortunes, and fate of Anna of Saxony—Marriage of Orange with Matemaissa de Bourbon—Indignation thereby excited—Horrible tortures inflicted upon Papists by Sorey in North Holland—Oudewater and Schoonoven taken by Herges—The Isles of Zealand—A submarine expedition projected—Details of the adventure—Its entire success—Death of Chiappini Vitelli—Deliberations in Holland and Zealand concerning the renunciation of Philip’s authority—Declaration at Delft—Doubts as to which of the Great Powers the sovereignty should be offered—Secret international relations—Mission to England—Unsatisfactory negotiations with Elizabeth—Position of the Grand Commander—Siege of Zierickzee—Generosity of Count John—Desperate project of the Prince—Death and character of Requesens.

The Council of Troubles, or, as it will be for ever denominated in history, the Council of Blood, still existed, although the Grand Commander, upon his arrival in the Netherlands, had advised his sovereign to consent to the immediate abolition of so odious an institution. Philip, accepting the advice of his governor and his cabinet, had accordingly authorised him, by a letter of the 10th of March 1574, to take that step if he continued to believe it advisable.

Requesens had made use of this permission to extort money from the obedient portion of the provinces. An assembly of deputies was held at Brussels on the 7th of June, 1574, and there was a tedious interchange of protocols, reports, and remonstrances. The estates, not satisfied with the extinction of a tribunal which had at last worn itself out by its own violence, and had become inactive through lack of victims, insisted on greater concessions. They demanded the departure of the Spanish troops, the establishment of a council of Netherlands in Spain for Netherland affairs, the restoration to offices, in the provinces, of natives and natives only; for these drawers of documents thought it possible, at that epoch, to recover by pedantry what their brethren of Holland and Zealand were maintaining with the sword. It was not the moment for historical disquisition, citations from Solomon, nor chopping of logic; yet

1 Bor. viii. 594, 595.
2 Lettre de Requesens à Philippe II., Dec. 80, 1673, apud Gachard, Notice, etc., 24.
3 Ibid.
4 Bor. viii. 617–623, seq.
with such lucubrations were reams of paper filled, and days and weeks occupied. The result was what might have been expected. The Grand Commander obtained but little money; the estates obtained none of their demands; and the Blood Council remained, as it were, suspended in mid-air. It continued to transact business at intervals during the administration of Requesens, and at last, after nine years of existence, was destroyed by the violent imprisonment of the Council of State at Brussels. This event, however, belongs to a subsequent page of this history.

Noirarmes had argued, from the tenor of Saint Aldegonde’s letters, that the Prince would be ready to accept his pardon upon almost any terms. Noirarmes was now dead, but Saint Aldegonde still remained in prison, very anxious for his release, and as well disposed as ever to render services in any secret negotiation. It will be recollected that, at the capitulation of Middelburg, it had been distinctly stipulated by the Prince that Colonel Mondragon should at once effect the liberation of Saint Aldegonde, with certain other prisoners, or himself return into confinement. He had done neither the one nor the other. The patriots still languished in prison, some of them being subjected to exceedingly harsh treatment; but Mondragon, although repeatedly summoned, as an officer and a gentleman, by the Prince, to return to captivity, had been forbidden by the Grand Commander to redeem his pledge.

Saint Aldegonde was now released from prison upon parole, and despatched on a secret mission to the Prince and estates. As before, he was instructed that two points were to be left untouched—the authority of the King, and the question of religion. Nothing could be more preposterous than to commence a negotiation from which the two important points were thus carefully eliminated. The King’s authority and the question of religion covered the whole ground upon which the Spaniards and the Hollanders had been battling for six years, and were destined to battle for three-quarters of a century longer. Yet, although other affairs might be discussed, those two points were to be reserved for the more conclusive arbitration of gunpowder. The result of negotiations upon such a basis was easily to be foreseen. Breath, time, and paper were profusely wasted and nothing gained. The Prince assured his friend, as he had done secret agents previously sent to him, that he was himself ready to leave the land, if by so doing he could confer upon it the blessing of peace; but that all hopes of reaching a reasonable conclusion from the premises established was futile. The envoy treated also with the estates, and received from them in return an elaborate report, which was addressed immediately to the King. The style of this paper was bold and blunt, its substance bitter and indigestible. It informed Philip what he had heard often enough before, that the Spaniards must go and the exiles come back, the Inquisition be abolished and the ancient privileges restored, the Roman Catholic religion renounce its supremacy, and the Reformed religion receive permission to exist unmolested, before he could call himself master of that little hook of sand in the North Sea. With this paper, which was entrusted to Saint Aldegonde, by him to be delivered to the Grand Commander, who was, after

---

1 Vide Bor. viii. 517–522, seq.  
2 Gachard, Notice, etc., 37, 28, and note, p. 37.  
3 Correspondante de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 509–512.  
4 He died March 4, 1674, at Utrecht, of poison, according to suspicion.—Bor. vii. 469.  
5 Vide Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. DXXII. DXXIV. DXXV.  
6 Compare Groen van Princk., Archives, etc., v. 71, 72.  
7 Vide Bor. viii. 534. Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 400, seq.  
8 Ibid.  
9 ‘‘Quant à luy il étoit content, si ceuxlà le trouvaient bon de se retirer du pays, afin que tant mieux ils puissent servir à ce qu’aussi,’’ etc.—Gachard, Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 400.  
10 Vide Bor. vii. 535.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

reading it, to forward it to its destination, the negotiator returned to his prison. Thence he did not emerge again till the course of events released him, upon the 15th of October 1574. This report was far from agreeable to the Governor, and it became the object of a fresh correspondence between his confidential agent, Champagny, and the learned and astute Junius de Jonge, representative of the Prince of Orange and Governor of Veere. The communication of De Jonge consisted of a brief note and a long discourse. The note was sharp and stinging, the discourse elaborate and somewhat pedantic. Unnecessarily historical and unmercifully extended, it was yet bold, bitter, and eloquent. The presence of foreigners was proved to have been, from the beginning of Philip’s reign, the curse of the country. Doctor Sonnius, with his batch of bishops, had sowed the seed of the first disorder. A prince, ruling in the Netherlands, had no right to turn a deaf ear to the petitions of his subjects. If he did so, the Hollanders would tell him, as the old woman had told the Emperor Adrian, that the potentate who had no time to attend to the interests of his subjects had not leisure enough to be a sovereign. While Holland refused to bow its neck to the Inquisition, the King of Spain dreaded the thunder and lightning of the Pope. The Hollanders would, with pleasure, emancipate Philip from his own thraldom, but it was absurd that he, who was himself a slave to another potentate, should affect unlimited control over a free people. It was Philip’s councillors, not the Hollanders, who were his real enemies; for it was they who held him in the subjection by which his power was neutralised and his crown degraded. It may be supposed that many long

1 See the “Vertooning” in Bor, vii. 535, 560.
2 Gachard, Guillaume Le Tacit., iii. 101.
Bor, vii.
3 See the Correspondence in Bor, vii. 535, 593.
4 See the discourse of Junius in Bor, vii. 50-544.
5 The letters and documents concerning this secret negotiation are published in Gachard, Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 403-450.
6 See also Bor, vii. 585.
7 See the account by Bonte, in Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 378, 379.
8 Ibid., iii. 375-380.
Internal Politics.

exchanged prisoners from the Hague, who died next day of poison administered before their release, the frequent attempts upon his own life—all such constantly recurring crimes made it doubtful, in the opinion of the Prince, whether it would be possible to find commissioners to treat with his Majesty's government. All would fear assassination, afterwards to be disavowed by the King and pardoned by the Pope. 1 After much conversation in this vein, the Prince gave the Spanish agents warning that he might eventually be obliged to seek the protection of some foreign power for the provinces. In this connexion he made use of the memorable metaphor, so often repeated afterwards, that "the country was a beautiful damsel, who certainly did not lack suitors able and willing to accept her and defend her against the world." 2 As to the matter of religion, he said he was willing to leave it to be settled by the estates-general; but doubted whether anything short of entire liberty of worship would ever satisfy the people. 3

Subsequently there were held other conferences, between the Prince and Doctor Leoninus, with a similar result, all attempts proving fruitless to induce him to abandon his position upon the subject of religion, or to accept a pardon on any terms save the departure of the foreign troops, the assembling of the estates-general, and entire freedom of religion. Even if he were willing to concede the religious question himself, he observed that it was idle to hope either from the estates or people a hand's-breadth of concession upon that point. Leoninus was subsequently admitted to a secret conference with the estates of Holland, where his representations were firmly met by the same arguments as those already used by the Prince. 4

These proceedings on the part of Saint Aldegonde, Champagny, Junius, and Elbertus Leoninus, extended through the whole summer and autumn of 1574, and were not terminated until January of the following year.

Changes fast becoming necessary in the internal government of the provinces, were also undertaken during this year. Hitherto the Prince had exercised his power under the convenient fiction of the King's authority, systematically conducting the rebellion in the name of his Majesty, and as his Majesty's stadholder. By this process an immense power was lodged in his hands; nothing less, indeed, than the supreme executive and legislative functions of the land; while, since the revolt had become, as it were, perpetual, ample but anomalous functions had been additionally thrust upon him by the estates and by the general voice of the people.

The two provinces, even while deprived of Harlem and Amsterdam, now raised two hundred and ten thousand florins monthly, 5 whereas Alva had never been able to extract from Holland more than two hundred and seventy-one thousand florins yearly. They paid all rather than pay a tenth. In consequence of this liberality, the cities insensibly acquired a greater influence in the government. The combined more than fifty-two years. The lady, however, seems not to have pined away after the termination of this wedlock of more than half a century; for she survived her husband thirty-six years. The biographer shrewdly suspects, therefore, that she must have been a "very young Miss when she was married." "Dit meijje moest nog seer Jong zijn geweest, toon Leoninus zich met haar in het huwelijk begaf."—V. d. Cappelle, 93, note 8. He was born at Bonmalt, in 1519 or 1520, and died in 1598, full of years and honours. His public services, on various important occasions, will be often alluded to in subsequent pages.

1 See the account by Bonte, in Gachard.
2 Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 385.
3 Ibid., 387.—Compare Bor, viii. 613.
4 Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., ii. 387.—Compare Bor, viii. 613.
5 Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 408–430. Bor. vii. 565, seq.—Compare Hoofki, ix. 400, 401; Wagenaer, d. vii. 26–27. See also a very ample memoir of the distinguished scholar and diplomatist, Albert de Lecou (or Elbertus Leoninus), by J. P. Van Cappelle. Bijdragen tot de Ges. d. Nederl., i. 384. He began his active life as law professor at Louvain, in which city he married Barbara de Hase, with whom he
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

ing contest between the centrifugal aristocratic principle, represented by these corporations, and the central popular authority of the stadholder, was already foreshadowed, but at first the estates were in perfect harmony with the Prince. They even urged upon him more power then he desired, and declined functions which he wished them to exercise. On the 7th of September 1573, it had been formally proposed by the general council to confer a regular and unlimited dictatorship upon him, but in the course of a year from that time the cities had begun to feel their increasing importance. Moreover, while growing more ambitious, they became less liberal.

The Prince, dissatisfied with the conduct of the cities, brought the whole subject before an assembly of the estates of Holland on the 20th October 1574. He stated the inconveniences produced by the anomalous condition of the government. He complained that the common people had often fallen into the error, that the money raised for public purposes had been levied for his benefit only, and that they had, therefore, been less willing to contribute to the taxes. As the only remedy for these evils, he tendered his resignation of all the powers with which he was clothed, so that the estates might then take the government, which they could exercise without conflict or control. For himself, he had never desired power, except as a means of being useful to his country, and he did not offer his resignation from unwillingness to stand by the cause, but from a hearty desire to save it from disputes among its friends. He was ready, now as ever, to shed the last drop of his blood to maintain the freedom of the land.

This straightforward language produced an instantaneous effect. The estates knew that they were dealing with a man whose life was governed by lofty principles, and they felt that they were in danger of losing him through their own selfishness and low ambition. They were embarrassed, for they did not like to relinquish the authority which they had begun to relish, nor to accept the resignation of a man who was indispensable. They felt that to give up William of Orange at that time was to accept the Spanish yoke for ever. At an assembly held at Delft on the 12th of November 1574, they accordingly requested him "to continue in his blessed government, with the council established near him," and for this end they formally offered to him, "under the name of Governor or Regent," absolute power, authority, and sovereign command.

In particular, they conferred on him the entire control of all the ships of war, hitherto reserved to the different cities, together with the right to dispose of all prizes and all monies raised for the support of fleets. They gave him also unlimited power over the domains; they agreed that all magistracies, militia bands, guilds, and communities should make solemn oath to contribute taxes, and to receive garrisons, exactly as the Prince, with his council, should ordain; but they made it a condition that the estates should be convened and consulted upon requests, impositions, and upon all changes in the governing body. It was also stipulated that the judges of the supreme court and of the exchequer, with other high officers, should be appointed by and with the consent of the estates.

The Prince expressed himself willing to accept the government upon these terms. He, however, demanded an allowance of forty-five thousand florins monthly for the army expenses and other current outlays. Here, however, the estates refused their consent. In a mercantile spirit, unworthy the occasion and the man

1 Kluit, Hist. Holl. Staatregr., d. i. 86.
2 Kluit, i. 78, et seq. Wagenaar, vii. 5, 6.
6 Ibid., Nov. 13 and 25, 1574, bl. 196, 207, 208. Kluit, i. 101, 102.
with whom they were dealing, they endeavoured to chaffer where they should have been only too willing to comply, and they attempted to reduce the reasonable demand of the Prince to thirty thousand florins. The Prince, who had poured out his own wealth so lavishly in the cause—who, together with his brothers, particularly the generous John of Nassau, had contributed all which they could raise by mortgage, sales of jewellery and furniture, and by extensive loans, subjecting themselves to constant embarrassment, and almost to penury—felt himself outraged by the malpractices of this conduct. He expressed his indignation, and denounced the niggardliness of the estates in the strongest language, and declared that he would rather leave the country for ever, with the maintenance of his own honour, than accept the government upon such disgraceful terms. The estates, disturbed by his vehemence, and struck with his justice, instantly, and without further deliberation, consented to his demand. They granted the forty-five thousand florins monthly, and the Prince assumed the government, thus remodelled.

During the autumn and early winter of the year 1574, the Emperor Maximilian had been actively exerting himself to bring about a pacification of the Netherlands. He was certainly sincere, for an excellent reason. "The Emperor maintains," said Saint George, French ambassador at Madrid, "that if peace is not made with the Beggars, the Empire will depart from the house of Austria, and that such is the determination of the electors." On the other hand, if Philip were not weary of the war, at any rate his means for carrying it on were diminishing daily. Requesens could raise no money in the Netherlands; his secretary wrote to Spain, that the exchequer was at its last gasp, and the cabinet of Madrid was at its wits' end, and almost in-

capable of raising ways and means. The peace party was obtaining the upper hand—the fierce policy of Alva regarded with increasing disfavour. "The people here," wrote Saint George from Madrid, "are completely desperate, whatever pains they take to put a good face on the matter. They desire most earnestly to treat, without losing their character." It seemed, nevertheless, impossible for Philip to bend his neck. The hope of wearing the imperial crown had alone made his bigotry feasible. To less potent influences it was adamantine; and even now, with an impoverished exchequer, and after seven years of unsuccessful warfare, his purpose was not less rigid than at first. "The Hollanders demand liberty of conscience," said Saint George, "to which the King will never consent, or I am much mistaken." As for Orange, he was sincerely in favour of peace, but not a dishonourable peace, in which should be renounced all the objects of the war. He was far from sanguine on the subject, for he read the signs of the times and the character of Philip too accurately to believe much more in the success of the present than in that of the past efforts of Maximilian. He was pleased that his brother-in-law, Count Schwartzburg, had been selected as the Emperor's agent in the affair, but expressed his doubts whether much good would come of the proposed negotiations. Remembering the many traps which in times past had been set by Philip and his father, he feared that the present transaction might likewise prove a snare. "We have not forgotten the words 'ewig' and 'eining' in the treaty with Landgrave Philip," he wrote; "at the same time, we beg to assure his Imperial Majesty that we desire nothing more than a good peace, tending to the glory of God, the service of the King of Spain, and the prosperity of his subjects."
This was his language to his brother, in a letter which was meant to be shown to the Emperor. In another, written on the same day, he explained himself with more clearness, and stated his means with more energy. There were no Papists left, except a few remnanths, he said, so much had the number of the Reformers been augmented, through the singular grace of God. It was out of the question to suppose, therefore, that a measure preventing all who were not Catholics to issue, could be entertained. None would change their religion; and none would consent voluntarily, to abandon for ever their homes, friends, and property. "Such a peace," he said, "would be poor and pitiable indeed." 1

These, then, were the sentiments of the party now about to negotiate. The mediator was anxious for a settlement, because the interests of the Imperial house required it. The King of Spain was desirous of peace, but was unwilling to concede a hair. The Prince of Orange was equally anxious to terminate the war, but was determined not to abandon the objects for which it had been undertaken. A favourable result, therefore, seemed hardly possible. A whole people claimed the liberty to stay at home and practise the Protestant religion, while their King asserted the right to banish them for ever, or to burn them if they remained. The parties seemed too far apart to be brought together by the most elastic compromise. The Prince addressed an earnest appeal to the assembly of Holland, then in session at Dort, reminding them that, although peace was desirable, it might be more dangerous than war, and entreathing them, therefore, to conclude no treaty which should be inconsistent with the privileges of the country and their duty to God. 2

It was now resolved that all the votes of the assembly should consist of five: one for the nobles and large cities of Holland, one for the estates of Zealand, one for the small cities of Holland, one for the cities Bommel and Buren, and the fifth for William of Orange. 3 The Prince thus effectually held in his hands three votes: his own; that of the small cities, which through his means only had been admitted to the assembly; and, thirdly, that of Buren, the capital of his son's earldom. He thus exercised a controlling influence over the coming deliberations. The ten commissioners, who were appointed by the estates for the peace negotiations, were all his friends. Among them were Saint Aldegonde, Paul Buys, Charles Boisot, and Doctor Juniua. The plenipotentiaries of the Spanish government were Leoninus, the Seigneur de Rassinghem, Cornelius Suis, and Arnold Saubout. 4

The proceedings were opened at Breda upon the 3d of March 1575. 5 The royal commissioners took the initiative, requesting to be informed what complaints the estates had to make, and offering to remove, if possible, all grievances which they might be suffering. The states' commissioners replied that they desired nothing, in the first place, but an answer to the petition which they had already presented to the King. This was the paper placed in the hands of Saint Aldegonde during the informal negotiations of the preceding year. An answer was accordingly given, but couched in such vague and general language as to be quite without meaning. The estates then demanded a categorical reply to the two principal demands in the petition, namely, the departure of the foreign troops and the assembling of the states-general. They were asked what they understood by foreigners and by the assembly of states-general. They replied that by foreigners they meant those who were not natives, and particularly the Spaniards. By the estates-general they meant the same body before which, in 1555, Charles had resigned his sovereignty to Philip. The royal commissioners made an ex-

1 Archives et Correspondance, v 73, 74.
3 Resol. Hol., Feb. 5, 6, 7, 1575, bl. 47, 51.
4 Wagenmer, vii. 29.
6 Bor, viii. 597.
receiving permission, for that time only, to convert their property into cash within a certain time, and to depart the country.\footnote{Resol. Holl., Maart 7, 1575, bl. 121, 122, 123, 125. Maart 17, 1576, bl. 125, et seq. Bor, vij. 507, seqq. Wagenaar, vii. 51.}

Orange and the estates made answer on the 21st March. It could not be called hard, they said, to require the withdrawal of the Spanish troops, for this had been granted in 1559, for less imperious reasons. The estates had, indeed, themselves made use of foreigners, but those foreigners had never been allowed to participate in the government. With regard to the assembly of the states-general, that body had always enjoyed the right of advising with the Sovereign on the condition of the country, and on general measures of government. Now it was only thought necessary to summon them, in order that they might give their consent to the King’s “requests.” Touching the delivery of cities and citadels, artillery and ships, the proposition was pronounced to resemble that made by the wolves to the sheep, in the fable—that the dogs should be delivered up, as a preliminary to a lasting peace. It was unreasonable to request the Hollanders to abandon their religion or their country. The reproach of heresy was unjust, for they still held to the Catholic Apostolic Church, wishing only to purify it of its abuses. Moreover, it was certainly more cruel to expel a whole population than to dismiss three or four thousand Spaniards who for seven long years had been eating their fill at the expense of the provinces. It would be impossible for the estates to dispose of their property, for all would, by the proposed measure, be sellers, while there would be no purchasers.\footnote{Resol. Holl., Maart 21, 1575, bl. 106. Bor, viii. 509. Wagenaar, vii. 34-39.}

The royal plenipotentiaries, making answer to this communication upon the 1st of April, signified a willingness that the Spanish soldiers should depart, if the states would consent to disband their own foreign troops. They were likewise in favour of assembling the states-general, but could not permit any change in the religion of the country. His Majesty had sworn to maintain the true worship at the moment of assuming the sovereignty. The dissenters might, however, be allowed a period of six months in which to leave the land, and eight or ten years for the sale of their property. After the heretics had all departed, his Majesty did not doubt that trade and manufactures would flourish again, along with the old religion. As for the Spanish Inquisition, there was not, and there never had been, any intention of establishing it in the Netherlands.\footnote{Resol. Holl., Apr. 1575, bl. 202. Ibid., viii. 902.}

No doubt there was something specious in this paper. It appeared to contain considerable concessions. The Prince and estates had claimed the departure of the Spaniards. It was now promised that they should depart. They had demanded the assembling of the states-general. It was now promised that they should assemble. They had denounced the Inquisition. It was now averred that the Spanish Inquisition was not to be established.

Nevertheless, the commissioners of the Prince were not deceived by such artifices. There was no parity between the cases of the Spanish soldiers and of the troops in service of the estates. To assemble the states-general was idle, if they were to be forbidden the settlement of the great question at issue. With regard to the Spanish Inquisition, it mattered little whether the slaughter-house were called Spanish or Flemish, or simply the Blood-Council. It was, however, necessary for
the states' commissioners to consider their reply very carefully; for the royal plenipotentiaries had placed themselves upon specious grounds. It was not enough to feel that the King's government was paltering with them; it was likewise necessary for the states' agents to impress this fact upon the people.

There was a pause in the deliberations. Meantime, Count Schwartzburg, reluctantly accepting the conviction that the religious question was an insurmountable obstacle to a peace, left the provinces for Germany. The last propositions of the government plenipotentiaries had been discussed in the councils of the various cities, so that the reply of the Prince and estates was delayed until the 1st of June. They admitted, in this communication, that the offer to restore ancient privileges had an agreeable sound; but regretted that if the whole population were to be banished, there would be but few to derive advantage from the restoration. If the King would put an end to religious persecution, he would find as much loyalty in the provinces as his forefathers had found. It was out of the question, they said, for the states to disarm and to deliver up their strong places, before the Spanish soldiery had retired, and before peace had been established. It was their wish to leave the question of religion, together with all other disputed matters, to the decision of the assembly. Were it possible, in the meantime, to devise any effectual method for restraining hostilities, it would gladly be embraced.

On the 8th of July, the royal commissioners inquired what guarantee the states would be willing to give, that the decision of the general assembly, whatever it might be, should be obeyed. The demand was answered by another, in which the King's agents were questioned as to their own guarantees. Hereupon it was stated that his Majesty would give his word and sign manual, together with the word and signature of the Emperor into the bargain. In exchange for these promises, the Prince and estates were expected to give their own oaths and seals, together with a number of hostages. Over and above this, they were requested to deliver up the cities of Brill and Enkhuizen, Flushing and Arnemuyde. The disparity of such guarantees was ridiculous. The royal word, even when strengthened by the imperial promise, and confirmed by the autographs of Philip and Maximilian, was not so solid a security, in the opinion of Netherlanders, as to outweigh four cities in Holland and Zeeland, with all their population and wealth. To give collateral pledges and hostages upon one side, while the King offered none, was to assign a superiority to the royal word over that of the Prince and the estates which there was no disposition to recognise. Moreover, it was very cogently urged that to give up the cities, was to give as security for the contract some of the principal contracting parties.

This closed the negotiations. The provincial plenipotentiaries took their leave by a paper dated 13th July 1575, which recapitulated the main incidents of the conference. They expressed their deep regret that his Majesty should insist so firmly on the banishment of the Reformers, for it was unjust to reserve the provinces to the sole use of a small number of Catholics. They lamented that the proposition which had been made, to refer the religious question to the estates, had neither been loyally accepted nor candidly refused. They inferred, therefore, that the object of the royal government had been to amuse the states, while time was thus gained for reducing the country into a slavery more abject than any which had yet existed. On the other hand,
the royal commissioners as solemnly averred that the whole responsibility for the failure of the negotiations belonged to the estates.\(^1\)

It was the general opinion in the insurgent provinces that the government had been insincere from the beginning, and had neither expected nor desired to conclude a peace. It is probable, however, that Philip was sincere, so far as it could be called sincerity to be willing to conclude a peace, if the provinces would abandon the main objects of the war.\(^2\) With his impoverished exchequer, and ruin threatening his whole empire, if this moral influence should last the object many years longer, he could have no motive for further bloodshed, provided all heretics should consent to abandon the country. As usual, however, he left his agents in the dark as to his real intentions. Even Requesens was as much in doubt as to the King’s secret purposes as Margaret of Parma had ever been in former times.\(^3\) Moreover, the Grand Commander and the government had, after all, made a great mistake in their diplomacy. The estates of Brabant, although strongly desirous that the Spanish troops should be withdrawn, were equally stanch for the maintenance of the Catholic religion, and many of the southern provinces entertained the same sentiments. Had the Governor, therefore, taken the states’ commissioners at their word, and left the decision of the religious question to the general assembly, he might perhaps have found the vote in his favour.\(^4\) In this case, it is certain that the Prince of Orange and his party would have been placed in a very awkward position.\(^5\)

The internal government of the insurgent provinces had remained upon the footing which we have seen established in the autumn of 1574, but in the course of this summer (1575), however, the foundation was laid for the union of Holland and Zeeland, under the authority of Orange. The selfish principle of municipal aristocracy, which had tended to keep apart these various groups of cities, was now repressed by the energy of the Prince and the strong determination of the people.

In April 1575, certain articles of union between Holland and Zeeland were proposed, and six commissioners appointed to draw up an ordinance for the government of the two provinces. This ordinance was accepted in general assembly of both.\(^6\) It was in twenty articles. It declared that, during the war, the Prince, as sovereign, should have absolute power in all matters concerning the defence of the country. He was to appoint military officers, high and low, establish and remove garrisons, punish offenders against the laws of war. He was to regulate the expenditure of all money voted by the estates. He was to maintain the law,

---

\(^1\) Resol. Holl, July 16, 1575, bl. 512. Bor, viii. 612.
\(^2\) See Kuilt. Hist. der Holl. Staatsreg., i. 80, 91, note 54.—Compare the remarks of Groot v. Prinxt. Archives, etc., v. 269–283; Bor, viii. 606, 615; Meteren, v. 100; Hooff, x. 410.—Count John of Nassau was distrustful and disdainful from the beginning.
\(^3\) Against his brother’s loyalty and the straightforward intentions of the estates, he felt that the whole force of the Machiavellian system of policy would be brought to bear with great effect. He felt that the object of the King’s party was to temporise, to confuse, and to deceive. He did not believe them capable of conceding the real object in dispute; but he feared lest they might obscure the judgment of the plain and well-meaning people with whom they had to deal. Alluding to the constant attempts made to poison himself and his brother, he likens the pretended negotiations to Venetian drugs, by which eyesight, hearing, feeling, and intellect were de-troyed. Under this pernicious influence, the luckless people would not perceive the fire burning around them, but would shrivel at a rustling leaf. Not comprehending then the tendency of their own acts, they would “lay bare their own backs to the rod, and bring faggots for their own funeral pile.”—Archives, etc., v. 131–137.
\(^4\) See Wagenae, vii. 52.
\(^5\) Besides the Resolutions of the estates of Holland, already cited, see for the history of these negotiations: Meteren, v. 98–100; Bor, viii. 605–615. Groot v. Prinxt. Archives, v. 69, et seq.; Hooff, x. 400, 411.—Compare Bentivoglio, ib. ix. 157–161; Mondan, xiii. 269, 270.
in the King's name, as Count of Holland, and to appoint all judicial officers upon nominations by the estates. He was, at the usual times, to appoint and renew the magistracies of the cities, according to their constitutions. He was to protect the exercise of the Evangelical Reformed religion, and to suppress the exercise of the Roman religion, without permitting, however, that search should be made into the creed of any person. A deliberative and executive council, by which the jealousy of the corporations had intended to hamper his government, did not come into more than nominal existence.

The articles of union having been agreed upon, the Prince, desiring an unfettered expression of the national will, wished the ordinance to be laid before the people in their primary assemblies. The estates, however, were opposed to this democratic proceeding. They represented that it had been customary to consult, after the city magistracies, only the captains of companies and the deans of guilds on matters of government. The Prince yielding the point, the captains of companies and deans of guilds accordingly alone united with the aristocratic boards in ratifying the instrument by which his authority over the two united provinces was established. On the 4th of June this first union was solemnised.

Upon the 11th of July, the Prince formally accepted the government. He, however, made an essential change in a very important clause of the ordinance. In place of the words, the "Roman religion," he insisted that the words, "religion at variance with the Gospel," should be substituted in the article by which he was enjoined to prohibit the exercise of such religion. This alteration rebuked the bigotry

which had already grown out of the successful resistance to bigotry, and left the door open for a general religious toleration.

Early in this year the Prince had despatched Saint Aldegonde on a private mission to the Elector Palatine. During some of his visits to that potentate he had seen at Heidelberg the Princess Charlotte of Bourbon. That lady was daughter of the Duc de Montpensier, the most ardent of the Catholic Princes of France, and the one who at the conferences of Bayonne had been most indignant at the Queen Dowager's hesitation to unite heartily with the schemes of Alva and Philip for the extermination of the Huguenot. His daughter, a woman of beauty, intelligence, and virtue, forced before the canonical age to take the religious vows, had been placed in the convent of Jôürra, of which she had become Abbess. Always secretly inclined to the Reformed religion, she had fled secretly from her cloister, in the year of horrors 1572, and had found refuge at the court of the Elector Palatine, after which step her father refused to receive her letters, to contribute a farthing to her support, or even to acknowledge her claims upon him by a single line or message of affection.

Under these circumstances the outcast princess, who had arrived at years of maturity, might be considered her own mistress, and she was neither morally nor legally bound, when her hand was sought in marriage by the great champion of the Reformation, to ask the consent of a parent who loathed her religion and denied her existence. The legality of the divorce from Anne of Saxeony had been settled by a full expression of the ecclesiastical authority which she most re-

1 "Ook de oefening der Evangelische Gereformeerde Religie handhaeven, doende de oefeninge dor Romeinsche Religie ophouden." —Resol. Holl., ubi sup.
6 Archives et Correspond., v. 118.
Anne of Saxony. 147

Nevertheless, upon one occasion, at a supper party, she had used such language in the presence of Count Horn and many other nobles, "that all wondered that he could endure the abusive terms which she applied to him." 4

When the clouds gathered about him, when he had become an exile and a wanderer, her reproaches and her violence increased. The sacrifice of their wealth, the mortgages and sales which he effected of his estates, plate, jewels, and furniture, to raise money for the struggling country, excited her bitter resentment. She separated herself from him by degrees, and at last abandoned him altogether. Her temper became violent to ferocity. She beat her servants with her hands and with clubs; she threatened the lives of herself, of her attendants, of Count John of Nassau, with knives and daggers, and indulged in habitual profanity and blasphemy, uttering frightful curses upon all around. Her original tendency to intemperance had so much increased, that she was often unable to stand on her feet. A bottle of wine, holding more than a quart, in the morning, and another in the evening, together with a pound of sugar, was her usual allowance. She addressed letters to Alva, complaining that her husband had impoverished himself "in his good-for-nothing Beggar war," and begging the Duke to furnish her with a little ready money, and with the means of arriving at the possession of her dower. An illicit connexion

1 "Acta de cing Ministres du St Evangile par lequel ils declarent le mariage du Prince d'Orange être legitime."—Archives, etc., v. 718-836.
2 Green v. Prinst., Archives, i. 386.
3 Papires d'Estat, v. 462.
4 Letter to the Elector Augustus.—Green v. Prinst., Archives, ii. 51, 52.
6 "Habe danach das Abend, als sie gahr

und also bewendt gewesen das sie nicht stehen konnten, ein schreibmesserlein in den rechten arm zu sich gestakt, vorhabens Graf Johann wan er zu ihr kumen wehe, solliche in den hals zu stossen — gleichfalls habe sie ein briefescheber bekummen und sollichen, als sie auch etwas zuviel getrunken, zu ihrem haupt ins bett gelegt, etc., etc. — Es las ihr auch die Fr. Princeso oftmals eyer gahr hardt im salzt sieden, darauf, tringet sie dan odtman zuviel und werde ungeldigt, fluche alle boesse fluchte, und werte die speisse und schussel und allem von tisch von sich," etc., etc.—MS., Dresden Archives, dict. act.

"Und die Fr. Princeso, wie es geht, des totes man, namentlich ein guedt flasche weins morgens und abermals ein guedte
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.


2 "Sammelt auch der endlichen mehnung, wann sie also in gehem vorwahret und ein Predicant verordnet, der sie tadel durch ein feisteren do ir die speye und tragack geriet und ihr begegnet mund mit Weise erinnern."-Letter of Elector Augustus to Landgrave Willam, July 9, 1572.-Ms. Dresden Arch. "Ganz gesäubert Guizot.

3 "Deshalb, habe ich auch angeord....-writes Secretary Hans Jenitz imme-
Wrath of Elector and Landgrave.

his forty-second year, and that his fortune was encumbered not only with settlements for his children by previous marriages, but by debts contracted in the cause of his oppressed country. A convention of doctors and bishops of France, summoned by the Duc de Montpensier, afterwards confirmed the opinion that the conventual vows of the Princess Charlotte had been conformable neither to the laws of France nor to the canons of the Trent Council. She was conducted to Brill by Saint Aldegonde, where she was received by her bridegroom, to whom she was united on the 12th of June. The wedding festival was held at Dort with much revelry and holiday-making, "but without dancing." In this connexion, no doubt the Prince consulted his inclination only. Eminently domestic in his habits, he required the relief of companionship at home to the exhausting affairs which made up his life abroad. For years he had never enjoyed social converse, except at long intervals, with man or woman; it was natural, therefore, that he should contract this marriage. It was equally natural that he should make many enemies by so impolitic a match. The Elector Palatine, who was in place of guardian to the bride, decidedly disapproved, although he was suspected of favouring the alliance. The Landgrave of Hesse for a time was furious; the Elector of Saxony absolutely delirious with rage. The Diet of the Empire was to be held within a few weeks at Frankfort, where it was very certain that the outraged and influential Elector would make his appearance, overflowing with anger, and determined to revenge upon the cause of the Netherland Reformation the injury which he had personally received. Even the wise, considerate, affectionate brother, John of Nassau, considered the marriage an act of madness. He did what he could, by argu-

1. Memoire pour le Comte de Hohenlo allant de la part du Prince d’Orange vers le Comte J. de Nassau, l’Elector Palatin, et son épouse, Mil. de Bourbon.”—Arch. etc., v. 185—192.
3. Archives et Correspondance, v. 300.  
4. Ibid.  
5. Ibid., v. 303, 304.

ment and entreaty, to dissuade the Prince from its completion; although he afterwards voluntarily confessed that the Princess Charlotte had been deeply calumniated, and was an inestimable treasure to his brother. The French Government made use of the circumstance to justify itself in a still further alienation from the cause of the Prince than it had hitherto manifested, but this was rather pretence than reality.

It was not in the nature of things, however, that the Saxon and Hessian indignation could be easily allayed. The Landgrave was extremely violent. “Truly, I cannot imagine,” he wrote to the Elector of Saxony, “que consti tol that wiseacre of an Aldegonde, and whosever else has been aiding and abetting, have undertaken this affair. Nam si pietatem respicias, it is to be feared that, considering she is a Frenchwoman, a nun, and moreover a fugitive nun, about whose chastity there has been considerable question, the Prince has got out of the frying-pan into the fire. Si formam it is not to be supposed that it was her beauty which charmed him, since, without doubt, he must be rather frightened than delighted, when he looks upon her. Si spem proles, the Prince has certainly only too many heirs already, and ought to wish that he had neither wife nor children. Si amicitiam, it is not to be supposed, while her father expresses himself in such threatening language with regard to her, that there will be much cordiality of friendship on his part. Let them look to it, then, lest it fare with them no better than with the Admiral, at his Paris wedding; for those gentlemen can hardly forgive such injuries, sine mercurio et arsenico sublimato.”

The Elector of Saxony was frantic with choler, and almost ludicrous in the vehemence of its expression. Count John was unceasing in his exhortations to his brother to respect the sensitive-
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1375.

In the northern quarter, Diedrich Steen, governor of that portion of Holland, a man of great bravery but of extreme ferocity of character, had discovered an extensive conspiracy among certain of the inhabitants, in aid of an approaching Spanish invasion. Bands of land-tuopers had been sent out, according to the intimation which he had received, or affected to have received, to set fire to villages and towns in every direction, to set up revolts, and to conduct a series of intrigues by which the expeditions about to be organised were to be furthered in their object. The Governor, determined to show that the Duke of Alva could not be more prompt nor more active than himself, improvised, with the authority of a tribunal in imitation of the infamous Blood-Council, a tribunal for the character of the province. Steen was not a Hollander, nor was the installation of this newly established court allowed to extend beyond very narrow limits. Eight suspects were, however, arrested and intent to torture the most brutal in order to extort from them scenes implicating persons of higher position in the land than themselves. Seven, after a few turns of the plunger and the screw, confessed all which they were expected to confess, and trusted all which they were required to recite. The eighth was never subjected to torture and refused to testify to the names of certain respectable householders, whose names he had, perhaps, heard, and against whom there was no evidence of evidence. He was never subjected to three hours and a half of torture to confess, merely according to their orders, so that the scene and evidence were turned against certain influential gentlemen of the province, whose names was a secret adherence to Protestantism.

For only such who had been the victims of unconditional surrender, and by savage
torture on the other, to bear this false witness, were condemned to be burned alive, and on their way to the stake they all retracted the statements which had only been extorted from them by the rack. Nevertheless, the individuals who had been thus designated were arrested. Charged with plotting a general conflagration of the villages and farm-houses, in conjunction with an invasion by Hungers and other Papist generals, they indignantly protested their innocence; but two of them, a certain Kopp Cornelissen, and his son, Nanning Koppesson, were selected to undergo the most cruel torture which had yet been practised in the Netherlands. 1 Sonoy, to his eternal shame, was disposed to prove that human ingenuity to inflict human misery had not been exhausted in the chambers of the Blood-Council, for it was to be shown that Reformers were capable of giving a lesson even to inquisitors in this diabolical science. Kopp, a man advanced in years, was tortured during a whole day. On the following morning he was again brought to the rack, but the old man was too weak to endure all the agony which his tormentors had provided for him. Hardly had he been placed upon the bed of torture than he calmly expired, to the great indignation of the tribunal. 2 "The devil has broken his neck, and carried him off to hell," cried they, ferociously. "Nevertheless, that shall not prevent him from being hung and quartered." This decree of impotent vengeance was accordingly executed. 3 The son of Kopp, however, Nanning Koppesson, was a man in the full vigour of his years. He bore with perfect fortitude a series of incredible tortures, after which, with his body singed from head to heel, and his feet almost entirely flayed, he was left for six weeks to crawl about his dungeon on his knees. He was then brought back to the torture-room, and again stretched upon the rack, while a large earthen vessel, made for the purpose, was placed, inverted, upon his naked body. A number of rats were introduced under this cover, and hot coals were heaped upon the vessel, till the rats, rendered furious by the heat, gnawed into the very bowels of the victim, in their agony to escape. 4 The holes thus torn in his bleeding flesh were filled with red-hot coals. He was afterwards subjected to other tortures too foul to relate; nor was it till he had endured all this agony, with a fortitude which seemed supernatural, that he was at last discovered to be human. Scorched, bitten, dislocated in every joint, sleepless, starving, perishing with thirst, he was at last crushed into a false confession by a promise of absolute forgiveness. He admitted everything which was brought to his charge, confessing a catalogue of contemplated burnings and beacon firings of which he had never dreamed, and avowing himself in league with other desperate Papists, still more dangerous than himself.

Notwithstanding the promises of pardon, Nanning was then condemned to death. The sentence ordained that his heart should be torn from his living bosom, and thrown in his face, after which his head was to be taken off and exposed on the church steeple of his native village. His body was then to be cut in four, and a quarter fastened upon different towers of the city of Alkmaar, for it was that city,

---

1 Bor, viii. 626, seq. Hooff, x. 413, seq.
2 Ibid., viii. 627, 628. Ibid., x. 413.
3 Hoofl, x. 413.
4 Bor (viii. 628) conscientiously furnishes diagrams of the machinery by aid of which this devilish cruelty was inflicted. The rats were sent by the Governor himself.—Vide Letter of the Commissioners to Sonoy, apud Bor, viii. 640, 941. The whole letter is a wonderful monument of barbarity. The inhuman torture to which the poor creatures had been subjected are detailed in a business-like manner, as though the transcen-
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

recently so famous for its heroic resistance to the Spanish army, which was now sullied by all this cold-blooded atrocity. When led to execution, the victim recanted indignantly the confessions forced from him by weakness of body, and exonerated the persons whom he had falsely accused. A certain clergyman, named Jurian Espesoon, endeavoured by loud praying to drown his voice, that the people might not rise with indignation, and the dying prisoner with his last breath solemnly summoned this unworthy pastor of Christ to meet him within three days before the judgment-seat of God. It is a remarkable and authentic fact, that the clergyman thus summoned, went home pensively from the place of execution, sickened immediately, and died upon the appointed day. 1

Notwithstanding this solemn recantation, the persons accused were arrested, and in their turn subjected to torture, but the affair now reached the ears of Orange. His peremptory orders, with the universal excitement produced in the neighbourhood, at last checked the course of the outrage, and the accused persons were remanded to prison, where they remained till liberated by the Pacification of Ghent. After their release they commenced legal proceedings against Sonoy, with a view of establishing their own innocence, and of bringing the inhuman functionary to justice. The process languished, however, and was finally abandoned, for the powerful Governor had rendered such eminent service in the cause of liberty, that it was thought unwise to push him to extremity. It is no impeachment upon the character of the Prince that these horrible crimes were not prevented. It was impossible for him to be omnipresent. Neither is it just to consider the tortures and death thus inflicted upon innocent men an indelible stain upon the cause of liberty. They were the crimes of an individual who had been useful, but who, like the Count De la Marck, had now contaminated his hand with the blood of the guiltless. The new tribunal never took root, and was abolished as soon as its initiatory horrors were known. 2

On the 19th of July, Oudewater, entirely unprepared for such an event, was besieged by Hierges, but the garrison and the population, although weak, were brave. The town resisted eighteen days, and on the 7th of August was carried by assault, after which the usual horrors were fully practised, after which the garrison was put to the sword, and the town's people fared little better. Men, women, and children were murdered in cold blood, or obliged to purchase their lives by heavy ransoms, while matrons and maids were sold by auction to the soldiers at two or three dollars each. 4 Almost every house in the city was burned to the ground, and these horrible but very customary scenes having been enacted, the army of Hierges took its way to Schoonhoven. That city, not defending itself, secured tolerable terms of capitulation, and surrendered on the 24th of August. 5

The Grand Commander had not yet given up the hope of naval assistance from Spain, notwithstanding the abrupt termination to the last expedition which had been organised. It was, however, necessary that a foothold should be recovered upon the seashore, before a descent from without could be met with proper co-operation from the land forces within, and he was most anxious, therefore, to effect the reconquest of some portion of Zeeland. The island of Tholen was still Spanish, and had been so since the memorable expedition of Mondragon to South Beveland. From this interior portion of the archipelago the Governor now determined to attempt an expedition against the outer and more important territory. The three principal islands were Tholen, Duiveland, and Schouwen. Tholen

---

2 Bor, viii. 623-641. Hooff, x. 415-419.
3 Bor, viii. 646. Meteren, v. 100.
4 Ibid., viii. 646. Hooff, x. 424, 425.
5 Ibid., viii. 447. Meteren, v. 100.
was the first which detached itself from the continent. Next, and separated from it by a bay two leagues in width, was Duiveland, or the Isle of Doves. Beyond, and parted by a narrower frith, was Schouwen, fronting directly upon the ocean, fortified by its strong capital city, Zierickzee, and containing other villages of inferior consequence. Requesens had been long revolving in his mind the means of possessing himself of this important island. He had caused to be constructed a numerous armada of boats and light vessels of various dimensions, and he now came to Tholen to organise the expedition. His prospects were at first not flattering, for the gulfs and estuaries swarmed with Zealander vessels, manned by crews celebrated for their skill and audacity. Traitors, however, from Zealand itself now came forward to teach the Spanish Commander how to strike at the heart of their own country. These refugees explained to Requesens that a narrow flat extended under the sea from Philipsland, a small and uninhabited islet situated close to Tholen, as far as the shore of Duiveland. Upon this submerged tongue of land, the water, during ebb-tide, was sufficiently shallow to be waded, and it would therefore be possible for a determined band, under cover of the night, to make the perilous passage. Once arrived at Duiveland, they could more easily cross the intervening creek to Schouwen, which was not so deep and only half as wide, so that a force thus sent through these dangerous shallows, might take possession of Duiveland and lay siege to Zierickzee, in the very teeth of the Zealander fleet, which would be unable to sail near enough to intercept their passage. The Commander determined that the enterprise should be attempted. It was not a novelty, because Mondragon, as we have seen, had already most brilliantly conducted a very similar expedition. The present was, however, a much more daring scheme. The other exploit, although sufficiently hazardous, and entirely successful, had been a victory gained over the sea alone. It had been a surprise, and had been effected without any opposition from human enemies. Here, however, they were to deal, not only with the ocean and darkness, but with a watchful and determined foe. The Zealanders were aware that the enterprise was in contemplation, and their vessels lay about the contiguous waters in considerable force. Nevertheless, the determination of the Grand Commander was hailed with enthusiasm by his troops. Having satisfied himself by personal experiment that the enterprise was possible, and that therefore his brave soldiers could accomplish it, he decided that the glory of the achievement should be fairly shared, as before, among the different nations which served the King.

After completing his preparations, Requesens came to Tholen, at which rendezvous were assembled three thousand infantry, partly Spaniards, partly Germans, partly Walloons. Besides these, a picked corps of two hundred sappers and miners was to accompany the expedition, in order that no time might be lost in fortifying themselves as soon as they had seized possession of Schouwen. Four hundred mounted troopers were, moreover, stationed in the town of Tholen, while the little fleet, which had been prepared at Antwerp, lay near that city ready to cooperate with the land force as soon as they should complete their enterprise. The Grand Commander now divided the whole force into two parts. One half was to remain in the boats, under the command of Mondragon; the other half, accompanied by the two hundred pioneers, were to wade through the sea from Philipsland to Duiveland and Schouwen. Each soldier of this detachment was provided with a pair of shoes, two pounds of powder, and rations for three days in a canvas bag.


suspended at his neck. The leader of this expedition was Don Osorio d'Ulloa, an officer distinguished for his experience and bravery.1

On the night selected for the enterprise, that of the 27th September, the moon was a day old in its fourth quarter, and rose a little before twelve. It was low water at between four and five in the morning. The Grand Com- mander, at the appointed hour of midnight, crossed to Philipsland, and stood on the shore to watch the setting forth of the little army. He addressed a short harangue to them, in which he skilfully struck the chords of Spanish chivalry and the national love of glory,2 and was answered with loud and enthusiastic cheers. Don Osorio d'Ulloa then stripped and plunged into the sea immediately after the guides. He was followed by the Spaniards, after whom came the Germans and then the Walloons. The two hundred sappers and miners came next, and Don Gabriel Peralta, with his Spanish company, brought up the rear. It was a wild night. Incessant lightning alternately revealed and obscured the progress of the midnight march through the black waters, as the anxious Commander watched the expedition from the shore, but the soldiers were quickly swallowed up in the gloom.3 As they advanced cautiously, two by two, the daring adventurers found themselves soon nearly up to their necks in the waves, while so narrow was the submerged bank along which they were marching, that a misstep to the right or left was fatal. Luckless individuals repeatedly sank to rise no more. Meanwhile, as the sickly light of the waning moon came forth at intervals through the stormy clouds, the soldiers could plainly perceive the files of Zeeland vessels through which they were to march, and which were anchored as close to the flat as the water would allow. Some had recklessly stranded themselves, in their eagerness to interrupt the passage of the troops, and the artillery played unceasingly from the larger vessels. Discharges of musketry came continually from all, but the fitful lightning rendered the aim difficult and the fire comparatively harmless,4 while the Spaniards were, moreover, protected, as to a large part of their bodies, by the water in which they were immersed.

At times, they halted for breath, or to engage in fierce skirmishes with their nearest assailants. Standing breast-high in the waves, and surrounded at intervals by total darkness, they were yet able to pour an occasional well-directed volley into the hostile ranks. The Zeelander, however, did not assail them with fire-arms alone. They transfixed some with their fatal harpoons; they dragged others from the path with boat-hooks; they beat out the brains of others with heavy flails.5 Many were the mortal duels thus fought in the darkness, and, as it were, in the bottom of the sea; many were the deeds of audacity which no eye was to mark save those by whom they were achieved. Still, in spite of all impediments and losses, the Spaniards steadily advanced. If other arms proved less available, they were attacked by the fierce taunts and invectives of their often invisible foes, who reviled them as water-dogs, fetching and carrying for a master who despised them; as mercenaries, who coined their

1 Bentivoglio, ix. 166. Hooff, x. 427, 428.
Mendoza, xiv. 283
3 Bor, viii. 648-650 Hooff, x. 428. Bentivoglio, ix. 167.—According to Mendoza, the sky was full of supernatural appearances on that memorable night; literally, "The exhalations whis-thing through the air."
4 Gave so much light that one might read by them."
5 "No bastara a nemid di travagliarti solamente co i moschetti, e con gli archibugli, ma piu d'approgriss con uneli di ferro, con legui maneggiabili a molti doppii, e con altai istromenti," etc.—Bentivoglio, ix. 167.
"Llegavan a herir finuestros con unos instrumentos de lamanera que nos con que bataren el trigo para sacar al grano de la paja."—Mendoza, xiv. 255.
blood for gold, and were employed by tyrants for the basest uses. If stung by these mocking voices, they turned in the darkness to chastise their unseen tormentors, they were certain to be trampled upon by their comrades, and to be pushed from their narrow pathway into the depths of the sea. Thus many perished.

The night wore on, and the adventurers still fought it out manfully, but very slowly, the main body of Spaniards, Germans, and Walloons, soon after daylight, reaching the opposite shore, having sustained considerable losses, but in perfect order. The pioneers were not so fortunate. The tide rose over them before they could effect their passage, and swept nearly every one away. 1 The rear-guard, under Peralta, not surprised, like the pioneers, in the middle of their passage, by the rising tide, but prevented, before it was too late, from advancing far beyond the shore from which they had departed, were fortunately enabled to retrace their steps. 2

Don Osorio, at the head of the successful adventurers, now effected his landing upon Duiveland. Reposing themselves but for an instant after this unparalleled march through the water, of more than six hours, they took a slight refreshment, prayed to the Virgin Mary and to Saint James, and then prepared to meet their new enemies on land. Ten companies of French, Scotch, and English auxiliaries lay in Duiveland, under the command of Charles Van Boisot. Strange to relate, by an inexplicable accident, or by treason, that general was slain by his own soldiers, at the moment when the royal troops landed. The panic created by this event became intense, as the enemy rose suddenly, as it were, out of the depths of the ocean to attack them. They magnified the numbers of their assailants, and fled terror-stricken in every direction. Some swam to the Zealand vessels which lay in the neighbourhood; others took refuge in the forts which had been constructed on the island, but these were soon carried by the Spaniards, and the conquest of Duiveland was effected. 3

The enterprise was not yet completed, but the remainder was less difficult and not nearly so hazardous, for the creek which separated Duiveland from Schouwen was much narrower than the estuary which they had just traversed. It was less than a league in width, but so encompassed by rushes and briars that, although difficult to wade, it was not navigable for vessels of any kind. 4 This part of the expedition was accomplished with equal resolution, so that, after a few hours' delay, the soldiers stood upon the much-coveted island of Schouwen. Five companies of states' troops, placed to oppose their landing, fled in the most cowardly manner at the first discharge of the Spanish muskets, 5 and took refuge in the city of Zierickzee, which was soon afterwards beleaguered.

The troops had been disembarked upon Duiveland from the armada, which had made its way to the scene of action, after having received, by signal, information that the expedition through the water had been successful. Brouwershaven, on the northern side of Schouwen, was immediately reduced, but Bommende resisted till the 25th of October, when it was at last carried by assault, and delivered over to fire and sword. Of the whole population and garrison not twenty were left alive. Siege was then laid to Zierickzee, and Colonel Mondragon derailed good service to the cause of his country, and was Governor of Walcheren at the time of his death.—Archives et Correspondances, t. v. 233.

1 Hoefüld, x. 429.—“Donde vaya malaventurado, que as hacen ser perros de agua,” etc., etc.—Mendoza, ut sup. Bentivoglio, t. 163. Hoefüld, x. 429. Mendoza, xiv. 283. 2 Mendoza, xiv. 285. Bentivoglio, Hoefüld, Bor, ut sup. 3 Hoefüld, x. 429. Bor. viii. 649. Mendoza, xiv. 286.—The officer, whose career was thus unhappily closed, was a brother of the famous Admiral Boisot, had himself cau-
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

Walcheren and the rest of Zealnd were again interrupted; the province cut in two; a foothold on the ocean, for a brief interval at least, acquired by Spain. The Prince was inexpressibly chagrined by these circumstances, and felt that the moment had arrived when all honourable means were to be employed to obtain foreign assistance. The Hollanders and Zealanders had fought the battles of freedom alone hitherto, and had fought them well, but poverty was fast rendering them incapable of sustaining much longer the unequal conflict. Offers of men, whose wages the states were to furnish, were refused, as worse than fruitless. Henry of Navarre, who perhaps deemed it possible to acquire the sovereignty of the province by a barren benefit, was urged to send to, or three thousand men to fight at his own expense. The states were respectively distrustful. The Prince and his little court were in Visby. Even if we were at liberty to insert a word in the midst of the world's great events, we should but say, to the same effect as before, that the army had received the consent of the states, and had been appointed, however, to serve for six weeks only, and was designed to be the last, being placed...
that it had been retained with no disloyal intent. The time, however, had come when it was necessary to throw off allegiance, provided another could be found strong enough and frank enough to accept the authority which Philip had forfeited. The question was, naturally, between France and England, unless the provinces could effect their re-admission into the body of the Germanic Empire. Already in June the Prince had laid the proposition formally before the states, "whether they should not negotiate with the Empire on the subject of their admission, with maintenance of their own constitutions;" but it was understood that this plan was not to be carried out, if the protection of the Empire could be obtained under easier conditions.

Nothing came of the proposition at that time. The nobles and the deputies of South Holland now voted, in the beginning of the ensuing month, "that it was their duty to abandon the King, as a tyrant who sought to oppress and destroy his subjects, and that it behoved them to seek another protector." This was while the Breda negotiations were still pending, but when their inevitable result was very visible. There was still a reluctance at taking the last and decisive step in the rebellion, so that the semblance of loyalty was still retained—that ancient scabbard, in which the sword might yet one day be sheathed. The proposition was not adopted at the diet. A committee of nine was merely appointed to deliberate with the Prince upon the "means of obtaining foreign assistance, without accepting foreign authority, or severing their connexion with his Majesty." The estates were, however, summoned a few months later, by the Prince, to deliberate on this important matter at Rotterdam. On the 1st of October he then formally proposed, either to make terms with their enemy, and that the sooner the better, or else, once for all, to separate entirely from the King of Spain, and to change their sovereign, in order, with the assistance and under protection of another Christian potentate, to maintain the provinces against their enemies. Orange, moreover, expressed the opinion, that upon so important a subject it was decidedly incumbent upon them all to take the sense of the city governments. The members for the various municipalities acquiesced in the propriety of this suggestion, and resolved to consult their constituents, while the deputies of the nobility also desired to consult with their whole body. After an adjournment of a few days, the diet again assembled at Delft, and it was then unanimously resolved by the nobles and the cities, "that they would forsake the King, and seek foreign assistance, referring the choice to the Prince, who, in regard to the government, was to take the opinion of the estates."

Thus, the great step was taken, by which two little provinces declared themselves independent of their ancient master. That declaration, although taken in the midst of doubt and darkness, was not destined to be cancelled, and the germ of a new and powerful commonwealth was planted. So little, however, did these republican fathers foresee their coming republic, that the resolution to renounce one king was combined with a proposition to ask for the authority of another. It was not imagined that those two slender columns, which were all that had yet been raised of the future stately edifice, would be strong enough to stand alone. The question now arose, to what foreign power application should be made. But little hope was to be entertained from Germany, a state which existed only in name, and France was still in a condition of religious and intestine discord. The attitude of revolt maintained by the

---

1 See the remarks of Groot v. Prinsterer on a passage in a letter of the Council of State to Requesens — Archives, etc., v. 273. See also the letter in Bor, viii. 615.


The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

Rogers secretly to the Prince. At the same time she had sent an envoy to the Grand Commander, counselling conciliatory measures, and promising to send a special mission to Spain with the offer of her mediation; but it was suspected by those most in the confidence of the Spanish government at Brussels, that there was a great deal of deception in these proceedings. A truce for six months having now been established between the Duc d’Alençon and his brother, it was supposed, that an alliance between France and England, and perhaps between Alençon and Elizabeth, was on the carpet, and that a kingdom of the Netherlands was to be the wedding present of the bride to her husband. These fantasies derived additional colour from the fact, that, while the Queen was expressing the most amiable intentions towards Spain, and the greatest jealousy of France, the English residents at Antwerp and other cities of the Netherlands had received private instructions not to use their property as fast as they could; under pretence of the country.

In the event there was little prospect of substance from the Queen.

Events were Adverse to the English, and Saint Vernon the mission at Paris. They were established at Antwerp, and the result was that they stated in their residences in Antwerp that assurances of safe conduct presented by the British government, were difficult to obtain, even in the case of persons of rank.
the states, the sovereignty over Holland and Zeeland, under certain conditions.  

The Queen listened graciously to the envoys, and appointed commissioners to treat with them on the subject. Meantime, Recqueyes sent Champgney to England, to counteract the effect of this embassy of the estates, and to beg the Queen to give no heed to the prayers of the rebels, to enter into no negotiations with them, and to expel them at once from her kingdom.

The Queen gravely assured Champgney "that the envoys were no rebels, but faithful subjects of his Majesty." There was certainly some effrontery in such a statement, considering the solemn offer which had just been made by the envoys. If to renounce allegiance to Philip and to propose the sovereignty to Elizabeth did not constitute rebellion, it would be difficult to define or to discover rebellion anywhere. The statement was as honest, however, as the diplomatic grimmace with which Champgney had reminded Elizabeth of the ancient and unbroken friendship which had always existed between herself and his Catholic Majesty. The attempt of Philip to procure her dethronement and assassination but a few years before was, no doubt, thought too trifling a circumstance to have for a moment interrupted those harmonious relations. Nothing came of the negotiations on either side. The Queen coquetted, as was her custom. She could not accept the offer of the estates; she could not say them nay. She would not offend Philip; she would not abandon the provinces; she would therefore negotiate—thus there was an infinite deal of diplomatic nothing spun and unravelled, but the result was both to abandon the provinces and to offend Philip.

In the first answer given by her commissioners to the states' envoys, it was declared, "that her Majesty considered it too expensive to assume the protection of both provinces. She was willing to protect them in name, but she should confer the advantage exclusively on Walcheren in reality. The defence of Holland must be maintained at the expense of the Prince and the estates."

This was certainly not munificent, and the envoys insisted upon more ample and liberal terms. The Queen declined, however, committing herself beyond this meagrely and inadmissible offer. The states were not willing to exchange the sovereignty over their country for so paltry a concession. The Queen declared herself indisposed to go further, at least before consulting Parliament. The commissioners waited for the assembling of Parliament. She then refused to lay the matter before that body, and forbade the Hollanders taking any steps for that purpose. It was evident that she was disposed to trifle with the provinces, and had no idea of encountering the open hostility of Philip. The envoys accordingly begged for their passports. These were granted in April 1576, with the assurance on the part of her Majesty, that "she would think more of the offer made to her after she had done all in her power to bring about an arrangement between the provinces and Philip."

After the result of the negotiations of Bresl, it is difficult to imagine what method she was likely to devise for accomplishing such a purpose. The King was not more disposed than during the preceding summer to grant liberty of religion, nor were the Hollanders more ready than they had been before to renounce either their faith or their fatherland. The envoys, on parting, made a strenuous effort to negotiate a loan, but the frugal Queen considered the proposition quite inadmissible. She granted them liberty to purchase arms and ammunition, and to levy a few soldiers with their own money, and this was accordingly done to a limited extent. As it was not
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1576.]

difficult to have soldiers or to buy gun-powder. From, where, in that warlike age, 
paid the money were ready, the states had hardly reason to consider 
themselves under deep obligation for 
the concession. Yet this was the 
whole result of the embassy. Plenty 
of fine words had been bestowed, 
which might or might not have meaning, according to the turns taken by 
peace events. Besides these cheap 
and empty compliments, they received per-
mission to abdicate Holland at their 
own expense, with the privilege of sur-
real honors, sovereignty if they liked, 
to John II, and this was all.

On the 16th of April, the envoys 
arrived at their country, and this 
forced the states to accept the 
request of the ambassador. Very soon 
thereafter the news of the great 
success of the Dutch was known in 
England, and the English Senate 
ordered that the money was to be paid 
the Dutch in a short time. This 
decision was made on the 1st of May, which had been 
the date of the treaty at Worms in 
order to know the state of affairs 
before the money was paid. In 
short, the Dutch were free to 
accept the money or not, and 
the English were ready to pay 
the money. The situation was 
very favorable to the Dutch, who 
cried the Grand Commander, on 
receiving such vehement reproaches in- 
stead of his money; "may the Lord 
deliver me from these estates!"2

Meantime, the important siege of 
Zierickze continued, and it was evi-
dent that the city must fall. There 
was no money at the disposal of the 
Princed. Count John, who was seri-
ously embarrassed by reason of the 
great obligations in money which he 
had incurred on behalf of the estates, had 
recently made application to the Prince 
for his influence towards procuring 
him relief. He had forwarded an 
account of the great advances made 
by himself and his brethren in money, 
plate, furniture, and endorsements of 
vouchers, for which a partial re-
bursement was almost indispensable 
to save him from serious difficulties.4

The Prince, however, unable to pro-
cure him any assistance, had been 
forced once more to entreat him to 
dispose of the generosity and the self-
lessness which the country had never 
known wanting in his hands or at those 
of his kindred. The appeal had not 
been in vain; but the Count was ob-
viously not in a condition to effect 
anything more at that moment to 
decover the imminent distress of the 
states. The exasperation wascrippled.4

In vain and in vain were such attempts 
in the occupation of Schoonhoven and 
the approaching fall of the capital 
from the hands of the English, Prince, at reduced 
ascent in their hands to 
save the city. The times of war 
were past, and the Dutch and the 
Dutch were not supporters of 
war. Peace and peace was the 
order of the day.
The Prince had long brooded over the scheme, and the hour seemed to have struck for its fulfilment. His project was to collect all the vessels, of every description, which could be obtained throughout the Netherlands. The whole population of the two provinces, men, women, and children, together with all the moveable property of the country, were then to be embarked on board this numerous fleet, and to seek a new home beyond the seas. The windmills were then to be burned, the dykes pierced, the sluices opened in every direction, and the country restored for ever to the ocean, from which it had sprung.  

It is difficult to say whether the resolution, if Providence had permitted its fulfilment, would have been, on the whole, better or worse for humanity and civilization. The ships which would have borne the heroic Prince and his fortunes might have taken the direction of the newly-discovered Western hemispheres. A religious colony, planted by a commercial and liberty-loving race, in a virgin soil, and directed by patrician but self-denying hands, might have preceded, by half a century, the colony which a kindred race, impelled by similar motives, and under somewhat similar circumstances and conditions, was destined to plant upon the stern shores of New England. Had they directed their course to the warm and fragrant islands of the East, an independent Christian commonwealth might have arisen among those proliic regions, superior in importance to any subsequent colony of Holland, cramped from its birth by absolute subjection to a far distant metropolis.

The unexpected death of Requesens suddenly dispelled these schemes. The

1 For relates that this plan had been definitely formed by the Prince. His authority is "a credible gentleman of quality" (een geloofwaardig edelmann van qualiteit) who, at the time, was a member of the estates and government of Holland.—viii. 664. Green v. Frieswater, however, rejects the tale as fabulous; or believes, at any rate, that the personage alluded to by For took the Prince's words too literally. It is probable that the thought was often in the Prince's mind, and found occasional expres-

sion, although it had never been actually reduced to a scheme. It is difficult to see that it was not consistent with his character, supposing that there had been no longer any room for hope. Hooff (x. 438) adopts the story without hesitation. Wagenaer (vii. 88, 89) alludes to it as a matter of current report.—Compare Van Wyn op Wagen. vii. 23-35.

The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

The Blood Council had been retained throughout his administration, but its occupation was gone, for want of food for its necessity. The obedient provinces had been purged of Protestants; while supplied, too, by confiscation, they offered no field for further extortion. From Holland and Zealand, where Catholics had been nearly expelled, the king of Spain was nearly excluded also. The Blood Council, which set up in that country, would have executed every living person of its population, could only have been a distance at those who would have been executed. Requesens had been very much distinguished in his youth, when the Grand Council of the Spanish Cortes, under the name of a New Spain, was formed, and he was soon to succeed every Governor in the Netherlands. For the present he had been a spectator of the transaction, which was now our duty to describe.
government. Of the old board, there were none left but the Duke of Aerschot, Count Berlaymont, and Viglius. To these were soon added, however, by royal diploma, the Spaniard, Jerome de Roda, and the Netherlanders, Assenauville, Baron Rassenghiem and Arnold Sasbout. Thus all the members, save one, of what had now become the executive body, were natives of the country. Roda was accordingly looked askance upon by his colleagues. He was regarded by Viglius as a man who desired to repeat the part which had been played by Juan Vargas in the Blood-Council, while the other members, although stanch Catholics, were all of them well-disposed to vindicate the claim of Netherland nobles to a share in the government of the Netherlands.

For a time, therefore, the transfer of authority seemed to have been smoothly accomplished. The Council of State conducted the administration of the country. Peter Ernest Mansfeld was entrusted with the supreme military command, including the government of Brussels; and the Spanish commanders, although dissatisfied that any but a Spaniard should be thus honoured, were for a time quiescent.¹ When the news reached Madrid, Philip was extremely disconcerted. The death of Requesens raised his indignation. He was angry with him, not for dying, but for dying so very inconvenient a moment. He had not yet fully decided either upon his successor, or upon the policy to be enforced by his successor. There were several candidates for the vacant post; there was a variety of opinions in the cabinet as to the course of conduct to be adopted.² In the impossibility of instantly making up his mind upon this unexpected emergency, Philip fell, as it were, into a long reverie, than which nothing could be more inopportune. With a country in a state of revolution and exasperation, the trance, which now seemed to come over the government, was like to be followed by deadly effects. The stationary policy, which the death of Requesens had occasioned, was allowed to prolong itself indefinitely,³ and almost for the first time in his life, Joachim Hopper was really consulted about the affairs of that department over which he imagined himself, and was generally supposed by others, to preside at Madrid. The creature of Viglius, having all the subserviency, with none of the acuteness of his patron, he had been long employed as chief of the Netherland bureau, while kept in profound ignorance of the affairs which were transacted in his office. He was a privy-councillor whose counsels were never heeded, a confidential servant in whom the King reposed confidence only on the ground that no man could reveal secrets which he did not know. This department of the King's showed that he had accurately measured the man, for Hopper was hardly competent for the place of a chief clerk. He was unable to write clearly in any language, because incapable of a fully developed thought upon any subject. It may be supposed that nothing but an abortive policy, therefore, would be produced upon the occasion thus suddenly offered. "'Tis a devout man, that poor Master Hopper," said Granvelle, "but rather fitted for platonic researches than for affairs of state."⁴

It was a proof of this incompetency, that now, when really called upon for advice in an emergency, he should recommend a continuance of the interim. Certainly nothing worse could be devised. Granvelle recommended a re-appointment of the Duchess Margaret.⁵ Others suggested Duke Eric of Brunswick, or an Archduke of the

¹ Bor, Meteor, ubi sup. Vigl. Epist. Select. ad Diversos, No. 172, p. 402. Vigl. Epist., ubi sup. Hood, xi, 438. Bor, ix, 622. Wagenmer (vii, 91), however, states that Mansfeld was entrusted simply with the government of Brussels, and that it is an error to describe him as invested with the supreme military command.
² Letter of Philip (March 24, 1576) to states-general, in Bor, ix, 933.
⁴ Archives et Correspondance, v, 574.
⁵ MS, cited by Green v. Prinat, p, 352.
Austrian house; although the opinion held by most of the influential counsellors was in favour of Don John of Austria. In the interests of Philip and his despotism, nothing, at any rate, could be more fatal than delay. In the condition of affairs which then existed, the worst or feeblest governor would have been better than none at all. To leave a vacancy was to play directly into the hands of Orange, for it was impossible that so skilful an adversary should not at once perceive the fault, and profit by it to the utmost. It was strange that Philip did not see the danger of inactivity at such a crisis. Assuredly, indulgence was never his vice, but on this occasion inaction did the work of indulgence. Unwittingly, the despot was assisting the efforts of the liberator. Vigilus saw the position of matters with his customary keenness, and wondered at the blindness of Hopper and Philip. At the last gasp of a life, which neither learning nor the accumulation of worldly prizes and worldly pelf could redeem from intrinsic baseness, the sanguine but not venerable old man saw that a chasm was daily widening, in which the religion and the despotism which he loved might soon be hopelessly swallowed. "The Prince of Orange and his Beggars do not sleep," he cried, almost in anguish; "nor will they be quiet till they have made use of this interregnum to do us some immense grievance."  

Certainly the Prince of Orange did not sleep upon this nor any other great occasion of his life. In his own vigorous language, used to stimulate his friends in various parts of the country, he seized the swift occasion by the forelock. He opened a fresh correspondence with many leading gentlemen in Brussels and other places in the Netherlands; persons of influence, who now, for the first time, showed a disposition to side with their country against its tyrants. Hitherto the land had been divided into two very unequal portions. Holland and Zealand were devoted to the Prince; their whole population, with hardly an individual exception, converted to the Reformed religion. The other fifteen provinces were, on the whole, loyal to the King; while the old religion had, of late years, taken root so rapidly again, that perhaps a moiety of their population might be considered as Catholic. At the same time, the reign of terror under Alva, the paler, but not less distinct tyranny of Requesens, and the intolerable excesses of the foreign soldiery, by which the government of foreigners was supported, had at last maddened all the inhabitants of the seventeen provinces. Notwithstanding, therefore, the fatal divergence of religious opinion, they were all drawn into closer relations with each other; to regain their ancient privileges, and to expel the detested foreigners from the soil, being objects common to all. The provinces were united in one great intrepid and one great hope.

The Hollander and Zealanders, under their heroic leader, had well-nigh accomplished both tasks, so far as those little provinces were concerned. Never had a contest, however, seemed more hopeless at its commencement. Cast a glance at the map. Look at Holland—not the Republic, with its sister provinces beyond the Zuyder Zee—but Holland only, with the Zealand archipelago. Look at that narrow tongue of half-submerged earth. Who could suppose that upon that slender sand-bank, one hundred and twenty miles in length, and varying in breadth from four miles to forty, one man, backed by the population of a handful of cities, could do battle nine years long with the master of two worlds, the "Dominator of Asia, Africa, quessanum.—Cabrera, Vita de Filippe II., xi. 845.
and America"—the despot of the fairest realms of Europe—and conquer him at last. Nor was William even entirely master of that narrow shoal where clung the survivors of a great national shipwreck. North and South Holland were cut in two by the loss of Harlem, while the enemy was in possession of the natural capital of the little country, Amsterdam. The Prince affirmed that the cause had suffered more from the disloyalty of Amsterdam than from all the efforts of the enemy.

Moreover, the country was in a most desolate condition. It was almost literally a sinking ship. The destruction of the bulwarks against the ocean had been so extensive, in consequence of the voluntary inundations which have been described in previous pages, and by reason of the general neglect which more vital occupations had necessitated, that an enormous outlay, both of labour and money, was now indispensable to save the physical existence of the country. The labour and the money, notwithstanding the crippled and impoverished condition of the nation, were, however, freely contributed; a wonderful example of energy and patient heroism was again exhibited. The dykes which had been swept away in every direction were renewed at a vast expense. Moreover, the country, in the course of recent events, had become almost swept bare of its cattle, and it was necessary to pass a law forbidding, for a considerable period, the slaughter of any animals, "oxen, cows, calves, sheep, or poultry." It was, unfortunately, not possible to provide by law against that extermination of the human population which had been decreed by Philip and the Pope.

Such was the physical and moral condition of the provinces of Holland and Zealand. The political constitution of both assumed, at this epoch, a somewhat altered aspect. The union between the two states, effected in June 1575, required improvement. The administration of justice, the conflicts of laws, and more particularly the levying of moneys and troops in equitable proportions, had not been adjusted with perfect smoothness. The estates of the two provinces, assembled in congress at Delft, concluded, therefore, a new act of union, which was duly signed upon the 25th of April 1576. Those estates, consisting of the knights and nobles of Holland, with the deputies from the cities and countships of Holland and Zealand, had been duly summoned by the Prince of Orange. They, as fairly included all the political capacities, and furnished as copious a representation of the national will, as could be expected; for it is apparent, upon every page of his history, that the Prince, upon all occasions, chose to refer his policy to the approval and confirmation of as large a portion of the people as any man in those days considered capable or desirous of exercising political functions.

The new union consisted of eighteen articles. It was established that duties from all the estates should meet, when summoned by the Prince of Orange or otherwise, on penalty of fine, and at the risk of measures binding upon them being passed by the rest of the Congress. Freshly arising causes of litigation were to be referred to the Prince. Free intercourse and traffic through the united provinces was guaranteed. The confederates were mutually to assist each other in preventing all injustice, wrong, or violence, even towards an enemy. The authority of law and the pure administration of justice were mutually promised by the contracting states. The common expenses were to be apportioned among the different provinces, "as if they were all included in the republic of a single city." Nine commissioners, appointed by the Prince on nomination by the estates, were to sit permanently,

1 The work was, however, not fairly taken in hand until the spring of 1577. Wagenaer, vol. 155, seqq. Bor, x. 819.
4 Bor, ix. 668. Wagenaer, viii. 93. Kluit, i. 115, seqq.
5 Art. 3. The document is given in full by Bor, ix. 698, seqq.
6 Article 4.
7 Ibid. 5, "Hoeval ook wijand."—Article 7.
8 Article 7.
9 Ibid. 10.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1576.]

...ever, not to permit that inquisition should be made into any man's belief or conscience, or that any man by cause thereof should suffer trouble, injury, or hindrance. 10

The league thus concluded was a confederation between a group of virtually independent little republics. Each municipality was, as it were, a little sovereign, sending envoys to a congress to vote and to sign as plenipotentiaries. The vote of each city was, therefore, indivisible, and it mattered little, practically, whether there were one deputy or several. The nobles represented not only their own order, but were supposed to act also in behalf of the rural population. On the whole, there was a tolerably fair representation of the whole nation. The people were well and worthily represented in the government of each city, and therefore equally so in the assembly of the estates. 11 It was not till later that the corporations, by the extinction of the popular element, and by the usurpation of the right of self-election, were thoroughly stiffened into fictitious personages which never died, and which were never thoroughly alive.

At this epoch the provincial liberties, so far as they could maintain themselves against Spanish despotism, were practical and substantial. The government was a representative one, 12 in which all those who had the inclination possessed, in one mode or another, a voice. Although the various members of the confederacy were locally and practically republics, or self-governed little commonwealths, the general government which they established was, in form, monarchical. The powers conferred upon Orange constituted him a sovereign ad interim, and while the authority of the Spanish monarch remained suspended, the Prince was invested, not only with the whole executive and appointing

1 Arm. 153.
2 Ibid. 126.
3 Status Upsala, etc., ii. 446.
4 Karsten, loc. cit., p. 64.
5 Kuyper, loc. cit., p. 64.
6 Kuyper, loc. cit., p. 64.
7 Kuyper, loc. cit., p. 64.
8 Kuyper, loc. cit., p. 64.
9 Arm. 153.
10 Ibid. 126.
11 Status Upsala, etc., ii. 446.
12 Kuyper, loc. cit., p. 64.
power, but even with a very large share in the legislative functions of the state. 2

The whole system was rather practical than theoretical, without any accurate distribution of political powers. In living, energetic communities, where the blood of the body politic circulates swiftly, there is an inevitable tendency of the different organs to sympathise and commingle more closely than a priori philosophy would allow. It is usually more desirable than practicable to keep the executive, legislative, and judicial departments entirely independent of each other. 3

Certainly, the Prince of Orange did not at that moment indulge in speculations concerning the nature and origin of government. The Congress of Delft had just clothed him with almost regal authority. In his hands were the powers of war and peace, joint control of the magistracies and courts of justice, absolute supremacy over the army and the fleets. It is true that these attributes had been conferred upon him ad interim, but it depended only upon himself to make the sovereignty personal and permanent. 4 He was so thoroughly absorbed in his work, however, that he did not even see the diadem which he put aside. It was small matter to him whether they called him stadholder or guardian, prince or king. He was the father of his country and its defender. The people, from highest to lowest, called him "Father William," and the title was enough for him. The question with him was, not what men should call him, but how he should best accomplish his task.

So little was he inspired by the sentiment of self-elevation, that he was anxiously seeking for a fitting person—strong, wise, and willing enough—to exercise the sovereignty which was thrust upon himself, but which he desired to exchange against an increased power to be actively useful to his country. To expel the foreign oppressor—to strangle the Inquisition—to maintain the ancient liberties of the nation—here was labour enough for his own hands. The vulgar thought of carving a throne out of the misfortunes of his country seems not to have entered his mind. Upon one point, however, the Prince had been peremptory. He would have no persecution of the opposite creed. He was requested to suppress the Catholic religion, in terms. As we have seen, he caused the expression to be exchanged for the words, "religion at variance with the Gospel." He resolutely stood out against all meddling with men's consciences, or inquiring into their thoughts. While smiting the Spanish Inquisition into the dust, he would have no Calvinist inquisition set up in its place. Earnestly a convert to the Reformed religion, but hating and denouncing only what was corrupt in the ancient Church, he would not force men, with fire and sword, to travel to heaven upon his own road. Thought should be toll-free. Neither monk nor minister should burn, drown, or hang his fellow-creatures, when argument or expostulation failed to redeem them from error. It was no small virtue in that age to rise to such a height. We know what Calvinists, Zwinglians, Lutherans, have done in the Netherlands, in Germany, in Switzerland, and almost a century later in New England. It is, therefore, with increased veneration that we regard this large and truly catholic mind. His tolerance proceeded from no indifference. No man can read his private writings, or form a thorough acquaintance with his interior life, without recognising him as a deeply religious man. He had faith unaltering in God. He had also faith in man, and love for his brethren. It was no wonder that in that age of religious bigotry he should have been assaulted on both sides. While the Pope excommunicated him as a heretic, and the King set a price upon his head as a rebel, the fanatics of the new

1 Kuit, 1. 125.
2 Compare Gueiset, du Système Representatif, t. 1.
religion denounced him as a godless man. Peter Dathenus, the unrobed monk of Popperingen, shrieked out in his pulpit that the "Prince of Orange cared nothing either for God or for religion." 1

The death of Rucquesens had offered the first opening through which the watchful Prince could hope to inflict a wound in the vital part of Spanish authority in the Netherlands. The language of Philip, and the procrastinating counsel of the dull Hopper, unexpectedly widened the opening. On the 24th of March, letters were written by his Majesty to the states-general, to the provincial estates, and to the courts of justice, instructing them that, until further orders, they were all to obey the Council of State. The King was confident that all would do their utmost to assist that body in securing the holy Catholic Faith, and the implicit obedience of the country to its sovereign. He would, in the meantime, occupy himself with the selection of a new Governor-General, who should be of his family and blood. This uncertain and perilous condition of things was watched with painful interest in neighbouring countries.

The fate of all nations was more or less involved in the development of the great religious contest now raging in the Netherlands. England and France watched each other's movements in the direction of the provinces with intense jealousy. The Protestant Queen was the natural ally of the struggling Reformers, but her despotic sentiments were adverse to the fostering of rebellion against the Lord's anointed. The thrifty Queen looked with alarm at the prospect of large subsidies which would undoubtedly be demanded of her. The jealous Queen could as ill brook the presence of the French in the Netherlands as that of the Spaniards whom they were to expel. She therefore embarrassed, as usual, the operations of the Prince by a course of stale political coquetry.

She wrote to him, on the 18th of March, soon after the news of the Grand Commander's death, 2 saying that she could not yet accept the offer which had been made to her, to take the provinces of Holland and Zeeland under her safe keeping; to assume, as Countess, the sovereignty over them; and to protect the inhabitants against the alleged tyranny of the King of Spain. She was unwilling to do so until she had made every effort to reconcile them with that sovereign. Before the death of Rucquesens she had been intending to send him an envoy, proposing a truce, for the purpose of negotiation. This purpose she still retained. She should send commissioners to the Council of State and to the new Governor, when he should arrive. She should also send a special envoy to the King of Spain. She doubted not that the King would take her advice, when he heard her speak in such straightforward language. In the meantime, she hoped that they would negotiate with no other powers. 3

This was not very satisfactory. The Queen rejected the offers to herself, but begged that they might by no means be made to her rivals. The expressed intention of softening the heart of Philip by the use of straightforward language seemed but a sorry sarcasm. It was hardly worth while to wait long for so improbable a result. Thus much for England at that juncture. Not imminent, certainly; but over-cautious, ungenerous, teasing, and perplexing, was the policy of the maiden Queen. With regard to France, events there seemed to favour the hopes of Orange. On the 14th of May, the "Peace of Monsieur," the treaty by which so ample but so short-lived a triumph was achieved by the Huguenots, was signed at Paris. 4 Everything was conceded, but nothing was secured. Rights of worship, rights of office, political and civil, religious enfranchisement, were recovered, but not guaranteed. 5 It seemed scarcely

1 Brantl, Hist. der Ref., t. 1. b. 11. 667.
2 De Thou, ii, 1. lxii. 618.
possible that the King could be in earnest then, even if a Medicinal Valois could ever be otherwise than treacherous. It was almost certain, therefore, that a reaction would take place; but it is easier for us, three centuries after the event, to mark the precise moment of reaction, than it was for the most far-seeing contemporary to foretell how soon it would occur. In the meantime, it was the Prince’s cue to make use of this sunshine while it lasted. Already, so soon as the union of 25th of April had been concluded between Holland and Zealand, he had forced the estates to open negotiations with France.1 The provinces, although desirous to confer sovereignty upon him, were indisposed to renounce their old allegiance to their King in order to place it at the disposal of a foreigner. Nevertheless, a resolution, at the reiterated demands of Orange, was passed by the estates, to proceed to the change of master, and, for that purpose, to treat with the King of France, his brother, or any other foreign potentate, who would receive these provinces of Holland and Zealand under his government and protection.2 Negotiations were accordingly opened with the Duke of Anjou, the dilettante leader of the Huguenots at that remarkable juncture. It was a pity that no better champion could be looked for among the anointed of the earth than the false, fickle, foolish Alençon, whose career, everywhere contemptible, was nowhere so flagitious as in the Netherlands. By the fourteenth article of the Peace of Paris, the Prince was reinstated and secured in his principality of Orange, and his other possessions in France.3 The best feeling, for the time being, was manifested between the French court and the Reformation.4 Thus much for England and France.

As for Germany, the prospects of the Netherlands were not flattering. The Reforming spirit had grown languid from various causes. The self-seeking motives of many Protestant princes had disgusted the nobles. Was that the object of the bloody wars of religion, that a few potentates should be enabled to enrich themselves by confiscating the broad lands and accumulated treasures of the Church? Had the creed of Luther been embraced only for such unworthy ends? These suspicions chilled the ardour of thousands, particularly among the greater ones of the land. Moreover, the discord among the Reformers themselves waxed daily, and became more and more mischievous. Neither the people nor their leaders could learn that, not a new doctrine, but a wise toleration for all Christian doctrines, was wanted. Of new doctrines there was no lack. Lutherans, Calvinists, Faccianists, Majorists, Adiaphorists, Brantianists, Ubi-quitists, swarmed and contended pell-mell.5 In this there would have been small harm, if the Reformers had known what reformation meant. But they could not invent or imagine toleration. All claimed the privilege of persecuting. There were sagacious and honest men among the great ones of the country, but they were but few. Wise William of Hesse strove hard to effect a concordia among the jarring sects; Count John of Nassau, though a passionate Calvinist, did no less; while the Elector of Saxony, on the other hand, raging and roaring like a bull of Bashan, was for sacrificing the interest of millions on the altar of his personal spite. Cursed was his tribe if he forgave the Prince. He had done what he could at the Diet of Ratisbon to exclude all Calvinists from a participation in the religious peace of Germany,6 and he redoubled his efforts to prevent the extension of any benefits to the Calvinists of the Netherlands. These determinations had remained constant and intense.

---

2 Ibid., Ibid. Bor, ix. 684.
4 See in particular a letter of Count John of Nassau to the Prince of Orange, dated Dillenburg, May 9, 1679. Archives de la Maison d’Orange, v. 360-368.
5 Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., v. 229, 320.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

in the great work which he was doing; besides these numerous avocations, he was actively and anxiously engaged during the spring of 1576, with the attempt to relieve the city of Zierickze.

That important place, the capital of Schouwen, and the key to half Zealand, had remained closely invested since the memorable expedition to Duiveland. The Prince had passed much of his time in the neighbourhood, during the month of May, in order to attend personally to the contemplated relief, and to correspond daily with the beleaguered garrison.

At last, on the 25th of May, a vigorous effort was made to throw in succour by sea. The brave Admiral Boisot, hero of the memorable relief of Leyden, had charge of the expedition. Mondragon had surrounded the shallow harbour with hulks and chains, and with a loose submerged dyke of piles and rubbish. Against this obstacle Boisot drove his ship, the Red Lion, with its customary audacity, but did not succeed in cutting it through. His vessel, the largest of the fleet, became entangled: he was, at the same time, attacked from a distance by the besiegers. The tide ebbed, and left his ship aground, while the other vessels had been beaten back by the enemy. Night approached, and there was no possibility of accomplishing the enterprise. His ship was hopelessly stranded. With the morning's sun his captivity was certain. Rather than fall into the hands of his enemy, he jumped into the sea, followed by three hundred of his companions, some of whom were fortunate enough to effect their escape. The gallant Admiral swam a long time, sustained by a broken oar. Night and darkness came on before assistance could be rendered, and he perished.

Thus died Louis Boisot, one of the most enterprising of the early champions of
Netherland freedom—one of the bravest precursors of that race of heroes, the commanders of the Holland navy. The Prince deplored his loss deeply as that of a "valiant gentleman, and one well affectioned to the common cause." His brother, Charles Boisot, as will be remembered, had perished by treachery at the first landing of the Spanish troops, after their perilous passage from Duiveland. Thus both the brethren had laid down their lives for their country, on this its outer barrier, and in the hour of its utmost need. The fall of the beleaguered town could no longer be deferred. The Spaniards were, at last, to receive the prize of that romantic valour which had led them across the bottom of the sea to attack the city. Nearly nine months had, however, elapsed since that achievement, and the Grand Commander, by whose orders it had been undertaken, had been four months in his grave. He was permitted to see neither the long-delayed success which crowned the enterprise, nor the procession of disasters and crimes which were to mark it as most fatal success.

On the 21st of June 1576, Zierickzoe, instructed by the Prince of Orange to accept honourable terms, if offered, agreed to surrender. Mondragon, whose soldiers were in a state of suffering, and ready to break out in mutiny, was too happy to grant an honourable capitulation. The garrison were allowed to go out with their arms and personal baggage. The citizens were permitted to retain or resume their privileges and charters, on payment of two hundred thousand guilders. Of sacking and burning there was, on this occasion, fortunately, no question; but the first half of the commutation money was to be paid in cash. There was but little money in the impoverished little town, but mint masters were appointed by the magistrates to take their seats at once in the Hotel de Ville. The citizens brought their spoons and silver dishes, one after another, which were melted and coined into dollars and half-dollars, until the payment was satisfactorily adjusted. Thus fell Zierickzoe, to the deep regret of the Prince. "Had we received the least succor in the world from any side," he wrote, "the poor city should never have fallen. I could get nothing from France or England, with all my efforts. Nevertheless, we do not lose courage, but hope that, although abandoned by all the world, the Lord God will extend His right hand over us." The enemies were not destined to go further. From their own hand now came the blow which was to expel them from the soil which they had so long polluted. No sooner was Zierickzoe captured than a mutiny broke forth among several companies of Spaniards and Walloons, belonging to the army in Schouwen. A large number of the most influential officers had gone to Brussels, to make arrangements, if possible, for the payment of the troops. In their absence there was more scope for the arguments of the leading mutineers;—arguments, assuredly, not entirely destitute of justice or logical precision. If ever labourers were worthy of their hire, certainly it was the Spanish soldiers. Had they not done the work of demons for nine years long? Could Philip or Alva have found in the wide world men to execute their decrees with more unhesitating docility, with more sympathising eagerness? What obstacle had ever given them pause in their career of duty? What element had they not braved? Had not they fought within the bowels of the earth, beneath the depths of the sea, within blazing cities, and upon fields of ice? Where was the work which had been too dark and bloody for their performance? Had they not slaughtered unarmed human beings by townfuls, at the word of command? Had they not eaten the

---

1 Archives, etc. v. 307.  
The mutineers, however, were bent on the overthrow of their masters. They stored up their riches under their command and then proceeded to attack the city, setting fire to it and plundering it. The citizens were taken by surprise and were unable to resist. The mutineers then proceeded to the adjacent towns and defeated the soldiers sent to oppose them. They thus gained control of the region and established their authority.

The mutineers were not satisfied with their immediate success. They continued to attack the city and the countryside, spreading恐慌 and disorder. The people were in a state of fear and desperation, knowing that their livelihoods were at stake.

The mutineers' victory was short-lived, however. The Count of Mansfeld, who had been called upon to quell the rebellion, arrived with a strong force and quickly regained control. The mutineers were defeated and many of them were captured or killed. The Count then proceeded to deal harshly with those who had participated in the rebellion, including their leaders.

The mutineers' rebellion was a warning to the rulers of the time of the dangers of discontent and the need to address the grievances of the people. It also served as a reminder of the importance of maintaining order and stability in times of political upheaval.

1. Department of State, Reports on Foreign Affairs, 1576.
2. Stadholder, Raddings, xi. 844.
3. Cabrera, xi. 848, sqq.
the success of the commander-in-chief was no better than that of Mondragon and his subalterns. They laughed him to scorn when he reminded them how their conduct was tarnishing the glory which they had acquired by nine years of heroism. They answered, with their former cynicism, that glory could be put neither into pocket nor stomach. They had no use for it; they had more than enough of it. Give them money, or give them a city; these were their last terms.

Sorrowfully and bodingly Mansfeld withdrew to consult again with the State Council. The mutineers then made a demonstration upon Mechlin, but that city having fortunately strengthened its garrison, was allowed to escape. They then hovered for a time outside the walls of Brussels. At Grimbergen, where they paused for a short period, they held a parley with Captain Montesdocras, whom they received with fair words and specious pretences. He returned to Brussels with the favourable tidings, and the mutineers swarmed off to Assebe. Thither Montesdocras was again despatched, with the expectation that he would be able to bring them to terms, but they drove him off with jeers and threats, finding that he brought neither money nor the mortgage of a populous city. The next day, after a feint or two in a different direction, they made a sudden swoop upon Alost, in Flanders. Here they had at last made their choice, and the town was carried by storm. All the inhabitants who opposed them were butchered, and the mutiny, at last established in a capital, was able to treat with the State Council upon equal terms. They were now between two and three thousand strong, disciplined, veteran troops, posted in a strong and wealthy city. One hundred parishes belonged to the jurisdiction of Alost, all of which were immediately laid under contribution.

The excitement was now intense in Brussels. Anxiety and alarm had given place to rage, and the whole population rose in arms to defend the capital, which was felt to be in imminent danger. This spontaneous courage of the burghers prevented the catastrophe, which was reserved for a sister city. Meanwhile, the indignation and horror excited by the mutiny were so universal that the Council of State could not withstand the pressure. Even the women and children demanded daily in the streets that the rebel soldiers should be declared outlaws. On the 28th of July, accordingly, the King of Spain was made to pronounce his Spaniards traitors and murderers. All men were enjoined to slain one of all of them, wherever they should be found; to refuse them bread, water, and fire, and to assemble at sound of bell, in every city, whenever the magistrates should order an assault upon them. A still more stringent edict was issued on the 2d of August, and so eagerly had these decrees been expected, that they were published throughout Flanders and Brabant almost as soon as issued. Hitherto the leading officers of the Spanish army had kept aloof from the insurgents, and frowned upon their proceedings. The Spanish member of the State Council, Jerome de Roda, had joined without opposition in the edict. As, however, the mutiny gathered strength on the outside, the indignation waxed daily within the capital. The citizens of Brussels, one and all, stood to their arms. Not a man could enter or leave without their permission. The Spaniards who were in the town, whether soldiers or merchants, were regarded with suspicion and abhorrence. The leading Spanish officers, Romero, Montesdocras, Verdugo, and others, who had attempted to quell the mutiny, had been driven off with threats and curses, their soldiers defying them and brandishing their swords in their very faces. On the other hand, they were looked upon with ill-will by the Netherlands. The most prominent Span-
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

servant personages in Brussels were kept in a state of imprisonment.\footnote{\textit{Bor}, ix. 692, 693. \textit{Cabrera}, xi. 849. \textit{Hooft}, x. 445.} Ro-
meno, Roda, Verdugo, were believed to favour at heart the cause of their rebellious troops, and the burghers of Brabant had come to consider all the King's army in a state of rebellion. Believing the State Council powerless to protect them from the impending storm, they regarded that body with little respect, keeping it, as it were, in durance, while the Spaniards were afraid to walk the streets of Brussels for fear of being murdered. A retainer of Roda, who had ventured to defend the character and conduct of his master before a number of excited citizens, was slain on the spot.\footnote{\textit{Bor}, ix. 693. \textit{Meteren}, vi. 106.}

In Antwerp, Champagny, brother of Granvelle, and governor of the city, was disposed to cultivate friendly relations with the Prince of Orange. Champagny hated the Spaniards, and the hatred seemed to establish enough of sympathy between himself and the liberal party to authorise confidence in him. The Prince dealt with him, but regarded him warily.\footnote{Archives de la Maison d'Orange, v. 487, 488. \textit{Cabrera}, xi. 563. "Pero el Champ-aigny estaba convenido con los Estados y con lo Pr-}

In the citadel, however, matters were very threatening. Sancho d'Avila, the governor, although he had not openly joined the revolt, treated the edict of outlawry against the rebellious soldiery with derision. He refused to publish a decree which he proclaimed infamous, and which had been extorted, in his opinion, from an impotent and trembling council.\footnote{Ibid., 694, sqq. \textit{Hooft}, x. 447, sqq.} Even Champagny had not desired or dared to publish the edict within the city. The reasons alleged were his fears of irritating and alarming the foreign merchants, whose position was so critical and friendship so important at that moment.\footnote{\textit{Bor}, ix. 694.} On the other hand, it was loudly and joyfully published in most other towns of Flanders and Brabant. In Brussels there were two parties: one holding the decree too audacious for his Majesty to pardon; the other clamouring for its instantaneous fulfilment. By far the larger and more influential portion of the population favoured the measure, and wished the sentence of outlawry and extermination to be extended at once against all Spaniards and other foreigners in the service of the King. It seemed imprudent to wait until all the regiments had formally accepted the mutiny, and concentrated themselves into a single body.\footnote{\textit{Bor}, ix. 704.}

At this juncture, on the last day of July, the Marquis of Havre, brother to the Duke of Aerschot, arrived out of Spain.\footnote{\textit{Mendoza}, xv. 301. \textit{Cabrera}, xi. 849.} He was charged by the King with conciliatory but unmeaning phrases to the estates. The occasion was not a happy one. There never was a time when direct and vigorous action had been more necessary. It was probably the King's desire then, as much as it ever had been his desire at all, to make up the quarrel with his provinces. He had been wearied with the policy which Alva had enforced, and for which he endeavoured at that period to make the Duke appear responsible. The barren clemency which the Grand Commander had been instructed to affect, had deceived but few persons, and had produced but small results. The King was, perhaps, really inclined at this juncture to exercise clemency—that is to say, he was willing to pardon his people for having contended for their rights, provided they were now willing to resign them for ever. So the Catholic religion and his own authority were exclusively and inviolably secured, he was willing to receive his disobedient
provinces into favour. To accomplish this end, however, he had still no more fortunate conception than to take the advice of Hopper. A soothing procrastination was the anodyne selected for the bitter pangs of the body politic—a vague expression of royal benignity the styptic to be applied to its mortal wounds. An interval of hesitation was to bridge over the chasm between the provinces and their distant metropolis. "The Marquis of Havré has been sent," said the King, "that he may expressly witness to you of our good intentions, and of our desire, with the grace of God, to bring about a pacification." Alas, it was well known whence those pavements of good intentions had been taken, and whither they would lead. They were not the material for a substantial road to reconciliation. "His Majesty," said the Marquis, on delivering his report to the State Council, "has long been pondering over all things necessary to the peace of the land. His Majesty, like a very gracious and bountiful Prince, has ever been disposed, in times past, to treat these his subjects, by the best and sweetest means.\footnote{See the letter, in Bor, ix. 704.} There being, however, room for an opinion that so bountiful a prince might have discovered sweeter means, by all this pondering, than to burn and gibbet his subjects by thousands, it was thought proper to insinuate that his orders had been hitherto misunderstood. Alva and Requesens had been unfaithful agents, who did not know their business, but it was to be set right in future. "As the good-will and meaning of his Majesty has by no means been followed," continued the envoy, "his Majesty has determined to send Councillor Hopper, keeper of the privy seal, and myself, hitherto, to execute the resolutions of his Majesty."\footnote{Report of Marquis of Havré, in Bor, ix. 704.} Two such personages as poor, plodding, confused, timeserving Hopper, and flighty, talkative Havré, whom even Requesens despised, and whom Don John, while shortly afterwards recommending him for a state councillor, characterised to Philip as "a very great scoundrel,"\footnote{ibid.} would hardly be able, even if royally empowered, to undo the work of two preceding administrations. Moreover, Councillor Hopper, on further thoughts, was not despatched at all to the Netherlands.

The provinces were, however, assured by the King's letters to the Brabant estates, to the State Council, and other public bodies, as well as by the report of the Marquis, that efficacious remedies were preparing in Madrid. The people were only to wait patiently till they should arrive.\footnote{Report of Marquis Havré, etc., Bor, ix. 705.} The public had heard before of these nostrums, made up by the royal prescriptions in Spain; and were not likely to accept them as a panacea for their present complicated disorders. Never, in truth, had conventional commonplace been applied more unseasonably. Here was a general military mutiny flaming in the very centre of the land. Here had the intense hatred of race, which for years had been growing at the heart of the country, at last broken out into most malignant manifestation. Here was nearly the whole native population of every province, from grand seigneur to plebeian, from Catholic prelate to Anabaptist artisan, exasperated alike by the excesses of six thousand foreign brigands, and united by a common hatred into a band of brethren. Here was a State Council too feeble to exercise the authority which it had arrogated, trembling between the wrath of its sovereign, the menacing cries of the Brussels burgheers, and the wild threats of the rebellious army, and held virtually captive in the capital which it was supposed to govern.

Certainly, the confirmation of the Council in its authority, for an indefinite, even if for a brief period, was a most unlucky step at this juncture.
There were two parties in the provinces, but one was far the most powerful—a great majority were in favor of a declaration of outlawry against the whole army, and it was thought desirable to improve the opportunity by getting rid of them altogether. If the people could rise en masse, now that the royal government was in abeyance, and, as it were, in the nation's lands, the insurrection might be cast off forever. If any of the Spanish officers had been sincere in their efforts to arrest the mutiny, the sincerity was not observed. If any of the foreign regiments of the King appeared to hesitate at joining the Altos crew, the hesitation was felt to be temporary. Meanwhile, the important German regiments of Fugger, Fronenberger, and Pulverill, with their colonels and other officers, had openly joined the rebellion, while there was no doubt of the sentiments of Sancho d'Avila and the troops under his command. Thus there were two great rallying-places for the sedition, and the most important fortress of the country, the key which unlocked the richest city in the world, was in the hands of the mutineers. The commercial capital of Europe, filled to the brim with accumulated treasures, and with the merchandise of every clime, lay at the feet of this desperate band of brigands. The horrible result was not too soon to be made manifest.

Meanwhile, in Brussels, the few Spaniards trembled for their lives. The few officers shut up there were in imminent danger. "As the devil does not cease to do his work," wrote Colonel Verdugo, "he has put it into the heads of the Brabanters to rebel, taking for a pretext the mutiny of the Spaniards. The Brussels men have handled their weapons so well against those who were placed there to protect them, that they have begun to kill the Spaniards, threatening likewise the Council of State. Such is their in-

1 Dorn, ix. 711, 712. Hooft, x. 448.
2 Milder, vi. 107. Mendoza, xv. 303, sqq.
3 Colman, xi. 349, sqq.
4 This letter of Verdugo to his Lieutenant.
claimed to embody the whole Council. He caused a new seal to be struck—a proceeding very unreasonably charged as forgery by the provincials—and forthwith began to thunder forth proclamations and counter-proclamations in the King’s name and under the royal seal. It is difficult to see any technical crime or mistake in such a course. As a Spaniard, and a representative of his Majesty, he could hardly be expected to take any other view of his duty. At any rate, being called upon to choose between rebellious Netherlanders and mutinous Spaniards, he was not long in making up his mind.

By the beginning of September the mutiny was general. All the Spanish army, from general to pioneer, were united. The most important German troops had taken side with them. Sancho d’Avila held the citadel of Antwerp, vowing vengeance, and holding open communication with the soldiers at Alost. The Council of State remonstrated with him for his disloyalty. He replied by referring to his long years of service, and by reproving them for obstructing an authority which their imprisonment rendered ridiculous. The Spaniards were securely established. The various citadels which had been built by Charles and Philip to curb the country now effectually did their work. With the castles of Antwerp, Valenciennes, Ghent, Utrecht, Culembourg, Viane, Alost, in the hands of six thousand veteran Spaniards, the country seemed chained in every limb. The foreigner’s foot was on its neck. Brussels was almost the only considerable town out of Holland and Zeeland which was even temporarily safe. The important city of Maastricht was held by a Spanish garrison, while other capital towns and stations were in the power of the Walloon and German mutineers. The depredations committed in the villages, the open country, and the cities, were incessant—the Spaniards treating every Netherlander as their foe. Gentleman and peasant, Protestant and Catholic, priest and layman, all were plundered, maltreated, outraged. The indignation became daily more general and more intense. There were frequent skirmishes between the soldiery and miscellaneous bands of peasants, citizens, and students; conflicts in which the Spaniards were invariably victorious. What could such half-trained and wholly untrained partisans effect against the bravest and most experienced troops in the whole world? Such results only increased the general exasperation, while they impressed upon the whole people the necessity of some great and general effort to throw off the incubus.

CHAPTER V.

Religious and political sympathies and antipathies in the seventeen provinces—Unanimous hatred for the foreign soldiery—Use made by the Prince of the mutiny—His correspondence—Necessity of Union enforced—A congress from nearly all the provinces meets at Ghent—Skirmishes between the foreign troops and partisan bands—Slaughter at Temaeq—Suspicious entreated of the State-Council—Arrest of the State-Council—Siege of Ghent citadel—Assistance sent by Orange—Maastricht lost and regained—Wealthy and perilous condition of Antwerp—Preparations of the mutineers under the secret superintendence of Avila—Stupidity of Oberstein—Duplicity of Don Sancho—Reinforcements of Walloons under Havré, Egmont, and others, sent to Antwerp—Governor Champagney’s preparations for the expected assault of the mutineers—Insobriation, incapacity, and negligence of all but him—Concentration of all the mutineers from different points, in the citadel—The attack, the panic, the flight, the massacre, the fire, the sack, and other details of the “Spanish Fury”—Statistics of murder and robbery—Letter of Orange to the States-general—Surrender of Ghent citadel—Conclusion of the “Ghent Pacification”—The treaty characterised—Forms of ratification—Fall of Eierickzee and recovery of Zeeland.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

Meanwhile, the Prince of Orange sat at Middelburg, watching the storm. The position of Holland and Zeeland, with regard to the other fifteen provinces, was distinctly characterized. Upon certain points there was an absolute sympathy; while upon others there was a grave and almost fatal difference. It was the task of the Prince to deepen the sympathy, to strengthen the difference.

In Holland and Zeeland there was a warm and nearly universal adherence to the Reformed religion, a passive submission to the ancient political forms, the Peace, although an agreement of the-mainland provinces, the growing sense of foreign danger, the internal disorder; everywhere, where these estates had not been absolutely prohibited, the subscription to the general subscription, the universal petition, was written in the blood and the heart. More, indeed, was expected from Holland and Zeeland; all that might make resistance more difficult and the effects of the work of destruction more speedy. It was believed, and with reason, that there was a disposition on the part of the Reformers to destroy it, root and branch. It was suspected that the same engine of persecution would be employed in its extirpation, should the opposite party gain the supremacy, which the Papists had so long employed against the converts to the new religion.

As to political convictions, the fifteen provinces differed much less from their two sisters. There was a strong attachment to their old constitutions—a general inclination to make use of the present crisis to effect their restoration. At the same time, it had not come to be the general conviction, as in Holland and Zeeland, that the maintenance of these liberties was incompatible with the continuance of Philip's authority. There was, moreover, a strong ultra-party faction which was not disposed to take a liberal view of government in general, and regarded with alarm the simultaneous advance of personal notions and a national state. Still there was, in the whole, the elements of a strong ultra-party, as in the three provinces. The

However, the more the storm was their The
these were the great objects to which
the Prince now devoted himself with
renewed energy.
To bring about a general organisation
and a general union, much delicacy of handling was necessary. The
sentiment of extreme Catholicism and
Monarchism was not to be suddenly
scared into opposition. The Prince,
therefore, in all his addresses and
documents was careful to disclaim any
intention of disturbing the established
religion, or of making any rash politi-
cal changes. "Let no man think," said he to the authorities of Brabant,
"that, against the will of the estates,
we desire to bring about any change
in religion. Let no one suspect us
capable of prejudicing the rights of
any man. We have long since taken
up arms to maintain a legal and con-
stitutional freedom, founded upon law.
God forbid that we should now at-
tempt to introduce novelties, by
which the face of liberty should be
defiled." 1

In a brief and very spirited letter to
Count Lalain, a Catholic and a loyalist,
but a friend of his country and fer-
vant hater of foreign oppression, he
thus appealed to his sense of chivalry
and justice: "Although the honour-
able house from which you spring," he
said, "and the virtue and courage of
your ancestors, have always impressed
me with the conviction that you would
follow in their footsteps, yet am I glad
to have received proofs that my anticipa-
tions were correct. I cannot help,
therefore, entreating you to maintain
the same high heart, and to accomplish
that which you have so worthily begun.
Be not deluded by false masks, mum-
mimg faces, and borrowed titles, which
people assume for their own profit,
persuading others that the King's ser-
vice consists in the destruction of his
subjects." 2

While thus careful to offend no
man's religious convictions, to startle
no man's loyalty, he made skilful use
of the general indignation felt at the

1 Letter to States of Brabant, in Bor, ix.
695.
2 The letter to Lalain is published by Bor,
ix. 696.

atrocities of the mutinous army. This
chord he struck boldly, powerfully,
passionately, for he felt sure of the
depth and strength of its vibrations.
In his address to the estates of Gelder-
land, 3 he used vigorous language, in-
faming and directing to a practical
purpose the just wrath which was felt
in that, as in every other province.
"I write to warn you," he said, "to
seize this present opportunity. Shake
from your necks the yoke of the god-
less Spanish tyranny, join yourselves
at once to the lovers of the fatherland,
to the defenders of freedom. Accord-
ing to the example of your own ances-
tors and ours, redeem for the country
its ancient laws, traditions, and pri-
ileges. Permit no longer, to your
shame and ours, a band of Spanish
landloppers and other foreigners, to-
gether with three or four self-seeking
enemies of their own land, to keep
their feet upon our necks. Let them
no longer, in the very wantonness of
tyranny, drive us about like a herd
of cattle—like a gang of well-tamed
slaves." 4

Thus, day after day, in almost count-
less addresses to public bodies and
private individuals, he made use of
the crisis to pile fresh fuel upon the
flames. At the same time, while thus
fanning the general indignation, he
had the adroitness to point out that
the people had already committed
themselves. He represented to them
that the edict, by which they had
denounced his Majesty's veterans as
outlaws, and had devoted them to the
indiscriminate destruction which such
brigands deserved, was likely to prove
an unpardonable crime in the eyes of
majesty. In short, they had entered
the torrent. If they would avoid
being dashed over the precipice, they
must struggle manfully with the mad
waves of civil war into which they had
plunged. "I beg you, with all affec-
tion," he said to the states of Brabant, 5
"to consider the danger in which you
have placed yourselves. You have to

3 Address to the Estates of Gelderland,
spud Bor, ix. 702.
4 In Bor, ix. 694-696.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1576.

died with the proudest and most overwhelming race in the world. For these qualities they are hated by all other nations. They are even hateful to themselves. Tis a race which seeks to dominate wherever it comes. It particularly declares its intention to crush and to tyrannize you, my masters, and all the land. They have conquered you already, as they boast, for the name of their majesty has placed you at their mercy. I tell you that your last act, by which you have declared this army to be rebels, is decisive.

You have armed and excited the whole people against them, even to the peasants and the peasants' children, and the insults and injuries thus received, however richly deserved and deeply avenged, are all set down to your account. Therefore, 'tis necessary for you to decide now, whether to be utterly ruined, yourselves and your children, or to continue firmly the work which you have begun boldly, and rather to die a hundred thousand deaths than to make a treaty with them, which can only end in your ruin. Be assured that the measure dealt to you will be ignominy as well as destruction. Let not your leaders expect the honourable scaffolds of Count Egmont and Horn. The whipping-post and then the gibbet will be their certain fate."

Having by this and similar language, upon various occasions, sought to impress upon his countrymen the gravity of the position, he led them to seek the remedy in audacity and in union. He familiarized them with his theory, that the legal, historical government of the provinces belonged to the States-General, to a congress of nobles, clergy, and commons, appointed from each of the seventeen provinces. He maintained, with reason, that the government of the Netherlands was a representative constitutional government, under the hereditary authority of the King. To recover this constitu-

1 "Am de godge of kuche," etc. Address to the Estates of Brabant, etc., Bor, ubi sup.
2 Missive of Prince of Orange to States-general, in Bor. x. 747-749.
3 Missive, etc., Bor, ubi sup.
4 Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 140-154.
5 Address to Estates of Brabant, adsp. Bor. ix. 694-696.
my person and all which I possess, assuring you that I shall regard all my labours and pains in times which are past, well bestowed, if God now grant me grace to see the desired end. That this end will be reached, if you hold fast your resolution and take to heart the means which God presents to you, I feel to be absolutely certain."

Such were the tenor and the motives of the documents which he scattered broadcast at this crisis. They were addressed to the estates of nearly every province. Those bodies were urgently implored to appoint deputies to a general congress, at which a close and formal union between Holland and Zealand with the other provinces might be effected. That important measure secured, a general effort might, at the same time, be made to expel the Spaniard from the soil. This done, the remaining matters could be disposed of by the assembly of the estates-general. His eloquence and energy were not without effect. In the course of the autumn, deputies were appointed from the greater number of the provinces, to confer with the representatives of Holland and Zealand, in a general congress. The place appointed for the deliberations was the city of Ghent. Here, by the middle of October, a large number of delegates were already assembled.

Events were rapidly rolling together from every quarter, and accumulating to a crisis. A congress—a rebellious congress, as the King might deem it—was assembling at Ghent; the Spanish army, proscribed, lawless, and terrible, was strengthening itself daily for some dark and mysterious achievement; Don John of Austria, the King’s natural

brother, was expected from Spain to assume the government, which the State Council was too timid to wield and too loyal to resign; while, meantime, the whole population of the Netherlands, with hardly an exception, was disposed to see the great question of the foreign soldiery settled before the chaos then existing should be superseded by a more definite authority. Everywhere, men of all ranks and occupations—the artisan in the city, the peasant in the fields—were deserting their daily occupations to furnish helmets, handle muskets, and learn the trade of war. Skirmishes, sometimes severe and bloody, were of almost daily occurrence. In these the Spaniards were invariably successful; for whatever may be said of their cruelty and licentiousness, it cannot be disputed that their prowess was worthy of their renown. Romantic valour, unflinching fortitude, consummate skill, characterised them always.

What could half-armed artisans achieve in the open plain against such accomplished foes? At Tienbeek, between Louvain and Tirlemont, a battle was attempted by a large miscellaneous mass of students, peasantry, and burghers, led by country squires. It soon changed to a carnage, in which the victims were all on one side. A small number of veterans, headed by Vargas, Mendoza, Tassis, and other chivalrous commanders, routed the undisciplined thousands at a single charge. The rude militia threw away their arms, and fled panic-struck in all directions, at the first sight of their terrible foe. Two Spaniards lost their lives and two thousand Netherlanders. It was natural that these consummate

wounded, slightly, in the foot; but he does not give the number of the states-troops, students, and burghers slain. Mendoza, x, 386. Cabrera, xi, 556, states the number at two thousand. That bitter Walloon, Ronin de France, who saw the States force pass through Louvain, on their way to the encounter, exults, as usual, over the discomfiture of his own countrymen. "The Spaniards cut them all to pieces," he observes, "teaching these podants, as schoolboys that war was a game in which they had no skill."—Histoire des Causes des Révoltes, etc.—MS., III. c. xii.
warriors should despise such easily slaughtered victims. A single stroke of the iron flail, and the chaff was scattered to the four winds; a single sweep of the disciplined scythe, and countless acres were in an instant mown. Nevertheless, although beaten constantly, the Netherlands were not conquered. Holland and Zeeland had read the fœi a lesson which he had not forgotten, and although on the open fields, and against the less vigorous population of the more central provinces, his triumphs had been easier, yet it was obvious that the spirit of resistance to foreign oppression was growing daily stronger, notwithstanding daily defeats.

Meantime, while these desultory but deadly combats were in daily progress, the Council of State was looked upon with suspicion of the mass of the population. That body, in which resided provisionally the powers of government, was believed to be desirous of establishing relations with the mutinous army. It was suspected of insidiously provoking the excesses which it seemed to denounce. It was supposed to be secretly intriguing with those whom its own edicts had outlawed. Its sympathies were considered Spanish. It was openly boasted by the Spanish army that, before long, they would descend from their fastnesses upon Brussels, and give the city to the sword. A shuddering sense of coming evil pervaded the population, but no man could say where the blow would first be struck. It was natural that the capital should be thought exposed to imminent danger. At the same time, while every man who had hands was disposed to bear arms to defend the city, the Council seemed paralysed. The capital was insufficiently garrisoned, yet troops were not enrolling for its protection. The state councillors obviously omitted to provide for defence, and it was supposed that they were secretly assisting the attack. It was thought important, therefore, to disarm, or, at least, to control this body which was impotent for protection, and seemed powerful only for mischief. It was possible to make it as contemptible as it was believed to be malicious.

An unexpected stroke was therefore suddenly levelled against the Council in full session. On the 5th of September,¹ the Seigneur de Hèze, a young gentleman of a bold, but unstable character, then entertaining close but secret relations with the Prince of Orange, appeared before the doors of the palace. He was attended by about five hundred troops, under the immediate command of the Seigneur de Olimes, bailiff of Walloon Brabant. He demanded admittance, in the name of the Brabant estates, to the presence of the State Council, and was refused. The doors were closed and bolted. Without further ceremony the soldiers produced iron bars brought with them for the purpose, forced all the gates from the hinges, entered the hall of session, and at a word from their commander, laid hands upon the councillors, and made every one prisoner.² The Duke of Aerschot, President of the Council, who was then in close alliance with the Prince, was not present at the meeting, but lay, forewarned, at home, confined to his couch by a sickness assumed for the occasion. Viglius, who rarely participated in the deliberations of the board, being already afflicted with the chronic malady under which he was ere long to succumb, also escaped the fate of his fellow-senators.³ The others were carried into confinement. Berlaymont and

---

¹ Bor, ix. 719. Meteren, vi. 197. Fix the date of this important transaction at the 14th September. A letter of William of Orange to Count John of 9th September states that it occurred on the 5th September.
² Archvies de la Maison d'Orange, etc., x. 408; and note 1. Tassiis gives the same date, iii. 207, 208.
³ Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 106—note 1. Bor, ubi sup. Hoofd, x. 448. Meteren, vi. 107. I. B. de Tassie, Comm. de l'Am. Belg., i. iii. 297, 298. ¹ I had. There is, however, considerable doubt upon this point. Viglius was ill and confined to his bed at the time of the Grand Commander's death, in March. He ceased to write letters to Hopper in April. The arrest of the State Council took place in September, and Viglius died on the 5th of May of the following year (1577). It seems
Mansefield were imprisoned in the Brood-Huys, where the last mortal
hours of Egmont and Horn had been
passed. Others were kept strictly
guarded in their own houses. After a
few weeks, most of them were liber-
ated. Councillor Del Rio was, how-
ever, retained in confinement, and sent
to Holland, where he was subjected
to a severe examination by the Prince
of Orange, touching his past career,
particularly concerning the doings of
the famous Blood Council. The others
were set free, and even permitted
to resume their functions, but their
dignity was gone, their authority
annihilated. Thenceforth the states
of Brabant and the community of
Brussels were to govern for an in-
terval, for it was in their name that
the Bull of Tienpo was to be used
against the Council. All individuals
and bodies, however, although not dis-
pelled with the result, clamorously
disclaimed responsibility for the deed.
Men were appalled at the audacity
of the transaction, and dreaded the
vengeance of the King. The Abbot
Van Perch, one of the secret instiga-
tors of the act, actually died of anxiety
for its possible consequences. There
was a mystery concerning the affair.
They in whose name it had been
accomplished denied having given any

authorities to the perpetrators. Men
asked each other what unseen agency
had been at work, what secret spring
had been adroitly touched. There is
but little doubt, however, that the
veiled but skillful hand which directed
the blow, was the same which had so
long been guiding the destiny of the
Netherlands.

It had been settled that the congress
was to hold its sessions in Ghent,
although the citadel commanding
that city was held by the Spaniards.
The garrison was not very strong, and
Mondragon, its commander, was absent
in Zealand, but the wife of the veteran
ably supplied his place, and stimulated
the slender body of troops to hold out
with heroism, under the orders of his
lieutenant, Avillos Maldonado. The
mutineers, after having accomplished
their victory at Tianaq, had been
earnestly solicited to come to the relief
of this citadel. They had refused and
returned to Alost. Meantime, the
siege was warmly pressed by the states.
There being, however, a deficiency of
troops, application for assistance was
formally made to the Prince of Orange.
Count Reulx, governor of Flanders,
commissioned the Seigneur d'Hausuy,
brother of Count Bosau, who, to obtain
the liberation of that long-imprisoned
and distinguished nobleman, was about

highly probable, therefore, that Tassin
is correct in his statement, that Vigilius
was kept at home by the illness "que erat si
celatus." The historians, however, Me-
terum (vi. 107), Bor (ix. 713), Bentivoglio (lib.
ix. 170), Branda (vii. 414), Hooft (x. 446), De
Thou (lib. 62, viii. 534), all mention the name
of President Vigilius among those of the
commissioners arrested. The Prince of Orange
(Archives, etc., v. 468) also mentions him as
having been arrested and imprisoned with the
rest. De Thou (ubi sup.) gives an
account of a visit which he paid to him in the
following spring, at which time the aged
president seems to have been under arrest,
although "il n'était pas gardé fort étroitement."

Some writers mention him as
among those who were detained, while
others of the arrested were released (Me-
terum, Hooft, Bor, etc.).—others, as Cabrera
(who is, however, no authority in such
matters), mention him as one of those who
were immediately set at liberty, in order
that the Council might have an appearance
of power. (Don Felipe Il., xi. 838). On the
whole, it seems most probable that he was
arrested after the seizure of the Council, but

that he was kept confined in a nominal
durance, which the infirmities of illness and
age rendered quite superfluous. It is almost
unquestionable that De Thou visited him at
his own house in Brussels, and not at any
state prison. Wagenaer, vii. 106, says that
Vigilius was released in October, and quotes
Languet's, ep. i. (ii.), ep. 93, p. 389.—
Compare Green v. Prins., Archives, etc., v. 406,
Archives et Correspondance, v. 406.

Extracts from the confessions of Del Rio
have been given in the first volume of this
history.

1 Hooff, x. 446. Ev. Reid. Anm., lib. ii. 50.
2 Wagenaer, vii. 105. Languet Epist.,
lib. i. (i.) op. 87, p. 230.—Declaration of the
Brussels Deputies in 1584. Bor, xl. 20
(477).—Compare Green v. Prins., Archives,
etc., v. 404—407.
3 Bor, ix. 726, 727.
4 Ibid., 727. Hooft, x. 470.—Compare
Meteorum, vi. 108.
5 Hooft, x. 450, 451. Bor, x. 716.
visiting the Prince in Zealand, to make a request for an auxiliary force.\textsuperscript{1} It was, however, stipulated that care should be taken lest any prejudice should be done to the Roman Catholic religion or the authority of the King. The Prince readily acceded to the request, and agreed to comply with the conditions under which only it could be accepted.\textsuperscript{2} He promised to send twenty-eight companies. In his letter announcing this arrangement, he gave notice that his troops would receive strict orders to do no injury to person or property, Catholic or Protestant, ecclesiastic or lay, and to offer no obstruction to the Roman religion or the royal dignity.\textsuperscript{3} He added, however, that it was not to be taken amiss, if his soldiers were permitted to exercise their own religious rites, and to sing their Protestant hymns within their own quarters.\textsuperscript{4} He moreover, as security for the expense and trouble, demanded the city of Sluys.\textsuperscript{5} The first detachment of troops, under command of Colonel Vander Tympe, was, however, hardly on its way, before an alarm was felt among the Catholic party at this practical alliance with the rebel Prince. An envoy, named Ottingen, was despatched to Zealand, bearing a letter from the estates of Hainault, Brabant, and Flanders, countermanding the request for troops, and remonstrating categorically upon the subject of religion and loyalty.\textsuperscript{6} Orange deemed such tergiversation paltry, but controlled his anger. He answered the letter in liberal terms, for he was determined that by no fault of his should the great cause be endangered. He reassured the states as to the probable behaviour of his troops. Moreover, they had been already admitted into the city, while the correspondence was proceeding. The matter of the paining was finally arranged to the satisfaction of both parties, and it was agreed that Niewport, instead of Sluys, should be given to the Prince as security.\textsuperscript{7}

The siege of the citadel was now pressed vigorously, and the deliberations of the congress were opened under the incessant roar of cannon. While the attack was thus earnestly maintained upon the important castle of Ghent, a courageous effort was made by the citizens of Maastricht to wrest their city from the hands of the Spaniards. The German garrison having been gained by the burghers, the combined force rose upon the Spanish troops, and drove them from the city.\textsuperscript{8}

Montesucco, the commander, was arrested and imprisoned, but the triumph was only temporary. Don Francis d’Ayala, Montesucco’s lieutenant, made a stand, with a few companies, in Wieck, a village on the opposite side of the Meuse, and connected with the city by a massive bridge of stone.\textsuperscript{9} From this point he sent information to other commanders in the neighbourhood. Don Ferdinand de Toledo soon arrived with several hundred troops from Dalem. The Spaniards, eager to wipe out the disgrace to their arms, loudly demanded to be led back to the city. The head of the bridge, however, over which they must pass, was defended by a strong battery, and the citizens were seen clustering in great numbers to defend their firesides against a foe whom they had once expelled. To advance across the bridge seemed certain destruction to the little force. Even Spanish bravery recoiled at so desperate an undertaking, but unscrupulous ferocity supplied an expedient where courage was at fault. There were few fighting men present among the population of Wieck, but there were many females. Each soldier was commanded to seize a woman, and, placing her before his own body, to advance across the bridge.\textsuperscript{10} The column, thus buckled, to the shame of Spanish chivalry, by female bosoms,

\textsuperscript{1} Bor, ix. 716. \textsuperscript{2} Ibid. \textsuperscript{3} See the letter in Bor, ix. 716, 717. Compare Groen v. Princk, Archives, etc., 420, 421. \textsuperscript{4} Letter of Prince of Orange, in Bor, ix. 716, 717. \textsuperscript{5} Bor, ix. 717. \textsuperscript{6} Ibid., ix. 717, 718. \textsuperscript{7} Bor, ubi sup.—Compare Groen v. Princk, Archives, etc., 420, 421. Meteren, vi. 108. \textsuperscript{8} Strada, viii. 416. Hooff, xl. 454. \textsuperscript{9} Strada, Hooff, ubi sup. \textsuperscript{10} Strada, viii. 416.
moved in good order toward the battery. The soldiers levelled their muskets with steady aim over the shoulders or under the arms of the women whom they thus held before them. On the other hand, the citizens dared not discharge their cannon at their own townswomen, among whose numbers many recognized mothers, sisters, or wives. The battery was soon taken, while at the same time Alonso Vargas, who had effected his entrance from the land side by burning down the Brussels gate, now entered the city at the head of a band of cavalry. Maastricht was recovered, and an indiscriminate slaughter instantly avenged its temporary loss. The plundering, stabbing, burning, ravishing, were so dreadful that, in the words of a contemporary historian, "the burghers who had escaped the fight had reason to think themselves less fortunate than those who had died with arms in their hands."

This was the lot of Maastricht on the 29th of October. It was instinctively felt to be the precursor of fresh disasters. Vague, incoherent, but widely-diffused rumours, had long pointed to Antwerp and its dangerous situation. The Spaniards, foiled in their views upon Brussels, had recently avowed an intention of avenging themselves in the commercial capital. They had waited long enough and accumulated strength enough. Such a trifling city as Alost could no longer content their cupidity, but Antwerp there was gold enough for the gathering. There was reason for the fears of the inhabitants, for the greedy longing of their enemy. Probably no city in Christendom could at that day vie with Antwerp in wealth and splendour. Its merchants lived in regal pomp and luxury. In its numerous extensive warehouses were the treasures of every clime. Still serving as the main entrepôt of the world's traffic, the Venetian capital was the centre of that commercial system which was soon to be superseded by a larger international life. In the midst of the miseries which had so long been raining upon the Netherlands, the stately and egotistical city seemed to have taken stronger root, and to flourish more freshly than ever. It was not wonderful that its palaces and its magazines, glittering with splendour, and bursting with treasure, should arouse the avidity of a reckless and famishing soldiery. Had not a handful of warriors of their own race rifled the golden Indies? Had not their fathers, few in number, strong in courage and discipline, revelled in the plunder of a new world? Here were the Indies in a single city. Here were gold and silver, pearls and diamonds, ready and portable; the precious fruit dropped, ripened, from the bough. Was it to be tolerated that base, pacific burghers should monopolise the treasure by which a band of heroes might be enriched?

A sense of coming evil diffused itself through the atmosphere. The air seemed lurid with the impending storm; for the situation was one of peculiar horror. The wealthiest city in Christendom lay at the mercy of the strongest fastness in the world; a castle which had been built to eurb, not to protect the town. It was now inhabited by a band of brigand, outlawed by government, strong in discipline, furious from penury, reckless by habit, desperate in circumstance—a crew which feared not God, nor man, nor Devil. The palpitating quarry lay expecting hourly the swoop of its trained and pitiless enemy; for the rebellious soldiers were now in a thorough state of discipline. Sancho davila, castellan of the citadel, was recognised as the chief of the whole mutiny, the army and the mutiny being now one. The band, entrenched at Alost, were upon the best possible understanding with their brethren in the citadel, and accepted without hesitation the arrangements of their superior. On the side of the Scheld, opposite Antwerp, a fortification had been thrown up by Don Sancho's orders, and held

---

1 Strada, viii. 416.
2 Gor, ix. 725.—Compare Strada, Hoofd, ib. sup. Meteves, vi. 160.
3 Strada, viii. 416.
4 "—quante lodi d'une città."—Bontivoglio, ix. 181.
by Julian Romero. Lier, Breda, as well as Alost, were likewise ready to throw their reinforcements into the citadel at a moment's warning. At the signal of their chief, the united bands might sweep from their impregnable castle with a single impulse.\footnote{Materen, vi. 107. Bor, ix. 727, sqq. Mendoza, xv. 303, sqq.}

The city cried aloud for help; for it had become obvious that an attack might be hourly expected. Meantime an attempt, made by Don Sancho d'Avila to tamper with the German troops stationed within the walls, was more than partially successful. The forces were commanded by Colonel Van Ende and Count Oberstein. Van Ende, a crafty traitor to his country, desired no better than to join the mutiny on so promising an occasion, and his soldiers shared his sentiments. Oberstein, a brave but bumbling German, was drawn into the net of treachery\footnote{Bor, ix. 727, sqq.} by the adroitness of the Spaniard and the effrontery of his comrade. On the night of the 29th of October, half-bewildered and half-drunk, he signed a treaty with Sancho d'Avila\footnote{Bor, ii. 455, 456.} and the three colonels — Frueger, Frondeburger, and Polwiler. By this unlucky document, which was, of course, subscribed also by Van Ende, it was agreed that the Antwerp burgheers should be forthwith disarmed; that their weapons should be sent into the citadel; that Oberstein should hold the city at the disposition of Sancho d'Avila; that he should refuse admittance to all troops which might be sent into the city, excepting by command of Don Sancho, and that he should decline compliance with any orders which he might receive from individuals calling themselves the council of state, the states-general, or the estates of Brabant. This treaty was signed, moreover, by Don Jeronimo de Roda, then established in the citadel, and claiming to represent exclusively his Majesty's government.\footnote{See the Articles in Bor, ix. 728.—Compare Materen, v. 309, 310; Hoefl, xi. 454, 455.}

Hardly had this arrangement been concluded than the Count saw the trap into which he had fallen. Without intending to do so, he had led the city at the mercy of its foe; but the only remedy which suggested itself to his mind was an internal resolution not to keep his promises. The burgheers were suffered to retain their arms, while, on the other hand, Don Sancho lost no time in despatching messages to Alost, to Lier, to Breda, and even to Maastricht, that as large a force as possible might be\footnote{Mendoza, xv. 303. Cabrera, xi. 862, 863. seq. —Strabo, viii. 417.} assembled for the purpose of breaking immediately the treaty of peace which he had just concluded. Never was a solemn document regarded with such perfectly bad faith by all its signers as the accord of the 29th of October.

Three days afterwards, a large force of Walloons and Germans was despatched from Brussels to the assistance of Antwerp. The command of these troops was entrusted to the Marquis of Havre, whose brother, the Duke of Arenhout, had been recently appointed chief superintendent of military affairs by the deputies assembled at Ghent.\footnote{Bor, ix. 728.} The miscellaneous duties comprehended under this rather vague denomination did not permit the Duke to take charge of the expedition in person, and his younger brother, a still more incompetent and unsubstantial character, was accordingly appointed to the post. A number of young men of high rank, but of lamentably low capacity, were associated with him. Foremost among these was Philip, Count of Egmont, a youth who had inherited few of his celebrated father's qualities, save personal courage and a love of personal display. In character and general talents he was beneath mediocrity. Besides these were the reckless but unstable De Hese, who had executed the coup d'état against the State Council, De Berselen, De Capres, D'Oyngtles, and others, all vaguely desirous of achieving distinction in those turbulent times, but few of them having any political
Confused Councils.

or religious convictions, and none of them possessing experience or influence enough to render them useful at the impending crisis. 1

On Friday morning, the 2d of November, 2 the troops appeared under the walls of Antwerp. They consisted of twenty-five companies of infantry, and fourteen of cavalry, amounting to five thousand foot and twelve hundred horse. They were nearly all Walloons, soldiers who had already seen much service, but unfortunately of a race warlike and fiery indeed, but upon whose steadiness not much more dependence could be placed at that day than in the age of Civilia. Champangy, brother of Granville, was Governor of the city. He was a sincere Catholic, but a still more sincere hater of the Spaniards. He saw in the mutiny a means of accomplishing their expulsion, and had already offered to the Prince of Orange his eager co-operation towards this result. In other matters there could be but small sympathy between William the Silent and the Cardinal’s brother, but a common hatred united them, for a time at least, in a common purpose.

When the troops first made their appearance before the walls, Champangy was unwilling to grant them admittance. The addle-brained Oberstein had confessed to him the enormous blunder which he had committed in his midnight treaty, and at the same time ingenuously confessed his intention of sending it to the winds. 3 The army had extorted from his dulness or his drunkenness a promise which his mature and sober reason could not consider binding. It is needless to say that Champangy rebuked him for signing, and applauded him for breaking the treaty. At the same time, its ill effects were already seen in the dissensions which existed among the German troops. Where all had been tempered with, and where the commanders had set the example of fidelity, it would have been strange if all had held firm. On the whole, however, Oberstein thought he could answer for his own troops. Upon Van Ende’s division, although the crafty colonel dissembled his real intentions, very little reliance was placed. 4 Thus there was distraction within the walls. Among those whom the burghers had been told to consider their defenders, there were probably many who were ready to join with their mortal foes at a moment’s warning. Under these circumstances, Champangy hesitated about admitting these fresh troops from Brussels. He feared lest the Germans, who knew themselves doubtful, might consider themselves doomed. He trembled lest an irrepressible outbreak should occur within the walls, rendering the immediate destruction of the city by the Spaniards from without inevitable. Moreover, he thought it more desirable that this auxiliary force should be disposed at different points outside, in order to intercept the passage of the numerous bodies of Spaniards and other mutineers, who, from various quarters, would soon be on their way to the citadel. Havré, however, was so peremptory, and the burghers were so importunate, that Champangy was obliged to recede from his opposition before twenty-four hours had elapsed. Unwilling to take the responsibility of a farther refusal, he admitted the troops through the Burgherhout gate, on Saturday, the 3d of November, at ten o’clock in the morning. 5

The Marquis of Havré, as commander-in-chief, called a council of war. It assembled at Count Oberstein’s quarters, and consulted at first concerning a bundle of intercepted letters which Havré had brought with him. These constituted a correspondence between Sancho d’Avila with the heads of the mutiny at Alost, and many other places. The letters were all dated subsequently to Don Sancho’s

2 Bor, ix. 728. Meteren, vi. 109. Hooff, xi. 457, and not the 8d of October, as stated by Mendoza, xv. 513, and by Cabrera, xi. 863, following Mendoza.
3 Bor, ix. 729. Hooff, xi. 457. Mendoza, xv. 513, and not the 8d of October, as stated by Mendoza, xv. 513, and by Cabrera, xi. 863, following Mendoza.
by Julian Romero. Lier, Broda, as well as Antwerp, were likewise ready to throw their reinforcements into the citadel at a moment's warning. At the signal of their chief, the united bands might sweep from their impregnable castle with a single impulse.\(^1\)

The city cried aloud for help; for it had become obvious that an attack might be hourly expected. Meantime an attempt, made by Don Sancho d'Avila to tamper with the German troops stationed within the walls, was more than partially successful. The forces were commanded by Colonel Van Enke and Count Oberstein. Van Enke, a crafty traitor to his country, desired no better than to join the mutiny on so promising an occasion, and his soldiers shared his sentiments. Oberstein, a brave but blundering German, was drawn into the net of treachery\(^2\) by the adroitness of the Spaniard and the effrontery of his counsels.

On the night of the 29th of October, half-bewildered and half-drunk, he signed a treaty with Sancho d'Avila\(^3\) and the three colonels—Frugger, Frondsberger, and Polwiler. By this unlucky document, which was, of course, subscribed also by Van Enke, it was agreed that the Antwerpers should be forthwith dismissed, that their weapons should be sent into the citadel; that Oberstein should hold the city at the disposal of Sancho d'Avila; that he should admit the troops which were to be sent into the city, under the command of Don Sancho, and should decline compliance with orders which he might receive from individuals calling themselves the council of state, the states-general of the estates of Brabant. This was signed, moreover, by Don de Roda, then established in the citadel, and claiming to represent his Majesty's government. Hardly had this strange transaction been completed than the trap into which he had fallen was set. The city at the mercy of the only remedy which had ever plighted to his mind was an army which they not to keep his promise. It was gheri's were sufficient supply, with arms, while, on the other hand, all these Sancho lost no messages to Almayer, Oberstein, and even to M. de Sancho force as possible. Almayer summoned him to the presence of October: diately the citadel had just a garrison, held solemnly by Oberstein. perfectly the garrison had nearly the attack it had been promised. There were, however, by flight of wall, 4,000 of Fontaine's soldiers, who had already took up with the ramparts by which their quarters were nearly entraped.\(^4\) These in a solemnity garrison it was already taken up by both parties, and charged with defences and men. The garrison was an immense wall was in a case of mercurial, for the ramparts were encompassed wagons, muskets, and other arms, hastily piled up in various places it was six months before the fortifications were completed. Unfortunately the city was taken by surprise. The army continued to assault the bastions, and it was the citizens, who, with their heads above their shoulders, whom the garrison agreed to superintend the enterprise, all disposed, de- They promised to the darkest hour, the work was com-
whole available force in the city massed without delay. Havré
imbued for his post the defence lines opposite the citadel, the

664. M. Deland, xv. 51. 55.
... said, "Love your enemies." and as a smile of the Xav. were a smile from heaven. The deeds of which might cause a sigh at the depths of hell. Their executions included, they swept forward to the city. Three thousand savages, under their Ellett, went together by the street of Saint John, the Germans, and the Spanish foot, commander by Lucero, through that of Saint George. The Spaniards saw them coming and twice gave a last word of encouragement to the Walloons. The next instant the compact mass struck the barrier, as the thunderbolt descends from the cloud. There was scarcely a struggle. The Walloons, not waiting to look on their enemy in the face, abandoned the posts which they had themselves claimed. The Spaniards crashed through the bulwark, as though it had been a wall of glass. The Ellett was first to mount the rampart; the next instant he was shot dead while his followers, undismayed, sprang over his body, and poured into the streets. The fatal shot, due to the inactivity and carelessness, left in the path of destruction, the Ellett's party, seeing that the Spaniards had passed the barrier, leaped over a garden wall, passed through a house into a narrow lane, and ran to the nearest station of the armed troops. Hastily colo

...
In vain Champagny stormed among them; in vain he strove to rally their broken ranks. With his own hand he seized a banner from a retreating ensign, and called upon the nearest soldiers to make a stand against the foe. It was to bid the flying clouds pause before the tempest. Torn, broken, aimless, the scattered troops whirled through the streets before the pursuing wrath. Champagny, not yet despairing, galloped hither and thither, calling upon the burgheers everywhere to rise in defence of their homes, nor did he call in vain. They came forth from every place of rendezvous, from every alley, from every house. They fought as men fight to defend their hearths and altars, but what could individual devotion avail, against the compact, disciplined, relentless mass of their foes? The order of defence was broken, there was no system, no concert, no rallying point, no authority. So soon as it was known that the Spaniards had crossed the rampart, that its six thousand defenders were in full retreat, it was inevitable that a panic should seize the city.

Their entrance once effected, the Spanish force had separated, according to previous arrangement, into two divisions, one half charging up the long street of Saint Michael, the other forcing its way through the street of Saint Joris. "Santiago, Santiago! España, España! á sangre, á carne, á fuego, á sacco!" Saint James, Spain, blood, flesh, fire, sack!—such were the hideous cries which rang through every quarter of the city, as the savage hordes advanced. Van Ende, with his German troops, had been stationed by the Marquis of Havré to defend the Saint Joris gate, but no sooner did the Spaniards under Vargas present themselves, than he deserted to them instantly with his whole force. United with the Spanish cavalry, these traitorous defenders of Antwerp dashed in pursuit of those who had only been faint-hearted. Thus the burgheers saw themselves attacked by many of their friends, deserted by more. Whom were they to trust? Nevertheless, Oberstein’s Germans were brave and faithful, resisting to the last, and dying every man in his harness. The tide of battle flowed hither and thither, through every street and narrow lane. It poured along the magnificent Place de Moer, where there was an obstinate contest. In front of the famous Exchange, where, in peaceful hours, five thousand merchants met daily, to arrange the commercial affairs of Christendom, there was a determined rally, a savage slaughter. The citizens and faithful Germans, in this broader space, made a stand against their pursuers. The tessellated marble pavement, the graceful, cloister-like arcades ran red with blood. The ill-armed burgheers faced their enemies clad in complete panoply, but they could only die for their homes. The massacre at this point was enormous, the resistance at last overcome.

Meantime, the Spanish cavalry had cleft its way through the city. On the side farthest removed from the castle, along the Horse-market, opposite the New-town, the states dragoons and the light horse of Beveren had been posted, and the flying masses of pursuers and pursued swept at last through this outer circle. Champagny was already there. He essayed, as his last hope, to rally the cavalry for a final stand, but the effort was fruitless. Already seized by the panic, they had attempted to rush from the city through the gate of Eeker. It was locked; they then turned and fled towards the Red-gate, where they were met face to face by Don Pedro Tasis, who charged upon them with his dragoons. Retreat seemed hopeless. A horseman in complete armour, with lance in rest, was seen to leap from the parapet of the outer wall into the moat below,

---

1 Meteren, vi. 110. Hoofd, 461.
2 Hoofd, xi. 461.
3 Ibid., xi. 461. Mendoza, xvi. 515.
4 Brandone, Hommes Illustres, etc., ii. 208. Mendoza, xvi. 515.
5 Hoofd, xi. 461. Mendoza, xvi. 316.
6 Bor, ix. 730. Hoofd, xi. 465.
7 Gucciardini, Belg. Descript.
whence, still on horseback, he escaped with life. Few were so fortunate. The confused mob of fugitives and conquerors, Spaniards, Walloons, Germans, burghers, struggling, shouting, striking, cursing, dying, swayed hither and thither like a stormy sea. Along the spacious Horse-market, the fugitives fled onward towards the quays. Many fell beneath the swords of the Spaniards, numbers were trodden to death by the hoofs of horses, still greater multitudes were hunted into the Scheldt. Champagny, who had thought it possible, even at the last moment, to make a stand in the New-town, and to fortify the Palace of the Hansa, saw himself deserted. With great daring and presence of mind, he effected his escape to the fleet of the Prince of Orange in the river. The Marquis of Haver, of whom no deeds of valour on that eventful day have been recorded, was equally successful. The unlucky Oberstein, attempting to leap into a boat, missed his footing, and, oppressed by the weight of his armour, was drowned.

Meanwhile, while the short November day was fast declining, the combat still raged in the interior of the city. Various currents of conflict, forcing their separate way through many streets, had at last mingled in the Grande Place. Around this irregular, not very spacious square, stood the gorgeous Hôtel de Ville, and the tall, many storied, fantastically gabled, richly decorated palaces of the guilds. Here a long struggle took place. It was terminated for a time by the cavalry of Vargas, who, arriving through the streets of Saint Joris, accompanied by the traitor Van Ende, charged decisively into the mêlée. The masses were broken, but multitudes of armed men found refuge in the buildings, and every house became a fortress. From every window and balcony a hot fire was poured into the square, as, pent in a corner, the burghers stood at last at bay. It was difficult to carry the houses by storm, but they were soon set on fire. A large number of soldiers and other varlets had accompanied the Spaniards from the citadel, bringing torches and kindling materials for the express purpose of firing the town. With great dexterity, these men were now applied, and in a brief interval, the City-hall and other edifices on the square were in flames. The conflagration spread with rapidity, house after house, street after street, taking fire. Nearly a thousand buildings, in the most splendid and wealthy quarter of the city, were soon in a blaze, and multitudes of human beings were burned with them. In the City-hall many were consumed, while others leaped from the windows to renew the combat below. The many tortuous streets which led down a slight descent from the rear of the Town-house to the quays were all one vast conflagration. On the other side, the magnificent cathedral, separated from the Grande Place by a single row of buildings, was lighted up, but not attacked by the flames. The tall spire cast its gigantic shadow across the last desperate conflict. In the street called the Canal as Smeer, immediately behind the Town-house, there was a fierce struggle, a horrible massacre. A crowd of burghers, grave magistrates, and such of the German soldiers as remained alive, still confronted the fierce Spaniards. There, until the flaming desolation, Gawyn Verneyck, the heroic margrave of the city, fought with the energy of hatred and despair. The burgomaster, Van der Meere, lay dead at his feet; senators, soldiers, citizens, fell fast around him, and he sank at last upon a heap of slain. With him effective resistance ended. The remaining combatants were butchered, or were slowly forced downward to perish in the Scheldt.

---


2 Ibid. Ibid. Mendosa, xv. 316.

3 Hoofd, xi. 402. Mendosa, xv. 316. Straflex, viii. 419. — According to Moteen (vi. 119) the whole town was on fire, and five hundred houses entirely consumed. According to the contemporary manuscript of De Weerd, who was a citizen of Antwerp, one thousand houses were burned to the ground.

Women, children, old men, were killed in countless numbers, and still, through all this havoc, directly over the heads of the struggling throng, suspended in mid-air above the din and smoke of the conflict, there sounded, every half-quarter of every hour, as if in gentle mockery, from the belfry of the cathedral, the tender and melodious chimes.

Never was there a more monstrous massacre, even in the blood-stained history of the Netherlands. It was estimated that, in the course of this and the two following days, not less than eight thousand human beings were murdered. The Spaniards seemed to cast off even the wizard of humanity. Hell seemed emptied of its terrors. Little fell upon the scene before the soldiers were masters of the city; but worse horrors began after the contest was ended. This army of brigands had come thither with a definite, practical purpose, for it was not blood-thirsty, nor lust, nor revenge, which had impelled them, but it was avarice, greediness for gold. For gold they had waded through all this blood and fire. Never had men more simplicity of purpose, more directness in its execution. They had conquered their India at last; its gold mines lay all before them, and every sword should open a shaft. Riot and rape might be deferred; even murder, though congenial to their taste, was only subsidiary to their business. They had come to take possession of the city's wealth, and they set themselves faithfully to accomplish their task. For gold, infants were dashed out of existence in their mothers' arms; for gold, parents were tortured in their children's presence; for gold, brides were scourged to death before their husbands' eyes. Wherever treasure was suspected, every expedient which ingenuity, sharpened by greediness, could suggest, was employed to extort it from its possessors. The fire, spreading more extensively and more rapidly than had been desired through the wealthiest quarter of the city, had unfortunately devoured a vast amount of property. Six millions, at least, had thus been swallowed; a destruction by which no one had profited. There was, however, much left. The strong boxes of the merchants, the gold, silver, and precious jewellery, the velvets, satins, brocades, laces, and similar well concentrated and portable plunder, were rapidly appropriated. So far the course was plain and easy, but in private houses it was more difficult. The cash, plate, and other valuables of individuals were not so easily discovered. Torture was, therefore, at once employed to discover the hidden treasures. After all had been given, if the sum seemed too little, the proprietors were brutally punished for their poverty or their supposed dissimulation. A gentlewoman, named Fabry, with her aged mother and other females of the family, had taken refuge in the these slain with the sword.—Compare De Thou, vii. 383-390 (I. 63). The letter of Jerome de Roda to the King, written from the citadel of Antwerp upon the 6th November, when the carnage was hardly over, estimates the number of the slain at eight thousand, and one thousand horses. This authority, coming from the very hour and spot, and from a man so deeply implicated, may be considered conclusive.—See the Letter of Roda, in Bor, ix. 737, 738.

1 This is the estimate of Mendoza, vi., two thousand five hundred slain with the sword, and double that number burned and drowned.—xv. 517. Cabrera puts the figures at seven thousand and upwards.—xi. 562.

2 Bor, ix. 731, sqq. Hooff, xi. 462, sqq.

3 Hooff, xi. 462. Bor's estimate is three millions, xi. 731. The property consumed, says Muteren, was equal in value to that which was obtained in the plundering afterwards by the soldiery. This he estimates at more than four millions in cash, not counting jewellery and other merchandise, vi. 110.

4 Hooff, xi. 463.

5 Ibid.—The lady was grandmother of the historian's wife.
cellar of her mansion. As the day was drawing to a close, a band of plunderers entered, who, after ransacking the house, descended to the cellarage. Finding the door barred, they forced it open with gunpowder. The mother, who was nearest the entrance, fell dead on the threshold. Stepping across her mangled body, the brigands sprung upon her daughter, loudly demanding the property which they believed to be concealed. They likewise insisted on being informed where the master of the house had taken refuge. Protestations of ignorance as to hidden treasure, or the whereabouts of her husband, who, for aught she knew, was lying dead in the streets, were of no avail. To make her more communicative, they hanged her on a beam in the cellar, and after a few moments cut her down before life was extinct. Still receiving no satisfactory reply, where a satisfactory reply was impossible, they hanged her again. Again, after another brief interval, they gave her a second release, and a fresh interrogation. This barbarity they repeated several times, till they were satisfied that there was nothing to be gained by it, while, on the other hand, they were losing much valuable time. Hoping to be more successful elsewhere, they left her hanging for the last time, and trooped off to fresher fields. Strange to relate, the person thus horribly tortured, survived. A servant in her family, married to a Spanish soldier, providentially entered the house, in time to rescue her lingering mistress. She was restored to existence, but never to reason. Her brain was hopelessly crazed, and she passed the remainder of her life, wandering about her house, or feebly digging in her garden for the buried treasure which she had been thus fiercely solicited to reveal. 1

A wedding-feast was rudely interrupted. Two young persons, neighbours of opulent families, had been long betrothed, and the marriage day had been fixed for Sunday, the fatal 4th of November. The guests were assembled, the ceremony concluded, the nuptial banquet in progress, when the horrible outrages in the streets proclaimed that the Spaniards had broken loose. Hour after hour of trembling expectation succeeded. At last, a thundering at the gate proclaimed the arrival of a band of brigands. Preceded by their captain, a large number of soldiers forced their way into the house, ransacking every chamber, no opposition being offered by the family and friends, too few and powerless to cope with this band of well-armed ruffians. Plate chests, wardrobes, desks, caskets of jewelry, were freely offered, eagerly accepted, but not found sufficient; and to make the luckless wretches furnish more than they possessed, the usual brutalities were employed. The soldiers began by striking the bridegroom-dead. The bride fell shrieking into her mother's arms, whence she was torn by the murderers, who immediately put the mother to death, and an indiscriminate massacre then followed the fruitless attempts to obtain by threats and torture treasure which did not exist. The bride, who was of remarkable beauty, was carried off to the citadel. 2

Maddened by this last outrage, the father, who was the only man of the party left alive, rushed upon the Spaniards. Wrestling a sword from one of the crew, the old man dealt with it so fiercely, that he stretched more than one enemy dead at his feet, but it is needless to add that he was soon despatched. Meantime, while the party were concluding the plunder of the mansion, the bride was left in a lonely apartment of the fortress. Without wasting time in fruitless lamentation, she resolved to quit the life which a few hours had made so desolate. She had almost succeeded in hanging herself with a massive gold chain which she wore, when her captor entered the apartment. Infamed, not with lust, but with avarice, excited not by her charms, but by her jewellery, he rescued her from her perilous position. He then took possession of her

---

1 Hood, xi. 463, 464.
2 Bor. ix. 781. Hood, xi. 464.
chain and the other trinkets with which her wedding-dress was adorned, and caused her to be entirely stripped of her clothing. She was then scourged with rods till her beautiful body was bathed in blood, and at last alone, naked, nearly mad, was sent back into the city. Here the forlorn creature wandered up and down through the blazing streets, among the heaps of dead and dying, till she was at last put out of her misery by a gang of soldiers.  

Such are a few isolated instances, accidently preserved in their details, of the general horrors inflicted on this occasion. Others innumerable have sunk into oblivion. On the morning of the 5th of November, Antwerp presented a ghastly sight. The magnificent marble Town-house, celebrated as a “world’s wonder,” even in that age and country, in which so much splendour was lavished on municipal palaces, stood a blackened ruin—all but the walls destroyed, while its archives, accounts, and other valuable contents, had perished. The more splendid portion of the city had been consumed; at least five hundred palaces, mostly of marble or hammered stone, being a smouldering mass of destruction.  
The dead bodies of those fallen in the massacre were on every side, in greatest profusion around the Place de Meir, among the Gothic pillars of the Exchange, and in the streets near the Town-house. The German soldiers lay in their armour, some with their heads burned from their bodies, some with legs and arms consumed by the flames through which they had fought.  
The Margrave Goyses Verreyck, the burgomaster Van der Meer, the magistrates Lancelot Van Urselen, Nicholas Van Boeckholt, and other leading citizens, lay among piles of less distinguished slain. They remained unburied until the overseers of the poor, on whom the living had then more importunate claims than the dead, were compelled by Roda to bury them out of the pauper fund.  
The murderers were too thrifty to be at funeral charges for their victims. The ceremony was not hastily performed, for the number of corpses had not been completed. Two days longer the havoc lasted in the city. Of all the crimes which men can commit, whether from deliberate calculation, or in the frenzy of passion, hardly one was omitted, for riot, gaming, rape, which had been postponed to the more stringent claims of robbery and murder, were now rapidly added to the sum of atrocities.  

History has recorded the account indelibly on her brazen tablets; it can be adjusted only at the judgment-seat above. Of all the deeds of darkness yet compassed in the Netherlands, this was the worst. It was called The Spanish Fury, by which dread name it has been known for ages. The city, which had been a world of wealth and splendour, was changed to a charnel-house, and from that hour its commercial prosperity was blasted. Other causes had silently girded the yet green and flourishing tree, but the Spanish Fury was the fire which consumed it to ashes. Three thousand dead bodies were discovered in the streets, as many more were estimated to have perished in the Scheid, and nearly an equal number were burned or destroyed in other ways. Eight thousand persons undoubtedly were put to death. Six millions of property were destroyed by the fire, and at least as much more was obtained by the Spaniards. In this enormous robbery no class of people was re-

---

1 Bor, lx. 731. Hoofd, xl. 465.  
2 “Het welk man mocht tellen onder de wonderen der wereld.” Address of the States of Brabant to the States-General, in Bor, lx. 734.  
3 Hoofd, xi. 462. Meteren, vi. 110.  
4 Bor, lx. 732. Hoofd, xi. 465.  
5 Ibid., lx. 731. Ibid., xi. 463.  
6 Hoofd, xi. 468.  
7 Remonstrances of the States of Brabant to the States-General.—Bor, lx. 735, 734.  
9 The estimate of Meteren is, that four millions, in hard cash alone, were obtained by the soldiery, exclusively of precious stones, other articles of jewellery, lace, brocades, embroidery, and similar property of a portable and convertible character. Meteren, vi. 111. The estimates of Hoofd and Bor do not materially differ. In single houses as much as 300,000 gildens were
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

...plundered, and mingled in the golden armour which they were forced to furnish much more alms than their employers knew. A portion of the captured booty was thus surreptitiously redeemed. 8

In this Spanish Fury many more were massacred in Antwerp than in the Saint Bartholomew at Paris. 9 Almost as many living human beings were dashed out of existence now as there had been statues destroyed in the memorable image-breaking of Antwerp, ten years before, an event which had sent such a thrill of horror through the heart of Catholic Christendom. Yet the Netherlanders and the Protestants of Europe may be forgiven if they regarded this massacre of their brethren with as much execration as had been bestowed upon that fury against stocks and stones. At least, the image-breakers had been actuated by an idea, and their hands were polluted neither with blood nor rapine. Perhaps the Spaniards had been governed equally by religious fanaticism. Might not they believe they were meriting well of their Mother Church while they were thus disencumbering infidels of their wealth and earth of its indulgences? Had not the Pope and his cardinals gone to church in solemn procession to render thanks unto God for the massacre of Paris? 10 Had not heretics been declared and declared so necessary to commemorate that auspicious event? Why should not the Antwerp execrations be thus again recommended? Even as toward their hated they had pronounced against with the Catholics with Jews, and burned with the sword they put to an incredible number of Israelites, and to an incredible superior amount of slaughter. Now should they now Simplicius were with it those wicked Ios. 5 No hundred fellow was among them,
The discrepancy seems monstrous; it is hardly more than often between the losses inflicted by the Spaniards in such actions. Their prowess was equal to their numbers, and this was enough to make them seem endowed with supernatural powers. When it is remembered, also, that the burghers were not fully armed, that many of the Spaniards turned against them, and that the number of Spaniards killed was so great that the complete destruction of the town was feared, and that the number killed was considered as the number of Spaniards killed, the discrepancy in the number of killed on the 26th will not seem so astonishing. Some officers of distinction were present, and carried to the castle. These were the Seigneur de Mendoza, who had been captured, fighting bravely at the head of a thousand men, by Julian Romero, who nine years before had stood on his father's scaffold, regarded this brutal scene with the utmost horror; but it was in vain, he said, to come from Spain. The Netherlanders were therefore, furnished the other half, so that 200,000 dollars, equal to 500,000 guilders, monthly, were to be added to the million required for their own war department. Here then was a tax of one and a half millions monthly, or eighteen millions yearly, simply for the keeping of the two armies on foot to destroy the Netherlanders and consume their substance. The frightful loss by confiscations, plunderings, brandecketttings, and the sackings of cities and villages innumerable, was all in all, of course, but that enormous amount. The regular expense in money which they were to meet, if they could, for the mere pay and provision of the armies, was as above, and equal to at least sixty millions yearly, making the common allowance for the difference in the value of money. This was certainly sufficient for a population of three million, Their frequent promises to maintain their liberty with their "goods and their blood" was no idle boast; three thousand men and one and a half million florins being consumed monthly.


3 Bor, ix. 731. Hoofd, xi. 462. Meteren, vi. 110.

Statistics.

The discrepancy seems monstrous; it is hardly more than often between the losses inflicted by the Spaniards in such actions. Their prowess was equal to their numbers, and this was enough to make them seem endowed with supernatural powers. When it is remembered, also, that the burghers were not fully armed, that many of the Spaniards turned against them, and that the number of Spaniards killed was so great that the complete destruction of the town was feared, and that the number killed was considered as the number of Spaniards killed, the discrepancy in the number of killed on the 26th will not seem so astonishing. Some officers of distinction were present, and carried to the castle. These were the Seigneur de Mendoza, who had been captured, fighting bravely at the head of a thousand men, by Julian Romero, who nine years before had stood on his father's scaffold, regarded this brutal scene with the utmost horror; but it was in vain, he said, to come from Spain. The Netherlanders were therefore, furnished the other half, so that 200,000 dollars, equal to 500,000 guilders, monthly, were to be added to the million required for their own war department. Here then was a tax of one and a half millions monthly, or eighteen millions yearly, simply for the keeping of the two armies on foot to destroy the Netherlanders and consume their substance. The frightful loss by confiscations, plunderings, brandecketttings, and the sackings of cities and villages innumerable, was all in all, of course, but that enormous amount. The regular expense in money which they were to meet, if they could, for the mere pay and provision of the armies, was as above, and equal to at least sixty millions yearly, making the common allowance for the difference in the value of money. This was certainly sufficient for a population of three million, Their frequent promises to maintain their liberty with their "goods and their blood" was no idle boast; three thousand men and one and a half million florins being consumed monthly.

2 Bor, ix. 731. Hoofd, xi. 412. Meteren, vi. 110. "— pour certaines bonnes considerations j’ai pris mon logis en ce château, qu’est la maison royalle de sa Majesté, pour d’uy parvoir et ordonner toutes les choses de son service, jusques les seigneurs du conseil soyent remis en leur entière liberté," etc.—Letter of Jerome de Roda to the authorities of Antwerp, Sept. 8, 1576. III. Register der Dolventen van Brabant, A. 1576, f. 308. MS., Haarlem Archives.

3 Bor, ix. 731. Hoofd, xi. 462. Meteren, vi. 110.
with haughty indignation. This behaviour had more effect upon Roda than the suppleness of Capres. "I am sorry for your misfortune, Count," said the councillor, without however rising from his chair; "such is the lot of those who take arms against their King." This was the unfortunate commencement of Philip Egmont's career, which was destined to be inglorious, vacillating, base, and on more than one occasion unlucky.

A shiver ran through the country as the news of the horrible crime was spread, but it was a shiver of indignation not of fear. Already the negotiations at Ghent between the representatives of the Prince and of Holland and Zeeland with the deputies of the other provinces were in a favourable train, and the effect of this event upon their counsels was rather quickening than appalling. A letter from Jerome de Roda to the King was intercepted, giving an account of the transaction. In that document the senator gave the warmest praise to Sancho d'Avila, Julian Romero, Alonso de Vargas, Francis Verdugo, as well as to the German colonels Fugger, Frondeberger, Polwiller, and others who had most exerted themselves in the massacre. "I wish your Majesty much good of this victory," concluded the councillor, "tis a very great one, and the damage to the city is enormous." This cynical view was not calculated to produce a soothing effect on the exasperated minds of the people. On the other hand, the estates of Brabant addressed an eloquent appeal to the states-general, reciting their wrongs, and urging immediate action. "Tis notorious," said the remonstrants, "that Antwerp was but yesterday the first and principal ornament of all Europe; the refuge of all the nations of the world; the source and supply of countless treasure; the nurse of all arts and industry; the protectress of the Roman Catholic

religion; the guardian of science and virtue: and, above all these pre-eminences, more than faithful and obedient to her sovereign prince and lord. The city is now changed to a gloomy cavern, filled with robbers and murderers, enemies of God, the King, and all good subjects." They then proceeded to recite the story of the massacre, "whereof the memory shall be abominable so long as the world stands," and concluded with an urgent appeal for redress. They particularly suggested that an edict should forthwith be passed, forbidding the alienation of property and the exportation of goods in any form from Antwerp, together with concession of the right to the proprietors of reclaiming their stolen property summarily, whenever, and wheresoever it might be found. In accordance with these instructions, an edict was passed, but somewhat tardily, in the hope of relieving some few of the evil consequences by which the Antwerp Fury had been attended.

At about the same time the Prince of Orange addressed a remarkable letter\(^5\) to the states-general then assembled at Ghent, urging them to hasten the conclusion of the treaty. The news of the massacre, which furnished an additional and most vivid illustration of the truth of his letter, had not then reached him at Middelburg, but the earnestness of his views, taken in connexion with this last dark deed, exerted a powerful and indelible effect. The letter was a masterpiece, because it was necessary, in his position, to inflame without alarming; to stimulate the feelings which were in unison, without shocking those which, if aroused, might prove discordant. Without, therefore, alluding in terms to the religious question, he dwelt upon the necessity of union, firmness, and wariness. If so much had been done by Holland and Zeeland, how much more might be hoped when all minabel wesen so lang als de wereld staaet," etc.—Remonstrance, etc. Bos., ubi sup.

\(^1\) Bor., Hoofd, Metere, ubi sup. Strada, viii. 418.
\(^2\) Letter of Roda, apud Bor., ix. 737, 738.
\(^3\) Remonstrance of the States of Brabant, in Bor., ix. 783.
\(^4\) Waer van de memorie is en sal abo.
\(^5\) Bor., ix. 736, 737.
\(^6\) The letter is published by Gachard, Correspondence de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. 140—164.
the provinces were united? "The principal flower of the Spanish army has fallen," he said, "without having been able to conquer one of those provinces from those whom they call, in mockery, poor beggars; yet what is that handful of cities compared to all the provinces which might join us in the quarrel." He warned the states of the necessity of shewing a strong and united front; the King having been ever led to consider the movement in the Netherlands a mere conspiracy of individuals. "The King told me himself, in 1559," said Orange, "that if the estates had no pillars to lean upon, they would not talk so loud." It was, therefore, necessary to shew that prelates, abbots, monks, esquires, gentlemen, burghers, and peasants, the whole people in short, now cried with one voice, and desired with one will. To such a demonstration the King would not dare oppose himself. By thus preserving a firm and united front, sinking all minor differences, they would, moreover, inspire their friends and foreign princes with confidence. The princes of Germany, the lords and gentlemen of France, the Queen of England, although sympathising with the misfortunes of the Netherlands, had been unable effectually to help them, so long as their disunion prevented them from helping themselves; so long as even their appeal to arms seemed merely a levy of bucklers, an emotion of the populace, which, like a wave of the sea, rises and sinks again as soon as risen."  

While thus exciting to union and firmness, he also took great pains to instil the necessity of wariness. They were dealing with an artful foe. Intercepted letters had already proved that the old dissimulation was still to be employed; that while Don John of Austria was on his way, the Dutch were to be lulled into confidence by glowing speeches. Roda was provided by the King with a secret programme of instructions for the new Governor's guidance, and Don Sancho d'Avila, for his countenance to the mutiniers of Alost, had been applauded to the echo in Spain. Was not this applause a frequent indication of the policy to be adopted by Don John, and a thousand times more significant one than the unmeaning phrases of barren benignity with which public documents might be crammed? "The old tricks are again brought into service," said the Prince; "therefore 'tis necessary to ascertain your veritable friends, to tear off the painted masks from those who, under pretence of not daring to displease the King, are seeking to swim between two waters. 'Tis necessary to have a touchstone; to sign a declaration in such wise that you may know whom to trust, and whom to suspect."  

The massacre at Antwerp and the eloquence of the Prince produced a most quickening effect upon the Congress at Ghent. Their deliberations had proceeded with decorum and earnestness, in the midst of the cannonading against the citadel, and the fortress fell on the same day which saw the conclusion of the treaty.  

This important instrument, by which the sacrifices and exertions of the Prince were, for a brief season, at least, rewarded, contained twenty-five articles. The Prince of Orange, with the estates of Holland and Zealand, on the one side, and the provinces signing, or thereafter to sign the treaty, on the other, agreed that there should be a mutual forgiving and forgetting as regarded the past. They vowed a close and faithful friendship for the future. They plighted a mutual promise to expel the Spaniards from the Netherlands without delay. As soon as this great deed should be done, there was to be a convocation of the states-gene-

---

1 Gachard, Corresp., etc., iii. 147, 148.  
2 Ibid., iii. 152.  
3 Ibid., iii. 159.  
4 Bor. ix. 707. Haed. xi. 470.—The final and decisive assault was made upon the 8th; the articles of surrender were arranged, and  
5 See them in Bor. ix. 735-741; Haed. xi. 467 and 479; Mendoza, xvi. 326-328; Metternich, vii. 112, sqq. et al.
eral, on the basis of that assembly before which the abdication of the Emperor had taken place. By this congress, the affairs of religion in Holland and Zeeland should be regulated, as well as the surrender of fortresses and other places belonging to his Majesty. There was to be full liberty of communication and traffic between the citizens of the one side and the other. It should not be legal, however, for those of Holland and Zeeland to attempt anything outside their own territory against the Roman Catholic religion, nor for cause thereof to injure or irritate any one, by deed or word. All the placards and edicts on the subject of heresy, together with the criminal ordinances made by the Duke of Alva, were suspended, until the states-general should otherwise ordain. The Prince was to remain lieutenant, admiral, and general for his Majesty in Holland, Zeeland, and the associated places, till otherwise provided by the states-general, after the departure of the Spaniards. The cities and places included in the Prince's commission, but not yet acknowledging his authority, should receive satisfaction from him, as to the point of religion and other matters, before subscribing to the union. All prisoners, and particularly the Comte de Bosu, should be released without ransom. All estates and other property not already alienated should be restored, all confiscations since 1566 being declared null and void. The Countess Palatine, widow of Brederode, and Count de Buren, son of the Prince of Orange, were expressly named in this provision. Prelates and ecclesiastical persons, having property in Holland and Zeeland, should be reinstated, if possible; but in case of alienation, which was likely to be generally the case, there should be reasonable compensation. It was to be decided by the states-general whether the provinces should discharge the debts incurred by the Prince of Orange in his

two campaigns. Provinces and cities should not have the benefit of this union until they had signed the treaty, but they should be permitted to sign it when they chose.¹

This memorable document was subscribed at Ghent, on the 8th of November, by Saint Aldegonde, with eight other commissioners appointed by the Prince of Orange and the estates of Holland on the one side, and by Elbertus Leoninus and other deputies appointed by Brabant, Flanders, Artois, Hainault, Valenciennes, Lille, Douay, Orchies, Namur, Tournay, Utrecht, and Mechlin on the other side.²

The arrangement was a masterpiece of diplomacy on the part of the Prince, for it was as effectual a provision for the safety of the Reformed religion as could be expected under the circumstances. It was much, considering the change which had been wrought of late years in the fifteen provinces, that they should consent to any treaty with their two heretic sisters. It was much more that the Pacification should recognize the new religion as the established creed of Holland and Zeeland, while at the same time the infamous edicts of Charles were formally abolished. In the fifteen Catholic provinces there was to be no prohibition of private Reformed worship, and it might be naturally expected that with time and the arrival of the banished religionists, a firmer stand would be taken in favour of the Reformation. Meantime, the new religion was formally established in two provinces, and tolerated, in secret, in the other fifteen; the Inquisition was for ever abolished, and the whole strength of the nation enlisted to expel the foreign soldiery from the soil. This was the work of William the Silent,³ and the great Prince thus saw the labour of years crowned with, at least, a momentary success. His satisfaction was very great when it was announced to him, many days before the exchange of the liberations concerning, such a document. The inference of Kluit (I. 146, 147) is that the Prince, with his council and nine commissioners, managed the whole negotiation; such was the confidence reposed in him by the two provinces.

¹ See particularly Artois, 1, 2, 4, 5, 7, 8, 10, and 25.
² Bor, ix. 741.
³ There is no mention in the Resolutions of Holland, from the 25th of April to the 8th of November 1576, of any draughts for a treaty, or of any preparations for, or de-
signatures, that the treaty had been concluded. He was desirous that the Pacification should be referred for appro
al, not to the municipal magistrates only, but to the people itself. In all great emergencies, the man who, in his whole character, least resembled a demagogue, either of antiquity or of modern times, was eager for a fresh expression of the popular will. On this occasion, however, the demand for approbation was superfluous. The whole country thought with his thoughts, and spoke with his words, and the Pacification, as soon as published, was received with a shout of joy. Proclaimed in the market-place of every city and village, it was ratified, not by votes, but by hymns of thanksgiving, by triumphal music, by thundering of cannon, and by the blaze of beacons, throughout the Netherlands. Another event added to the satisfaction of the hour. The country was recently, and by deeds of such remarkable audacity, conquered by the Spaniards in the north, was recovered almost simultaneously with the conclusion of the Ghent treaty. It was a natural consequence of the great mutiny. The troops having entirely deserted Mondragon, it became necessary for that officer to abandon Zierickze, the city which had been won with so much valour. In the beginning of November, the capital, and with it the whole island of Schouwen, together with the rest of Zealand, excepting Tholen, was recovered by Count Hohenlo, lieutenant-general of the Prince of Orange, and acting according to his instructions.

Thus, on this particular point of time, many great events had been crowded. At the very same moment Zealand had been redeemed, Antwerp ruined, and the league of all the Netherlands against the Spaniards concluded. It now became known that another and most important event had occurred at the same instant. On the day before the Antwerp massacre, four days before the publication of the Ghent treaty, a foreign cavalier, attended by a Moorish slave and by six men-at-arms, rode into the streets of Luxemburg. The cavalier was Don Ottavio Gonzaga, brother of the Prince of Melfi. The Moorish slave was Don John of Austria, the son of the Emperor, the conqueror of Granada, the hero of Lepanto. The new Governor-general had traversed Spain and France in disguise with great celerity, and in the romantic manner which belonged to his character. He stood at last on the threshold of the Netherlands, but with all his speed he had arrived a few days too late.

1 Two commissioners were, in fact, despatched to each city of Holland, to lay the treaty before the respective governments, and obtain their signatures.—Kluit, Holl., Staatsreg., i. 148.
2 Bor, ix. 740. Wagenaer, vii. 117.—"... avec une si grande joie et contente ment du peuple, de toutes les provinces en général et en particulier, qu'il n'est mémoire
PART V.

DON JOHN OF AUSTRIA.

1576–1578.

CHAPTER I.

Birth and parentage of Don John—Barbara Blomberg—Early education and recognition by Philip—brilliant military career—Campaign against the Moors—Battle of Lepeanto—Extravagant ambition—Secret and rapid journey of the new Governor to the Netherlands—Contrast between Don John and William of Orange—Secret instructions of Philip and private purposes of the Governor—Cautious policy and correspondence of the Prince—Preliminary negotiations with Don John at Luxembourg characterized—Union of Brussels—Resumption of negotiations with the Governor at Huy—The discussions analyzed and characterized—Influence of the new Emperor Rudolph II. and of his envoys—Treaty of March 1694—Famine, or the Perpetual Edict, signed—Remarks upon that transaction—Views and efforts of Orange in opposition to the treaty—His letter, in name of Holland and Zeeland, to the States-General—Anxiety of the royal government to gain over the Prince—Secret mission of Leoninus—His instructions from Don John—Fruitless attempts to corrupt the Prince—Secret correspondence between Don John and Orange—Don John at Louvain—His efforts to ingratiate himself with the Netherlands—His incipient popularity—Departure of the Spanish troops—Duke of Aarschot appointed Governor of Antwerp citadel—His insincere character.

Don John of Austria was now in his thirty-second year, having been born in Ratisbon on the 24th of February 1545.1 His father was Charles the Fifth, Emperor of Germany, King of Spain, Dominator of Asia, Africa, and America; his mother was Barbara Blomberg, washerwoman of Ratisbon. Introduced to the Emperor, originally, that she might alleviate his melancholy by her singing,2 she soon exhausted all that was harmonious in her nature, for never was a more uncomfortable, unmanageable personage than Barbara in her after life. Married to one Pyramus Kogell, who was made a military commissary in the Netherlands, she was left a widow in the beginning of Alva’s administration. Placed under the especial superintendence of the Duke, she became the torment of that warrior’s life. The terrible Governor, who could almost crush the heart out of a nation of three millions, was unable to curb this single tergiversant. Philip had expressly forbidden her to marry again, but Alva informed him that she was surrounded by suitors. Philip had insisted that she should go into a convent, but Alva, who, with great difficulty, had established her quietly in Ghent, assured his master that she would break loose again at the bare suggestion of a convent. Philip wished her to go to Spain, sending her word that Don John was mortified by the life his mother was leading, but she informed the Governor that she would

1 Strada, x. 500.
2 Ibid.—Compare Brantome, ii. 149.
be cut to pieces before she would go to Spain. She had no objection to see her son, but she knew too well how women were treated in that country. The Duke complained most pathetically to his Majesty of the life they all led with the ex-mistress of the Emperor. Never, he frequently observed, had woman so terrible a head. She was obstinate, reckless, abominably extravagant. She had been provided in Ghent with a handsome establishment: “with a duenna, six other women, a major domo, two pages, one chaplain, an almoner, and four men-servants, and this seemed a sufficiently liberal scheme of life for the widow of a commissary. Moreover, a very ample allowance had been made for the education of her only legitimate son, Conrad, the other having perished by an accident on the day of his father’s death. While Don John of Austria was gathering laurels in Granada, his half-brother, Pyramus junior, had been ingloriously drowned in a cistern at Ghent.

Barbara’s expenses were exorbitant; her way of life scandalous. To send her money, said Alva, was to throw it into the sea. In two days she would have spent in dissipation and feasting any sums which the King might choose to supply. The Duke, who feared nothing else in the world, stood in mortal awe of the widow Kegell. “A terrible woman,” wrote secretary Cayas, from Madrid, at the close of Alva’s administration; “for, notwithstanding every effort to entice, to intimidate, and to kidnap her from the Netherlands, there she remained, through all vicissitudes, even till the arrival of Don John. By his persuasions or commands she was, at last, induced to accept an exile for the remainder of her days, in Spain, but revenged herself by asserting that he was quite mistaken in supposing himself the Emperor’s child; a point, certainly, upon which her authority might be thought conclusive. Thus there was a double mystery about Don John. He might be the issue of august parentage on one side; he was, possibly, sprung of more ignoble blood. Base-bred, at best, he was not sure whether to look for the author of his being in the halls of the Caesars or the booths of Ratisbon mechanics.3

Whatever might be the heart of the mystery, it is certain that it was allowed to unwrap all the early life of Don John. The emperor, who certainly never doubted his responsibility for the infant’s existence, had him conveyed instantly to Spain, where he was delivered to Louis Quixada, of the Imperial household, by whom he was brought up in great retirement at Villa-garcía. Magdalen Ullos, wife of Quixada, watched over his infancy with maternal and mag-

---

1 Correspondance de Philippe II, 884, 912, 900, 909, 984, 987, 1025, 1054.

2 Corresp. de Philippe II, 1025. “Lo tine banqueteado” —“Quan terrible animal es una muger des enfrenada.”—Ibid., ii. 1766. Mercur., vi. 1194.—Compare Van der Hammen y Léon: Don Juan de Austria; Historia, Madrid, 1827, vii. 294. Strada, Brutune.—Compare V. d. Vynckt, ii. 218. “Wie fijne ware moeder gewest zil, is een madel gebleven, dat moet volkomen opge- kat is,” etc. etc.—Cabrera, xii. 1009. An absurd rumour had existed that Barbara Blomberg had only been employed to personate Don John’s mother. She died at an estate called Arronjo de Molinos, four leagues from Madrid, some years after the death of Don John.—Cabrera, xi. 1009. The following epistle, taken from a MS. collection of pasquilles of the day, shews what was a very general opinion in the Netherlands concerning the parentage of Don John and the position of Barbara Blomberg. The verses are not without ingenuity:—

---

"Echo."

"sed at Austricium nostrum redeamus emamus
Hunc Cesariam filium esse satis est notum
—nothum
Multa tamen de ejus patre dubitare—
vera
Cujus ergo filium cum dicunt Itali—Itali
Verum mater satis est nota in nostris re-
publica—publica
Imo haec nuntius ejus in Brabantia ter voere—
—hoere
Crimen est ne frul amplexu unius Cesarius
—tam generosi—osti
Pluribus ergo visa in virtut—ita est
Seu post Cesarius congressum non vere
—ante
Tace garrula ne tale quippiam loquare—
—quare?
Necessis qua præsa aficientium dixert Belg-
—ium insignie—ignae," etc. etc. etc. etc.

Vers Satiriques contre Don Jean d’Auvruche, Ms.,
Bibl. de Bourg., 17, 524."
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

204

necarious care, for her husband's extreme anxiety for the infant's welfare had convinced her that he was his father. On one occasion, when their house was in flames, Quixada rescued the infant before he saved his wife, "although Magdalena knew her son to be dearer to him than the apple of his eye." From that time forth she altered her opinion, and believed the mysterious child to be of lofty origin. The boy grew up full of beauty, grace, and agility, the leader of all his companions in every hard sport. Through the country round there were none who could throw the javelin, break a lance, or ride at the ring like little Juan Quixada. In taming unmanageable horses he was celebrated for his audacity and skill. These accomplishments, however, were likely to prove but slender advantage in the ecclesiastical profession, to which he had been destined by his Imperial father. The death of Charles occurred before clerical studies had been commenced, and Philip, to whom the secret had been confided at the close of the Emperor's life, prolonged the delay thus interposed. 1 Juan had already reached his fourteenth year, when one day his supposed father Quixada invited him to ride towards Valladolid to see the royal hunt. Two horses stood at the door—a splendidly caparisoned charger and a common hackney. The boy naturally mounted the humber steed, and they set forth for the mountains of Toro, but on hearing the bugles of the approaching huntsmen, Quixada suddenly halted, and bade his youthful companion exchange horses with himself. When this had been done, he seized the hand of the wondering boy, and, kissing it respectfully, exclaimed, "Your Highness will be informed as to the meaning of my conduct by his Majesty, who is even now approaching." They had proceeded but a short distance before they encountered the royal hunting party, when both Quixada and young Juan dismounted, and bent the knee to their monarch. Philip, commanding the boy to rise, asked him if he knew his father's name. Juan replied, with a sigh, that he had at that moment lost the only father whom he had known, for Quixada had just disowned him. "You have the same father as myself," cried the King; "the Emperor Charles was the august parent of us both." Then tenderly embracing him, he commanded him to remount his horse, and all returned together to Valladolid. Philip observing with a sentimentality that seems highly apocryphal, that he had never brought home such precious game from any hunt before. 2

This theatrical recognition of imperial descent was one among the many romantic incidents of Don John's picturesque career, for his life was never destined to know the commonplace. He now commenced his education, in company with his two nephews, the Duchess Margaret's son, and Don Carlos, Prince-royal of Spain. They were all of the same age, but the superiority of Don John was soon recognised. It was not difficult to surpass the limping, malicious, Carlos, either in physical graces or intellectual accomplishments; but the graceful, urbane, and chivalrous Alexander, destined afterwards to such wide celebrity, was a more formidable rival; yet even the professed panegyrist of the Farnese family extols the son of Barbara Blumenberg over the grandson of Margaret Van Geest. 3

Still destined for the clerical profession, Don John, at the age of eighteen, to avoid compliance with Philip's commands, made his escape to Barcelona. It was his intention to join the Maltese expedition. Recalled peremptorily by Philip, he was for a short time in disgrace, but afterwards brain of Father Strada. Placed in a severe crucible, much of the romantic filigree would perhaps disappear, but the substance of his narrative is genuine.—Compare V. d. Vynckt, ii. 219.

1 Strada, x. 508, 507 Calvin, xi. 874.

2 "Nuncquam se juventuatu venando praebuit quam in retibus domum."—Strada, x. 508.

3 Strada, x. 509.
made his peace with the monarch by denouncing some of the mischievous schemes of Don Carlos. Between the Prince Royal and the imperial bastard, there had always been a deep animosity, the Infante having on one occasion saluted him with the most vigorous and offensive appellation which his illegitimate birth could suggest. "Bastard or not," returned Don John, "at any rate I had a better father than yours."

The words were probably reported to Philip, and doubtless rankled in his breast, but nothing appeared on the surface, and the youth rose rapidly in favour. In his twenty-third year, he was appointed to the command of the famous campaign against the insurgent Moors of Granada. Here he reaped his first laurels, and acquired great military celebrity. It is difficult to be dazzled by such glory. He commenced his operations by the expulsion of nearly all the Moorish inhabitants of Granada, bedridden men, women, and children together; and the cruelty inflicted, the sufferings patiently endured in that memorable deportation, were enormous. But few of the many thousand exiles survived the horrid march, those who were so unfortunate as to do so being sold into slavery by their captors. Still a few Moors held out in their mountain fastnesses, and two years long the rebellion of this handful made head against the power of Spain. Had their envoys to the Porte succumbed in their negotiation, the throne of Philip might have trembled; but Selim list the Republic of Venice as much as he loved the wine of Cyprus. While the Moors were gazing out their last breath in Granada and Ronda, the Turks had wrested the island of Venus from the grasp of the haughty Republic. Famagusta had fallen; thousands of Venetians had been butchered with a ferocity which even Christians could not have surpassed. The famous General Bragadino had been flayed, stuffed, and sent hanging on the yard-arm of a frigate to Constantinople, as a present to the Commander of the Faithful; and the mortgage of Catherine Cornaro, to the exclusion of her husband's bastards, had been thus definitely cancelled. With such practical enjoyments, Selim was indifferent to the splendid but shadowy vision of the Occidental caliphate—yet the revolt of the Moors was only terminated, after the departure of Don John, by the Duke of Arcos.

The war which the Sultan had avoided in the West came to seek him in the East. To lift the Crucifix against the Crescent, at the head of the powerful but quarrelsome alliance between Venice, Spain, and Rome, Don John arrived at Naples. He brought with him more than a hundred ships and twenty-three thousand men, as the Spanish contingent. Three months long the hostile fleets had been cruising in the same waters without an encounter; three more were wasted in barren manoeuvres. Neither Mussulman nor Christian had much inclination for the conflict, the Turk fearing the consequences of a defeat, by which gains already secured might be forfeited—the allies being appalled at the possibility of their own triumph. Nevertheless, the Ottomans manoeuvred themselves at last into the Gulf of Lepanto—the Christians manoeuvred themselves towards its mouth as the foe was coming forth again. The conflict thus rendered inevitable, both Turk and Christian became equally eager for the fray, equally confident of victory. Six hundred vessels of war met face to face. Rarely in history had so gorgeous a scene of martial array been witnessed. An October sun gilded the thousand beauties of an Ionian landscape. Athens and Corinth were behind the combatants; the mountains of Alexander's Macedon rose in the distance; the rock of Sappho and the heights of

---

1 "Hijo de puta." The anecdote is related by V. der Vynckt (t. 299) on the authority of Amelot de la Boussaye. "Yo soy hijo del mejor padre."—Strada, x. 500.

2 Strada, 500. De Thou, lv. vii. 72, seq. (tom. vi.).


4 Cabrera, ix. 675* De Thou, vi. 220.
Actium were before their eyes. Since the day when the world had been lost and won beneath that famous promontory, no such combat as the one now approaching had been fought upon the waves. The chivalrous young commander despatched energetic messages to his fellow-chieftains, and now that it was no longer possible to elude the encounter, the martial armour of the allies was kindled. The Venetian High Admiral replied with words of enthusiasm. Colonna, lieutenant of the league, answered his chief in the language of St Peter: “Though I die, yet will I not deny thee.”

The fleet was arranged in three divisions. The Ottomans, not drawn up in crescent form, as usual, had the same triple disposition. Barbarigo and the other Venetians commanded on the left, John Andrew Doria on the right, while Don John himself and Colonna were in the centre. Crucifix in hand, the High Admiral rowed from ship to ship exhorting generals and soldiers to shew themselves worthy of a cause which he had persuaded himself was holy. Fired by his eloquence and by the sight of the enemy, his hearers answered with eager shouts, while Don John returned to his ship, knelt upon the quarter-deck, and offered a prayer. He then ordered the trumpets to sound the assault, commanded his sailing-master to lay him alongside the Turkish Admiral, and the battle began. The Venetians, who were first attacked, destroyed ship after ship of their assailants after a close and obstinate contest, but Barbarigo fell dead ere the sunset, with an arrow through his brain. Meanwhile the action, immediately after the first onset, had become general. From noon till evening the battle raged, with a carnage rarely recorded in history. Don John’s own ship lay yard-arm and yard-arm with the Turkish Admiral, and exposed to the fire of seven large vessels besides. It was a day when personal audacity, not skilful tactics, was demanded, and the imperial bastard shewed the metal he was made of. The Turkish Admiral’s ship was destroyed, his head exposed from Don John’s deck upon a pike, and the trophy became the signal for a general panic and a complete victory. By sunset the battle had been won.

Of nearly three hundred Turkish galleys, but fifty made their escape. From twenty-five to thirty thousand Turks were slain, and perhaps ten thousand Christians. The galley-slaves on both sides fought well, and the only beneficial result of the victory was the liberation of several thousand Christian captives. It is true that their liberty was purchased with the lives of a nearly equal number of Christian soldiers, and by the reduction to slavery of almost as many thousand Musulmen, duly distributed among the Christian victors. Many

---

1 De Thou, vi. liv. i. 226, et seq. Cabrera, ix. cap. 24, 25. Brantome, ii. 110, et seq. See the statements of Al-Hamet, after the battle, to the Conqueror—Navarrete, Documentos Ineditos, iii. 249—251. Total number of Christian ships, three hundred and thirty-six; of Turkish, two hundred and eighty-three—Relacion certa y verdadera, Documentos Ineditos, iii. 255—256. “Etiam si oportet me mori, non te negabo.”—Brantome, Hommes Illust., i. 132.


3 Cabrera says that thirty thousand Turks were slain, ten thousand made prisoners, ten thousand Christians killed, and fifteen thousand Christian prisoners liberated, ix. 699. De Thou’s estimate is twenty-five thousand Turks killed, three thousand prisoners, and ten thousand Christians killed, vi. 247. Brantome states the number of Turks killed at thirty thousand, without counting those who were drowned, or who died afterwards of their wounds; six thousand prisoners, twelve thousand Christian prisoners liberated, and ten thousand Christians killed. Hoofd, vi. 214, gives the figures at twenty-five thousand Turks and ten thousand Christians slain. Bor. v. 384 (t. 1.), makes a minute estimate, on the authority of Pietro Contareno, stating the number of Christians killed at seven thousand six hundred and fifty, that of Turks at twenty-five thousand one hundred and fifty; Turkish prisoners at three thousand eight hundred and forty-six, and Christians liberated at twelve thousand; giving the number of Turkish ships destroyed at eighty, captured fifty. According to the “Relacion certa y verdadera” (which was drawn up
causes contributed to this splendid triumph. The Turkish ships, inferior in number, were also worse manned than those of their adversaries, and their men were worse armed. Every bullet of the Christians told on muslin turbans and embroidered tunics, while the arrows of the Moslems fell harmless on the casques and corsets of their foes. The Turks, too, had committed the fatal error of fighting upon a lee shore. Having no sea room, and being repelled in their first onset, many galleys were driven upon the rocks, to be destroyed with all their crew.

But whatever the cause of the victory, its consequence was to spread the name and fame of Don John of Austria throughout the world. Alva wrote, with enthusiasm, to congratulate him; pronouncing the victory the most brilliant one ever achieved by Christians, and Don John the greatest general since the death of Julius Cæsar. At the same time, with a sarcastic fling at the erection of the Escorial, he advised Philip to improve this new success in some more practical way than by building a house for the Lord and a sepulchre for the dead. “If,” said the Duke, “the conquests of Spain be extended in consequence of this triumph, then, indeed, will the Cherubim and Seraphim sing glory to God.” A courier, despatched post haste to Spain, bore the glorious news, together with the sacred standard of the Prophet, the holy of holies, inscribed with the name of Allah twenty-eight thousand nine hundred times, always kept in Mecca during peace, and never since the conquest of Constantinople lost in battle before. The King was at vespers in the Escorial. Entering the sacred precincts, breathless, travel-stained, excited, the messenger found Philip impassible as marble to the wondrous news. Not a muscle of the royal visage was moved, not a syllable escaped the royal lips, save a brief order to the clergy to continue the uninterrupted vespers. When the service had been methodically concluded, the King made known the intelligence and requested a Te Deum.

The youthful commander-in-chief obtained more than his full meed of glory. No doubt he had fought with brilliant courage, yet, in so close and murderous a conflict, the valour of no single individual could decide the day, and the result was due to the combined determination of all. Had Don John remained at Naples, the issue might have easily been the same. Barbarigo, who sealed the victory with his blood; Colonna, who celebrated a solemn triumph on his return to Rome; Parma, Doria, Giustiniani, Venieri, might each as well have claimed a monopoly of the glory, had not the Pope, at Philip’s entreaty, conferred the baton of command upon Don John. The

few days after the action, the number of Turks slain was “thirty thousand and upwards, besides many prisoners;” that of Christians killed was seven thousand; of Christian slaves liberated, twelve thousand; of Ottoman ships taken or destroyed, two hundred and thirty. Documentos Inéditos, vi. 940. Philip sent an express order, forbidding the ransoming of even the captive officers (Carta de F. II. à D. J. de Zuñiga, Documentos Inéditos, iii. 236). The Turkish slaves were divided among the victors in the proportion of one-half to Philip and one-half to the Pope and Venice. The other booty was distributed on the same principle. Out of the Pope’s share Don John received, as a present, one hundred and seventy-four slaves (Documentos Inéditos, iii. 229). Alexander of Parma received thirty slaves; Requesens, thirty. To each general of infantry was assigned six slaves; to each colonel, four; to each ship’s captain, one. The number of “slaves in chains” (esclavos de ca-
dena) allotted to Philip was thirty-six hundred (Documentos Inéditos, 257). Seven thousand two hundred Turkish slaves, therefore, at least, were divided among Christians. This number of wretches, who were not fortunate enough to die with their twenty-five thousand comrades, must be set off against the twelve thousand Christian slaves liberated in the general settlement of the account with Humanity.

1 De Thou, vi. 245, 246, 247.
2 Parabién del Duque de Alba, Documentos Inéditos, ii. 266.
3 Relation por Luis del Marmol, Documentos Inéditos, iii. 270-573.
4 De Thou, vi. 243.—Compare Cabrera, ix. 6599. Brautome, ii. 123. Even Don John’s favourite monkey distinguished himself in the action. The creature is reported to have picked up a shell, which had fallen upon a holy shrine, close to its master’s foot, and to have thrown it overboard.—Van der Hammen y Leon, iii. 190.
meagre result of the contest is as notorious as the victory. While Constantinople was quivering with apprehension, the rival generals were already wrangling with animosity. Had the Christian fleet advanced, every soul would have fled from the capital, but Providence had ordained otherwise, and Don John sailed westwardly with his ships. He made a descent on the Barbary coast, captured Tunis, destroyed Bizerta, and brought King Amidas and his two sons prisoners to Italy. Ordered by Philip to dismantle the fortifications of Tunis, he replied by repairing them thoroughly, and by placing a strong garrison within the citadel. Intoxicated with his glory, the young adventurer already demanded a crown, and the Pope was disposed to proclaim him King of Tunis, for the Queen of the Lybian seas was to be the capital of his Empire, the new Carthage which he already dreamed.

Philip thought it time to interfere, for he felt that his own crown might be insecure, with such a restless and ambitious spirit indulging in possible and impossible chimeras. He removed John de Soto, who had been Don John’s chief councillor and emissary to the Pope, and substituted in his place the celebrated and ill-starred Escovedo. The new secretary, however, entered as heartily but secretly into all these romantic schemes. Disappointed of the Empire which he had contemplated on the edge of the African desert, the champion of the Cross turned to the cold islands of the northern seas. There sighed, in captivity, the beauteous Mary of Scotland, victim of the heretic Elizabeth. His susceptibility to the charms of beauty—a characteristic as celebrated as his courage—was excited, his chivalry aroused. What holier triumph for the conqueror of the Saracens than the subjugation of these northern infidels? He would dethrone the proud Elizabeth; he would liberate and espouse the Queen of Scots, and together they would reign over the two united realms. All that the Pope could do with bulls and blessings, letters of excommunication, and patents of investiture, he did with his whole heart. Don John was at liberty to be King of England and Scotland as soon as he liked; all that was left to do was to conquer the kingdom.

Meantime, while these schemes were fitting through his brain, and were yet kept comparatively secret by the Pope, Escovedo, and himself, the news reached him in Italy that he had been appointed Governor-General of the Netherlands. Nothing could be more opportune. In the provinces were ten thousand veteran Spaniards, ripe for adventure, hardened by years of warfare, greedy for gold, audacious almost beyond humanity, the very instruments for his scheme. The times were critical in the Netherlands, it was true; yet he would soon pacify those paltry troubles, and then sweep forward to his prize. Yet events were rushing forward with such feverish rapidity, that he might be too late for his adventure. Many days were lost in the necessary journey from Italy into Spain to receive the final instructions of the King. The news from the provinces grew more and more threatening. With the impetuosity and romance of his temperament, he selected his confidential friend Osmario Gonzaga, six men-at-arms, and an adroit and well-experienced Swiss courier, who knew every road of France. It was no light adventure
the Catholic Governor-General of the Netherlands to traverse the kingdom at that particular juncture. 

aining his bright locks and fair face - the complexion of a Moor, he started on his journey, attired as the servant of Gonzaga. Arriving at Paris, after a rapid journey, he descended at hostelry opposite the residence of the Spanish ambassador, Don Diego de Guzmán. After nightfall he had a secret interview with that functionary, and learning, among other matters, that there was to be a great ball that night at the Louvre, he determined to go thither in disguise. There, notwithstanding his hurry, he had time to see and to become desperately enamoured of "that wonder of beauty," the fair and frail Margaret of Valois, Queen of Navarre. Her subsequent visit to her young adorer at Namur, to be recorded in a future page of this history, was destined to mark the last turning point in his picturesque career.

On his way to the Netherlands he held a rapid interview with the Duke of Guise, to arrange his schemes for the liberation and espousal of that noble's kinswoman, the Scottish Queen; and on the 3d of November he arrived at Luxemburg.

There stood the young conqueror of Lepanto, his brain full of schemes, his heart full of hopes, on the threshold of the Netherlands, at the entrance to what he believed the most brilliant chapter of his life—schemes, hopes, and visions, doomed speedily to fade before the cold reality with which he was to be confronted. Throwing off his disguise after reaching Luxemburg, the youthful paladin stood confessed. His appearance was as romantic as his exigim and his exploits. Every contemporary chronicler, French, Spanish, Italian, Flemish, Roman, have dwelt upon his personal beauty and the singular fascination of his manner. Symmetrical features, blue eyes of great vivacity, and a profusion of bright curling hair, were combined with a person not much above middle height, but perfectly well proportioned. Owing to a natural peculiarity of his head, the hair fell backward from the temples, and he had acquired the habit of pushing it from his brows. The custom became a fashion among the host of courtiers, who were but too happy to gape themselves in so brilliant a mirror. As Charles the Fifth, on his journey to Italy to assume the iron crown, had caused his hair to be clipped close, as a remedy for the headaches with which, at that momentous epoch, he was tormented, bringing thereby close shaven polls into extreme fashion; so a mass of hair pushed backward from the temples, in the style to which the name of John of Austria was appropriated, became the prevailing mode wherever the favourite son of the Emperor appeared.

Such was the last crusader whom the annals of chivalry were to know; the man who had humbled the crescent as it had not been humbled since the days of the Tancreds, the Baldwins, the Plantagenets—yet, after all, what was this brilliant adventurer when weighed against the tranquil Christian champion whom he was to meet face to face? The contrast was striking between the real and the romantic hero. Don John had pursued and achieved glory through victories with which the world was ringing; William was slowly compassing a country's emancipation through a series of defeats. He moulded a commonwealth and united hearts with as much contempt for danger as Don John had exhibited in scenes of slave-driving and carnage. Amid fields of blood, and through webs of tortuous intrigue, the brave and subtle son of the Emperor pursued only his own objects. Tawdry schemes of personal ambition, conquests for his own benefit, impossible crowns for his own wearing, were the motives which impelled him, and the prizes which he sought. His existence was feverish, fitful, and passionate. "Transquil amid the raging


The Rise of the Dutch Republic

...waving,* according to his favourite device, the father of his country, waved aside the diadem which for him had neither charm nor meaning. Their characters were so contrasted as their persons. The curled darling of Calvinism seemed a youth at thirty-one. Spare of figure, plain in apparel, blemishant, but haggard of countenance, with temples bared by anxiety as much as by his helmet, earnest, almost devout in manner, in his own words, "Calvinus et Calvinista." William of Orange was an old man at forty-three.

Perhaps there was as much good faith on the part of Don John, when he arrived in Luxembourg, as could be expected of a man coming directly from the cabinet of Philip. The King had secretly instructed him to conciliate the provinces, but to concede nothing.* For the Governor was only a new incarnation of the insane paradox that benignity and the system of Charles the Fifth were one. He was directed to restore the government to its state during the imperial epoch. Seven provinces, in two of which the population were all dissenters, in all of which the principle of mutual toleration had just been accepted by Catholics and Protestants, were now to be brought back to the condition according to which all Protestants were beheaded, burned, or buried alive. So that the Inquisition, the absolute authority of the monarch, and the exclusive worship of the Roman Church, were preserved intact, the King professed himself desirous of "extinguishing the fires of rebellion, and of saving the people from the last desperation." With these slight exceptions, Philip was willing to be very benignant. "More than this," said he, "cannot...

1 On the Calvinists' reaction, see the note. Compare Strada, IX, 41. * Arsechoi Ducal — capite salutis, venditum capite damnati, eto magis capite quam corde salvum esse. Strada, IX, 434, 435.

2 Instruccin Secreta que el Rey D. Felipe II. dio al Sen. D. J. de Austria, escribi la de mano propia. Bibl. de Bourgogne, MS. No. xvi. 385.

3 "Que se vuelve a la divina ... del Emperador." etc. — Instruccin Secreta, MS.

4 "—— Salvando la Religion y mi enojo, quanto se puede llegar las cosas a estos termos supuestos que conviene austeritar este fuego y no dexar llegar aquella gente a la ultima desesperacion. Y con ello se cierra todo que se devo conceder," et al. Ibid.

5 "—— Lo de la quenta con su alma — Andar con tiento en los amores," etc. ibid.

6 Bor, IX, 678. The edict was dated 28th of March 1576.
Counsels of Orange.

The new Governor's fame, fascinating manners, and imperial parentage, he might accomplish a result which either fraud nor force—not the arts of Granvelle, nor the atrocious of Alva, nor the licentiousness of a buccaneering soldier—had been able to effect. As for Don John himself, he came with no definite plans for the Netherlands, but with very daring projects of his own, and to pursue these misty visions was his main business on arriving in the province. In the meantime he was disposed to settle the Dutch difficulty in some showy, off-hand fashion, which should cost him but little trouble, and occasion no detriment to the cause of Papacy or absolutism. Unfortunately for these rapid arrangements, William of Orange was in Zealand, and the Pacification had just been signed at Ghent.

It was, naturally, with very little satisfaction that the Prince beheld the arrival of Don John. His sagacious combinations would henceforth be impeded, if not wholly frustrated. This he foresaw. He knew that there could be no intention of making any arrangement in which Holland and Zealand could be included. He was confident that any recognition of the Reformed religion was as much out of the question now as ever. He doubted not that there were many Catholic magnates, wavering politicians, aspirants for royal favour, who would soon be ready to desert the cause which had so recently been made a general cause, and who would soon be undermining the work of their own hands. The Pacification of Ghent would never be maintained, in letter and spirit by the viceregent of Philip; for however its sense might be commented upon or perverted, the treaty, while it recognised Catholicism as the state religion, conceded, to a certain extent, liberty of conscience. An immense stride had been taken by abolishing the edicts, and prohibiting persecution. If that step were now retraced, the new religion was doomed, and the liberties of Holland and Zealand destroyed. "If they make an arrangement with Don John, it will be for us of the religion to run," wrote the Prince to his brother, "for their intention is to suffer no person of that faith to have a fixed domicile in the Netherlands." 1 It was, therefore, with a calm determination to counteract and crush the policy of the youthful Governor that William the Silent awaited his antagonist. Were Don John admitted to confidence, the peace of Holland and Zealand was gone. Therefore it was necessary to combat him both openly and secretly—by loud remonstrance and by invisible stratagem. What chance had the impetuous and impatient young hero, in such an encounter with the foremost statesman of the age? He had arrived with all the self-confidence of a conqueror; he did not know that he was to be played upon like a pipe—to be caught in meshes spread by his own hands—to struggle blindly—to rage impotently—to die ingloriously.

The Prince had lost no time in admonishing the states-general as to the course which should now be pursued. He was of opinion, that upon their conduct at this crisis depended the future destinies of the Netherlands. "If we understand how to make proper use of the new Governor's arrival," said he, "it may prove very advantageous to us; if not, it will be the commencement of our total ruin." 2 The spirit of all his communications was to infuse the distrust which he honestly felt, and which he certainly took no pains to disguise; to impress upon his countrymen the importance of improving the present emergency by the enlargement, instead of the threatened contraction of their liberties, and to enforce with all his energy the necessity of a firm union. He assured the estates that Don John had been sent, in this simple manner, to the country, because the King and cabinet had begun to despair of carrying their point by force. At the same time he warned them that force would doubtless be replaced by fraud. He expressed his conviction that so soon as Don John

1 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, v. 544.
2 Archives et Correspondance, v. 495.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

Little children, they whistle to the trees they would catch. Promises and promises they will furnish in plenty."

He urged them on no account to begin any negotiation with the Governor, except in the basis of the immediate departure of the soldiery. "Make no agreement with him unless the Spaniards and other foreign troops have been sent away beforehand; beware, meantime, of disbanding your own, for that were to put the knife into his hands to cut your own throats withal."

He then proceeded to sketch the outlines of a negotiation, such as he could recommend. The plan was certainly sufficiently bold, and it could hardly cause astonishment, if it were not immediately accepted by Don John as the basis of an arrangement. "Remember this is not play," said the Prince, "and that you have to choose between the two, either total ruin or manly self-defence. Don John must command the immediate departure of the Spaniards. All our privileges must be revised, and an oath to maintain them required. New councils of state and finance must be appointed by the estates. The general assembly ought to have power to come together twice or thrice yearly, and, indeed, as often as they choose. The states-general must administer and regulate all affairs. The citadels must be demolished everywhere. No troopsought to be enlisted, nor garrisons established, without the consent of the estates."

In all the documents, whether public memorials or private letters, which came at this period from the hand of the Prince, he assumed, as a matter of course, that in any arrangement with the new Governor the pacification of Ghent was to be maintained. This, too, was the determination of almost every man in the country. Don John, soon after his arrival at Luxemburg, had despatched messengers to the states-general, informing them of his arrival. It was not before the close of the month of November that the ne-

---

1 Archives de Correspondance, v. 496.
2 Letter to the states-general, 30th of November 1578, in Dor, 747, 748, 749.
3 "Het ware hem het mes in de hand gevoen door mohu den hals maken abyzyden," etc.—Ibid., p. 748.
4 Letter to states-general, etc.
First Conferences with Don John.

1876.[

Negotiations seriously began. Provost Fock, on the part of the Governor, then informed them of Don John’s intention to enter Namur, attended by fifty mounted troopers. Permission, however, was absolutely refused, and the burghers of Namur were forbidden to render oaths of fidelity until the Governor should have complied with the preliminary demands of the estates. To enumerate these demands categorically, a deputation of the estates-general came to Luxemburg. These gentlemen were received with courtesy by Don John, but their own demeanour was not conciliatory. A dislike to the Spanish government, a disloyalty to the monarch with whose brother and representative they were dealing, pierced through all their language.

On the other hand, the ardent temper of Don John was never slow to take offence. One of the deputies proposed to the Governor, with great coolness, that he should assume the government in his own name, and renounce the authority of Philip. Were he willing to do so, the patriotic gentleman pledged himself that the provinces would at once acknowledge him as sovereign, and sustain his government. Don John, enraged at the insult to his own loyalty which the proposition implied, drew his dagger and rushed towards the offender. The deputy would probably have paid for his audacity with his life had there not been bystanders enough to prevent the catastrophe. This scene was an unsatisfactory prelude to the opening negotiations.

In the 6th of December the deputies presented to the Governor at Luxemburg a paper, containing their demands, drawn up in eight articles, and their concessions in ten. The states insisted on the immediate removal of the troops, with the understanding that they were never to return, but without prohibiting their departure by sea; they demanded the immediate release of all prisoners; they insisted on the maintenance of the Ghent treaty, there being nothing therein which did not tend to the furtherance of the Catholic religion; they claimed an act of amnesty; they required the convocation of the states-general, on the basis of that assembly before which took place the abdication of Charles the Fifth; they demanded an oath, on the part of Don John, to maintain all the charters and customs of the country.

Should these conditions be complied with, the deputies consented on the part of the estates, that he should be acknowledged as Governor, and that the Catholic religion and the authority of his Majesty should be maintained. They agreed that all foreign leagues should be renounced, their own foreign soldiery disbanded, and a guard of honour, native Netherlands, such as his Majesty was contented with at his “Blythe Entrance,” provided. A truce of fifteen days, for negotiations, was furthermore proposed.

Don John made answers to these propositions by adding a brief comment, as apostille, upon each of the eighteen articles, in succession. He would send away the troops, but, at the same time, the states must discharge their own. He declined engaging himself not to recall his foreign soldiery, should necessary require their service. With regard to the Ghent Pacification, he professed himself ready for a general peace negotiation, on

vii. 237.—Compare V. d. Vyne, who relates the circumstance much in the same manner as Strada. V. d. Vyne, ii. 237, 238. Also Tassis, iii. 241, who states that the Governor was so angry with the deputy—"ut praeterea subdita propria manus vix abstinerit." Compare J. F. Van Capelle, Elb. Leonineus in Bijdragen tot de Gesch. der Ned., 47-49. The story of Reid is entirely improbable, and is consistent with the character of neither of the principal personages implicated.

See the articles in Bor. x. 762, 763.

1 Bor. x. 761. 2 Ibid. 3 Strada. x. 512. The anecdote is, however, related differently by other historians, according to some of whom the intimation was made indirectly on the part of the Prince of Orange, through Eberthi Leoni ne to Don John, that if he chose to assume the sovereignty himself, he might rely on the support of the Protestants and patriotic party. According to the same authorities, Don John neither accepted nor rejected the offer.—See Ev. Reid, sam. i. 37; Wagenaer, 5 See the articles in Bor. x. 762, 763. 6 Ibid. 7 Bor. x. 763.
condition that the supremacy of the Catholic Church and the authority of his Majesty were properly secured. He would settle upon some act of amnesty after due consultation with the State Council. He was willing that the states should be convened in general assembly, provided sufficient security were given him that nothing should be done transacted prejudicial to the Catholic religion and the King's sovereignty. As for their privileges, he would govern as had been done in the time of his imperial father. He expressed his satisfaction with most of the promises offered by the estates, particularly with their expression in favour of the Church and of his Majesty's authority; the two all-important points to secure which he had come thither unattended, at the peril of his life; but he received their offer of a body-guard, by which his hirings were to be superseded, with very little gratitude. He was on the point, he said, of advancing as far as Marche en Famine, and should take with him as strong a guard as he considered necessary, and composed of such troops as he had at hand. Nothing decisive came of this first interview. The parties had taken the measures of their mutual claims, and after a few days, fencing with apostilles, replies, and rejoinders, they separated, their acrimony rather inflated than appeased.

The departure of the troops and the Ghent treaty were the vital points in the negotiation. The estates had originally been content that the troops should go by sea. Their suspicions were, however, excited by the pertinacity with which Don John held to this mode of removal. Although they did not suspect the mysterious invasion of England, a project which was the real reason why the Governor objected to their departure by land, yet they soon became aware that he had been secretly tampering with the troops at every point. The effect of these secret negotiations with leading officers of the army was a general expression of their unwillingness, on account of the lateness of season, the difficult and dangerous condition of the roads and mountain passes, the plague in Italy, and of pretexts, to undertake so long a journey by land. On the other hand the states, seeing the anxiety and duplicity of Don John upon this particular point, came to the resolution to thwart him at all hazards, and insisted on the land journey. Too late, too much money, too many ships would be necessary, they said, forward to a large force by sea, and the meantime it would be necessary to permit them to live for another indefinite period at the charge of the estates.

With regard to the Ghent Pacification, the estates, in the course of December, procured an express opinion from the eleven professors of theology and doctors utriusque juris of Louvain that the treaty contained nothing which conflicted with the supremacy of the Catholic religion. The various bishops, deacons, abbots, and pastors of the Netherlands made a similar decision. An elaborate paper, drawn up by the State Council, at the request of the states-general, declared that there was nothing in the Pacification derogatory to the supreme authority of his Majesty. Thus satisfied with opinions which, it must be confessed, were rather dogmatical than argumentatively drawn up, which it would have been difficult to logically defend, the states looked forward confidently to the event acceptance by Don John of the terms proposed. In the meantime, while there was still an indefinite pause in the negotiations, a remarkable measure came to aid the efficacy of the Ghent Pacification.

Early in January 1577, the
brated "Union of Brussels" was formed. This important agreement was originally signed by eight leading personages, the Abbot of Saint Gertrude, the Counts Lalain and Bossu, and the Seigneur de Champagne being among the number. Its tenor was to engage its signers to compass the immediate expulsion of the Spaniards and the execution of the Ghent Pacification, to maintain the Catholic religion and the King's authority, and to defend the fatherland and all its constitutions. Its motive was to generalise the position assumed by the Ghent treaty. The new act was to be signed, not by a few special deputies, as a diplomatic convention, but by all the leading individuals of all the provinces, in order to exhibit to Don John such an array of united strength that he would find himself forced to submit to the demands of the estates. The tenor, motive, and effect were all as had been proposed and foreseen. The agreement to expel the Spaniards, under the Catholic and loyal manifestations indicated, passed from hand to hand through all the provinces. It soon received the signature and support of all the respectability, wealth, and intelligence of the whole country. Nobles, ecclesiastics, citizens, hastened to give to it their assent. The states-general had sent it, by solemn resolution, to every province, in order that every man might be forced to range himself either upon the side of the fatherland or of despotism. Two copies of the signatures received in each province were ordered, of which one was to be deposited in its archives, and the other forwarded to Brussels. In a short time, every province, with the single exception of Luxemburg, had loaded the document with signatures. This was a great step forward. The Ghent Pacification, which was in the nature of a treaty between the Princes and the estates of Holland and Zeeland on the one side, and a certain number of provinces on the other, had only been signed by the envoys of the contracting parties. Though received with deserved and universal acclamation, it had not the authority of a popular document. This, however, was the character studiously impressed upon the "Union of Brussels." The people, subdivided according to the various grades of their social hierarchy, had been solemnly summoned to council, and had deliberately recorded their conviction. No restraint had been put upon their freedom of action, and there was hardly a difference of opinion as to the necessity of the measure. A rapid revolution in Friesland, Groningen, and the dependencies, had recently restored that important country to the national party. The Portuguese De Billy had been deprived of his authority as King's stadtholder, and Count Hoogstraaten's brother, Baron de Ville, afterwards as Count Renneberg, infamous for his treason to the cause of liberty, had been appointed by the estates in his room. In all this district the "Union of Brussels" was eagerly signed by men of every degree. Holland and Zeeland, no less than the Catholic provinces of the south, willingly accepted the compromise which was thus laid down, and which was thought to be not only an additional security for the past, not only a pillar more for the maintenance of the Ghent Pacification, but also a sure precursor of a closer union in the future. The Union of Brussels became, in fact, the stepping-stone to the "Union of Utrecht," itself the foundation-stone of a republic destined to endure more than two centuries. On the other hand, this early union held the seed of its own destruction within itself. It was not surprising, however, that a strong declaration in favour of the Catholic religion should be contained in a document intended for circulation through all the provinces.
The object was to unite as large a force, and to make as striking a demonstration before the eyes of the Governor-General as was practicable under the circumstances. The immediate purpose was answered, temporary union was formed, but it was impossible that a permanent crystallisation should take place where so strong a dissenter, as the Catholic clause had been admitted. In the sequel, therefore, the union fell without precisely at this fatal flaw. The next Union was that which definitely separated the provinces into Protestant and Catholic, into self-governing republics, and the dependencies of a distant despotism. The immediate effect, however, of the "Brussels Union" was to rally all lovers of the fatherland and haters of a foreign tyranny upon one vital point—the expulsion of the stranger from the land. The foot of the Spanish soldier should no longer profane their soil. All men were forced to pronounce themselves boldly and unequivocally, in order that the patriots might stand shoulder to shoulder, and the traitors be held up to infamy. This measure was in strict accordance with the advice given more than once by the Prince of Orange, and was almost in literal fulfilment of the Compromise, which he had sketched before the arrival of Don John.

The deliberations were soon resumed with the new Governor, the scene being shifted from Luxemburg to Huy. Hitherto came a fresh deputation from the states-general—many signers of the Brussels Union among them—and were received by Don John with stately courtesy. They had, however, come determined to carry matters with a high and firm hand, being no longer disposed to break his Imperial desecutain, nor to tolerate his dilatory policy. It is not surprising, therefore, that the courtsey soon changed to bitterness, and that attack and recrimination usurped the place of the dignified but empty formalities which had characterised the interviews at Luxemburg.

The envoys, particularly Swerence and Champagny, made no concealment of their sentiments towards the Spanish soldiery and the Spanish nation, and used a freedom of tone and language which the petulant soldier had not been accustomed to hear. They complained, at the outset, that the Netherlanders seemed new-born—that instead of bending the knee, they seemed disposed to grasp the sceptre. Insolence had taken the place of piety, and the former slave now applied the chain and whip to his master. With such exacerbation of temper at the commencement of negotiations, their progress was of necessity stormy and slow.

The envoys now addressed three concise questions to the Governor. Was he satisfied that the Ghent Pacification contained nothing conflicting with the Roman religion and the King's authority? If so, was he willing to approve that treaty in all its articles? Was he ready to dismiss his troops at once, and by land, the sea voyage being liable to too many objections?

Don John answered these three questions—which, in reality, were but three forms of a single question—upon the same day, the 24th of January. His reply was as complex as the demand had been simple. It consisted of a proposal in six articles, and a requisition in twenty-one, making in all twenty-seven articles. Substantially he proposed to dismiss the foreign troops—to effect a general pacification of the Netherlands—to govern on the basis of the administration in his imperial father's reign—to arrange affairs in and with regard to the assembly-general as the King should judge to be fitting—to forgive and forget past offences—and to release all prisoners.

---

1 The "new or closer Union of Brussels," however admirable as a manifestation, and important as an example, cannot, from its very brief duration, be considered as anything but an unsuccessful attempt at union.
2 *Avis du Prince d'Orange, etc., Archives, etc., v. 487, sqq.
3 Bor. x. 771.
5 "— *Austriacum non lenius nec modestis modo sed licet us servum ad sumum voluntatem adjigere," etc.—*Tassia, iii. 246.
6 Bor. x. 772.
On the other hand he required the estates to pay the troops before their departure, and to provide ships enough to transport them, as the Spaniards did not choose to go by land, and as the deputies at Luxemburg had consented to their removal by sea. Furthermore, he demanded that the states should dismiss their own troops. He required ecclesiastical authority to prove the Ghent Pacification not prejudicial to the Catholic religion; legal authority that it was not detrimental to his Majesty's supremacy; and an oath from the states-general to uphold both points inviolably, and to provide for their maintenance in Holland and Zealand. He claimed the right to employ about his person soldiers and civil functionaries of any nation he might choose, and he extorted from the states a promise to prevent the Prince of Orange from removing his son, Count Van Buren, forcibly or fraudulently, from his domicile in Spain.¹

The deputies were naturally indignant at this elaborate trifling. They had, in reality, asked him but one question, and that a simple one—Would he maintain the treaty of Ghent? Here were twenty-seven articles in reply, and yet no answer to that question. They sat up all night, preparing a violent protocol, by which the Governor's claims were to be utterly demolished. Early in the morning, they waited upon his Highness, presented the document, and at the same time asked him plainly, by word of mouth, did he or did he not intend to uphold the treaty. This pressed into a corner in presence of the deputies, the members of the State Council who were in attendance from Brussels, and the envoys whom the Emperor had recently sent to assist at these deliberations, the Governor answered, No. He would not and could not maintain the treaty, because the Spanish troops were in that instrument denounced as rebels, because he would not consent to the release of Count Van Buren—and on account of various other reasons not then specified.² Hereupon ensued a fierce debate, and all day long the altercation lasted, without a result being reached. At ten o'clock in the evening, the deputies, having previously retired for a brief interval, returned with a protest⁴ that they were not to be held responsible for the termination of the proceedings, and that they washed their hands of the bloodshed which might follow the rupture. Upon reading this document, Don John fell into a blazing passion. He vehemently denounced the deputies as traitors. He swore that men who came to him thus prepared with ready-made protest in their pockets, were rebels from the commencement, and had never intended any agreement with him. His language and gestures expressed unbounded fury. He was weary of their ways, he said. They had better look to themselves, for the King would never leave their rebellion unpunished. He was ready to draw the sword at once—not his own, but his Majesty's—and they might be sure that the war which they were thus provoking should be the fiercest ever waged.⁴ More abusive language in this strain was uttered, but it was not heard with lamb-like submission. The day had gone by when the deputies of the states-general were wont to quail before the wrath of vicarious royalty.

The fiery words of Don John were not oil to troubled water, but a match to a mine. The passions of the deputies exploded in their turn, and from hot words they had nearly come to hard blows. One of the deputies replied with so much boldness and vehemence that the Governor, seizing a heavy silver bell which stood on the table, was about to hurl it at the offender's head, when an energetic and providential interference on the part of the imperial envoys prevented the unseemly catastrophe.⁵

The day thus unprofitably spent had now come to its close, and the deputies left the presence of Don John with tempers as inflamed as his own. They were, therefore, somewhat surprised at being awakened in their beds, after midnight, by a certain Father

¹ See the protest in Bor. x. 774, 775.
² Bor. x. 773.
³ See the protest in Bor. x. 774, 775.
⁴ Bor. x. 775.
⁵ Tassus, li. 246.
Trigoso, who came to them with a conciliatory message from the Governor. While they were still rubbing their eyes with sleep and astonishment, the Duke of Aerschot, the Bishop of Liege, and several counsellors of state, entered the room. These personages brought the news that Don John had at last consented to maintain the Pacification of Ghent, as would appear by a note written in his own hand, which was then delivered. The billet was eagerly read, but unfortunately did not fulfill the anticipations which had been excited. "I agree," said Don John, "to approve the peace made between the states and the Prince of Orange, on condition that nothing therein may seem detrimental to the authority of his Majesty and the supremacy of the Catholic religion, and also with reservation of the points mentioned in my last communication."

Men who had grown to feel in a high state of irritation were not likely to make so much better terms, when suddenly proposed to them to accept a message as that. It seemed that even now this prospect was not enough to allay the opposition of the assembly, or to quiet the tumult. "We will think over this," said the Sieur de Vauvillaret, "as we often have done in the past, and reconsider whether one can act as he is bidden now, or by the Pope or the Emperor, or by our people or our interest, or our conscience."

The deputies, seizing upon this opportunity, pressed the Governor to make a favourable report upon the proceedings, as soon as they should arrive in Brussels.

"But, having conceded so much," Don John replied, "I do not wish to concede the whole. The Emperor or Maximilian has not yet agreed to it."

The increased prosperity of the states and the Prince of Orange, their sentiments on the great subject of religious toleration were so much in harmony with the people of the Netherlands, so far as the ancient principles of the Pope and the Emperor could go, at least in philosophy. "And how are we to cooperate, sir?" asked the deputies. He had unques-
It promised that the soldiery should depart "freely, frankly, and without delay, by land, never to return except in case of foreign war"—the Spaniards to set forth within forty days, the Germans and others so soon as arrangements had been made by the states-general for their payment. It settled that all prisoners, on both sides, should be released, excepting the Count Van Buren, who was to be set free so soon as the states-general having been convoked, the Prince of Orange should have fulfilled the resolutions to be passed by that assembly. It promised the maintenance of all the privileges, charters, and constitutions of the Netherlands. It required of the states an oath to maintain the Catholic religion. It recorded their agreement to disband their troops. It settled that Don John should be received as Governor-General, immediately upon the departure of the Spaniards, Italians, and Burgundians from the provinces.

These were the main provisions of this famous treaty, which was confirmed a few weeks afterwards by Philip, in a letter addressed to the states of Brabant, and by an edict issued at Madrid. It will be seen that everything required by the envoy of the states, at the commencement of their negotiations, had been conceded by Don John. They had claimed the departure of the troops, either by land or sea. He had resisted the demand a long time, but had at last consented to despatch them by sea. Their departure by land had then been insisted upon. This again he had most reluctantly conceded. The ratification of the Ghent treaty he had peremptorily refused. He had come to the provinces at the instant of its conclusion, and had, of course, no instructions on the subject. Nevertheless, slowly receding, he had agreed, under certain
reservations, to accept the treaty. Those reservations relating to the great points of Catholic and royal supremacy, he insisted upon subjecting to his own judgment alone. Again he was overruled. Most unwillingly he agreed to accept, instead of his own conscientious conviction, the dogmas of the State Council and of the Louvain doctors. Not seeing very clearly how a treaty which abolished the edicts of Charles the Fifth and the ordinances of Alva which removed the religious question in Holland and Zealand from the King's jurisdiction to that of the States General—which had caused persecution to succeed—had established toleration—and which, moreover, had confirmed the arch rebel and heretic of all the Netherlands in the government of the two rebellious and heretic provinces, as stadholder for the King— not seeing very clearly how such a treaty was "advantageous rather than prejudicial to royal absolutism and an exclusive Catholicism"—he naturally hesitated at first.

The Governor had thus disconcerted the Prince of Orange, not by the firmness of his resistance, but by the amplitude of his concessions. The combinations of William the Silent were, for an instant, deranged. Had the Prince expected such liberality, he would have placed his demands upon a higher basis, for it is not probable that he contemplated or desired a pacification. The Duke of Aerschot and the Bishop of Liège in vain essayed to prevail upon his deputies at Antwerp to sign the agreement of the 21st January, upon which was founded the Perpetual Edict. They refused to do so without concerning the Prince and the estates. Meanwhile, the other commissioners moved in the direction of the treaty. The edict was a downfall to the Prince to ask his consent, and signed the agreement before it was possible to receive his reply. This was to treat

him with little courtesy, if not absolutely with bad faith. The Prince was disappointed and indignant. In truth, as appeared from all his language and letters, he had no confidence in Don John. He believed him a consummate hypocrite, and as deadly a foe to the Netherlands as the Duke of Alva, or Philip himself. He had carefully studied twenty-five intercepted letters from the King, the Governor, Jerome de Roda, and others, placed recently in his hands by the Duke of Aerschot, and had found much to confirm previous and induce fresh suspicion. Only a few days previously to the signature of the treaty, he had also intercepted other letters from influential personages, Alonzo de Vargas and others, disclosing extensive designs to obtain possession of the strong places in the country, and then to reduce the land to absolute subjection. He had assured the estates, therefore, that the deliberate intention of the Government, throughout the whole negotiation, was to deceive, whatever might be the public language of Don John and his agents. He implored them, therefore, to have "pity upon the poor country," and to save the people from falling into the trap which was laid for them. From first to last, he had expressed a deep and wise distrust, and justified it by ample proofs. He was, with reason, irritated, therefore, at the haste with which the estates had concluded the agreement with Don John—at the celerity with which, as he afterwards expressed it, "they had rushed upon the boar-spear of that sanguinary heart." He believed that everything had been signed and sworn by the Governor, with the mental reservation that such agreements were valid only until he should repent having made them. He doubted the good faith and the stability of the grand seignors. He had never felt confidence in the professions of the time-serving Aerschot, nor did he

2 Apologie du Prince d’Orange, p. 9.
3 Apologie du Prince d’Orange, p. 96.
trust even the brave Champagny, notwithstanding his services at the sack of Antwerp. He was especially indignant that provision had been made, not for demolishing but for restoring to his Majesty those hateful citadels, nests of tyranny, by which the flourishing cities of the land were kept in perpetual anxiety. Whether in the hands of King, nobles, or magistrates, they were equally odious to him, and he had long since determined that they should be razed to the ground. In short, he believed that the estates had thrust their heads into the lion's mouth, and he foresaw the most gloomy consequences from the treaty which had just been concluded. He believed, to use his own language, "that the only difference between Don John and Alva or Requesens was, that he was younger and more foolish than his predecessors, less capable of concealing his venom, more impatient to dip his hands in blood."

In the Pacification of Ghent, the Prince had the prize of his life-long labours. He had banded a mass of provinces by the ties of a common history, language, and customs, into a league against a foreign tyranny. He had grappled Holland and Zealand to their sister provinces by a common love for their ancient liberties, by a common hatred to a Spanish soldiery. He had exercised the evil demon of religious bigotry by which the body politic had been possessed so many years; for the Ghent treaty, largely interpreted, opened the door to universal toleration. In the Perpetual Edict the Prince saw his work undone. Holland and Zealand were again cut adrift from the other fifteen provinces, and war would soon be let loose upon that devoted little territory. The article stipulating the maintenance of the Ghent treaty he regarded as idle wind; the solemn saws of the State Council and the quiddities from Louvain being likely to prove but slender bulwarks against the returning tide of tyranny. Either it was tacitly intended to tolerate the Reformed religion, or to hunt it down. To argue that the Ghent treaty, loyally interpreted, strengthened ecclesiastical or royal despotism, was to contend that a maniac was more dangerous in fetters than when armed with a sword; it was to be blind to the difference between a private convention and a public scaffold. The Perpetual Edict, while affecting to sustain the treaty, would necessarily destroy it at a blow, while during the brief interval of repose, tyranny would have renewed its youth like the eagles. Was it possible, then, for William of Orange to sustain the Perpetual Edict, to compromise with Don John? Ten thousand ghosts from the Lake of Harlem, from the famine and plague-stricken streets of Leyden, from the smoking ruins of Antwerp, rose to warn him against such a composition with a despotism as subtle as it was remorseless.

It was, therefore, not the policy of William of Orange, suspecting, as he did, Don John, abhorring Philip, doubting the Netherland nobles, confiding only in the mass of the citizens, to give his support to the Perpetual Edict. He was not the more satisfied because the states had concluded the arrangement without his sanction, and against his express advice. He refused to publish or recognise the treaty in Holland and Zealand. A few weeks before, he had privately laid before the states of Holland and Zealand a series of questions, in order to test their temper, asking them, in particular, whether they were prepared to undertake a new and sanguinary war for the sake of their religion, even although their other privileges should be recognised by the new government; and a long and earnest debate had ensued, of a satisfactory nature, although no positive resolution was passed upon the

---

3 Letter of Prince of Orange and the States of Holland, Bor, x. 791-973.
As soon as the Perpetual Edict had been signed, the states-general had sent to the Prince, requesting his opinion and demanding his sanction. Orange, in the name of Holland and Zeeland, instantly returned an elaborate answer, taking grave exceptions to the whole tenor of the Edict. He complained that the constitution of the land was violated, because the ancient privilege of the states-general to assemble at their pleasure, had been invaded, and because the laws of every province were set at naught by the continued imprisonment of Count Van Buren, who had committed no crime, and whose detention proved that no man, whatever might be promised, could expect security for life or liberty. The ratification of the Ghent treaty, it was insisted, was in no wise distinct and categorical, but was made dependent on a crowd of deceitful subterfuges. He inveighed bitterly against the stipulations in the Edict, that the states should pay the wages of the soldiers, whom they had just proclaimed to be knaves and rebels, and at whose hands they had suffered such monstrous injuries. He denounced the cowardice which could permit this band of hirelings to retire with so much jewellery, merchandise, and plate, the result of their robberies. He expressed, however, in the name of the two provinces, a willingness to sign the Edict, provided the states-general would agree equally beforehand, in case the departure of the Spaniards did not take place within the stipulated time, to abdicate all recognition of, or communication with, Don John, and themselves to accomplish the removal of the troops by force of arms.

Such was the firm and solemn summons made by the Prince in reply to the Perpetual Edict, the states of Holland and Zeeland noting with heart and soul in all that he thought, wrote.
the Spaniards should depart, that all other promises should be inviolably kept, and that the Governor would take up arms against all who should oppose the fulfilment of his engagements. He was to represent that Don John, in proof of his own fidelity, had placed himself in the power of the states. He was to intimate to the Prince that an opportunity was now offered him to do the crown a service, in recompense for which he would obtain, not only pardon for his faults, but the favour of the monarch, and all the honours which could be desired; that by so doing he would assure the future prosperity of his family; that Don John would be his good friend, and, as such, would do more for him than he could imagine. The envoy was also to impress upon the Prince, that if he persisted in his opposition every man’s hand would be against him, and the ruin of his house inevitable. He was to protest that Don John came but to forgive and to forget, to restore the ancient government and the ancient prosperity; so that, if it was for those objects the Prince had taken up arms, it was now his duty to lay them down, and to do his utmost to maintain peace and the Catholic religion. Finally, the envoy was to intimate, that if he chose to write to Don John, he might be sure to receive a satisfactory answer. In these pacific instructions and friendly expressions, Don John was sincere. “The name of your Majesty,” said he, plainly, in giving an account of this mission to the King, “is as much abhorred and despised in the Netherlands as that of the Prince of Orange is loved and feared. I am negotiating with him, and giving him every security, for I see that the establishment of peace, as well as the maintenance of the Catholic religion, and the obedience to your Majesty, depend now upon him.”

1 Gachard, Corresp. Guillaume le Tacit., Ill., preface liii.

2 “El nombre y servicio de V. M. están aborrecido y poco estimado cuanto temido y amado el del Príncipe de Oranje,” etc.—Ibid.

3 Full details of the mission of Leoninus are given in the preface to Gachard’s 3d volume of the Corresp., de Guillaume le Tacit., pages liv., sqq. That distinguished publicist has condemned them from a MS. relation made by Leoninus, on his return to Louvain, a narrative, of which a Spanish translation was found by M. Gachard in the archives of Simancas.
Grant replied that he had no expectation of any, but advised Doctor Leominus to be present at Dort when the estates should assemble.

Notwithstanding the unfavourable result of this mission, Don John did not even yet despair of bending the stubborn character of the Prince. He hoped that, if a personal interview between them could be arranged, he should be able to remove many causes of suspicion from the mind of his adversary. "In such times as these," wrote the Governor to Philip, "we can make no election, nor do I see any remedy to preserve the state from destruction, save to gain over this man, who has so much influence with the nation." 2 The Prince had, in truth, the whole game in his hands. There was scarcely a living creature in Holland and Zealand who was not willing to be bound by his decision in every emergency. Throughout the rest of the provinces, the mass of the people looked up to him with absolute confidence, the clergy and the prominent nobles respecting and fearing him, even while they secretly attempted to thwart his designs. Possessing dictatorial power in two provinces, vast influences in the other fifteen, nothing could be easier for him than to betray his country. The time was singularly propitious. The revengeful King was almost on his knees to the denounced rebel. Everything was proffered: pardon, advancement, power. An indefinite vista was opened. "You cannot imagine," said Don John, "how much it will be within my ability to do for you." The Governor was extremely anxious to purchase the only enemy whom Philip feared. The Prince had nothing personally to gain by a continuance of the contest. The ban, outlawry, degradation, pecuniary ruin, assassination, martyrdom—these were the only guards he could anticipate. He had much to lose: but yesterday loaded with dignities, surrounded by pomp and luxury, with many children to inherit his worldly gear, could he not recover all, and

1 Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., lli, livi.
2 lld., lvii, sqq.

MS. letter of the 16th of March 1577.
more than all, to-day! What service had he to render in exchange? A mere nothing. He had but to abandon the convictions of a lifetime, and to betray a million or two of hearts which trusted him.

As to the promises made by the Governor to rule the country with gentleness, the Prince could not do otherwise than commend the intention, even while distrusting the fulfilment. In his reply to the two letters of Don John, he thanked his Highness, with what seemed a grave irony, for the benign courtesy and signal honour which he had manifested to him, by inviting him so humanely and so carefully to a tranquil life, wherein, according to his Highness, consisted the perfection of felicity in this mortal existence, and by promising him so liberally favour and grace. He stated, however, with earnestness, that the promises in regard to the pacification of the poor Netherland people were much more important. He had ever expected, he said, beyond all comparison, the welfare and security of the public before his own; having always placed his particular interest under his foot, even as he was still resolved to do, as long as life should endure.

Thus did William of Orange receive the private advances made by the government towards himself. Meantime, Don John of Austria came to Louvain. Until the preliminary conditions of the Perpetual Edict had been fulfilled, and the Spanish troops sent out of the country, he was not to be received as Governor-General, but it seemed unbecoming for him to remain longer upon the threshold of the provinces. He therefore advanced into the heart of the country, trusting himself without troops to the loyalty of the people, and manifesting a show of chivalrous confidence which he was far from feeling. He was soon surrounded by courtiers, time-servers, noble office-seekers. They who had kept themselves invisible, so long as the issue of a perplexed negotiation seemed doubtful, now became obsequious and inevitable as his shadow. One grand seignior wanted a regiment, another a government, a third a chamberlain’s key; all wanted titles, ribbons, offices, livery, wages. Don John distributed favours and promises with vast liberality.

The object with which Philip had sent him to the Netherlands, that he might conciliate the hearts of its inhabitants by the personal graces which he had inherited from his imperial father, seemed in a fair way of accomplishment, for it was not only the venal applause of titled sycophants that he strove to merit, but he mingled gaily and familiarly with all classes of citizens. Everywhere his handsome face and charming manner produced their natural effect. He dined and supped with the magistrates in the Town-house, honoured general banquets of theburgers with his presence, and was affable and dignified, witty, fascinating, and commanding, by turns. At Louvain, the five military guilds held a solemn festival. The usual invitations were sent to the other societies, and to all the martial brotherhoods, the country round. Gay and gaudy processions, sumptuous banquets, military sports, rapidly succeeded each other. Upon the day of the great trial of skill, all the high functionaries of the land were, according to custom, invited, and the Governor was graciously pleased to honour the solemnity with his presence. Great was the joy of the multitude when Don John, complying with the habit of imperial and princely personages in former days, enrolled himself, crossbow in hand, among the competitors. Greater still was the enthusiasm, when the conqueror of Lepanto brought down the bird, and was proclaimed king of the year, amid the tumultuous
hilarity of the crowd. According to custom, the captains of the guild suspended a golden popinjay around the neck of his Highness, and placing themselves in procession, followed him to the great church. Thence, after the customary religious exercises, the multitude proceeded to the banquet, where the health of the new king of the crossbowmen was pledged in deep groanings. Long and loud was the lamentation of this inaugural festival, to which many festa succeeded during those brief but happy days; for the god-forsaken Netherlands already believed in the blessed advent of peace. They did not dream that the war, which had been consuming the marrow of their commonwealth for ten daring years was but in its infancy, and that neither they nor their children were destined to see its close.

For the moment, however, all was hilarity at Louvain. The moment by his engaging deportment, and many reminiscences of the most poetic Keveren. He expressed extended adoration for the commonwealth, and exerted himself in the loyalty of the common people. He promised to make the Netherlands great and to secure their power. However, he did not dream of the consequences of his actions, and no one who now have a right to be judged upon his word. But for the moment, all was joy and thanksgiving. The people were jubilant, and the King was exulting over the triumph of his policy. He had succeeded in appeasing the jealousy of the Spanish sovereign, and in winning the affections of the Dutch people. He had shown his power, his sagacity, and his love for his country. He had established himself as the benefactor of his subjects, and the protector of his kingdom. He was exalted in the esteem of all, and the hope of the nation.

But the moment was not to last. The war was to continue, and the trials of the Netherlands were to be severe. The Spaniards were to return, and the battles were to be fierce. The King was to labor, to suffer, and to die. But for the moment, all was joy and thanksgiving. The people were jubilant, and the King was exulting over the triumph of his policy. He had succeeded in appeasing the jealousy of the Spanish sovereign, and in winning the affections of the Dutch people. He had shown his power, his sagacity, and his love for his country. He had established himself as the benefactor of his subjects, and the protector of his kingdom. He was exalted in the esteem of all, and the hope of the nation.

The King's credit, moreover, was at a very low ebb. His previous bonds had not been duly honoured, and there had even been instances of royal repudiation which by no means lightened the task of the financier, in effecting the new loans required. Escovedo was very keen in his language upon this topic, and both Don John and himself urged punctuality in all future payments. They entreated that the bills drawn on Philip's name upon Amsterdam bankers, and discounted at a very low rate of interest, by the Fuggers of Nuremberg, might be duly provided for in conformity. "I earnestly beg," said Escovedo, "that your Majesty will see to the payment of these bills, as it were, adding, with amusing economy, a means of increase to the Majesty's credit, and as it were, taking care to lose it, so not to lose it." Don John was very much in concurrence. "For the love of God, Sir," he wrote, "do not be and be not. You must reflect on the necessity of recovering your Majesty's credit, and the necessity the final..."
the soldiers too will be driven to desperation."

By dint of great diligence on the part of Escovedo, and through the confidence reposed in his character, the necessary funds were raised in the course of a few weeks. There was, however, a difficulty among the officers, as to the right of commanding the army on the homeward march. Don Alonso de Vargas, as chief of the cavalry, was appointed to the post by the Governor; but Valdez, Romero, and other veterans, indignantly refused to serve under one whom they declared their inferior officer. There was much altercation and heartburning, and an attempt was made to compromise the matter by the appointment of Count Mansfield to the chief command. This was, however, only adding fuel to the flames. All were dissatisfied with the superiority accorded to a foreigner, and Alonso de Vargas, especially offended, addressed most insolent language to the Governor. Nevertheless, the arrangement was maintained, and the troops finally took their departure from the country, in the latter days of April. A vast concourse of citizens witnessed their departure, and could hardly believe their eyes, as they saw this incubus at last rolling off, by which the land had so many years been crushed. Their joy, although extravagant, was, however, limited by the reflection that ten thousand Germans still remained in the province, attached to the royal service, and that there was even yet a possibility that the departure of the Spaniards was a feint. In truth, Escovedo, although seconding the orders of Don John, to procure the removal of these troops, did not scruple to express his regret to the King, and his doubts as to the result. He had been ever in hopes that an excuse might be found in the condition of affairs in France, to justify the retention of the forces near that frontier. He assured the King that he felt very doubtful as to what turn matters might take, after the soldiers were gone, seeing the great unruliness which even their presence had been insufficient completely to check. He had hoped that they might be retained in the neighbourhood, ready to seize the islands at the first opportunity. "For my part," he wrote, "I care nothing for the occupation of places within the interior, but the islands must be secured. To do this," he continued, with a dexterous allusion to the secret projects of Don John, "is, in my opinion, more difficult than to effect the scheme upon England. If the one were accomplished, the other would be easily enough managed, and would require but moderate means. Let not your Majesty suppose that I say this as favouring the plan of Don John, for this I put entirely behind me."

Notwithstanding these suspicions on the part of the people, this reluctance on the part of the government, the troops readily took up their line of march, and never paused till they reached Lombardy. Don John wrote repeatedly to the King, warmly urging the claims of these veterans, and of their distinguished officers, Romero, Avila, Valdez, Montesdogca, Verduco, Mondragon, and others, to his bountiful consideration. They had departed in very ill humour, not having received any remonstrance for their long and arduous services. Certainly, if unflinching endurance, desperate valour, and congenial cruelty, could alone in the monarch’s eyes for the mutiny, which had at last compelled their withdrawal, then were these labourers

1 Letter of Escovedo to the King, 6 April 1577, in Discours Sommier, etc., p. 11. Letter of Don John to the King, Discours Sommier, etc., p. 34, appendix.
2 Bor, x. 807. Hoefdl, xii. 465.
3 Bor, x. 807. Hoefdl, xii. 496. Strada, ii. 439.
4 For the many Witticisms perpetrated upon this occasion, the following specimen may be thought worth preserving:—

"Boetiea gens Abii: cur pias Belgicae dicam?
A quod in O non est litera versus quero."
Bor, x. 807. Hoefdl, xii. 498.
5 Letter of Escovedo to the King, 6 April 1577, in Discours Sommier, etc., p. 12, appendix.
6 Letter of Escovedo to the King, 9 April 1577, Discours Sommier, p. 50.
worthy of their hire. Don John had pacified them by assurances that they should receive adequate rewards on their arrival in Lombardy, and had urged the full satisfaction of their claims and promises in the strongest language. Although Don Alonso de Vargas had abused him "with flying colours," as he expressed himself, yet he hastened to intercede for him with the King in the most affectionate terms. "His impatience has not surprised me," said the Governor, "although I regret that he has been offended, for I love and esteem him much. He has served many years with great distinction, and I can certify that his character for purity and religion is something extraordinary." 2

The first scene in the withdrawal of the troops had been the evacuation of the citadel of Antwerp, and it had been decided that the command of this most important fortress should be conferred upon the Duke of Aerschot, his claims as commander-in-chief, under the authority of the State Council, and as chief of the Catholic nobility, could hardly be passed over, yet he was a man whom neither party trusted. He was too visibly governed by interested motives. Arrogant where he felt secure of his own, or doubtful to another's position, he could be supple and cringing when the relations changed. He refused an interview with William of Orange before consulting with Don John, and solicited one afterwards when he found that every effort was to be made to conciliate the Prince. 3 He was insolent to the Governor-General himself in February, and respectful in March. He usurped the first place in the church, 4 before Don John had been acknowledged Governor, and was the first to go forth to welcome him after the matter had been arranged. He made a scene of virtuous indignation in the State Council, because he was accused of place-hunting, but was diligent to secure an office of the highest dignity which the Governor could bestow. Whatever may have been his merits, it is certain that he inspired confidence neither in the adherents of the King nor of the Prince; while he by turns professed the warmest regard both to the one party and the other. Spaniards and patriots, Protestants and Catholics, suspected the man at the same moment, and ever attributed to his conduct a meaning which was the reverse of the apparent. Such is often the judgment passed upon those who fish in troubled waters only to fill their own nets.

The Duke, however, was appointed Governor of the citadel. Sancho d'Avila, the former constable, refused with Castillian haughtiness, to surrender the place to his successor, but appointed his lieutenant, Martin d'Oyo, to perform that ceremony. 5 Escovedo, standing upon the drawbridge with Aerschot, administered the oath: "I, Philip, Duke of Aerschot," said the new constable, "solemnly swear to hold this castle for the King, and for no others." To which Escovedo added, "God help you, with all his angels, if you keep your oath; if not, may the Devil carry you away, body and soul." The few by-standers cried Amen; and with this hasty ceremony, the keys were delivered, the prisoners, Egmont, Capres, Goignies, and others, liberated, and the Spaniards ordered to march forth. 6

1 Letter of Don John to the King, 7 April 1577, in Discours Sommier, p. 59, appendix.
2 Y quiere tan a banderas desplecadas de mí.
3 Ibid.
5 Oschard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Touch, iii, Preface, p. 54 and note 1.
6 Montesinos et Correspondance, vi 66.
7 Tassia, iii 241. - Compare Van d. Vynckt, ii 328.
8 Ibid., vi 66, 67. - Compare letter of Escovedo, Discours Sommier, p. 13, appendix.
CHAPTER II.

Triumphal entrance of Don John into Brussels—Reverse of the picture—Analysis of the secret correspondence of Don John and Escovedo with Antonio Pérez—Plots against the Governor’s liberty—His despoothing language and gloomy anticipations—Recommendation of severe measures—Position and principles of Orange and his family—His private views on the question of peace and war—His toleration to Catholics and Anabaptists censured by his friends—Death of Viglius—New mission from the Governor to Orange—Details of the Geertruydenberg conferences—Nature and results of these negotiations—Papers exchanged between the envoys and Orange—Peter Paulus executed for heresy—Three parties in the Netherlands—Dissimilation of Don John—His dread of capture.

As already narrated, the soldiery had retired definitely from the country at the end of April, after which Don John made his triumphal entrance into Brussels on the 1st of May. It was long since so festive a May-day had gladdened the hearts of Brabant. So much holiday magnificence had not been seen in the Netherlands for years. A solemn procession of burghers, preceded by six thousand troops, and garnished by the free companies of archers and musketeers, in their picturesque costumes, escorted the young prince along the streets of the capital.

Don John was on horseback, wrapped in a long green cloak, riding between the Bishop of Liege and the Papal nuncio.1 He passed beneath countless triumphal arches. Banners waved before him, on which the battle of Lepanto and other striking scenes in his life were emblazoned. Minstrels sang verses, poets recited odes, rhetoric clubs enacted fantastic dramas in his honour, as he rode along. Young virgins crowned him with laurels. Fair women innumerable were clustered at every window, roof, and balcony, their bright robes floating like summer clouds above him. “Softly from those lovely clouds,” says a gallant chronicler, “descended the gentle rain of flowers.”2 Garlands were strewed before his feet, laurelled victory sat upon his brow. The same conventional enthusiasm and decoration which had characterised the holiday marches of a thousand conventional heroes were successfully produced. The proceedings began with the church, and ended with the banquet, the day was propitious, the populace pleased, and, after a brilliant festival, Don John of Austria saw himself Governor-General of the provinces.

Three days afterwards, the customary oaths, to be kept with the customary conscientiousness, were rendered at the Town House,3 and for a brief moment all seemed smiling and serene.

There was a reverse to the picture. In truth, no language can describe the hatred which Don John entertained for the Netherlands and all the inhabitants. He had come to the country only as a stepping-stone to the English throne, and “he never spoke, in his private letters, of the provinces or the people but in terms of abhorrence. He was in a “Babylon of disgust,” in a “hell,” surrounded by “drunkards,” “wine-skins,” “scoundrels,” and the like. From the moment of his arrival he had strained every nerve to retain the Spanish troops, and to send them away by sea when it should be no longer feasible to keep them. Escovedo shared in the sentiments, and entered fully into the schemes of his chief. The plot, the secret enterprise, was the great cause of the advent of Don John in the ungenial clime of Flanders. It had been, therefore, highly important, in his estimation, to set, as soon as possible, about the

1 Bor, x. 811. Meteren, vi. 120. Hoofd, xil. 500, sqq. Van d. Vynci, ii. 233. Skrad, x. 432. Lettre de Barthelomé Liebert (avocat et bailli General de Tourney) au Mai 1577.—“Eestant le St. Dom Jean assiёlé d’un manteau de drap de couleur verd, etc. The Duke of Aerschot was magnificient as usual”—Venin d’un collect de velours rouge cromiai brodé d’or,” etc., etc—Ibid., apud Guichard, Documenta In-éditas concernant l’Histoire de la Belgique (Bruxelles, 1839), I. 362-364.

2 “Een lefgyke reaghen uit zoo holders wolken.”—Hoofd, xil. 500.

3 Bor, x. 812. Meteren, vi. 120.
accomplishment of this important business. He accordingly wrote and corresponded with Antonio Perez and the most important Secretary of State at that period. Then the Governor was forcing in letters a sufficient variety from the present of the letters. At the same time, when the arrival of his character, when he was dealing with one man he seemed to be more and more known, in some cases made use of expressions which might be made to seem so, too. This was still more the case when poor Escovedo. Devoted to his master, and depending most implicitly upon the honor of Perez, he indulged in language which might be turned into a still more conspicuous shape, when the devils arts of Perez and the universal distrust of Philip were tending steadily to that end. For Perez on the whole, the broadest, deepest, and most insidious villain in that part of duplicity, the Spanish court was engaged at that moment with Philip, in a plot to draw from Don John and Escovedo, by means of this correspondence, the proofs of a treason which the King and minister both desired to find. The letters from Spain were written with this view—these from Flanders were interpreted to that end. Every confidential letter received by Perez was immediately laid by him before the King—every letter which the artful demon wrote was filled with hints as to the danger of the King's learning the existence of the correspondence, and with promises of profound secrecy upon his own part, and was then immediately placed in Philip's hands, to receive his comments and criticisms, before being copied and dispatched to the Netherland. The minister was playing a bold, murderous, and treacherous game, and played it in a masterly manner. Escovedo was hired to his destruction. Don John was made to feel his heart away, and Philip—more inward than it—was betrayed in what he considered his affections, and made the more sure of a man as false as himself and infinitely more accomplished.

Almost immediately after the arrival of Don John in the Netherlands, he had begun to express the greatest importance for Escovedo, who had not been able to accompany his master upon his journey, but without whose assurance the Governor could accomplish none of his undertakings. "Being such a man as an angel, I cannot do all which I have to do," said he to Perez, "without a single person in whom I can confide." He protested that he would do no more than he was then doing. He went to bed at twelve and rose at seven, without having an hour in the day in which to take his food regularly, in consequence of all which he had already had three fevers. He was plunged into a world of distrust. Every man suspected him, and he had himself no confidence in a single individual throughout that whole Babylon of disgust. He observed to Perez that he was at liberty to shew his letters to the King, or to read them in the Council, as he meant always to speak the truth in whatever he should write. He was sure that Perez would do all for the best; and there is something touching in these expressions of an honest purpose towards Philip, and of generous confidence in Perez, while the two were thus artfully attempting to inveigle him into damaging revelations. The Netherlander certainly had small cause to love or trust their new Governor, who very sincerely detested and suspected them, but Philip had little reason to complain of his brother. "Tell me if my letters are read in Council, and what his Majesty says himself, when obliged to deposit the originals before the judges of Aragon."—Vall Gachard, Notice sur un Manuscrit de la Bibliothèque Royale de la Haye, etc. Bullet. Com. Roy. xiii.

1 Many of these letters are contained in a very valuable MS. collection belonging to the royal library at the Hague, and entitled, "Cartas que el Señor Don Juan de Austria y el Gobernador de la Compania de Escobedo, destinadas a San Muger y a Antonio Pérez, donde Flandes." It is probable that these copies were made by the direction of Pérez.
about them," he wrote; "and, above all, send money. I am driven to desperation at finding myself sold to this people, utterly unprovided as I am, and knowing the slow manner in which all affairs are conducted in Spain." 1

He informed the King that there was but one man in the Netherlands, and that he was called the Prince of Orange. To him everything was communicated, with him everything was negotiated, opinions expressed by him were implicitly followed. The Governor vividly described the misgivings with which he had placed himself in the power of the states by going to Louvain, and the reluctance with which he had consented to send away the troops. After this concession, he complained that the insolence of the states had increased. "They think that they can do and undo what they like, now that I am in their mercy," he wrote to Philip. "Nevertheless, I do what you command without regarding that I am sold, and that I am in great danger of losing my liberty, a loss which I dread more than anything in the world, for I wish to remain justified before God and men." 2 He expressed, however, no hopes as to the result. Disrespect and rudeness could be pushed no further than it had already gone, while the Prince of Orange, the actual governor of the country, considered his own preservation dependent upon maintaining things as they were. Don John, therefore, advised the King steadily to make preparations for "a rude and terrible war," 3 which was not to be avoided, save by a miracle, and which ought not to find him in this unprepared state. He protested that it was impossible to exaggerate the boldness with which the people felt at seeing him thus defenceless. "They say publicly," he continued, "that your Majesty is not to be feared, not being capable of carrying on a war, and having consumed and exhausted every resource. One of the greatest injuries ever inflicted upon us was by Marquis Havré, who, after his return from Spain, went about publishing everywhere the poverty of the royal exchequer. This has emboldened them to rise, for they believe that, whatever the disposition, there is no strength to chastise them. They see a proof of the correctness of their reasoning in the absence of new levies, and in the heavy arrears due to the old troops." 4

He protested that he desired, at least, to be equal to the enemy, without asking, as others had usually done, for double the amount of the hostile force. He gave a glance at the foreign complications of the Netherlands, telling Philip that the estates were intriguing both with France and England. "The English envoy had expressed much uneasiness at the possible departure of the Spanish troops from the Netherlands by sea, coupling it with a probable attempt to liberate the Queen of Scots. Don John, who had come to the provinces for no other purpose, and whose soul had been full of that romantic scheme, of course stoutly denied and ridiculed the idea. "Such notions," he had said to the envoy, "were subjects for laughter. If the troops were removed from the country, it was to strengthen his Majesty's force in the Levant." 5 Mr Rogers, much comforted, had expressed the warm friendship which Elizabeth entertained both for his Majesty and his Majesty's representative; protestations which could hardly seem very sincere, after the series of attempts at the Queen's life, undertaken so recently by his Majesty and his Majesty's former representative. Nevertheless, Don John had responded with great cordiality, had begged for Elizabeth's portrait, and had expressed the intention, if affairs went as he hoped, to go privately to England for the purpose of kissing her royal hand. 6

1 Cartas del Señor Don J. d'Autricia y el Señor Escobedo, MS., f. 1-4, 21 Dic., 1576.
2 Cartas del S. Don Joan, etc., MS., f. 4-12, 3 Jan., 1577.
3 "Una cruda y terrible guerra."—Ibid.
4 Cartas del S. Don Joan, etc., MS., f. 4-12, 2 Jan., 1577.
5 Ibid.
6 "Yo compedirle su retrato y diciendo que si las cosas de aqui tomassen asiento como creyeva hiria providencial

further informed the King, upon the envoy's authority, that Elizabeth had refused assistance to the estates, saying, if she stirred it would be to render aid to Philip, especially if France should meddle in the matter. As to France, the Governor advised Philip to hold out hopes to Alençon of espousing the Infanta, but by no means ever to fulfill such a promise, as the Duke, besides being the shield of heretics, was unscrupulously addicted to infamous vices."

A month later, Escovedo described the downfall of Don John's hopes, and his own in dismal language.—"You are aware," he wrote to Perez, "that a throne a chair with a canopy—is our intention and our appetite, and all the rest is good for nothing. Having failed in our scheme, we are desperate and like madmen. All is now weariness and death." Having expressed himself in such desponding accents, he continued, a few days afterwards, in the same lugubrious vein. "I am ready to hang myself," said he, "and I would have done it already, if it were not for keeping myself as executioner for those who have done us so much harm. Ah, Señor Antonio Perez!" he added, "what terrible pertinacity have those devils shown in making us give up our plot. It seems as though hell were opened, and had sent forth heaps of demons to oppose our schemes." After these vigorous ejaculations, he proceeded to inform his friend that the English envoy and the estates, governed by the Prince of Orange, in whose power were the much-coveted ships, had prevented theapture of the troops by sea. "These devils complain of the expense," said he, "but we would willingly swallow the cost if we could only get the ships." He then described Don John as so cast down by his disappointment as to be fit for nothing, and most desirous of quitting the Netherlands as soon as possible. He had no disposition to govern these wine-skins. Any one who ruled in the provinces was obliged to do exactly what they ordered him to do. Such rule was not to the taste of Don John. Without any comparison, a woman would answer the purpose better than any man, and Escovedo accordingly suggested the Empress Dowager, or Madame de Parma, or even Madame de Lorraine. He further recommended that the Spanish troops, thus forced to leave the Netherlands by land, should be employed against the heretics in France. This would be a salve for the disgrace of removing them. "It would be read in history," continued the Secretary, "that the troops went to France in order to render assistance in a great religious necessity; while, at the same time, they will be on hand to chastise these drunkards, if necessary, to have the troops in France is almost as well as to keep them here." He begged to be forgiven if he spoke incoherently. 'Twas no wonder that he should do so, for his reason had been disordered by the blow which had been received. As for Don John, he was dying to leave the country; and although the force was small for so great a general, yet it would be well for him to lead these troops to France in person. "It would sound well in history," said poor Esco-
Schemes and Fears.

The first step was to get him out of the Netherlands. That was his constant thought, by day and night. As it would hardly be desirable for him to go alone, it seemed proper that Escovedo should, upon some pretext, be first sent to Spain. Such a pretext would be easily found, because, as Don John had accepted the government, "it would be necessary for him to do all which the rascals bade him." After these minute statements, the Secretary warned his correspondent of the necessity of secrecy, adding that he especially feared "all the court ladies, great and small, but that he in everything confided entirely in Perez.

Nearly at the same time, Don John wrote to Perez in a similar tone. "Ah, Señor Antonio," he exclaimed, "how certain is my disgrace and my misfortune! Ruined is our enterprise, after so much labour and such skilful management." He was to have commenced the work with the very Spanish soldiers who were now to be sent off by land, and he had nothing for it but to let them go, or to come to an open rupture with the states. "The last, his conscience, his duty, and the time, alike forbade." He was therefore obliged to submit to the ruin of his plans, and "could think of nothing save to turn hermit, a condition in which a man's labours, being spiritual, might not be entirely in vain." He was so overwhelmed by the blow, he said, that he was constantly thinking of an anchorite's life. That which he had been leading had become intolerable. He was not fitted for the people of the Netherlands, nor they for him. Rather than stay longer than was necessary in order to appoint his successor, there was no resolution he might not take, even to leaving everything and coming upon them when

---

1 "Se oligará mas de servir en esto que no en gobierno de tan ruin gente."—Cartas, etc., MS., f. 12-16, 7 Feb. 1577.
2 Viz., John of Escovedo and Antony Perez.
3 "El besculo por su boxes."—Cartas, etc., MS., 19-16, 7 Feb. 1577.
4 "Y es de cuerpo tan delicado que lo temo dexarnos a buen noche."—Ibid.
5 "Porque recibido el gobierno a de alicer la que le aconsejaren estos bellacos."—Ibid.
6 Cartas, etc., MS., 16 Feb. 1577, f. 16-18.
7 "A, Señor Antonio y cuan cierto es de mi desgracia y desdichas—la quiebra de nuestro designo traz muy trabajado y bien guiado que se tenía."—Ibid.
8 "Pues no se en que pensar sino en una hermita y donde no sera en vano lo que el hombre trabaja se en el espíritu."—Ibid.
they least expected him, although he were to receive a bloody punishment in consequence. He, too, suggested, the Empress, who had all the qualities which he lacked himself, or Madame de Parma, or Madame de Lorraine, as each of them was more fit to govern the provinces than he pretended to be. "The people," said he, plainly, "are beginning to abhor me, and I abhor them already." 1 He entreated Perez to get him out of the country by fair means or foul, "per fas aut per nefas." 2 His friends ought to procure his liberation, if they wished to save him from the sin of disobedience, and even of infamy. He expressed the most unbounded confidence in the honour of his correspondent, adding, that if nothing else could procure his release, the letter might be shown to the King. In general, the Governor was always willing that Perez should make what changes he thought advisable in the letters for his Majesty, altering or softening whatever seemed crude or harsh, provided always the main point—that of procuring his recall—were steadily kept in view. In this, said the Governor, vehemently, my life, my honour, and my soul are all at stake; for as to the two first, I shall forfeit them both certainly, and, in my desperate condition, I shall run great risk of losing the last. 3

On the other hand, Perez was profuse in his professions of friendship both to Don John and to Escovedo; dilating in all his letters upon the difficulty of approaching the King upon the subject of his brother's recall, but giving occasional information that an incidental hint had been ventured which might not remain without effect. All these letters were, however, laid before Philip, for his approval, before being despatched, and the whole subject thoroughly and perpetually discussed between them.

1 "Por lo que me en�gan avorrecer y por lo que yo les avertir."—Cartas, etc., MS., 19 Feb. 1577, f. 16-18.
2 "Ibid."—"Con tanta furia y cuidado de corazon." 4
3 "Su Magest., ha manifestado gran deseo de que se hubiera podido excurar en esta ocasión; y yo le hende do quan en apesar de miPadrío y no despojado la vida a gran costo."—Cartas, etc., MS., f. 50-54.
4 "Ibid."
to accommodate ourselves to his tastes, and to have the appearance of being occupied solely with his interests." 2 The letter, like all the rest, being submitted to "the man" in question before being sent, was underlined by him at this paragraph and furnished with the following annotation: "but you must enlarge upon the passage which I have marked—say more, even if you are obliged to copy the letter, in order that we may see the nature of the reply." 9

In another letter to Escovedo, Perez enlarged upon the impropriety, the impossibility of Don John's leaving the Netherlands at that time. The King was so resolute upon that point, he said, that 'twas out of the question to suggest the matter. "We should, by so doing, only lose all credit with him in other things. You know what a terrible man he is; if he should once suspect us of having a private end in view, we should entirely miss our mark." 3 Especially the secretary was made acquainted with the enormous error which would be committed by Don John in leaving his post. Perez "had ventured into the water" upon the subject, he said, by praising the Governor warmly to his Majesty. The King had responded by a hearty eulogy, adding that the greatest comfort in having such a friend was, that he might be where his Majesty could not be. Therefore, it was out of the question for Don John to leave the provinces. The greatest tact was necessary, urged Perez, in dealing with the King. If he should once "suspect that we have a private pur-

pose, we are lost, and no Demosthenes or Cicero would be able to influence him afterwards." 4 Perez begged that his ardent attachment to Don John might be represented in the strongest colours to that high personage, who was to be assured that every effort would be made to place him at the head of affairs in Spain, according to the suggestion of Escovedo. "It would never do, however," he continued, "to let our man see that we desire it; for then we should never succeed. The only way to conquer him is to make him believe that things are going on as he wishes, not as his Highness may desire, and that we have none of us any will but the King's." 5 Upon this passage the "terrible man" made a brief annotation: "this paragraph does admirably," he said, adding, with characteristic tautology, "and what you say in it is also excellent." 6

"Therefore," continued the minister, "God forbid, Master Escovedo, that you should come hither now; for we should all be lost. In the English matter, I assure you that his Majesty was extremely anxious that the plan should succeed, either through the Pope, or otherwise. That puts me in mind," added Perez, "to say, body of God! Señor Escovedo! how the devil came you to send that courier to Rome about the English plot without giving me warning?" 7 He then proceeded to state that the papal nuncio in Spain had been much troubled in mind upon the subject, and had sent for him. "I went," said Perez, "and after he had closed the door, and looked through the keyhole to see that there were no

---

1 Cartas, etc., MS., f. 24-27.—"Me parece que hemos de huir mill leguas de que píenes al rey que tratásemos tan de propósiito de lo que toca al Señor Don Juan — pues cono-

2 "Mas os avisamos de alargar en lo que yo raro. Deseo más aunque se copie la carta, para ver el ánimo de la respuesta."—Ibid.

3 "Porque no perdimos el crédito con el para otras cosas que como Vm. sabe es terrible hombre," etc., etc.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1577.

listeners, he informed me that he had received intelligence from the Pope as to the demands made by Don John upon his Holiness for bulls, briefs, and money to assist him in his English scheme, and that eighty thousand ducats had already been sent to him in consequence.” Perez added that the nuncio was very anxious to know how the affair should best be communicated to the King, without prejudice to his Highness. He had given him the requisite advice, he continued, and had himself subsequently told the King that, no doubt, letters had been written by Don John to his Majesty, communicating these negotiations at Rome, but that probably the despatches had been forgotten. Thus, giving himself the appearance of having smoothed the matter with the King, Perez concluded with a practical suggestion of much importance—the necessity, namely, of procuring the assassination of the Prince of Orange as soon as possible. “Let it never be absent from your mind,” said he “that a good occasion must be found for finishing Orange, since, besides the service which will thus be rendered to our master and to the states, it will be worth something to ourselves.”

No apology is necessary for laying a somewhat extensive analysis of this correspondence before the reader. If there be any value in the examples of history, certainly few chronicles can furnish a more instructive moral. Here are a despotic king and his confidential minister laying their heads together in one cabinet; the viceroy of the most important provinces of the realm, with his secretary, deeply conferring in another, not as to the manner of advancing the great interests, moral or material, of the people over whom God has permitted them to rule, but as to the best means of arranging conspiracies against the throne and life of a neighbouring sovereign, with the connivance and subsidies of the Pope. In this scheme, and in this only, the high conspirators are agreed. In every other respect, mutual suspicion and profound deceit characterise the scene. The Governor is filled with inexpressible loathing for the whole nation of “drunkards and wine-skins” who are at the very moment strewing flowers in his path, and deafening his ears with shouts of welcome; the king, while expressing unbounded confidence in the viceroy, is doing his utmost, through the agency of the subtlest intriguer in the world, to inveigle into confessions of treasonable schemes, and the minister is filling reams of paper with protestations of affection for the governor and secretary, with smears at the character of the King, and with instructions as to the best method of deceiving him, and then laying the despatches before his Majesty for correction and enlargement. To complete the picture, the monarch and his minister are seen urging the necessity of murdering the foremost man of the age upon the very dupe who, within a twelvemonth, was himself to be assassinated by the self-same pair; while the arch-plotter who controls the strings of all these complicated projects is equally false to King, Governor, and Secretary, and is engaging all the others in these blind and tortuous paths, for the accomplishment of his own secret and most ignoble aims.

In reply to the letters of Perez, Don John constantly expressed the satisfaction and comfort which he derived from them in the midst of his annoyances. “He was very disconsolate,” he said, “to be in that hell, and to be obliged to remain in it.” now that the English plot had fallen to the ground, but he would nevertheless take patience, and wait for a more favourable conjuncture.

Escovedo expressed the opinion,

---

\footnote{1 "Ojo que no dese Ym. de llevar en su pensamiento para su conviniese y se pudiera en ocasion pero compuesto todo de los estados a servar a Oranje, que demas del servir que se ara a nuestro Señor y bien a cosa nuestros nos valdría algo, y creo me que le digo la verdad y crease lo digo otra vez."—Cartas, etc., MS., f. 27-32.}

\footnote{2 Cartas, etc., MS., 95 Mayo, 1577, f. 23-34.—"Tiene muy desconsolado por que estar en estar y si fuera avor estar."}
however, notwithstanding all the suggestions of Perez, that the presence of Don John in the provinces had become entirely superfluous. "An old woman with her distaff," suggested the Secretary, "would be more appropriate; for there would be nothing to do, if the states had their way, save to sign everything which they should command." If their should be war, his Highness would, of course, not abandon his post, even if permitted to do so; but otherwise, nothing could be gained by a prolonged residence. As to the scheme of assassinating the Prince of Orange, Escovedo prayed Perez to believe him incapable of negligence on the subject. "You know that the finishing of Orange is very near my heart," wrote the poor dupe to the man by whom he was himself so soon to be finished. "You may believe that I have never forgotten it, and never will forget it, until it be done. Much, and very much, utilize is, however, necessary to accomplish this object. A proper person to undertake a task fraught with such well-known danger, is hard to find. Nevertheless, I will not withdraw my attention from the subject till such a person be procured, and the deed be done."

A month later, Escovedo wrote that he was about to visit Spain. He complained that he required rest in his old age, but that Perez could judge how much rest he could get in such a condition of affairs. He was, unfortunately, not aware, when he wrote, how soon his correspondent was to give him a long repose. He said, too, that the pleasure of visiting his home was counterbalanced by the necessity of travelling back to the Netherlands; but he did not know that Perez was to spare him that trouble, and to send him forth upon a much longer journey.

The Governor-General had, in truth, not inspired the popular party or its leader with confidence, nor did he place the least reliance upon them. While at Louvain, he had complained that a conspiracy had been formed against his life and liberty. Two French gentlemen, Bonnivet and Bellangerville, had been arrested on suspicion of a conspiracy to secure his person, and to carry him off a prisoner to Rochelle. Nothing came of the examination which followed; the prisoners were released, and an apology was sent by the states-General to the Duke of Alençon, as well for the indignity which had been offered to two of his servants, as for the suspicion which had been cast upon himself. Don John, however, was not satisfied. He persisted in asserting the existence of the conspiracy, and made no secret of his belief that the Prince of Orange was acquainted with the arrangement. As may be supposed, nothing was discovered in the course of the investigation to implicate that astute politician. The Prince had indeed secretly recommended that the Governor should be taken into custody on his first arrival, not for the purpose of assassination or personal injury, but in order to extort better terms from Philip, through the affection or respect which he might be supposed to entertain for his brother. It will be remembered that unsuccessful attempts had also been made to capture the Duke of Alva and the Commander Requesens. Such achievements comport with the spirit of the age, and although it is doubtful whether any well-concerted

1 Cartas, etc., MS., 29 Mayo 1677, f. 38-37.—El Señor Don Juan no era menester ninguno de aquellos que tienen estos cuidados.
2 "Yo Vm. sábe cuanto que tengo en el pensamiento el acusar a Oranxo pues bien crera que no os me a olvidado ni olvidara haste ayerro, que en menester mucho y muy mucho artificlo y persona tal que se necesitara del caso que como iras consigo tan conocido peligro no acuso de alliarlo aunque lo buscare..."—Ibid.
3 Cartas, etc., MS., 21 Junio 1677, f. 36-37.
4 Bor. x. 365. Hoedt, xi. 439.
5 Cabrera asserts that Count Irlain, with other deputies of the estates, had conspired ("por persuasión del Príncipe de Orán y ordén del Duque de Alencón") to make the capture of Don John's person; adding that the confession would have been extorted from them upon the rack, their being sufficient proofs of their guilt. But the affair was hushed up.—xi. 909 and b.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

“advocated against the liberty of the
Government, it is certain that he enter-
Erned no doubt on the subject himself.
In addition to these real or suspected
designs, there was an ever-present con-
sciousness in the mind of Don John
that the enthusiasm which greeted his
presence was hollow, that no real at-
tachment was felt for his person, that
his fate was leading him into a false
position, that the hearts of the people
were fixt upon another, and that they
were never to be won by himself.
Instinctively he seemed to feel a multi-
tude of invisible threads twining into
a snare around him, and the courageous
heart and the bounding strength be-
came uneasily conscious of the act in
which they were to be held captive
till life should be wasted quite away.

The universal affection for the rebel
Prince, and the hopeless abandon-
ment of the people, to that deadliest of
sins, the liberty of conscience, were alike
unquestionable. “They mean to re-
maintain free, sir,” wrote Escovedo to
Philip, “and to live as they please.
To that end they would be willing that
the Park should come to be master of
the country. By the road which they
are traveling, however, it will be the
Prince of Orange which comes to
quite the same thing.” At the same
time however, it was hoped that some-
better might be made of this liberty of
conscience. At every opportunity that
on the whole was successful and those
who were not taken to church and
Mass should be set aside they be-
cause the Pope and the Church sup-
ported the cause of the Prince.

We are not in a position to say
whether the situation was a new one.
But we have reason to believe that
the situation was a new one, for the
situation of the Prince of Orange was
not at all pleasing. He was in a

fire and blood.” The position of the
Governor was painful and perplexing.
“Don John,” said Escovedo, “is thirty
years old. I promise your Majesty
nothing, save that if he finds himself
without requisite assistance, he will
take himself off when your Majesty is
least thinking of such a thing.”

Nothing could be more melancholy
than the tone of the Governor’s letters.
He believed himself disliked, even in
the midst of affectionate demonstra-
tions. He felt compelled to use mo-
derate counsels, although he considered
mediation of no avail. He was
chained to his post, even though the
post could, in his opinion, be more
advantageously filled by another.
He would still endeavour to gain the
affections of the people, although he
believed them hopelessly alienated.
If patience would cure the malady of
the country, he professed himself capa-
bile of applying the remedy, although
the medicine had so far done but little
good, and although he had no very
strong hopes as to its future effects.
“Thus far, however,” said he, “I am
but as one crying in the wilderness.”

He took occasion to impress upon his
Majesty, in very strong language, the
necessity of money. Secret agents,
spies, and spies upon spies, were more
necessary than ever, and were very
expensive portions of government
machinery. Never was money more
wanted. Nothing could be more im-
portant than to bend faithfully to
the financial suggestions of Escovedo;
and Don John therefore urged his
Majesty again and again, not to dis-
trust these funds. “Money is the
power in the land, with which we must
run the rook upon;” and he there-
fore urged all those who wished well
to the affairs, to see that his Majesty
had not falt him in this important
matter. Notwithstanding, however, the vigour of his efforts, and the earnestness of his entreaties, he gave but little hope to His Majesty of any valuable thing from the nation on just conclusion. He saw the Prince of Orange supporting himself with great fury in Holland and Zealand; he knew that the Prince was backed by the Queen of England, who, notwithstanding her present in France and himself had offered her support to the rebels in case the proposed terms of peace were rejected in Holland, and he felt, therefore, nearly the whole people were at the direction of the Prince.  

Don John felt more and more convinced, too, that a conspiracy was on foot against his liberty. There were so many of the one party, and so few of the other, that if he were once fairly "trussed," he affirmed, that not a man among the faithful would dare to budge an inch. He therefore informed his Majesty that he was secretly meditating a retreat to some place of security, judging very properly, that if he were still his own master, he should be able to exert more influence over those who were still well disposed, than if he should suffer himself to be taken captive. A suppressed conviction that he could effect nothing, except with his sword, pierced through all his more prudent reflections. He maintained that, after all, there was no remedy for the body but to cut off the diseased parts at once, and therefore begged his Majesty for the means of performing the operation handsomely. The general expressions which he had previously used in favour of broths and mild treatment had more time with the severe amputation thus recommended. There was, in truth, a constant struggle going on between the expressions of his own mind and the advice which he had seen imposed upon him. He really felt entirely out of place, and although he avoided to say that he was against any measure as it seemed the wish of France, he was quite sure that the King should grant him any favour so soon as his presence should be absolutely required. He was sure that the people would never believe in His Majesty's firmness until the man concerning whom they entertained so much suspicion should be removed; for they saw in him, truly, the "thunderbolt of his Majesty's wrath."  

Orange and England confirmed their suspicions, and sustained their malice. Should he be compelled, against his will, to remain, he gave warning that he might do something which would be matter of astonishment to everybody.  

Meantime, the man in whose hands really lay the question of war and peace, sat at Middelburg, watching the deep current of events as it slowly flowed towards the precipice. The whole population of Holland and Zealand hung on his words. In approaching the realms of William the Silent, Don John felt that he had entered a charmed circle, where the tallman of his own illustrious name lost its power, where his valour was paralysed, and his sword rusted irretrievably in its sheath. "The people here," he wrote, "are beset by the Prince of Orange, who love him, they fear him, and wish to have him for their master. They inform him of everything, and take no resolution without consulting him."  

While William was thus directing and animating the whole nation with his spirit, his immediate friends became more and more anxious concerning the peril to which he was exposed. His mother, who had already seen her

---

1 "El Principe de Oranje continua el Seglar de gran fiera en Olanda y Zelandia." Letter of Don John to the King, Discoursi Sommieri, p. 35.  
2 Ibid., p. 36.  
3 "La mayor parte de las estadas está a su devoción, y cada el pueblo," etc.  
4 "Pues no tiene este cuerpo otro remedio que el cortar lo dañado del; lo cual se a do hacer ahora, haciendo la operación que suplicó de nuevo," etc., etc.—Ibid., p. 36.  
5 Letter of Don John to Philip, Discoursi Sommieri, p. 44.  
6 "Seré forzado a hacer alguna cosa que de mucho que marnviiller a todos," etc.—Letter to Fores, Discoursi Sommieri, p. 46.  
7 "— los tien encantadores porque lo aman y temen y quieren por Señor. Ellos lo avisan de todo y sin el no resuelven cosa."—Extract of Ms. letter in Gauchard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., liii., prefacio, III., note 8.
youngest-born, Henry, her Adolphus, her chivalrous Louis, laid in their bloody graves for the cause of conscience, was most solicitous for the welfare of her "heart's-beloved lord and son," the Prince of Orange. Nevertheless, the high-spirited old dame was even more alarmed at the possibility of peace in which that religious liberty for which so much dear blood had been poured forth should be inadequately secured. "My heart longs for certain tidings from my lord," she wrote to William, "for methinks the peace now in prospect will prove but an oppression for soul and conscience. I trust my heart's dearly-beloved lord and son will be supported by Divine grace to do nothing against God and his own soul's salvation. Tis better to lose the temporal than the eternal." Thus wrote the mother of William, and we can feel the sympathetic thrill which such tender and lofty words awake in his breast. His son, the illustrious Philip, now for ten years the compulsory sojourner in Spain, was not yet weaned from his affection for his noble patron, but sent messages of affection to him whenever occasion offered, while a less demonstrable proof of his deep affection he had lately afforded, at the expense of the lustiest captain of his Spanish guard. That officer, having heard in his presence to speak disrespectfully of his father, was instantly ordered from the west by the coupled young Count, hunted out of the window, and killed stone dead upon the spot. After this exhibition of his martial feelings, the Spanish government thought it necessary to take more solemn measures to tax so Lincoln as to unfortunately give the general satisfaction.

Most early in the morning, he was actually pressed on, and secure to tradition. The King had determined he should leave his one son to serve his nation, and even to the last had not given the order to return. Having been谔握 to say good-by to the Queen, he was at the last moment told he was to go.

that sacred fund the hundred thousand crowns which the King of France had presented them for their personal use, for it was not the Prince of Orange alone who had consecrated his wealth and his life to the cause, but the members of his family, less immediately interested in the country, had furnished what may well be called an enormous subsidy, and one most disproportioned to their means. Not only had they given all the cash which they could command, by mortgaging their lands and rents, their plate and furniture, but, in the words of Count John himself, "they had taken the chains and jewels from the necks of their wives, their children, and their mother, and had hawked them about, as if they had themselves been traders and hucksters." And yet, even now, while stooping under this prodigious debt, Count John asked not for present repayment. He only wrote to the Prince to signify his extreme embarrassment, and to request some acknowledgment of his services from the cities of Holland and Zealand, whence hitherto he had received no expression of gratitude or acknowledgment had proceeded.

The Prince consoled and assured, as best he could, his mother, son, wife, and brother, even at the same moment that he comforted his people. He also received at this time a second and more solemn embassy from Don John. N. seems to have exchanged visits at Brussels, and been acknowledged as the representative of his Majesty, than he hastened to make another effort to conciliate the Prince. Don John saw before him only a grand scheme of lofty birth and boundless influence, who had placed himself towards the Crown in a false position, from which he might even yet be rescued, for to sacrifice the whims of a refractory and transitory religious faction which had spun itself for a moment about so clear a brain, is far thought worse but a triumph.
the Prince. William of Orange, on the other hand, looked upon his young antagonist as the most brilliant impersonation which had yet been seen of the soul spirit of persecution.

It will be necessary to follow, somewhat more in detail than is usually desirable, the interchange of conversations, letters, and protocols, out of which the brief but important administration of Don John was composed; for it was exactly in such manifestations that the great fight was really proceeding. Don John meant peace, wise William meant war, for he knew that no other issue was possible. Peace, in reality, was war in its worst shape. Peace would unchain every priest's tongue, and unashath every knightly sword in the fifteen provinces against little Holland and Zealand. He had been able to bind all the provinces together by the hastily forged chain of the Ghent treaty, and had done what he could to strengthen the union by the principle of mutual religious respect. By the arrival of Don John that work had been deraigned. It had, however, been impossible for the Prince thoroughly to infuse his own ideas on the subject of toleration into the hearts of his nearest associates. He could not hope to inspire his deadly enemies with a deeper sympathy. Was he not himself the mark of obloquy among the Reformers, because of his leniency to Catholics? Nay more, was not his intimate councillor, the accomplished Saint Aldegonde, in despair because the Prince refused to exclude the Anabaptists of Holland from the rights of citizenship? At the very moment when William was straining every nerve to unite warring sects, and to persuade men's hearts into a system by which their consciences were to be laid open to God alone—at the moment when it was most necessary for the very existence of the fatherland that Catholic and Protestant should mingle their social and political relations, it was indeed a bitter disappointment for him to see wise statesmen of his own creed unable to rise to the idea of toleration. "The affair of the Anabaptists," wrote Saint Aldegonde, "has been renewed. The Prince objects to exclude them from citizenship. He answered me sharply, that their yea was equal to our oath, and that we should not press this matter, unless we were willing to confess that it was just for the Papists to compel us to a Divine service which was against our conscience." It seems hardly credible that this sentence, containing so sublime a tribute to the character of the Prince, should have been indited as a bitter censure, and that, too, by an enlightened and accomplished Protestant. "In short," continued Saint Aldegonde, with increasing vexation, "I don't see how we can accomplish our wish in this matter. The Prince has uttered reproaches to me that our clergy are striving to obtain a mastery over consciences. He praised lately the saying of a monk who was not long ago here, that our pot had not gone to the fire as often as that of our antagonists, but that when the time came it would be black enough. In short, the Prince fears that, after a few centuries, the clerical tyranny on both sides will stand in this respect on the same footing." 1

1 See the letter of Saint Aldegonde in Burdick, Hist. der Reformation, l. b. xi. 589, 590.

2 Bor, x. 814. Hoofd, xii. 501.

3 He died May 8, 1677—Bor, x. 812. Hoofd, xii. 501.
from the stage of life. There had been few more learned doctors of both laws than he. There had been few more adroit politicians, considered from his point of view. His punning device was "Vita mortalium nigilia," and he acted accordingly, but with a narrow interpretation. His life had indeed been a vigil, but it must be confessed that the vigils had been for Vigilius. The weather-beaten Palmirinus, as he loved to call himself, had conducted his own argory so warily that he had saved his whole cargo, and perished in port at last; while others, not sailing by his compass, were still tossed by the tempest.

The agents of Don John were the Duke of Aerschot, the Seigneur de Ricqes, Seigneur de Willerval, and Doctor Meesterke, accompanied by Doctor Andrew Gaill, one of the imperial commissioners. The two envoys from the states-general, Locinium and Schetz, being present at Gertruidenberg, were added to the deputation. An important conference took place, the details of which have been somewhat minutely preserved. The Prince of Orange, accompanied by Saint Aldegonde and four other councillors, encountered the seven champions from Brussels in a long debate, which was more like a passage of arms or a trial of skill than a friendly colloquy with a pacific result in prospect; for it must be remembered that the Prince of Orange did not mean peace. He had devised the pacification of Ghent as a union of the other provinces with Holland and Zealand, against Philip. He did not intend that it should be converted into a union of the other provinces with Philip, against Holland and Zealand.

Meesterke was the first to speak. He said that the Governor had despatched them to the Prince, to express his good intentions, to represent the fidelity with which his province had thus far been executed, and to entreat the Prince, together with its provinces of Holland and Zeeland, to unite with their sister provinces in common allegiance to his Majesty. His Highness also proposed to advise with them concerning the proper method of convoking the states-general. As soon as Meesterke had finished his observations, the Prince demanded that the points and articles should be communicated to him in writing. Now this was precisely what the envoys preferred to omit. It was easier, and far more agreeable, to state in a general field of controversy than to remain tethered to distinct points. It was particularly in these confused conferences, where neither party was entirely sincere, that the volatile word was thought preferable to the permanent letter. Already so many watery lines had been traced, in the course of these fluctuating negotiations, that a few additional records would be, if necessary, as rapidly effaced as the rest.

The commissioners, after whispering in each other's ears for a few minutes, refused to put down anything in writing. Protocols, they said, only engendered confusion.

"No, no," said the Prince, in reply, "we will have nothing except in black and white. Otherwise, things will be said on both sides which will afterwards be interpreted in different ways. Nay, it will be denied that some important points have been discussed at all. We know that by experience. Witness the solemn treaty of Ghent, which ye have tried to make fruitless.

1 Bor, x. 812. Meteren, vi. 120.—Another motto of his was, "En good Jurist en boorner Christ," that is to say, A good lawyer is a bad Christian.—Meteren, vi. 120. Unfortunately his own character did not give the lie satisfactorily to the device.

2 Bor, x. 814. Hoofd, xi. 502.

3 Ibid., x. 816. Ibid.

4 By the learned and acute Gachard, to whom the history of the Netherlands is under such great obligations. Vide Correspondance de Guillaume le Tau, i. i. proviso.
under pretence that some points, arranged by word of mouth, and not stated particularly in writing, had been intended in a different sense from the obvious one. Governments given by royal commission, for example; what point could be clearer? Nevertheless, ye have hunted up glosses and cavils to obscure the intention of the contracting parties. Ye have denied my authority over Utrecht, because not mentioned expressly in the treaty of Ghent."

"But," said one of the envoys, interrupting at this point, "neither the Council of State nor the Court of Mechlin consider Utrecht as belonging to your Excellency's government."

"Neither the Council of State," replied the Prince, "nor the Court of Mechlin have anything to do with the matter. 'Tis in my commission, and all the world knows it." He added, that instead of affairs being thrown into confusion by being reduced to writing, he was of opinion, on the contrary, that it was by that means alone they could be made perfectly clear.

Leominus replied, good naturedly, that there should be no difficulty upon that score, and that writings should be exchanged. In the meantime, however, he expressed the hope that the Prince would honour them with some preliminary information as to the points in which he felt aggrieved, as well as to the pledges which he and the states were inclined to demand.

"And what reason have we to hope," said the Prince, "that your pledges, if made, will be redeemed? That which was promised so solemnly at Ghent, and ratified by Don John and his Majesty, has not been fulfilled."

"Of what particular point do you complain?" asked Schetz. "Wherein has the Pacification been violated?"

Hereupon the Prince launched forth upon a flowing stream of invective. He spoke to them of his son detained in distant captivity—of his own property at Breda withheld—of a thousand confiscated estates—of garrisons of German mercenaries—of ancient constitutions annihilated—of the infamous edicts nominally suspended, but actually in full vigour. He complained bitterly that the citadels, those nests and dens of tyranny, were not yet demolished. "Ye accuse me of distrust," he cried; "but while the castles of Antwerp, Ghent, Namur, and so many more are standing, 'tis yourselves who shew how utterly ye are without confidence in any permanent and peaceful arrangement."

"And what," asked a deputy, smoothly, is the point which touches you most nearly? What is it that your Excellency most desires? By what means will it be possible for the government fully to give you contentment?"

"I wish," he answered simply, "the full execution of the Ghent Pacification. If you regard the general welfare of the land, it is well, and I thank you. If not, 'tis idle to make propositions, for I regard my country's profit, not my own." Afterwards, the Prince simply repeated his demand that the Ghent treaty should be executed; adding, that after the states-general should have been assembled, it would be time to propose the necessary articles for mutual security.

Hereupon Doctor Leominus observed that the assembly of the states-general could hardly be without danger. He alluded to the vast number of persons who would thus be convoked, to the great discrepancy of humours which would thus be manifested. Many men would be present neither discreet nor experienced. He therefore somewhat coolly suggested that it might be better to obviate the necessity of holding any general assembly at all. An amicable conference, for the sake of settling doubtful questions, would render the convocation superfluous,

---

1 Vraye Narration, etc., 449, 450.
2 See details of Conferences at Gertruy-denberg, preserved by Bor, x. 819.
3 Bor, x. 819. Hooff, xlii. 504.
4 Ibid. Ibid.
5 Ibid. Ibid.
and save the country from the dangers by which the step would be attended. The Doctor, concluding by referring to the recent assemblies of France, the only result of which had been fresh dissensions. It thus appeared that the proposition on the part of Don John meant something very different from its apparent signification. To advise with the Prince as to the proper method of assembling the estates really meant, to advise with him as to the best means of preventing any such assembly. Here, certainly, was a good reason for the preference expressed by the deputies, in favour of amicable discussions over formal protocols. It might not be so easy in a written document to make the assembly, and the prevention of the assembly, appear exactly the same thing.

The Prince, replied that there was a wide difference between the condition of France and of the Netherlands. Here, was one will and one intention. There, were many factions, many partialities, many family intrigues. Since it had been agreed by the Ghent treaty that certain points should be provisionally maintained and others settled by a speedy convocation of the states-general, the plainest course was to maintain the provisional points, and to summon the states-general at once. This certainly was concise and logical. It is doubtful, however, whether he were really as anxious for the assembly-general as he appeared to be. Both parties were fencing at each other, without any real intention of carrying their points; for neither wished the convocation, while both affected an eagerness for that event.—The conversation proceeded.

"At least," said an envoy, "you can tell beforehand in what you are aggrieved, and what you have to propose."

"We are aggrieved in nothing, and we have nothing to propose," answered the Prince, "so long as you maintain the Pacification. We demand no other pledge, and are willing to refer everything afterwards to the assembly."

1 Vrayo Narration, etc., 461.
2 Ibid., 492. 3 Ibid., 493, 493. 4 Ibid.

"But," asked Schetz, "what security do you offer us that you will yourselves maintain the Pacification?"

"We are not bound to give assurances," answered the Prince. "The Pacification is itself an assurance. It is a provisional arrangement, to be maintained by both parties, until after the decision of this assembly. The Pacification must therefore be maintained or disavowed. Choose between the two. Only, if you mean still to acknowledge it, you must keep its articles. This we mean to do, and if up to the present time you have any complaint to make of our conduct, we trust you have not, we are ready to give you satisfaction."

"In short," said an envoy, "you mean, after we shall have placed in your hands the government of Utrecht, Amsterdam, and other places, to deny us any pledges on your part to maintain the Pacification."

"But," replied the Prince, "if we are already accomplishing the Pacification, what more do you wish?"

"In this fashion," cried the other, "after having got all that you ask, and having thus fortified yourself more than you were ever fortified before, you will make war upon us."

"War!" cried the Prince, "what are you afraid of? We are but a handful of people; a worm compared to the King of Spain. Moreover, there are fifteen provinces to two. What have you to fear?"

"Ah," said Meesterke, "we have seen what you could do, when you were masters of the sea. Don't make yourselves out quite so little."

"But," said the Prince, "the Pacification of Ghent provides for all this. Your deputies were perfectly satisfied with the guarantees it furnished. As to making war upon you, 'tis a thing without foundation or appearances of probability. Had you believed that you had anything to fear, you would not have forgotten to demand pledges enough. On the contrary, you saw how roundly we were dealing with you then, honestly disregarding the
country, even before the peace had been concluded. For ourselves, although we felt the right to demand guarantees, we would not do it, for we were treating with you on terms of confidence. We declared expressly that had we been dealing with the King, we should have exacted stricter pledges. As to demanding them of us at the moment, 'tis nonsense. We have neither the means of assailing you, nor do we deem it expedient to do so.”

“To say the truth,” replied Schetz, “we are really confident that you will not make war upon us. On the other hand, however, we see you spreading your religion daily, instead of keeping it confined within your provinces. What assurance do you give us that, after all your demands shall have been accorded, you will make no innovation in religion?”

“The assurance which we give you,” answered the Prince, “is that we will really accomplish the Pacification.”

“But,” persisted Schetz, “do you really promise to submit to all which the states-general shall ordain, as well on this point of religious exercise in Holland and Zealand, as on all the others?”

This was a home thrust. The Prince parried it for a while. In his secret thoughts he had no expectation or desire that the states-general, summoned in a solemn manner by the Governor-General, on the basis of the memorable assembly before which was enacted the grand ceremony of the imperial abdication, would ever hold their session, and although he did not anticipate the prohibition by such assembly, should it take place, of the Reformed worship in Holland and Zealand, he did not intend to submit to it, even should it be made.

“I cannot tell,” said he, accordingly, in reply to the last question, “for you have yourselves already broken and violated the Pacification; having made an accord with Don John without our consent, and having already received him as Governor.”

So that you don't mean,” replied Schetz, “to accept the decision of the states?”

“I don't say that,” returned the Prince, continuing to parry; “it is possible that we might accept it; it is possible that we might not. We are no longer in our entire rights, as we were at the time of our first submission at Ghent.”

“But we will make you whole,” said Schetz.

“That you cannot do,” replied the Prince, “for you have broken the Pacification all to pieces. We have nothing, therefore, to expect from the states, but to be condemned off-hand.”

“You don't mean, then,” repeated Schetz, “to submit to the states touching the exercise of religion!”

“No, we do not!” replied the Prince, driven into a corner at last, and striking out in his turn. “We certainly do not. To tell you the truth, we see that you intend our extirpation, and we don't mean to be extirpated.”

“Ho!” said the Duke of Aerschot, “there is nobody who wishes that.”

“Indeed, but you do,” said the Prince. “We have submitted ourselves to you in good faith, and you now would compel us and all the world to maintain exclusively the Catholic religion. This cannot be done except by extirpating us.”

A long, learned, vehement discussion upon abstract points, between Saint Aldegonde, Leoninus, and Doctor Gaill, then ensued, during which the Prince, who had satisfied himself as to the result of the conference, retired from the apartment. He afterwards had a private convention with Schetz and Leoninus, in which he reproached them with their inclination to reduce their fatherland to slavery. He also took occasion to remark to Hierges, that it was a duty to content the people; that whatever might be accomplished for them was durable, whereas the will of kings was perishable. He told the Duke of Aerschot that if Utrecht were not restored he would take it by force. He warned

1 Vryce Narration, etc., 454. 2 Ibid. 3 Ibid., 455. 4 Ibid., 460. 5 Que d'estre coerdtés à pur et à plain.—Ibid. 6 Ibid. 7 Ibid., 409.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

The envoys accordingly, in obedience to their instructions, made a formal statement to the Prince of Orange and the states of Holland and Zealand, on the part of Don John. They alluded to the departure of the Spaniards, as if that alone had fulfilled every duty, and authorized every claim. They therefore demanded the immediate publication in Holland and Zealand of the Perpetual Edict. They insisted on the immediate discontinuance of all hostile attempts to reduce Amsterdam to the jurisdiction of Orange; required the Prince to abandon his pretensions to Utrecht, and denounced the efforts making by him and his partisans to diffuse their heretical doctrines through the other provinces. They observed, in conclusion, that the general question of religion was not to be handled, because reserved for the consideration of the states-general, according to the treaty of Ghent.

The reply, delivered on the following day by the Prince of Orange and the deputies, maintained that the Perpetual Edict was widely different from the Pacification of Ghent, which is affected to uphold; that the promises to remain from all violation of the ancient constitutions had not been kept, that the German troops had not been dismissed, that the property of the Prince in the Netherlands and Burgundy had not been restored, that his son was detained in captivity, that the government of Utrecht was without from him, that the charters and constitution of the country, instead of being maintained, had been contracted, and that the governor had claimed the right to convolve the states-general at his pleasure, in violation of the ancient right to assemble at their own. The document further complained that the adherents of the Reformed religion, were not allowed to

The text is not fully readable due to the quality of the image. However, the general context suggests a historical account of events involving the Dutch Republic and their dealings with the Prince of Orange and the Spanish forces in the context of the Pacification of Ghent and the subsequent events related to the religious and political rights of the Dutch people.
frequent the different provinces in freedom, according to the stipulations of Ghent; that Don John, notwithstanding all these short-comings, had been acknowledged as Governor-General, without the consent of the Prince; that he was surrounded with a train of Spaniards, Italians, and other foreigners—Gonzalez, Escovedo, and the like—as well as by renegade Netherlanders like Tassias, by whom he was unduly influenced against the country and the people, and by whom a "back door was held constantly open" to the admission of evils innumerable. Finally, it was asserted that, by means of this last act of union, a new form of inquisition had been introduced, and one which was much more cruel than the old system; inasmuch as the Spanish Inquisition did not take information against men except upon suspicion, whereas, by the new process, all the world would be examined as to their conscience and religion, under pretense of maintaining the union.

Such was the result of this second mission to the Prince of Orange on the part of the Governor-General. Don John never sent another. The swords were now fairly measured between the antagonists, and the scabbard was soon to be thrown away. A few weeks afterwards, the Governor wrote to Philip that there was nothing in the world which William of Orange so much abhorred as his Majesty; adding, with Castilian exaggeration, that if the Prince could drink the King's blood he would do so with great pleasure.

Don John, being thus seated in the saddle, had a moment's leisure to look around him. It was but a moment, for he had small confidence in the aspect of affairs, but one of his first acts after assuming the government afforded a proof of the interpretation which he had adopted of the Ghent Pacification. An edict was issued, addressed to all bishops, "heretic-masters," and provincial councils, commanding the strict enforcement of the Canons of Trent, and other ecclesiastical decrees. These authorities were summoned instantly to take increased heed of the flocks under their charge, "and to protect them from the ravening wolves which were seeking to devour them."

The measure bore instant fruit. A wretched tailor of Mechlin, Peter Pannis by name, an honest man, but a heretic, was arrested upon the charge of having preached or exhorted at a meeting in that city. He confessed that he had been present at the meeting, but denied that he had preached. He was then required to denounce the others who had been present, and the men who had actually officiated. He refused, and was condemned to death. The Prince of Orange, while the process was pending, wrote an earnest letter to the Council of Mechlin, imploring them not now to rekindle the fires of religious persecution. His appeal was in vain. The poor tailor was beheaded at Mechlin on the 15th of June, the Conqueror of Lepanto being present at the execution, and adding dignity to the scene. Thus, at the moment when William of Orange was protecting the Anabaptists of Middelburg in their rights of citizenship, even while they refused its obligations, the son of the Emperor was dipping his hands in the blood of a poor wretch who had done no harm but to listen to a prayer without denouncing the preacher. The most intimate friends of the Prince were offended with his liberality. The imperial shade of Don John's father might have risen to approve the son who had so dutifully revived his bloody edicts and his ruthless policy.

Three parties were now fairly in existence: the nobles, who hated the Spaniards, but who were disposed to hold themselves aloof from the people; the adherents of Don John, commonly

---

1 "Dat Don Johan een achter deur open houdt met de boeven genoemde, en andere van gelijke stoffe, etc., etc."  
2 Reply of the States of Holland. Bor, x. 518.  
3 Extract from MS. letter (28th of July 1577) of Don John to the King, apud Gachard, præface to Correspondance de Guillaume le Tacit., iii. lxiv., note, 112.  
4 "Ketter meesters."—See the edict, Bor, x. 519, 520.  
5 Bor, x. 520. Hoofd, xii. 507. Meteren, vii. 122.  
6 Bor, Hoofd, Meteren, ubi sup.
country were still in the hands of the Spaniards. Aerschot, indeed, governed the castle of Antwerp, in room of Sancho d’Avila, but how much more friendly would Aerschot be than Avila, when interest prompted him to sustain Don John against the Prince?

Meanwhile, the estates, according to their contract, were straining every nerve to raise the requisite sum for the payment of the German troops. Equitable offers were made, by which the soldiers were to receive a certain portion of the arrears due to them in merchandise, and the remainder in cash. The arrangement was rejected, at the secret instance of Don John. While the Governor affected an ingenuous desire to aid the estates in their efforts to free themselves from the remaining portion of this incumbrance, he was secretly tampering with the leading German officers, in order to prevent their acceptance of any offered terms. He persuaded these military chiefs that a conspiracy existed, by which they were not only to be deprived of their wages but of their lives. He warned them to heed his promises, to accept no terms. Convincing them that he, and he only, was their friend, he arranged secret plans by which they should assist him in taking the fortresses of the country into still more secure possession, for he was not more inclined to trust to the Aerschots and the Havres than was the Prince himself.

The Governor lived in considerable danger, and in still greater dread of capture, if not of assassination. His imagination, excited by endless tales of ambush and half-discovered conspiracies, saw armed soldiers behind every bush, a pitfall in every street. Had not the redoubtable Alva been nearly made a captive? Did not Louis of Nassau nearly entrap the Grand Commander? No doubt the Prince of Orange was desirous of accomplishing a feat by which he would be placed in regard to Philip on the vantage ground which the King had obtained by his

---

1 Bor, x. 220.
seizure of Count Van Buren, nor did Don John need for warnings coming from sources far from obscure. In May, the Viscount De Gand had forced his way to his bedside in the dead of night, and wakening him from his sleep, had assured him, with great solemnity, that his life was not worth a pin’s purchase if he remained in Brussel. He was aware, he said, of a conspiracy by which both his liberty and his life were endangered, and assured him that in immediate flight lay his only safety. The Governor fled to Mechlin, where the same warnings were soon afterwards renewed, for the solemn sacrifice of Peter Panis, the poor preaching tailor of that city, had not been enough to strike terror to the hearts of all the Netherlanders. One day, toward the end of June, the Duke of Aerschot, riding out with Don John, gave him a circumstantial account of plots, old and new, whose existence he had discovered or invented, and he shewed a copy of a secret letter, written by the Prince of Orange to the estates, recommending the forcible seizure of his Highness. It is true that the Duke was, at that period and for long after, upon terms of the most “fraternal friendship” with the Prince, and was in the habit of signing himself “his very affectionate brother and cordial friend to serve him,” yet this did not prevent him from accomplishing what he deemed his duty, in secretly denouncing his prince. It is also true that he, at the same time, gave the Prince private information concerning the government, and sent him intercepted letters from his enemies, thus easing his conscience on both sides, and trimming his sails to every wind which might blow. The Duke now, however, reminded his Highness of the contumely with which he had been treated at Brussels, of the insolent threats with which the citizens had pursued his servants and secretaries even to the very door of his palace. He assured him that the same feeling existed at Mechlin, and that neither himself nor family were much safer there than in the capital, a plot being fully organised for securing his person. The conspirators, he said, were openly supported by a large political party, who called themselves anti-Johanists, and who clothed themselves in symbolic costume, as had been done by the disaffected in the days of Cardinal Granvelle. He assured the Governor that nearly all the members of the states-general were implicated in these schemes. “And what becomes, then, of their promises?” asked Don John. “That for their promises!” cried the Duke, snapping his fingers; “no man in the land feels bound by engagements now.” The Governor demanded the object of the states in thus seeking to deprive him of his liberty. The Duke informed him that it was to hold him in captivity until they had compelled him to sign every paper which they chose to lay before him. Such things had been done in the Netherlands in former days, the Duke observed, as he proceeded to narrate how a predecessor of his Highness and a prince of the land, after having been compelled to sign innumerable documents, had been, in conclusion, tossed out of the windows of his own palace, with all his retinue, to perish upon the pikes of an insurgent mob below. The Governor protested that it did not become the son of Charles the Fifth and the representative of his Catholic Majesty to hear such intimations a second time. After his return, he brooded over what had been said to him for a few days, and then broke up his establishment at Mechlin, selling off his superfluous furniture.

1 Vera et Simplex Narratio Eorum quae ad Adventu D. Joannis Austriaci, etc., gesta sunt, p. 13.—Luxemburgi, 1578.
2 Ibid., p. 17.
3 Archives et Correspondance, vi. 141-148.
4 See the letter last quoted, Archives, etc., vi. 148, 144.
5 Vera et Simplex Narratio, etc., p. 14.—Compare the Mémoire de Grobbenck, p. 172; Bullo, Com. Roy., x.
6 Ibid., p. 19.—See also the letter of Don John to the states-general, dated August 24, 1577, in Bor, xi. 864, 865.—“Droop by antwoorde klickende mute fingern,” etc.
7 Vera Narratio, etc., p. 18, 19. Letter of Don John, ubi sup.
and even the wine in his cellars. Thus shewing that his absence, both from Brussels and Mechlin, was to be a prolonged one, he took advantage of an unforeseen occurrence again to remove his residence.

CHAPTER III

The city of Namur—Margaret of Valois.—Her intrigues in Hainault in favour of Alençon.—Her reception at Don Juan at Namur—Feast given in her honour.—Seizure of Namur citadel by Don John.—Plan for seizing that of Antwerp.—Letter of the estates to Philip—sent by Escovedo.—Porteous and fate of Escovedo in Madrid.—Repairing of Dykes.—The Prince's visit to Holland.—His letter to the estates-general on the subject of Namur citadel.—His visit to Utrecht.—Correspondence and commissioners between Don John and the estates.—Acrimonious and passionate character of these colleagues.—Attempt of Trewing upon Antwerp citadel frustrated by Du Bourc—Fortunatus' panic of the foreign mercenaries.—Antwerp evacuated by the foreign troops.—Renewed correspondence.—Audacity of the Governor's demands.—Letters of Escovedo and others intercepted.—Private schemes of Don John not understood by the estates.—His letter to the Empress Dowager.—More correspondence with the estates.—Painful and false position of the Governor.—Demolition, in part, of Antwerp citadel, and of other fortresses by the patriots.—Status of Alva.—Letter of estates-general to the King.

There were few cities of the Netherlands more picturesque in situation, more trimly built, and more opulent of aspect than the little city of Namur. Seated at the confluence of the Somme with the Meuse, and throwing over each river a bridge of solid but graceful structure, it lay in the lap of a most fruitful valley. A broad crescent-shaped plain, fringed by the rapid Meuse, and enclosed by gently rolling hills cultivated to their crests, or by abrupt precipices of limestone crowned with verdure, was divided by numerous hedgerows, and dotted all over with corn-folds, vineyards, and flower-gardens. Many eyes have gazed with delight upon that well-known and most lovely valley, and many torrents of blood have mingled with those glancing waters since that long-buried and most sanguinary age which forms our theme; and still placid as ever is the valley, brightly as ever flows the stream. Even now, as in that vanished, but never-forgotten time, nestles the little city in the angle of the two rivers; still directly over its head seems to hang in mid-air the massive and frowning fortress, like the gigantic helmet in the fiction, as if ready to crush the pigmy town below.

It was this famous citadel, covering an abrupt precipice five hundred feet above the river's bed, and placed near the frontier of France, which made the city so important, and which had now attracted Don John's attention in this hour of his perplexity. The unexpected visit of a celebrated personage furnished him with the pretext which he desired. The beautiful Margaret of Valois, Queen of Navarre, was proceeding to the baths of Spa to drink the waters. Her health was as perfect as her beauty, but she was flying from a husband whom she hated, to advance the interest of a brother whom she loved with a more than sisterly fondness—for the worthless Duke of Alençon was one of the many competitors for the Netherlands government; the correspondence between himself and his brother with Orange and his agents being still continued. The hollow truce with the Huguenots in France had, however, been again succeeded by war. Henry of Valois had already commenced operations in Gascony against Henry of Navarre, whom he hated almost as cordially as Margaret herself could do, and the Duke of Alençon was beseeching Issime. Meantime, the beautiful Queen came to mingle the golden thread of her...
feminine intrigues with the dark woof of the Netherland destinies.

Few spirits have been more subtle, few faces so fatal as hers. True child of the Medicean mother, worthy sister of Charles, Henry, and Francis—princes for ever infamous in the annals of France—she possessed more beauty and wit than Mary of Scotland, more learning and accomplishments than Elizabeth of England. In the blaze of her beauty, according to the inflated language of her most determined worshipper, the wings of all rivals were melted. Heaven required to be raised higher and earth made wider, before a full sweep could be given to her own majestic flight. We are further informed that she was a Minerva for eloquence, that she composed matchless poems which she sang most exquisitely to the sound of her lute, and that her familiar letters were so full of genius, that "poor Cicero" was but a fool to her in the same branch of composition. The world has shuddered for ages at the dark tragedy of her nuptials. Was it strange that hatred, incest, murder, should follow in the train of a wedding thus hideously solemnised?

Don John, as in his Moorish disguise he had looked upon her perfections, had felt in danger of becoming really the slave he personated—her beauty is more divine than human," he had cried, "but fitter to destroy men's souls than to bless them;"—and now the enchantress was on her way to his dominions.

Her road led through Namur to Liege, and gallantry required that he should meet her as she passed. Attended by a select band of gentlemen and a few horsemen of his body-guard, the Governor came to Namur.

Meantime the Queen crossed the frontier, and was courteously received at Cambray. The bishop—of the loyal

house of Berlaimont—was a stanch supporter of the King, and although a Fleming, was Spanish to the core. On him the cajolery of the beautiful Queen was first essayed, but was found powerless. The prelate gave her a magnificent ball, but resisted her blandishments. He retired with the appearance of the confections, but the governor of the citadel, the Seigneur d'Inchy, remained, with whom Margaret was more successful. She found him a cordial hater of Spain, a favourer of France, and very impatient under the authority of the bishop. He obtained permission to accompany the royal visitor a few stages of her journey, and returned to Cambray, her willing slave; holding the castle in future, neither for king nor bishop, but for Margaret's brother, Alençon, alone. At Mons she was received with great state by the Count Lalain, who was governor of Hainault, while his Countess governed him. A week of festivities graced the advent of the Queen, during which period the hearts of both Lalain and his wife were completely subjugated. They agreed that Flanders had been too long separated from the parental France to which it of right belonged. The Count was a stanch Catholic, but he hated Spain. He was a relative of Egmont, and anxious to avenge his death, but he was no lover of the people, and was jealous of Orange. Moreover, his wife had become entirely fascinated by the designing Queen. So warm a friendship had sprung up between the two fair ladies as to make it indispensable that Flanders and Hainault should be annexed to France. The Count promised to hold his whole government at the service of Alençon, and recommended that an attempt should be made to gain over the incorruptible Governor of Cambray. Margaret did not inform him that she had already

1 Eloge de Marguerite de Valois, Rayne de France et de Navarre, etc., par Brantome, p. 5, sqq.

2 "... Ses belles lettres—les mieux couches soit pour être graves, que pour être familières—il n'y a nul qui les voyant se moque du pauvre Cicéron avec les siennes familières," etc., etc.—Eloge, etc., etc., p. 18.

3 "Aunque la hombrosa desta Reyna se mas divina que humana, es mas para perder y dañar los hombres que salvarlos."—Ibid., p. 4.

turned that functionary round her finger, but she urged Lalaín and his wife to seduce him from his allegiance, if possible. 1

The Count, with a retinue of mounted men, then accompanied her on her way towards Namur, but turned as the distant tramp of Don John's cavalcade was heard approaching, for it was not desirable for Lalaín, at that moment, to find himself face to face with the Governor. Don John stood a moment awaiting the arrival of the Queen. He did not dream of her political intrigue, nor see in the fair form approaching him one mortal enemy the more. Margaret travelled in a splendid litter with six pillars, lined with sable velvet, and entirely enclosed in glass, 2 which was followed by those of the Princess of the Rock, the Countess of Stenay, and of Matilda de Turenne. After these came ten horses bearing embroidered cloaks, and six horses filled with ladies' litters. These were

The Queen on her way to Namur, was met by Don John at Alost, and was ushered. A spacious and stately hall, most gorgeously furnished, opened into a series of chambers and cabinets, worthy, in their appointments, of a royal palace. The tent and bed coverings prepared for the queen were exquisitely embroidered in needlework with scenes representing the battle of Lepanto. 3 The great hall was hung with gorgeous tapestry of satin and velvet, ornamented with columns of raised silver work, and with many figures in antique costume, of the same massive embroidery. The rest of the furniture was also of satin, velvet, cloth of gold, and brocade. The Queen was dazzled with so much magnificence, and one of the courtiers could not help expressing astonishment at the splendour of the apartments and decorations, which, as he observed to the Duke of Aerschot, seemed more appropriate to the palace of a powerful monarch than to the apartments of a young bachelor prince. 4

The Duke replied by explaining that the expensive embroidery which they saw was the result not of extravagance, but of value and generosity. After the battle of Lepanto, Don John had restored, without ransom, the two sons, who had been taken prisoners, of a powerful Turkish bashaw. The bashaw, in gratitude, had sent this rich tent of tapestry as a present to the queen, and Don John had received it in Milan, in which city, as a mark of the taste of its upholsterers, it had been arranged for furnishing.

The next morning a grand mas...
Seigneur de Froymont, suspecting nothing, acceded to the propriety of the suggestion made by the Berlaymongs. Meantime, with a blast of his horn, Don John appeared at the castle gate. He entered the fortress with the castellan, while one of the gentlemen watched outside, as the ambushed soldiers came toiling up the precipice. When all was ready the gentleman returned to the hall, and made a signal to Don John, as he sat at breakfast with the constable. The Governor sprang from the table and drew his sword; Berlaymont and his four sons drew their pistols, while at the same instant the soldiers entered. Don John, exclaiming that this was the first day of his government, commanded the castellan to surrender. De Froymont, taken by surprise, and hardly understanding this very melo-dramatic attack upon a citadel by its own lawful governor, made not much difficulty in complying. He was then turned out of doors, along with his garrison, mostly feeble old men and invalids. The newly arrived soldiers took their places, at command of the Governor, and the stronghold of Namur was his own.

There was little doubt that the representative of Philip had a perfect right to possess himself of any fortress within his government; there could be as little that the sudden stratagem by which he had thus made himself master of this citadel would prove offensive to the estates, while it could hardly be agreeable to the King; and yet it is not certain that he could have accomplished his purpose in any other way. Moreover, the achievement was one of a projected series by which he meant to re-vindicate his dwindling authority. He was weary of playing the hypocrite, and convinced that he and his monarch were both abhorred by the Netherlanders. Peace was impossible—war was forbidden him. Reduced almost to a nullity by the Prince of Orange, it was time for him to make

---

1 Mémoires de Marguerite de Valois, ii. 185. Hoofd, xii. 508.
a stand, and in this impregnable fastness his position at least was a good one. Many months before, the Prince of Orange had expressed his anxious desire that this most important town and citadel should be secured for the estates. "You know," he had written to Bosom in December, "the evil and the dismay which the loss of the city and fortress of Namur would occasion to us. Let me beseech you that all possible care be taken to preserve them." Nevertheless, their preservation had been entrusted to a feebleminded old constable, at the head of a handful of cripples.

We know how intense had been the solicitude of the Prince, not only to secure but to destroy these citadels, "nests of tyranny," which had been built by despots to crush, not protect, the towns at their feet. These precautions had been neglected, and the consequences were displaying themselves, for the castle of Namur was not the only one of which Don John felt himself secure. Although the Duke of Aerschot seemed so very much his humble servant, the Governor did not trust him, and wished to see the citadel of Antwerp in more unquestionable keeping. He had therefore withdrawn, not only the Duke, but his son, the Prince of Chimay, commander of the castle in his father's absence, from that important post, and insisted upon their accompanying him to Namur. So gallant a courtier as Aerschot could hardly refuse to pay his homage to so illustrious a princess as Margaret of Valois, while during the absence of the Duke and Prince the keys of Antwerp citadel had been, at the command of Don John, placed in the keeping of the Seigneur de Treslong, an unscrupulous and devoted royalist. The celebrated Colonel Van Ende, whose participation, at the head of his German cavalry, in the terrible sack of that city, which he had been ordered to defend, has been narrated, was commanded to return to Antwerp. He was to present himself openly to the city authorities, but he was secretly directed by the Governor-General to act in cooperation with the Colonels Fugger, Frondsbergen, and Pesteiller, who commanded the forces already stationed in the city. These distinguished officers had been all summer in secret correspondence with Don John, for they were the instruments with which he meant by a bold stroke to recover his almost lost authority. While he had seemed to be decending the efforts of the states-general to pay off and disband these mercenaries, nothing had in reality been further from his thoughts, and the time had now come when his secret plans were to be executed, according to the agreement between himself and the German colonels. He wrote to them, accordingly, to delay no longer the accomplishment of the deed—that deed being the seizure of Antwerp citadel, as he had already successfully mastered that of Namur. The Duke of Aerschot, his brother, and son, were in his power, and could do nothing to prevent the cooperation of the colonels in the city with Treslong in the castle, so that the Governor would thus be enabled, laying his head tranquilly upon "the pillow of the Antwerp citadel," according to the reproachful expression subsequently used by the estates, to await the progress of events.

The current of his adventurous career was not, however, destined to run thus smoothly. It is true that the estates had not yet entirely lost their confidence in his character, but the seizure of Namur, and the attempt upon Antwerp, together with the contents of the intercepted letters written by himself and Escovedo to Philip, to Perez, to the Empress, to the Colonels

---

1 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, v. 371.
2 Bor. x. 228. Meteren, vii. 129.
3 Ibid. Louis de Boys, Seigneur de Treslong. Meteren, ubi sup. Discours Sommier des Jaques Causes, etc. pp. 10, 29.
4 Letter of Don John, July 16, 1577, to the Colonels Frondsbergen and Fugger. Discours Sommier, ubi sup. Bor. x. 843.
5 Discours Sommier, etc. pp. 18, 19. See the original letters in the appendix to Discours Sommier, etc. p. 55, et sqq.; also in Bor. x. 848, sqq.—translated.
6 "Et se reposant sur l'eveillé du Chasteau d'Antwerp d'aqcl il se tient envoirement assueri," etc.—Discours Sommier, etc. p. 55.
Frondasberger and Fugger, were soon destined to open their eyes. In the meantime, almost exactly at the moment when Don John was executing his enterprise against Namur, Escovedo had taken an affectionate farewell of the estates at Brussels, for it had been thought necessary, as already intimated, both for the apparent interests and the secret projects of Don John, that the Secretary should make a visit to Spain. At the command of the Governor-General he had ordered to take charge of any communication for his Majesty which the estates might be disposed to entrust to him, and they had accordingly addressed a long epistle to the King, in which they gave ample expression to their indignation and their woe. They remonstrated with the King concerning the continued presence of the German mercenaries, whose knives were ever at their throats, whose plunder and insolence impoverished and tortured the people. They reminded him of the vast sums which the provinces had contributed in times past to the support of government, and they begged assistance from his bounty now. They recalled to his vision the melancholy spectacle of Antwerp, but lately the "nurse of Europe, the fairest flower in his royal garland, the foremost and noblest city of the earth," now quite desolate and forlorn, and with additional instructions to Escovedo, that he should not fail, in his verbal communications, to represent the evil consequences of the course hitherto pursued by his Majesty's governors in the Netherlands, they dismissed him with good wishes, and with "crowns for convoy" in his purse to the amount of a revenue of two thousand yearly. His secret correspondence was intercepted and made known a few weeks after his departure for that terrible Spain whence so few travellers returned.  

For a moment we follow him thither. With a single word in anticipation, concerning the causes and the consummation of this celebrated murder, which was delayed till the following year, the unfortunate Escovedo may be dismissed from these pages. It has been seen how artfully Antonio Perez, Secretary of State, paramour of Princess Eboli, and ruling councillor at that day of Philip, had fostered in the King's mind the most extravagant suspicions as to the schemes of Don John, and of his confidential secretary. He had represented it as their fixed and secret intention, after Don John should be finally established on the throne of England, to attack Philip himself in Spain, and to deprive him of his crown, Escovedo being represented as the prime instigator and controller of this astounding plot, which lunatics only could have engendered, and which probably never had existence.

No proof of the wild design was offered. The language which Escovedo was accused by Perez of having held previously to his departure for Flanders—that it was the intention of Don John and himself to fortify the rock of Mogro, with which, and with the command of the city of Santander, they could make themselves masters of Spain after having obtained possession of England—is too absurd to have been uttered by a man of Escovedo's capacity. Certainly, had Perez been provided with the least scrap of writing from the hands of Don John or Escovedo which could be tortured into evidence upon this point, it would have been forthcoming, and would have rendered such fictitious hearsay superfluous. Perez, in connivance with Philip, had been systematically conducting his correspondence with Don John and Escovedo, in order to elicit some evidence of the imputed scheme. "Twas the only way," said Perez to Philip, "to make

---

1 Bor, x, 625. Hooff, xlii. 567. Discours Sommier, etc., p. 47.
2 "Vroost van geheel Europe, deelste bloeme van uwe majesticite krone en de vormaesten en rijxeste van de wereld," etc., etc.—Letter of the States. Bor, 326, 327.
5 Mem. de Ant. Perez, 313.
them unbar their bosoms to the sword." "I am quite of the same opinion," replied Philip to Perez, "for, according to my theology, you would do your duty neither to God nor the world, unless you did as you are doing." 1 Yet the excellent pair of conspirators at Madrid could wring no damning proofs from the lips of the supposititious conspirators in Flanders, save that Don John, after Esco
deo's arrival in Madrid, wrote impatiently and frequently, to demand that he should be sent back, together with the money which he had gone to Spain to procure. "Money, more money, and Escovedo," 2 wrote the Governor, and Philip was quite willing to accept this most natural explanation as evidence of his brother's designs against his crown. Out of these shreds and patches—the plot against England, the Pope's bull, the desire expressed by Don John to march into France as a simple adventurer, with a few thousand men at his back—Perez, according to his own statement, drew up a protocol, afterwards formally approved by Philip, which concluded with the necessity of taking Escovedo's life, instantly but privately, and by poison. The Marquis de Los Velos, to whom the memorial was submitted for his advice, averred that if the death-bed wafer were in his own lips, he should vote for the death of the culprit; 3 Philip had already jumped to the same conclusion; Perez joyfully undertook the business, having received carte blanche from the King, and thus the unfortunate secretary was doomed. Immediately after the arrival of Escove
deo in Madrid, he addressed a letter to the King. Philip filed it away among other despatches, with this annotation: "The damnable
mercy has arrived—it is necessary to make great haste, and to depose him before he murders us." 4

The King, having been thus artfully inflamed against his brother and his unfortunate secretary, became clamorous for the blood of Escovedo. At the same time, that personage, soon after his return to Spain, was shocked by the discovery of the armour of Perez with the Princess Eboli. 5 He considered it his duty, both towards the deceased Prince and the living King, to protest against this perfidy. He threatened to denounce to the King, who seemed the only person about the court ignorant of the affair, this double treason of his mistress and his minister. Perez and Anna of Eboli, furious at Escovedo's insolence, and anxious lest he should execute his menace, deter
ined to disembarrass themselves of so meddlesome a person. 6 Philip's rage against Don John was accordingly turned to account, and Perez received the King's secret orders to procure Escovedo's assassination. 7 Thus an imaginary conspiracy of Don John against the crown of Philip was the pretext, the fears and rage of Eboli and her paramour were the substantial reason, for the crime now projected. The details of the murder were arranged and executed by Perez, 8 but it must be confessed in justice to Philip,

1 "Es menester de escribir y oyr de aquella manera—porque asy se meten pora espada," etc.—Billete de Ant. Perez to the King. "Y pues no sé si las palabras que vos—Que no huyades para con Dios ni para con el mundo, sino lo hiciendo asy," etc.—Annotation in Philip's hand on the billet, Mem. de Perez, pp. 310, 311.

2 "Dinero, y mas dinero, y Escovedo."—

Ibid., 314.

3 "Que en el Sacrimento en la boca—
vuelen la (muerde) de Juan de Escovedo," etc., etc.—Mem. de Ant. Perez, 317.

4 Cartas del D. J. y del Seor. Escove
deo, Ms. of Royal Library, Hague, no desapareces al Rey

5 "The narrative of this assassination, 10
with much inferior nicey to that of his own performances in the same field. Many persons were privy to the plot. There was much blundering, there was great public scandal in Madrid, and no one ever had a reasonable doubt as to the instigators and the actual perpetrators of the crime. Two attempts to poison Escovedo, were made by Perez, at his own table, through the agency of Antonio Enriques, a confidential servant or page. Both were unsuccessful. A third was equally so, but suspicions were aroused. A female slave in the household of Escovedo, was in consequence arrested, and immediately hanged in the public square, for a pretended attempt to murder her master. A few days afterwards (on the 81st of March, 1578) the deed was accomplished at nightfall in the streets of Madrid, by six conspirators. They consisted of the majordomo of Perez, a page in his household, the page's brother from the country, an ex-soldier from the Royal kitchen, Juan Rubio by name, who had been the unsuccessful agent in the poisoning scheme, together with two professional braves, hired for the occasion. It was Insasti, one of this last-mentioned couple, who dispatched Escovedo with a single stab, the others aiding and abetting, or keeping watch in the neighbourhood.

The murderers effected their escape, and made their report to Perez, who for the sake of appearances, was upon a visit in the country. Suspicion soon tracked the real culprits, who were above the reach of justice; nor, as to the motives which had prompted the murders, were many ignorant, save only the murderer himself. Philip had ordered the assassination, but he was profoundly deceived as to the causes of its accomplishment. He was the dupe of a subtler villain than himself, and thought himself sacrificing a conspirator against his crown, while he had really only crushed a poor creature who had been but too solicitous for what he thought his master's honour.

The assassins were, of course, protected from prosecution, and duly recompensed. Miguel Boque, the country boy, received one hundred crowns in gold, paid by a clerk of Perez. Meza, one of the braves, was rewarded with a gold chain, fifty doubloons of eight, and a silver cup, besides receiving from the fair hand of Princess Eboli herself a certificate as under steward upon her estates. The second brave, Insasti, who had done the deed, the page Enriques, and the scullion, were all appointed ensigns in his Majesty's army, with twenty gold crowns of annual pension besides. Their commissions were signed by Philip on the 19th of April 1578. Such were the wages of murder at that day in Spain; gold chains, silver cups, doubloons, annuities, and commissions in the army! The reward of fidelity, as in poor Escovedo's case, was often the stiletto. Was it astonishing that murder was more common than fidelity!

With the subsequent career of Antonio Perez—his famous process, his banishment, his intrigues, his innumerable, his long exile, and his miserable death, this history has no concern. We return from our brief digression.

Before narrating the issue of the plot against Antwerp citadel, it is necessary to recur for a moment to the Prince of Orange. In the deeds and the written words of that one man are comprised nearly all the history of the Reformation in the Netherlands—nearly the whole progress of the infant Republic. The rest, during this period, is made up of the plottings and counter-plottings, the mutual wranglings and recriminations of Don John and the estates.

In the brief breathing-space now...
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

afforded them, the inhabitants of Holland and Zeeland had been employing themselves in the extensive repairs of their vast system of dykes. These barriers, which protected their country against the ocean, but which their own hands had destroyed to preserve themselves against tyranny, were now thoroughly reconstructed, at a great expense, the Prince everywhere encouraging the people with his presence, directing them by his experience, inspiring them with his energy. The task accomplished was stupendous, and worthy, says a contemporary, of eternal memory.

At the popular request, the Prince afterwards made a tour through the little provinces, honouring every city with a brief visit. The spontaneous homage which went up to him from every heart was pathetic and simple. There were no triumphal arches, no martial music, no banners, no theatrical pageantry—nothing but the choral anthem from thousands of grateful hearts. "Father William has come! Father William has come!" cried men, women, and children to each other, when the news of his arrival in town or village was announced. He was a patriarch visiting his children, not a conqueror, not a vulgar potentate displaying himself to his admirers. Happy were they who heard his voice, happier they who touched his hands, for his words were full of tenderness, his hand was offered to all. There were none so humble as to be forbidden to approach him, none so ignorant as not to know his deeds. All knew that to combat in their cause he had descended from princely station, from luxurious ease, to the position of a proscribed and almost beggarly outlaw. For them he had impoverished himself and his family, mortgaged his estates, stripped himself of jewels, furniture, almost of food and raiment. Through his exertions the Spaniards had been banished from their little territory, the Inquisition crushed within their borders, nearly all the sister

provinces but yesterday banded into a common cause.

He found time, notwithstanding congratulating crowds who thronged his footsteps, to direct the labours of the states-general, who still looked more than ever to his guidance, as their relations with Don John became more complicated and unsatisfactory. In a letter addressed to them, on the 20th of June, from Harlem, he warned them most eloquently to hold to the Ghent Pacification as to their anchor in the storm. He assured them, if it was torn from them, that their destruction was inevitable. He reminded them that hitherto they had got but the shadow, not the substance of the Treaty; that they had been robbed of that which was to have been its chief fruit—union among themselves. He and his brothers, with their labour, their wealth, and their blood, had laid down the bridge over which the country had stepped to the Pacification of Ghent. It was for the nation to maintain what had been so painfully won; yet he proclaimed to them that the government were not acting in good faith, that secret preparations were making to annul the authority of the states, to restore the edicts, to put strangers into high places, and to set up again the scaffold and the whole machinery of persecution.

In consequence of the seizure of Namur Castle, and the accusations made by Don John against Orange, in order to justify that act, the Prince had already despatched Taffin and Saint Algegonde to the states-general with a commission to declare his sentiments upon the subject. He addressed, moreover, to the same body a letter full of sincere and simple sequence. "The Seigneur Don John," said he, "has accused me of violating the peace, and of countenancing attempts against his life, and in endeavouring to persuade you into joining him in a declaration of war against me and against Holland and Zeeland; but I pray you, most affectionately, to re-

1 Bor. x. 819. Wagener, vii. 158. Hooff, xii. 594.
2 Bor. x. 819.
member our mutual and solemn obligations to maintain the treaty of Ghent." He entreated the states, therefore, to beware of the artifices employed to seduce them from the only path which led to the tranquility of their common country, and her true splendour and prosperity. "I believe there is not one of you," he continued, "who can doubt me, if he will weigh carefully all my actions, and consider closely the course which I am pursuing and have always pursued. Let all these be confronted with the conduct of Don John, and any man will perceive that all my views of happiness, both for my country and myself, imply a peaceable enjoyment of the union, joined with the legitimate restoration of our liberties, to which all good patriots aspire, and towards which all my designs have ever tended. As all the grandeur of Don John, on the contrary, consists in war, as there is nothing which he so much abhors as repose, as he has given ample proof of these inclinations in all his designs and enterprises, both before and after the Treaty of Marche en Famine, both within the country and beyond its borders, as it is most manifest that his purpose is, and ever has been, to embroil us with our neighbours of England and Scotland in new dissensions, as it must be evident to every one of you that his pretended accusations against me are but colours and shadows to embellish and to abridge his own desire for war, his appetite for vengeance, and his hatred not only to me but to yourselves, and as his determination is, in the words of Escovedo, to chastise some of us by means of the rest, and to excite the jealousy of one portion of the country against the other—therefore, gentlemen, do I most affectionately exhort you to found your decision, as to these matters, not upon words but upon actions. Examine carefully my conduct in the points concerning which the charges are made; listen attentively to what my envoys will communicate to you in my behalf; and then, having compared it with all the proceedings of Seigneur Don John, you will be able to form a resolution worthy the rank which you occupy, and befitting your obligations to the whole people, of whom you have been chosen chiefs and protectors by God and by men. Put away all considerations which might obscure your clear eye-sight; maintain with magnanimity, and like men, the safety of yourselves, your wives, your children, your estates, your liberties; see that this poor people, whose eyes are fixed upon you, does not perish; preserve them from the greediness of those who would grow great at your expense; guard them from the yoke of miserable servitude; let not all our posterity lament that, by our pusillanimity, they have lost the liberties which our ancestors had conquered for them, and bequeathed to them as well as to us, and that they have been subdued by the proud tyranny of strangers.

"Trusting," said the Prince, in conclusion, "that you will accord faith and attention to my envoys, I will only add an expression of my sincere determination to employ myself incessantly in your service, and for the welfare of the whole people, without sparing any means in my power, nor my life itself." The vigilant Prince was, indeed, not slow to take advantage of the Governor's false move. While in reality intending peace, if it were possible, Don John had thrown down the gauntlet; while affecting to deal openly and manfully, like a warrior and an emperor's son, he had involved himself in petty stratagems and transparent intrigues, by all which he had gained nothing but the character of a plotter, whose word could not be trusted. Saint Aldegonde expressed the hope.
that the seizure of Namur Castle would open the eyes of the people, and certainly the Prince did his best to sharpen their vision.

While in North Holland, William of Orange received an urgent invitation from the magistracy and community of Utrecht to visit that city. His authority, belonging to him under his ancient commission, had not yet been recognised over that province, but there was no doubt that the contemplated convention of "satisfaction" was soon to be arranged, for his friends there were numerous and influential. His princess, Charlotte de Bourbon, who accompanied him on his tour, trembled at the danger to which her husband would expose himself by venturing thus boldly into a territory which might be full of his enemies, but the Prince determined to trust the loyalty of a province which he hoped would be soon his own. With anxious forebodings, the Princess followed her husband to the ancient episcopal city. As they entered its gates, where an immense concourse was waiting to receive him, a shot passed through the carriage window, and struck the Prince upon the breast. The affrighted lady threw her arms about his neck, shrieking that they were betrayed; but the Prince, perceiving that the supposed shot was but a wad from one of the cannon, which were still roaring their welcome to him, soon succeeded in calming her fears. The carriage passed slowly through the streets, attended by the vociferous greetings of the multitude; for the whole population had come forth to do him honour. Women and children clustered upon every roof and balcony, but a painful incident again marred the tranquillity of the occasion. An apothecary's child, a little girl of ten years, leaning eagerly from a lofty balcony, lost her balance and fell to the ground, directly before the horses of the Prince's carriage. She was killed stone dead by the fall. The procession stopped; the Prince alighted, lifted the little corpse in his arms, and delivered it, with gentle words and looks of consolation, to the unhappy parents. The day seemed marked with evil omens, which were fortunately destined to prove fallacious. The citizens of Utrecht became more than ever inclined to accept the dominion of the Prince, whom they honoured and whom they already regarded as their natural chief. They entertained him with banquets and festivities during his brief visit, and it was certain before he took his departure that the treaty of "Satisfaction" would not be long delayed. It was drawn up, accordingly, in the autumn of the same year, upon the basis of that accepted by Harlem and Amsterdam—a basis wide enough to support both religions, with a nominal supremacy to the ancient Church.

Meantime, much fruitless correspondence had taken place between Don John and the states. Envoys, despatched by the two parties to each other, had indulged in bitterness and recrimination. As soon as the Governor had taken possession of Namur Castle, he had sent the Seigneur de Rassenghem to the states-general. That gentleman carried with him copies of two anonymous letters, received by Don John upon the 19th and 21st of July 1577, in which a conspiracy against his life and liberty was revealed. It was believed by the Governor that Count Lalain, who had secretly invited him to a conference, had laid an ambush for him. It was known that the country was full of disbanded soldiers, and the Governor asserted confidently that numbers of desperadoes were lying in wait for him in every village alehouse of Hainault and Flanders. He called on the states to ferret out those conspirators, and to inflict condign punishment upon their more guilty chiefs; he required that the soldiers, as well as the citizens, should be disarmed at

---

1 Bor. x. 830. Hooff, xii. 529.
2 Bor. Hooff, xii. 521.
3 The articles of the "Satisfaction," dated October 9, 1577, are given in Bor. x. 833–834.
4 Vera et Simplici Narratio, etc., p. 28.
Brussels and throughout Brabant, and he justified his seizure of Namur, upon the general ground that his life was no longer safe, except in a fortress. 1

In reply to the letter of the Governor, which was dated the 24th of July, the states despatched Marolles, Archbishop of Ypres, and the Seigneur de Bresse, to Namur, with a special mission to enter into the whole subject of these grievances. 2 These gentlemen, professing the utmost devotion to the cause of his Majesty's authority and the Catholic religion, expressed doubts as to the existence of the supposed conspiracy. They demanded that Don John should denounce the culprits, if any such were known, in order that proper chastisement might be instantly inflicted. The conversation which ensued was certainly unsatisfactory. The Governor used lofty and somewhat threatening language, assuring Marolles that he was at that moment in possession, not only of Namur but of Antwerp citadel, and the deputies accordingly departed, having accomplished very little by their journey. Their backs were scarcely turned, when Don John, on his part, immediately appointed another commission, consisting of Rassinghem and Grobbendonck, to travel from Namur to Brussels. 3 These envoys carried a long letter of grievances, enclosing a short list of demands. 4 The letter reiterated his complaints about conspiracies, and his protestations of sincerity. It was full of censure upon the Prince of Orange; stigmatised his intrigues to obtain possession of Amsterdam without a proper "Satisfaction," and of Utrecht, to which he had no claim at all. It maintained that the Hollander and Zealander were bent upon utterly exterminating the Catholic religion, and that they avowed publicly their intention to refuse obedience to the assembly-general, should it decree the maintenance of the ancient worship.

1 See the letter of Don John in Bor, x, 239.
2 Bor, xl. 384, 385. Discours Sommer, etc., pp. 29, 30.
3 See the letter in Bor, xl. 385, 387.
5 In Bor, xl. 387, 388.
6 Only. His chief demands were that the states should send him a list of persons qualified to be members of the general assembly, that he might see whether there were not individuals among them whom he might choose to reject. He further required that, if the Prince of Orange did not instantly fulfil the treaty of Ghent, the states should cease to hold any communication with him. He also summoned the states to provide him forthwith with a suitable body-guard. 7

To these demands and complaints, the estates replied by a string of resolutions. 8 They made their usual protestations of attachment to his Majesty and the Catholic faith, and they granted willingly a foot-guard of three hundred archers. They, however, stoutly denied the Governor's right to make eliminations in their lists of deputies, because, from time immemorial, these representatives had been chosen by the clergy, nobles, cities, and boroughs. The names might change daily, nor were there any suspicious ones among them, but it was a matter with which the Governor had no concern. They promised that every effort should be made to bring about the execution of the treaty by the Prince of Orange. They begged Don John, however, to abandon the citadel of Namur, and gave him to understand that his secret practices had been discovered, a large packet of letters having recently been intercepted in the neighbourhood of Bourdeaux, and sent to the Prince of Orange. 9 Among them were some of the despatches of Don John and Escovedo, to his Majesty and to Antonio Perez, to which allusion has already been made.

Count Bossu, De Bresse, and Meesterkercke were the envoys deputed to convey these resolutions to Namur. They had a long and bitter conversation with Don John, who complained.

7 They had fallen into the hands of Henry of Navarre, who had forwarded them to the Prince of Orange, by whom they were laid before the deputies of the states-general on the 28th of July.—Meteven, vii. 121. Hooff, xii. 516. Compare Discours Sommer, etc., pp. 24, 25.
more furiously than ever of the conspiracies against his person, and of the intrigues of Orange. He insisted that this arch-traitor had been sowing the seed of his damnable doctrines broadcast through the Netherlands; that the earth was greening with a daily ripening harvest of rebellion and heresy.

It was time, he cried, for the states to abandon the Prince, and rally round their King. Patience had been exhausted. He had himself done all, and more than could have been demanded. He had faithfully executed the Ghent pacification, but his conduct had neither elicited gratitude nor inspired confidence. The deputies replied, that to the due execution of the Ghent treaty it was necessary that he should disband the German troops, assemble the states-general, and carry out their resolutions. Until these things, now undone, had been accomplished, he had no right to plead his faithful fulfilment of the pacification. After much conversation in which the same grievances were repeated, the same statements produced and contradicted, the same demands urged and evaded, and the same menaces exchanged as upon former occasions—the deputies returned to Brussels.

Immediately after their departure, Don John learned the result of his project upon Antwerp Castle. It will be remembered that he had withdrawn Antwerch, under pretext of requiring his company on the visit to Queen Margaret, and that he had substituted Treslong, an unscrupulous partisan of his own, in the government of the castle. The temporary commander of the town, however, that he had understood more than he could perform. The troops under Van Ende were required to quarter them, and had been requested by the authorities to leave the protection of their city, but the magistrates had learned, but too recently, the nature of the protection which Van Ende, with his mercenaries, would afford. A detachment of state troops under De Vers, Champagny's nephew, encountered the regiment of Van Ende, and put it to flight with considerable loss. At the same time, an officer in the garrison of the citadel itself, Captain De Bours, undertook secretly to carry the fortress for the estates. His operations were secret and rapid. The Seigneur de Liedekerke had succeeded Champagny in the government of the city. This appointment had been brought about by the agency of the Greffier Martini, a warm partisan of Orange. The new Governor was known to be very much the Prince's friend, and believed to be at heart a convert to the Reformed religion. With Martini and Liedekerke, De Bours arranged his plot. He was supplied with a large sum of money, ready furnished in secret by the leading mercantile houses of the city. These funds were successfully invested in gaining over the garrison, only one company holding firm for Treslong. The rest, as that officer himself informed Don John, were ready at any moment "to take him by the throat."

On the 1st of August, the day fixed upon in concert with the Governor and Greffier, he was, in fact, taken by the throat. There was but a brief combat, the issue of which became accidentally doubtful in the city. The white-plumed hat of De Bours had been struck from his head in the struggle, and had fallen into the foss. Floating out into the river, it had been recognised by the scouts sent out by the personages most interested, and the information was quickly brought to Liedekerke, who was lying concealed in the house of Martini, awaiting the result. Their dismay was great, but Martini, having more confidence than the Governor, sallied forth to learn the whole truth. Scarcely had he got

---

2 Hist. xvi. 527.
3 Hist. xvi. 527.
4 Hist. xvi. 122.
5 Hist. vii. 395, Capet.

* Hor. xi. 255. Hood, xii. 518.
into the streets than he heard a wel-
come cry. "The Beggars have the
castle! the Beggars have the castle!" 
shouted a hundred voices. He soon 
met a lieutenant coming straight from 
the fortress, who related to him the 
whole affair. Learning that De Bours 
was completely victorious, and that 
Treslong was a prisoner, Martini hast-
ened with the important intelligence to 
his own home, where Liedekerk 
lay concealed. That functionary now 
repaired to the citadel, whither the 
magistrates, the leading citizens, and 
the chief merchants were instantly 
summoned. The castle was cleared, 
but the city was already trembling 
with apprehension lest the German 
mercenaries quartered within its walls, 
should rise with indignation or panic, 
and repeat the horrid tragedy of The 
Antwerp Fury.  

In truth, there seemed danger of 
such a catastrophe. The secret cor-
respondence of Don John with the 
colonnels was already discovered, and 
it was seen how warmly he had im-
pressed upon the men with whom he had 
been tampering, "that the die was 
cast, and that all their art was neces-
sary to make it turn up successfully."  
The castle was cleared, but what would 
become of the city? A brief and eager 
consultation terminated in an im-
mediate offer of three hundred thousand 
crowns by the leading merchants. This 
money was to be employed in amicably 
satisfying, if possible, the German 
soldiers, who had meanwhile actually 
come to arms, and were assembled in the 
Place de Meir. Feeling unsafe, 
however, in this locality, their colonnels 
had led them into the new town. Here, 
having barricaded themselves with gun-
carriages, bales, and boxes, they await-
ed, instead of initiating the events 
which the day might bring forth. A 
deputation soon arrived with a white 
flag from the castle, and commissioners 
were appointed by the commanding 
officers of the soldiers. The offer was 
made to pay over the arrears of their 
wages, at least to a very large amount, 
on condition that the troops would 
forthwith and for ever evacuate the 
city. One hundred and fifty thousand 
crowns were offered on the nail. The 
merchants stood on the bridge leading 
from the old town to the new, in full 
sight of the soldiers. They held in 
their hands their purses, filled with the 
glittering gold. The soldiers were 
frantic with the opportunity, and 
cursed that they would have their 
oficers' lives, if the tempting and un-
expected offer should be declined. 
Nevertheless, the commissioners went 
to and fro, ever finding something to 
alter or arrange. In truth, the mer-
chants had agreed to furnish, if neces-
sary, three hundred thousand crowns; 
but the thifty negotiators were dis-
posed, if diplomacy could do it, to save 
the moiety of that sum. Day began 
to sink, ere the bargain was completed, 
when suddenly sails were descried in 
the distance, and presently a large 
fleet of war vessels, with banners and 
pennons flying before a favouring 
breeze, came sailing up the Scheld. It 
was a squadron of the Prince's ships, 
under command of Admiral Haultam. 
He had been sent against Tholen, 
but, having received secret intelligence, 
had, with happy audacity, seized the 
opportunity of striking a blow in the 
cause which he had served so faith-
fully. A shot or two fired from the 
vessels among the barricades had a 
quickening effect. A sudden and 
asounding panic seized the soldiers. 
"The Beggars are coming! the Beggars 
are coming!"? they yelled in dismay, 
for the deeds of the ocean-beggars had 
not become less appalling since the 
memorable siege of Leyden. The mer-

---

1 "Het castel is gies! het castel is gies!"  
-Bor, xl. 854.
2 Bor, xl, 854. Hoofd, xii, 518.
3 It was discovered on the taking of the 
citadel by De Bours.---Bor, xl, 854. Hoofd, 
ii, 518.
4 "Y pues queda ya el dado fuera de la 
mano, es menester acusarla a que corn 
baen."—Letter of Don John to Colonels 

---

5 Bor, xl, 854. Hoofd, xii, 518. Meteorum, 
ixi, 402.
6 "Die gessen, da gessen, daa zoens?"  
Hoofd, xii, 518. Bor, xl, 855.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1577.

was himself besieged, and unable to render him assistance. The same captain who had brought the real letter was bribed to deliver the counterfeit. This task he faithfully performed, spreading the fictitious intelligence besides, with such ardour through the town, that the troops rose upon their leader, and surrendered him with the city and their own arms, into the custody of the estates. Such was the result of the attempt by Don John to secure the citadel of Antwerp. Not only was the fortress carried for the estates, but the city itself, for the first time in twelve years, was relieved from a foreign soldier. 4

The rage and disappointment of the Governor-General were excessive. He had boasted to Marolles a day too soon. The prize which he thought already in his grasp had slipped through his fingers, while an interminable list of demands which he dreamed not of, and which were likely to make him bankrupt, were brought to his door. To the states, not himself, the triumph seemed for the moment decreed. The "discs" had taken a run against him, notwithstanding his pains in loading and throwing. Nevertheless, he did not yet despair of revenge. "These rebels," he wrote to the Empress Dowager, his sister, "think that fortune is all smiles for them now, and that all is ruin for me. The wretches are growing proud enough, and forget that their chastisement, some fine morning, will yet arrive." 5

On the 7th of August, he addressed another long letter to the estates. This document was accompanied, as usual, by certain demands, drawn up categorically in twenty-three articles. 6 The estates considered his terms hard and strange, for in their opinion it was themselves, not the Governor, who were masters of the situation. Nevertheless, he seemed inclined to treat as if he had gained, not missed, the citadel of Antwerp: as if the

4 Hor. xi. 856, 857. Hood. xii. 522.
5 Don John's letter to the Empress.
8 Hor. xi. 860, 862.
7 Hor. xi. 865, 869.
troops with whom he had tampered were mustered in the field, not shut up in distant towns, and already at the mercy of the states party. The Governor demanded that all the forces of the country should be placed under his own immediate control; that Count Bossu, or some other person nominated by himself, should be appointed to the government of Friesland; that the people of Brabant and Flanders should set themselves instantly to hunting, catching, and chasing all vagrant heretics and preachers. He required, in particular, that Saint Aldegonde and Theron. those most mischievous rebels, should be prohibited from setting their foot in any city of the Netherlands. He insisted that the community of Brussels should lay down their arms, and resume their ordinary handicrafts. He demanded that the Prince of Orange should be made to execute the Ghent treaty; to suppress the exercise of the Reformed religion in Harlem, Schoonhoven, and other places; to withdraw his armed vessels from their threatening stations, and to restore Nieuport, unjustly detained by him. Should the Prince persist in his obstinacy, Don John summoned them to take arms against him, and to support their lawful Governof. He, moreover, required the immediate restitution of Antwerp citadel, and the release of Trelong from prison. ¹

Although, regarded from the Spanish point of view, such demands might seem reasonable, it was also natural that their audacity should astonish the estates. That the man who had violated so openly the Ghent treaty should rebuke the Prince for his default—that the man who had tampered with the German mercenaries until they were on the point of making another Antwerp Fury, should now claim the command over them and all other troops—that the man who had attempted to gain Antwerp citadel by a base stratagem should now coolly demand its restoration, seemed to them the perfection of insolence. The fled conspirator boldly claimed the prize which was to have rewarded a successful perfidy. At the very moment when the Escovedo letters and the correspondence with the German colonels had been laid before their eyes, it was a little too much that the double-dealing bastard of the double-dealing Emperor should read them a lecture upon sincerity. It was certain that the perplexed and outwitted warrior had placed himself at last in a very false position. The Prince of Orange, with his usual adroitness, made the most of his adversary’s false moves. Don John had only succeeded in digging a pitfall for himself. His stratagems against Namur and Antwerp had produced him no fruit, saving the character, which his antagonist now fully succeeded in establishing for him, of an unscrupulous and artful schemer. This reputation was enhanced by the discovery of the intercepted letters, and by the ingenuity and eagerness with which they were turned to account against him by the Prince, by Saint Aldegonde, and all the anti-Catholic party. The true key to his reluctance against despatching the troops by land, the states had not obtained. They did not dream of his romantic designs upon England, and were therefore excusable in attributing a still deeper perfidy to his arrangements.

Even had he been sent to the Netherlands in the full possession of his faculties, he would have been no match in political combinations for his powerful antagonists. Hood-winked and fettered, suspected by his master, baffled, bewildered, irritated by his adversary, what could he do but plunge from one difficulty to another, and oscillate between extravagant menace and desponding concession, until his hopes and life were wasted quite away? His instructions came from Philip through Perez, and that most profound dissembler, as we have seen, systematically deceived ² the Governor, with the view of eliciting treasonable matters, Philip wishing

---

¹ Letter of Don John, 7 Aug. 1577.—Borzi, i. 888, 846.

² Memorial de Ant. Perez, Obras y Relaciones, p. 309.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

if possible, to obtain proofs of Don John's secret designs against his own crown. Thus every letter from Spain was filled with false information and with lying persuasions.¹ No doubt the Governor considered himself entitled to wear a crown, and meant to win it, if not in Africa, then in England, or wherever fate might look propitiously upon him. He was of the stuff of which crusaders and dynasty founders had been made, at a somewhat earlier epoch. Who could have conquered the holy sepulchre, or wrested a crown from its lawful wearer, whether in Italy, Muscovy, the Orient, or in the British Ultima Thule, more bravely than this imperial bastard, this valiant and romantic adventurer? Unfortunately, he came a few centuries too late. The days when dynasties were founded, and European thrones appropriated by a few foreign freebooters, had passed, and had not yet returned. He had come to the Netherlands desirous of smoothing over difficulties and of making a peaceful termination to that rebellion a stepping-stone to his English throne. He was doomed to a profound disappointment, a broken heart, and a premature grave, instead of the glittering baubles which he pursued. Already he found himself bitterly deceived in his hopes. The obstinate Dutchers would not love him, notwithstanding the good wishes he had manifested. They would not even love the King of Spain, notwithstanding the blessings which his Majesty was declared to have heaped upon them. On the contrary, they persisted in wasting their perverse affections upon the pestilent Prince of Orange. That heretic was leading them to destruction, for he was shew-

¹ Memorial of Antonio Pérez, passim.—Compare Mignet, Antonio Pérez of Philippe II., Bruxelles, 1845, pp. 19-21.

² “Porque estos aqui ni quieren convencer a su Dios ni obedecer a su Rey como deven; antes pretenden libertad en todo. De manera que es companion grandisima ver como lo tratan y las desverguencas y poco respeto con que pagan a su Majestad las mercedes que les ha hecho; y a mi los trabajos, indigualdades y peligros que he pasado por ellas estas gentes.”—Letter to the Empress, appendix to Discours Sommier, p. 81.

³ “Miro V. Magnique poco que ha aprovechado en aprovecha para los males el bien que se les hazo. Al fin, ellos aman y obedecen de todo punto al mas perverso y tyranno hereje y rebelde de la tierra que este contenido del Principe de Oranjos: y aborrecen y desacatan el nombre y mandamientos de su principio y natural Señor; sin temor de Dios ni respeto o verguenza de las gentes.”—Ibid.
enemies. "God knows how much I desire to avoid extremities," said he, "but I know not what to do with men who shew themselves so obstinately rebellious." 1

Thus pathetically Don John bewailed his fate. The nation had turned from God, from Philip, from himself; yet he still sat in his castle, determined to save them from destruction and his own hands from bloodshed, if such an issue were yet possible. Nor was he entirely deserted, for among the faithless a few were faithful still. Although the people were in open revolt, there was still a handful of nobles resolved to do their duty towards their God and King. "This little band," said the Governor, "has accompanied me hither, like gentlemen and chevaliers of honour." 2 Brave Berlaymont and his four sons were loyal to the last, but others of this limited number of gentlemen and chevaliers of honour were already deserting him. As soon as the result of the enterprise against Antwerp citadel was known, and the storm was gathering most darkly over the royal cause, Aerschot and Havré were first to spread their wings and flutter away in search of a more congenial atmosphere. 3 In September, the Duke was again as he had always professed himself to be, with some important intervals of exception—"the affectionate brother and cordial friend of the Prince of Orange." 4

The letter addressed by Don John to the states upon the 7th of August, had not yet been answered. Feeling, soon afterwards, more sensible of his position, and perhaps less inflamed with indignation, he addressed another communication to them, upon the 13th of the same month. In this epistle he expressed an extreme desire for peace, and a hearty desire to be relieved, if possible, from his most painful situation. He protested, before God and man, that his intentions were most honest, and that he abhorred war more than anything else in the world. He averred that, if his person was as obdious to them as it seemed, he was only too ready to leave the land, as soon as the King should appoint his successor. He reminded them that the question of peace or war lay not with himself, but with them; and that the world would denounce as guilty those with whom rested the responsibility. He concluded with an observation which, in its humility, seemed sufficiently ironical, that if they had quite finished the perusal of the despatches from Madrid to his address, which they had intercepted, he should be thankful for an opportunity of reading them himself. He expressed a hope, therefore, that they would be forwarded to Namur. 5

This letter was answered at considerable length, upon the second day. The states made their customary protestations of attachment to his Majesty, their fidelity to the Catholic church, their determination to maintain both the Ghent treaty and the Perpetual Edict. They denied all responsibility for the present disastrous condition of the relations between themselves and government, having disbanded nearly all their own troops, while the Governor had been strengthening his forces up to the period of his retreat into Namur. He protested, indeed, friendship and a sincere desire for peace, but the intercepted letters of Escovedo and his own had revealed to them the evil counsels to which he had been listening, and the intrigues which he had been conducting. They left it to his conscience whether they could reasonably believe, after the perusal of these documents, that it was his intention to maintain the Ghent treaty, or any treaty; and whether they were not justified in their resort to the natural right of self-defence. 6

Don John was already fully aware of the desperate error which he had committed. In seizing Namur and attempting Antwerp, he had thrown castle upon a horse without a saddle.


1 Letter to the Empress, 81.

2 "Como honradísimos cavalleros." — Htd.

3 Hoofd, xii. 520. Aerschot was in such a hurry to escape, that he rode off from the

4 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, vi. pp. 143, 144.

5 See the letter in Bor, xl. 67.

6 Bor, xl. 558.
...the prudent... wishing peace, he had in a spirit of rage and anxiety, declared and exacted war. The bridge was broken behind him, the ships burned, a gulf opened, a return to peace rendered almost impossible. Yet it is painful to observe the almost passionate longing which at times seemed to possess him for accommodating the council, together with his absolute necessity to appreciate his position. The Prince was thus hurling the Governor into a trap. Moreover, it was a trap which he had not only created voluntarily, but which he had set himself. He had played into the Prince's hands, and was frantic to see his adversary triumphantly winning the game. It was almost thankfully to observe the conviction of his true desire to destroy the government, to its own ruin and disaster. In an elaborate letter which he addressed to his sister, the Emir, in the nature of a declaration of war, both to the Emir and Emirs of the Netherland, he was not occasioned to the necessity of his action, and somewhat of the arguments which had been used by the Dutch, in his own defense; but was convinced at the same time that his cause was just, and that he had been forced to extremities which he was the first to deplore. The Prince, indeed, after the first rage, was disposed to accommodate himself, as far as the laws of war admitted, to the necessity of a more distressing catastrophe, and made his first approach for a truce. Moreover, his letters up to this time, when he seemed desirous to meet the exigencies of the case, had certainly been solemn promises. Therefore, it was not without some reason in reply to the requests in his letter, to observe that he had not abandoned the States General, that he had never proposed to the Emir and Emirs that he should not have the council in the hands of the States General, but that he had made it his first object to remove them.
Austria, stating that, as the provinces had proved false to their engagements, he would no longer be held by his own, and intimating his desire that the veteran troops which had but so recently been dismissed from Flanders, should forthwith return. Soon afterwards, Alexander Farnese, Prince of Parma, received instructions from the King to superintend these movements, and to carry the aid of his own already distinguished military genius to his uncle in the Netherlands.

On the other hand, the states felt their strength daily more sensibly. Guided, as usual, by Orange, they had already assumed a tone in their correspondence which must have seemed often disloyal, and sometimes positively insulting, to the Governor. They even answered his hints of resignation in favour of some other prince of the blood, by expressing their hopes that his successor, if a member of the royal house at all, would at least be a legitimate one. This was a severe thrust at the haughty chieftain, whose imperial airs rarely betrayed any consciousness of Barbara Blomberg and the bended sinister on his shield. He was made to understand, through the medium of Brabantine bluntness, that more importance was attached to the marriage ceremony in the Netherlands than he seemed to imagine. The categorical demands made by the estates seemed even more indigestible than such collateral affronts, for they had now formally affirmed the views of Orange as to the constitutional government of the provinces. In their letter of 26th August, they expressed their willingness, notwithstanding the past delinquencies of the Governor, to yield him their confidence again; but, at the same time, they enumerated conditions which, with his education and views, could hardly seem to him admissible. They required him to disband all the soldiers in his service, to send the Germans instantly out of the country, to dismiss every foreigner from office, whether civil or military, and to renounce his secret league with the Duke of Guise. They insisted that he should thenceforth govern only with the advice and consent of the State Council, that he should execute that which should by a majority of votes be ordained there, that neither measures nor despatches should be binding or authentic unless drawn up at that board. These certainly were views of administration which, even if consonant with a sound historical view of the Netherland constitutions, hardly tallied with his monarch’s instructions, his own opinions, or the practice under Alva and Requesens; but the country was still in a state of revolution, and the party of the Prince was gaining the upper hand.

It was the determination of that great statesman, according to that which he considered the legitimate practice of the government, to restore the administration to the State Council, which executive body ought of right to be appointed by the states-general. In the states-general, as in the states-particular, a constant care was to be taken towards strengthening the most popular element, the “community” of each city, the aggregate, that is to say, of its guild-representatives and its admitted burghers. This was, in the opinion of the Prince, the true theory of the government—Republican in all but form—under the hereditary protection, not the despotic authority, of a family, whose rights were now nearly forfeited. It was a great step in advance that these views should come to be thus formally announced, not in Holland and Zealand only, but by the deputies of the states-general, although such a doctrine, to the proud stomach of Don John, seemed sufficiently repulsive. Not less so was the cool intimation with which the paper concluded, that if he should execute his threat of resigning, the country would bear his loss with fortitude, coupled as was that statement with a declaration that, until his successor should be appointed, the State

---

1 Cabrera, xi. 937, 938.
2 Ibid., xi. 940.
3 Bor, xi. 859.—Compare Motron, vi. 119.
5 Letter of Aug. 26, 1577, in Bor, xi. 861, 862.
should himself remain quiet. It was out of his power to execute the treaty and the edict, in the face of a notorious omission on the part of his adversary to enforce the one or to publish the other. It comported neither with his dignity nor his safety to lay down his weapons while the Prince and his adherents were arm. He should have placed himself "in a very foolish position," had he allowed himself unarmed to be dictated to by the armed. In defence of himself on the third point, the seizure of Namur Castle, he recounted the various circumstances with which the reader is already acquainted. He laid particular stress upon the dramatic manner in which the Vicomte de Gand had drawn his curtains at the dead of night; he narrated at great length the ominous warning which he had likewise received from the Duke of Aerschot in Brussels, and concluded with a circumstantial account of the ambush which he believed to have been laid for him by Courte de Laval. The letter concluded with a hope for an arrangement of difficulties, not yet admitted by the Governor to be insurmountable, and with a request for a formal conference, as organized by an exchange of hostilities.

While this correspondence was proceeding between Namur and Brussels, an event was occurring in Antwerp which gave much satisfaction to Philip. The Spanish Fury, and the recent unsuccessful attempt of Don John to molest the famous citadel, had determined the authorities to take the course which the Prince had so often been vain in vain, and the fortress of Antwerp was at length razed to the ground in the style towards the city. It would be more correct to say that the walls of the city citadel, but the city itself, which rose at last and threw off the walls by which it had so long been closed, was taken over.
persons were constantly at work, morning, noon, and night, until the demolition was accomplished. Grave magistrates, great nobles, fair ladies, citizens and their wives, beggars and their children, all wrought together pell-mell. All were anxious to have a hand in destroying the nest where so many murders had been hatched, whence so much desolation had flown. The task was not a long one for workmen so much in earnest, and the fortress was soon laid low in the quarter where it could be injurious to the inhabitants. As the work proceeded, the old statue of Alva was discovered in a forgotten crypt, where it had lain since it had been thrown down by the order of Requesens. Amid the destruction of the fortress, the gigantic phantom of its founder seemed to start suddenly from the gloom, but the apparition added fresh fuel to the rage of the people. The image of the execrated Governor was fastened upon with as much fierceness as if the bronze effigy could feel their blows, or comprehend their wrath. It was brought forth from its dark hiding-place into the daylight. Thousands of hands were ready to drag it through the streets for universal inspection and outrage. A thousand sledge-hammers were ready to dash it to pieces, with a slight portion, at least, of the satisfaction with which those who wielded them would have dealt the same blows upon the head of the tyrant himself. It was soon reduced to a shapeless mass. Small portions were carried away and preserved for generations in families as heirlooms of hatred. The bulk was melted again and reconverted, by a most natural metamorphosis, into the cannon from which it had originally sprung.

The razing of the Antwerp citadel set an example which was followed in other places; the castle of Ghent, in particular, being immediately levelled, amid demonstrations of universal enthusiasm. Meantime, the correspondence between Don John and the estates at Brussels dragged its slow length along, while at the same time, two elaborate letters were addressed to the King, on the 24th of August and the 8th of September, by the estates-general of the Netherlands. These documents, which were long and able, gave a vigorous representation of past evils, and of the present complication of disorders under which the commonwealth was labouring. They asked, as usual, for a royal remedy; and expressed their doubts whether there could be any sincere reconciliation so long as the present Governor, whose duplicity and insolence they represented in a very strong light, should remain in office. Should his Majesty, however, prefer to continue Don John in the government, they signified their willingness, in consideration of his natural good qualities, to make the best of the matter. Should, however, the estrangement between themselves and the Governor seem irreparable, they begged that another and a legitimate prince of the blood might be appointed in his place.

CHAPTER IV.

Orange invited to visit Brussels—His correspondence upon the subject with the estates-general—Triumphant journey of the Prince to the capital—Stop put by him to the negotiations with Don John—New and stringent demands made upon the Governor—His indignation—Open rupture—Intrigue of Netherland grandees with Archduke Matthias—Policy of Orange—Attitude of Queen Elizabeth—Flight of Matthias from Vienna—Anxiety of Elizabeth—Adroitness of the Prince—The office of reward—Election of Orange to that dignity—His complaints against the great nobles—Aerchbot Governor of Flanders—A storm brewing in Ghent—Rahevo and Imbizo—Blood-Councillor Hessels—Arrogance of the aristocratic party in Flanders—Rahevo's

While these matters were in progress, an important movement was made by the estates-general. The Prince of Orange was formally and urgently invited to come to Brussels to aid them with his counsel and presence. The condemned traitor had not set foot in the capital for eleven years. We have narrated the circumstance of his departure, while the advancing trumpets of Alva's army were almost heard in the distance. His memorable and warning interview with Egmont has been described. Since that period, although his spirit had always been manifesting itself in the capital like an actual presence; although he had been the magnet towards which the states throughout all their oscillations had involuntarily vibrated, yet he had been ever invisible. He had been summoned by the Blood-Council to stand his trial, and had been condemned to death by default. He answered the summons by a defiance, and the condemnation by two campaigns, unsuccessful in appearance, but which had in reality prostrated the authority of the sovereign. Since that period, the representative of royalty had sued the condemned traitor for forgiveness. The haughty brother of Philip had almost gone upon his knees, that the Prince might name his terms, and accept the professed hand of majesty. The Prince had refused, not from contumely, but from distrust. He had spurned the supplications, as he had defied the proscription of the King. There could be no friendship between the destroyer and the protector of a people. Had the Prince desired only the reversal of his death-sentence, and the infinite aggrandisement of his family, we have seen how completely he had held these issues in his power. Never had it been more easy, plausible, tempting, for a proscribed patriot to turn his back upon an almost sinking cause. We have seen how his brave and subtle Batavian prototype, Civilis, dealt with the representative of Roman despotism. The possible or impossible Netherland Republic of the first century of our era had been reluctantly abandoned, but the modern Civilis had justly more confidence in his people.

And now again the scene was changed. The son of the Emperor, the King's brother, was virtually beheaded; the proscribed rebel had arrived at victory through a long series of defeats. The nation everywhere acknowledged him master, and was in undisguised revolt against the anointed sovereign. The great nobles, who hated Philip on the one hand, and the Reformed religion on the other, were obliged, in obedience to the dictates of a people with whom they had little sympathy, to accept the ascendency of the Calvinist Prince, of whom they were profoundly jealous. Even the fleeting and incapable Aerschot was obliged to simulate adhesion; even the brave Champaigny, cordial hater of Spaniards, but most devotedly Catholic, "the chiefest man ofws-dome and stomach at that tyme in Brussels," so envoy Wilson wrote to Burghley; had become "Brabantised," as his brother Granvelle expressed himself, and was one of the commissioners to invite the great rebel to Brussels. The other envoys were the

1 Bor, xi. 571. Meteren, vii. 125. Hoof, xl. 536.
2 Elizabeth and her Times, a series of Original Letters, by Th. Wright, i. i. 43. London, 1583.
3 "On disoit qu'ils avoient bmatrisé M. de Champaigny, ço qui no me plunt quand je l'estimais," etc., etc.—Granvelle to M. de Bellefontaine, March 31, 1575. Archives de la Maison d'Oranje, vi, 330.
Invitation and Reply.

Abbot of Saint Gertrude, Dr Leoninus, and the Seigneur de Liesveld. These gentlemen, on arriving at Gertruydenberg, presented a brief but very important memorial to the Prince. In that document they informed him that the states-general, knowing how efficacious would be his presence, by reason of his singular prudence, experience, and love for the welfare and repose of the country, had unanimously united in a supplication that he would incontinently transport himself to the city of Brussels, there to advise with them concerning the necessities of the land; but, as the principal calumny employed by their adversaries was that all the provinces and leading personages intended to change both sovereign and religion, at the instigation of his Excellency, it was desirable to disprove such fictions. They therefore very earnestly requested the Prince to make some contrary demonstration, by which it might be manifest to all that his Excellency, together with the estates of Holland and Zeoland, intended faithfully to keep what they had promised. They prayed, therefore, that the Prince, permitting the exercise of the Roman Catholic religion in the places which had recently accepted his authority, would also allow its exercise in Holland and Zeeland. They begged, further, that he would promise by a new and authentic act, that the provinces of Holland and Zeeland would not suffer the said exercise to be impugned, or any new worship to be introduced, in the other provinces of the Netherlands.

This letter might almost be regarded as a trap, set by the Catholic nobles. Certainly the Ghent Pacification forbade the Reformed religion in form, and as certainly winked at its exercise in fact. The proof was, that the new worship was spreading everywhere, that the exiles for conscience' sake were returning in swarms, and that the synod of the Reformed churches, lately held at Dort, had been publicly attended by the ministers and deacons of numerous dissenting churches established in many different places throughout all the provinces. The pressure of the electors, the horror of the inquisition being removed, the down-trodden religion had sprung from the earth more freshly than ever.

The Prince was not likely to fall into the trap, if a trap had really been intended. He answered the envoys loyally, but with distinct reservations. He did not even accept the invitation, save on condition that his visit to Brussels should be expressly authorised by Holland and Zeeland. Notwithstanding his desire once more to behold his dear country, and to enjoy the good company of his best friends and brothers, he felt it his duty to communicate beforehand with the states of those two provinces, between which and himself there had been such close and reciprocal obligations, such long-tried and faithful affection. He therefore begged to refer the question to the assembly of the said provinces about to be held at Gouda, where, in point of fact, the permission for his journey was, not without considerable difficulty, a few days afterwards obtained.

With regard to the more difficult requests addressed to him in the memorial, he professed generally his intention to execute the treaty of Ghent. He observed, however, that the point of permitting the exercise of the Roman Catholic religion in Holland and Zeeland regarded principally the estates of these provinces, which had contracted for no innovation in this matter, at least till the assembling of the states-general. He therefore suggested that he neither could, nor ought to, permit any innovation, without the knowledge and consent of those estates. As to promising by

---

1 Bor. xi. 871. Hoofd, xii. 929. Meteren, vii. 125.
2 In Bor. xi. 872. Compare Meteren, Hoofd, ubi sup.
3 Memorial in Bor. xi. 872. It is also published by Groen v. Prins., Archives, etc., vi. 165-167.
5 Answer of the Prince of Orange, in Bor. xi. 873, also in Groen v. Prins., Archives, etc., vi. 157-161. — Compare Meteren, vii. 126, 129. Hoofd, xli. 327.
authentic act, that neither he nor the two provinces would suffer the exercise of the Catholic religion to be in any wise impugned in the rest of the Netherlands, the Prince expressed himself content to promise that, according to the said Ghent Pacification, they would suffer no attempt to be made against the public repose or against the Catholic worship. He added that, as he had no intention of usurping any superiority over the states-general assembled at Brussels, he was content to leave the settlement of this point to their free-will and wisdom, engaging himself neither to offer nor permit any hindrance to their operations.

With this answer the deputies are said to have been well pleased. If they were so, it must be confessed that they were thankful for small favours. They had asked to have the Catholic religion introduced into Holland and Zealand. The Prince had simply referred them to the estates of these provinces. They had asked him to guarantee that the exercise of the Reformed religion should not be "procured" in the rest of the country. He had merely promised that the Catholic worship should not be prevented. The difference between the terms of the request and the reply was sufficiently wide.

The consent to his journey was with difficulty accorded by the estates of Holland and Zealand; and his wife, with many tears and anxious forebodings, beheld him depart for a capital where the heads of his brave and powerful friends had fallen, and where still lurked so many of his deadly foes. During his absence, prayers were offered daily for his safety in all the churches of Holland and Zealand, by command of the estates.

He arrived at Antwerp on the 17th of September, and was received with extraordinary enthusiasm. The Prince, who had gone forth alone, without even a bodyguard, had the whole population of the great city for his buckler. He spent five days, observing, with many a sigh, the melancholy changes which had taken place in the long interval of his absence. The recent traces of the horrible "Fury," the blackened walls of the Hôtel de Ville, the prostrate ruins of the marble streets, which he had known as the most imposing in Europe, could be hardly stoned for in his eyes even by the more grateful spectacle of the dismantled fortresses.

On the 23d of September, he was attended by a vast concourse of citizens to the new canal which led to Brussels, where three barges were in waiting for himself and suite. In one a banquet was spread; in the second, adorned with emblematic devices and draped with the banners of the seventeen provinces, he was to perform the brief journey; while the third had been filled by the inevitable rhetoric societies, with all the wonders of their dramatic and plastic ingenuity. Rarely had such a complication of voices and virtues, of crushed dragons, victorious archangels, broken fetters, and resurgent nationalities, been seen before, within the limits of a single canal boat. The affection was, however, sincere, and the spirit noble, even though the taste which presided at these demonstrations may have been somewhat pedantic.

The Prince was met several miles before the gates of Brussels by a procession of nearly half the inhabitants of the city, and thus escorted, he entered the capital in the afternoon of the 23d of September. It was the proudest day of his life. The representatives of all the provinces, supported by the most undeniable favour of the united Netherlands people, greeted "Father William." Perplexed, discordant, hating, fearing, doubting, they could believe nothing, respect nothing, love nothing, save the "tranquil" Prince. His presence at that moment in Brussels was the triumph of the people and of religious toleration. He meant to make use of the
crisis to extend and to secure popular rights, and to establish the supremacy of the states-general under the nominal sovereignty of some Prince, who was yet to be selected, while the executive body was to be a state-council, appointed by the states-general. So far as appears, he had not decided as to the future protector, but he had resolved that it should be neither himself nor Philip of Spain. The outlaws came to Brussels prepared at last to trample out a sovereignty which had worked its own forfeiture. So far as he had made any election within his breast, his choice inclined to the miserable Duke of Anjou, a prince whom he never came to know as posteriory has known him, but whom he at least learned to despise. Thus far the worthless and paunchy intriguer still wore the heroic mask, deceiving even such far-seeing politicians as Saint Aldegonde and the Prince.

William's first act was to put a stop to the negotiations already on foot with Don John. He intended that they should lead to war, because peace was impossible, except a peace for which civil and religious liberty would be bartered, for it was idle, in his opinion, to expect the maintenance by the Spanish Governor of the Ghent Pacification, whatever promises might be extorted from his fears. A deputation, in the name of the states, had already been sent with fresh propositions to Don John, at Namur. The envoys were Caspar Schetz and the Bishop of Bruges. They had nearly come to an amicable convention with the Governor, the terms of which had been sent to the states-general for approval, at the very moment of the Prince's arrival in Brussels. Orange,

with great promptness, prevented the ratification of those terms, which the estates had in reality already voted to accept. New articles were added to those which had originally been laid before Don John. It was now stipulated that the Ghent treaty and the Perpetual Edict should be maintained. The Governor was required forthwith to abandon Namur Castle, and to dismiss the German troops. He was to give up the other citadels and strong places, and to disband all the soldiers in his service. He was to command the governors of every province to prohibit the entrance of all foreign levies. He was forthwith to release captives, restore confiscated property, and reinstate officers who had been removed; leaving the details of such restorations to the Council of Mechlin and the other provincial tribunals. He was to engage that the Count Van Buren should be set free within two months. He was himself, while waiting for the appointment of his successor, to take up his residence in Luxemburg, and while there, he was to be governed entirely by the decision of the State Council, expressed by a majority of its members. Furthermore, and as not the least stinging of these sharp requisitions, the Queen of England—she who had been the secret ally of Orange, and whose crown the Governor had secretly meant to appropriate—was to be included in the treaty.

It could hardly excite surprise that Don John, receiving these insolent propositions at the very moment in which he heard of the triumphant entrance into Brussels of the Prince, should be filled with rage and mortification. Never was champion of the

1 Mor. xi. 874, seq. Hoofd, xii. 398.
3 Mémoire et Recueil de ce qu'est passé, entre le Seigneur don Jan d'Antriche, etc., depuis sa retraite au château de Namur—religé par l'ecrit du Seigneur de Grabendorck, p. 230, seq. This very curious memorandum, by one of the diplomats engaged, has been republished, according to the original sketch, in the Bulletin de la Com. Roy., x. 173-182.—Compare Archives et Correspondance, vi. 166-170.
Great thus braved by infidels before.
The Ghent treaty, according to the
Orange interpretation, that is to say,
heresy made legitimate, was to be the
law of the land. His Majesty was to
surrender, colours and cannon—his
revolted subjects. The royal author-
ity was to be superseded by that of a
State Council, appointed by the states-
general, at the discretion of the Prince.
The Governor General himself, brother
of his Catholic Majesty, was to sit
quietly with folded arms in Luxem-
burg, while the arch heretic and rebel
reigned supreme in Brussels. It was
too much to expect that the choleric
Catholic would be content with what he
had gained by regarding as a dishonour-
able compromise. The arrangement
which he now put in practice is
reasonable as it would have been to
make Sultan
Saladin to lead the Pope's
army and to send
the Governor General
back to his
province. But
the
whole
protestant
was a
question of
what was
done by
the
Catholic
Church and
did not admit
this
idea
of
sacred
functions.

was, however, reasonable enough on
their part, for they were aware that
veteran Spaniards and Italians were
constantly returning to him, and that
he was daily strengthening his position.
The envoys returned to Brussels to
give an account of the Governor's rage,
which they could not declare to be un-
natural, and to assist in preparations
for the war which was now deemed
inevitable. Don John, making a
strong
garrison in the citadel of Namur, from
which place he despatched a final
communication to the states-general, dated
the 2d of October, retired to Luxem-
burg. In this letter, without exactly
uttering defiance, he unequivocally
accepted the hostilities which had been
pressed upon him, and answered their
hollow professions of attachment to
the Catholic religion and his Majesty's
authority, by denouncing their obvious
intentions to trample upon both. He
gave them, in short, to understand
that he perceived their intentions,
and meant them to comprehend his
own.

Thus the quarrel was brought to an
issue, and Don John saw with grim
complacency, that the pen was at last
to be superseded by the sword. A
remarkable pamphlet was now pub-
lished in seven different languages,
Latin, French, Flemish, German, Ita-
lian, Spanish, and English, containing
a succinct account of the proceedings
between the Governor and the estates.

The pamphlet, with copies of the intercepted
letters of Don John and Escovedo
to the King of France, to the German
Emperor, and to the Empress. This
work appeared, and was published by
order of the states-general, was trans-
mitted with its accompanying address
from persons in Christendom.®
It was soon afterwards followed by a counter-statement, prepared by order of Don John, and containing his account of the same matters, with his recriminations against the conduct of the estates. 1

Another important movement had, meanwhile, been made by the third party in this complicated game. The Catholic nobles, jealous of the growing influence of Orange, and indignant at the expanding power of the people, had opened secret negotiations with the Archduke Matthias, then a mild, easy-tempered youth of twenty, brother of the reigning emperor, Rudolph. After the matter had been discussed some time in secret, it was resolved, towards the end of September, to send a messenger to Vienna, privately inviting the young Prince to Brussels; but much to the surprise of these nobles, it was discovered that some fifteen or sixteen of the grandees of the land, among them Aerschot, Havré, Champagny, De Ville, Lalain, De Héze, and others, had already taken the initiative in the matter. On the 26th of August, the Seigneur de Maalstede had set forth, by their appointment, for Vienna. There is no doubt that this step originated in jealousy felt towards Orange, but at the same time it is certain that several of the leaders in the enterprise were still his friends. 2 Some, like Champagny, and De Héze, were honestly so; others, like Aerschot, Havré, and De Ville, always traitors in heart to the national cause, loyal to nothing but their own advancement, were still apparently upon the best terms with him. Moreover, it is certain that he had been made aware of the scheme, at least, before the arrival of the Archduke in the Netherlands, for the Marquis Havré, on his way to England, as special envoy from the estates, had a conference with him at Gertruydenberg. 3 This was in the middle of September, and before his departure for Brussels. Naturally, the proposition seemed, at first, anything but agreeable; but the Marquis represented himself afterwards as having at last induced the Prince to look upon it with more favourable eyes. 4 Nevertheless, the step had been taken before the consultation was held, nor was it the first time that the advice of Orange had been asked concerning the adoption of a measure after the measure had been adopted. Whatever may have been his original sentiments upon the subject, however, he was always less apt to complain of irrevocable events than quick to reconcile them with his own combinations, and it was soon to be discovered that the new stumbling-block which his opponents had placed in his path, could be converted into an additional stepping-stone towards his goal. Meanwhile, the secret invitation to the Archduke was regarded by the people and by foreign spectators as a plot devised by his enemies. Davison, envoy from Queen Elizabeth, was then in Brussels, and informed his royal mistress, whose sentiments and sympathies were unequivocally in favour of Orange, of the intrigues against the Prince. 5 The efforts of England were naturally to counteract the schemes of all who interfered with his policy, the Queen especially, with her customary sagacity, foreseeing the probable inclination of the Catholic nobles towards the protectorate of Alençon. She did not feel certain as to the precise plans of Orange, and there was no course better adapted to draw her from barren coquetry into positive engagements, than to arouse

1 The edition of this pamphlet from which the citations in the text have been made, is the Latin one of Marchant, published at Luxemburg, anno 1578, under the title, "Discours Sommier des Juges Causes et Facts qui ont contraint les Hete Gene- ralix des Pays Bas de pourvoir à leur Defense contre le Seigneur Don Jehan d'Austrie: avec plusieurs lettres intercep- tées en plus grand nombre," etc., etc. A Flemish translation is given in the Byvoeg- seel Aauth. Böckh, i. 151 et 176 of Bor, under the title of "Kort Variael van de rechte eoumak en redenen," etc., etc.
2 Bor, xi. 598. 3 Meteren, vii. 126. 4 Hoekl. xii. 539. 5 Cabrera, xi. 944, 945. Gr. v. Prinz., Archives, vi. 191.
6 Hoekl, xii. 529. 7 Ibid., 899.
her jealousy of the French influence in the provinces. At this moment she manifested the warmest friendship for the Prince. Costly presents were transmitted by her to his wife; among others, an ornament, of which a sculptured lizard formed a part. The Princess, in a graceful letter to her husband, desiring that her acknowledgments should be presented to her English Majesty, accepted the present as significant. "Tis the fabled virtue of the lizard (she said) to awaken sleepers when a serpent is about to sting; You are the lizard, and the Netherlands the sleepers. Pray Heaven they may escape the serpent's bite!" The Prince was well aware, therefore, of the plots which were weaving against him. He had small faith in the great nobles, whom he trusted "as he would address fanged, and relied only upon the commons, upon the mass ofburghers. They deserved his confidence and watched over his safety with eyes even more keen. On one occasion, when he was engaged at the State Congress at Liége, the citizens conceived so intense a fear that a large number of them immediately armed themselves, and nearly disclosed the palace. In vain did the Prince address them, "If you think I am afraid of you, come, disperse!" They were not encouraged by the address, and an attempted breach was repulsed. The Prince then had to address them, "You have set me this evening in my head, and I must put it in my heart." They were again assembled outside the palace, and so terrified were they that they took firewood and set it on fire. These proceedings caused a near revolution, and were so violent that the Prince felt it necessary to promise to work for the introduction of his sister, the Archduchess, as Queen of the United Provinces. The Archduchess, who was not under the influence of the plot at its commencement, was afterwards affected by the events, and that he was not connected with any pretense. A gentleman's suit in court was the origin of this event, and again, six men were destroyed by the privy council. —Rhetta Langed
arrived at Cologne, attended only by two gentleman and a few servants. The Governor was beside himself with fury; the Queen of England was indignant; the Prince only, against whom the measure was mainly directed, preserved his usual tranquility. 1

Secretary Waleingham, as soon as the news reached England, sent for Meestkerke, colleague of Marquis Havré in the mission from the estates. 2 He informed that functionary of the great perplexity and excitement which, according to information received from the English resident, Davison, were then prevailing in Brussels, on account of the approach of the Archduke. Some, he said, were for receiving him at one place, some at another; others were in favour of forbidding his entrance altogether. Things had been sufficiently complicated before, without this additional cause of confusion. Don John was strengthening himself daily, through the secret agency of the Duke of Guise and his party. His warlike genius was well known, as well as the experience of the soldiers who were fast rallying under his banner. On the other hand, the Duke of Alençon had come to La Fère, and was also raising troops, while to oppose this crowd of rival enemies, to deal with this host of impending disasters, there was but one man in the Netherlands. On the Prince of Orange alone could the distracted states rely. To his prudence and valour only could the Queen look with hopeful eyes. The Secretary proceeded to inform the envoy, therefore, that her Majesty would feel herself compelled to withdraw all succour from the states if the Prince of Orange were deprived of his leadership; for it was upon that leadership only that she had relied for obtaining a successful result. She was quite indisposed to encounter indefinite risk with an impossibility of profit. 3

Meestkerke replied to the Secretary by observing, that the great nobles of the land had been unanimous in desiring a new Governor-General at this juncture. They had thought Matthias, with a strong Council of State, composed of native Netherlanders, to control him, likely to prove a serviceable candidate for the post. They had reason to believe that, after he should be received, the Emperor would be reconciled to the measure, and that by his intercession the King of Spain would be likewise induced to acquiesce. 4 He alluded, moreover, to the conference between the Marquis of Havré and Orange at Gertruydenberg, and quoted the opinion of the Prince that it would be unwise, after the invitation had been given, to insult the Archduke and his whole imperial house, by treating him with indignity upon his arrival. It was inevitable, said the envoy, that differences of opinion should exist in large assemblies; but according to information which he had recently received from Marquis Havré, then in Brussels, affairs had already become smooth again. At the conclusion of the conference, Waleingham repeated emphatically that the only condition upon which the Queen would continue her succour to the Netherlands was, that the Prince should be forthwith appointed Lieutenant-General for the Archduke. 5

The immediate result of this movement was, that Matthias was received at Antwerp by Orange at the head of two thousand cavalry, and attended by a vast concourse of inhabitants. 6 Had the Prince chosen a contrary course, the Archduke might have been compelled to return, somewhat ridiculously, to Vienna; but, at the same time, the anger of the Emperor and of all Germany would have been aroused against Orange and the cause he served. Had the Prince, on the contrary, abandoned the field himself, and returned to Holland, he would have left the game in the hands of his adversaries. Ever since he had made what his brother John called that "dangerous gallows-journey" to Brussels, his in-

1 Epistolie ad illustr. et Illu.-Philippum Sydenham, Franc. 1622. lxv. 196, 186. 2 Epistolie. 3 Ibid. 4 Ibid. 5 Ibid. xi. 900. 6 Ibid. xi. 900. 7 "- wie man's schulden macht, zwar
fluence had been culminating daily, and the jealousy of the great nobles rising as rapidly. Had he now allowed himself to be driven from his post, he would have exactly fulfilled their object. By remaining, he counteracted their schemes. By taking Matthias wholly into his own possession, he obtained one piece the more in the great game which he was playing against his antagonist in the Escorial. By making adroit use of events as they arose, he made the very waves which were to sink him, carry his great cause triumphantly onward.

The first result of the invitation to Matthias was the election of Orange as Ruward of Brabant. This office was one of great historical dignity, but somewhat anomalous in its functions. The province of Brabant, having no special governor, was usually considered under the immediate superintendence of the Governor-General. As the capital of Brabant was the residence of that functionary, no inconvenience from this course had been felt since the accession of the house of Burgundy. At present, however, the condition of affairs was so peculiar—the seat of government being empty without having been permanently vacated—that a special opportunity was offered for conferring both honour and power on the Prince. A Ruward was not exactly dictator, although his authority was universal. He was not exactly protector, nor governor, nor stadtholder. His functions were unlimited as to time—therefore superior to those of an ancient dictator; they were commonly conferred on the natural heir to the sovereignty—therefore more lofty than those of ordinary stadholders. The individuals who had previously held the office in the Netherlands had usually reigned afterwards in their own right. Duke Albert, of the Bavarian line, for example, had been Ruward of Hainaut and Holland, for thirty years, during the insanity of his brother, and on the death of Duke William had succeeded to his title. Philip of Burgundy had declared himself Ruward of Brabant in 1425, and had shortly afterwards deprived Jacqueline of all her titles and appropriated them to himself. In the one case the regent, in the second case the usurper, had become reigning prince. Thus the movement of the jealous nobles against the Prince had for its first effect his immediate appointment to an office whose chief characteristic was, that it conducted to sovereignty.

The election was accomplished thus. The "members," or estates of Brussels, together with the deans, guilds, and other of the principal citizens of Antwerp, addressed a request to the states of Brabant, that William of Orange should be appointed Ruward, and after long deliberation the measure was carried. The unsolicited honour was then solemnly offered to him. He refused, and was only, after repeated and urgent entreaties, induced to accept the office. The matter was then referred to the states-general, who confirmed the dignity, after some demur, and with the condition that it might be superseded by the appointment of a governor-general. He was finally confirmed as Ruward on the 22d of October, to the boundless satisfaction of the people, who celebrated the event by a solemn holiday in Antwerp, Brussels, and other cities. His friends, inspired by the intrigues of his enemies, had thus elevated the Prince to almost unlimited power; while a strong expression in favour of his government had been elicited from the most important ally of the Netherlands—England. It soon rested with himself only to assume the government of Flanders, having been elected stadtholder, not once only, but many times, by the four estates of that
important province, and having as constantly refused the dignity. With Holland and Zeeland devoted to him, Brabant and Flanders formally under his government, the Netherlands capital lavishing testimonials of affection upon him, and the mass of the people almost worshiping him, it would not have been difficult for the Prince to play a game as selfish as it had hither-to been close and skilful. He might have proved to the grand seigneurs that their suspicions were just, by assuming a crown which they had been intriguing to push from his brows. Certainly the nobles deserved their defeat. They had done their best to circumvent Orange, in all ways and at all times. They had paid their court to power when it was most powerful, and had sought to swim on the popular tide when it was rising. He avenged himself upon their perfidy only by serving his country more faithfully than ever, but it was natural that he should be indignant at the conduct of these gentlemen, "children of good houses" (in his own words), "issue of worthy sires," whose fathers, at least, he had ever loved and honoured. They serve the Duke of Alva and the Grand Commander like varetie," he cried; "they make war upon me to the knife. Afterwards they treat with me, they reconcile themselves with me, they are sworn foes of the Spaniard. Don John arrives, and they follow him; they intrigue for my ruin. Don John fails in his enterprise upon Antwerp citadel; they quit him incontinently and call upon me. No sooner do I come than, against their oath and without previous communication with the states or myself, they call upon the Archduke Matthias. Are the waves of the sea more inconstant—is Euripus more uncertain than the counsels of such men?"

While these events were occurring at Brussels and Antwerp, a scene of a different nature was enacting at Ghent. The Duke of Aerschot had recently been appointed to the government of Flanders by the State Council, but the choice was exceedingly distasteful to a large number of the inhabitants. Although, since the defeat of Don John's party in Antwerp, Aerschot had again become "the affectionate brother" of Orange, yet he was known to be the head of the cabal which had brought Matthias from Vienna. Flanders, moreover, swarmed with converts to the Reformed religion, and the Duke's strict Romanism was well known. The people, therefore, who hated the Pope and adored the Prince, were furious at the appointment of the new Governor; but by dint of profuse promises regarding the instant restoration of privileges and charters which had long lain dormant, the friends of Aerschot succeeded in preparing the way for his installation.

On the 20th of October, attended by twenty-three companies of infantry and three hundred horse, he came to Ghent. That famous place was still one of the most powerful and turbulent towns in Europe. Although diminished in importance since the commercial decline which had been the inevitable result of Philip's bloody government, it was still swarming with a vigorous and dangerous population, and it had not forgotten the days when the iron tongue of Roland could call eighty thousand fighting men to the city banner. Even now, twenty thousand were secretly pledged to rise at the bidding of certain chieftains resident among them, noble by birth, warmly attached to the Reformed religion, and devoted to Orange. These gentlemen were perfectly conscious that a reaction was to be attempted in favour of Don John and of Catholicism, through the agency of the newly-ap-

---

3 Ibid., p. 107.
5 Van d. Vynckt, ii. 278. Hood, xii. 588.
7 Van d. Vynckt, ii. 276. 277.
8 Guicciardini-Geusdam, pp. 349, 344; see Introduction to this work. Tassis, iv, 916.
9 Van d. Vynckt, ii. 277.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

pointed governor of Flanders. Aerschot was trusted or respected by neither party. The only difference in the estimates formed of him was, that some considered him a deep and dangerous traitor; others that he was rather foolish than malicious; and more likely to ruin a good cause than to advance the interests of a bad one. The leaders of the popular party at Ghent believed him dangerous. They felt certain that it was the deeply laid design of the Catholic nobles—folled as they had been in the objects with which they had brought Matthias from Vienna, and enraged as they were that the only result of that movement had been to establish the power of Orange upon a firmer basis—to set up an opposing influence in Ghent. Flanders, in the possession of the Catholics, was to weigh up Brabant, with its recent tendencies to toleration. Aerschot was to counteract the schemes of Orange. Matthias was to be withdrawn from the influence of the great heretic, and be yet compelled to play the part set down for him by those who had placed him upon the stage. A large portion, no doubt, of the schemes here suggested, was in agitation, but the actors were hardly equal to the drama which they were attempting. The intrigue was, however, to be frustrated at once by the hand of Orange, acting as it often did from beneath a cloud.

Of all the chieftains possessing influence with the inhabitants of Ghent, two young nobles, named Ryhove and Jambize, were the most conspicuous. Both were of ancient descent and broken fortunes, both were passionately attached to the Prince, both were inspired with an intense hatred for all that was Catholic or Spanish. They had travelled further on the reforming path than many had done in that day, and might even be called democratic in their notions. Their heads were filled with visions of Greece and Rome; the praise of republics was ever on their lips; and they avowed to their intimate associates that it was already feasible to compose a commonwealth like that of the Swiss Cantons out of the seventeen Netherlands. They were regarded as dreamers by some, as desperadoes by others. Few had confidence in their capacity or their purity; but Orange, who knew mankind, recognised in them useful instruments for any hazardous enterprise. They delighted in stratagems and sudden feats of arms. Audacious and cruel by temperament, they were ever most happy in becoming a portion of the desolation which popular tumults engendered.

There were several excited meetings of the four estates of Flanders immediately after the arrival of the Duke of Aerschot in Ghent. His coming had been preceded by extensive promises, but it soon became obvious that their fulfilment was to be indefinitely deferred. There was a stormy session on the 27th of October, many of the clergy and nobility being present, and comparatively few members of the third estate. Very violent speeches were made, and threats openly uttered, that the privileges, about which so much noise had been heard, would be rather curtailed than enlarged under the new administration. At the same session, the commission of Aerschot was formally presented by Champagny and Swaeyghem, deputed by the State Council for that purpose. Champagny was in a somewhat anomalous position. There was much doubt in men's minds concerning him. He had seemed lately the friend of Orange, but he was certainly the brother of Granville. His splendid but fruitless services during the Antwerp Fury had not been forgotten, but he was known to be a determined Catholic. He was a hater of Spaniards, but no lover of popular liberty. The nature of his sentiments towards Orange was perhaps unjustly suspected. At any rate, two or three days after the events which now co-

---

1 "Sei plurique existimant eam sullititiam pativi quam multitid perceussa."—Languet.
2 Emp. Sec. I. ii. 307.
3 Van d. Vinckii, ii. 274, sqq.
5 Moteran, vil. 190. Hoofd, xii. 535.
occupy our attention, he wrote him a private letter, in which he assured him of his attachment. In reference to the complaints of the Prince, that he had not been seconded as he ought to have been, he said, moreover, that he could solemnly swear never to have seen a single individual who did not hold the Prince in admiration, and who was not affectionately devoted to him, not only by public profession, but by private sentiment. There was little doubt entertained as to the opinions held by the rest of the aristocratic party, then commencing their manoeuvres in Ghent. Their sentiments were uttered with sufficient distinctness in this remarkable session.

Hessels, the old Blood Councillor, was then resident in Ghent, where he discharged high governmental functions. It was he, as it will be remembered, who habitually fell asleep at that horrible council board, and could only start from his nap to shout “ad patibulum,” while the other murderers had found their work less narcotic. A letter from Hessels to Count de Reux, late royal governor of Flanders, was at the present juncture intercepted. Perhaps it was invented, but genuine or fictitious, it was circulated extensively among the popular leaders, and had the effect of proving Madame de Hessels a true prophet. It precipitated the revolution in Flanders, and soon afterwards cost the Councillor his life. “We have already brought many notable magistrates of Flanders over to the side of his Highness Don John,” wrote Hessels. “We hope, after the Duke of Aerschot is governor, that we shall fully carry out the intentions of his Majesty and the plans of his Highness. We shall also know how to circumvent the scandalous heretic with all his adherents and followers.”

Certainly, if this letter were true, it was high time for the friends of the “scandalous heretic” to look about them. If it were a forgery, which is highly probable, it was ingeniously imagined, and did the work of truth. The revolutionary party, being in a small minority in the assembly, were advised by their leaders to bow before the storm. They did so, and the bluster of the reactionary party grew louder as they marked the apparent discomfiture of their foes. They openly asserted that the men who were clamouring for privileges should obtain nothing but harters. The buried charters should never be resuscitated; but the spirit of the dead Emperor, who had once put a rope around the necks of the insolent Ghenters, still lived in that of his son. There was still no lack of denunciation. Don John and the Duke of Aerschot would soon bring the turbulent burghers to their senses, and there would then be an end to this renewed clamour about musty parchments. Much indignation was secretly excited in the assembly by such menaces. Without doors the subterranean flames spread rapidly, but no tumult occurred that night. Before the session was over, Ryhove left the city, pretending a visit to Tournay. No sooner had he left the gates, however, than he turned his horse’s head in the opposite direction, and rode off post haste to Antwerp. There he had a conference with William of Orange, and painted in lively colours the alarming position of affairs. “And what do you mean to do in the matter?” asked the Prince rather drily. Ryhove was somewhat disconcerted. He had expected a violent explosion; well as he knew the tranquil personage whom he was addressing. “I know no better counsel,” he ever, gives a minute account of their interview, in which he is followed by Hoofd, who had additional sources of information. Compare Groen v. Prinsen, vi. 217, 218; Wagenaer, vii. 177; V. d. Vynckt, ii. 578, 579, et al. 1 "Waar toe den Prince niet anders en wiste op te zeghen dan vraaghe wat raedt?"—Materen, vii. 126. Hoofd, xii. 533.
replied, at length, "than to take the Duke, with his bishops, councillors, lords, and the whole host of them, by the throat, and thrust them all out together!"

"Rather a desperate undertaking, however!" said the Prince, carelessly, but interjectively.

"I know no other remedy," answered Ryhove: "I would rather make the attempt, relying upon God to assist, and die like a man, than live in eternal slavery. Like an ancient Roman, confirmed the young republican noble in a vein of martial heroism. "I am ready to give my life, where my fatherland’s welfare is at stake."

"So I will," said the Prince, looking gravely at Ryhove; "but upon what more do you rely for your undertaking?"

"If I can obtain no assistance from your Excellency," was the reply, "I shall throw myself in the cause of the insurgents. I can assure them in the name of their ancient liberties, which must be restored now or never."

The Prince, believing probably that the scheme, if carried out, was but a wild one, felt little inclination to consult himself with the young, enthusiastic noble. He told him he could not receive at present, and adding that he trusted at least something upon the matter, dismissed him for the night. Next morning, at daylight, Ryhove was again received with him. The Prince accused his sincerity, and asked if he were still determined to carry out his project, with or without definite support from the Duke of Mantua. Ryhove assured the Duke that he meant to do so, even at the cost of his life. The Prince told him he would send a message, and soon the noble was to return without a secret. Ryhove was not talking, but it was in his nature to think, hence his silence was broken by the Duke, who then appeared to have strengthened his decision. Hardly had he left the house, however, when the Prince despatched Saint Aldegond to search for him. That gentleman, proceeding to his hotel, walked straight into the apartment of Ryhove, and commenced a conversation with a person whom he found there; but to his surprise he soon discovered, experienced politician though he was, that he had made an egregious blunder. He had opened a dangerous secret to an entire stranger, and Ryhove coming into the apartment a few minutes afterwards, was naturally surprised to find the Prince’s chief councillor in close conversation about the plot with Van Rooyen, the burgomaster of Dendermonde. The Flemish noble, however, always prompt in emergencies, drew his rapier, and assured the astonished burgomaster that he would either have his life on the instant, or his oath never to reveal a syllable of what he had heard. That functionary, who had neither desired the young noble’s confidence, nor contemplated the honour of being run through the body as a consequence of receiving it, was somewhat aghast at the rapid manner in which these gentlemen transacted business. He willingly gave the required pledge, and was permitted to depart.

The effect of the conference between Saint Aldegond and Ryhove was to convince the young partizan that the Prince would neither openly countenance his project, nor be extremely vexed should it prove successful. In short, as in the case of the arrest of the State Council, the subordinates were left to appear the principal in the transaction, the persons most intimate with William of Orange were allowed to form satisfactory opinions as to his wishes, and to serve as instruments to his ends. The Prince, as it appeared, Saint Aldegond, deeming it improper, to Ryhove, shaking
hands with him at parting. The conspirator immediately mounted, and rode off towards Ghent. During his absence there had been much turbulence, but no decided outbreak, in that city. Imbize had accosted the Duke of Aerschot in the street, and demanded when and how he intended to proclaim the restoration of the ancient charters. The haughty Duke had endeavoured to shake off his importunate questioner, while Imbize persisted, with increasing audacity, till Aerschot lost his temper at last. "Charters, charters!" he cried in a rage; "you shall learn soon, ye that are thus howling for charters, that we have still the old means of making you dumb, with a rope on your throats. I tell you this—were you ever so much hounded on by the Prince of Orange."1

The violence of the new governor excited the wrath of Imbize. He broke from him abruptly, and rushed to a rendezvous of his confederates, every man of whom was ready for a desperate adventure. Groups of excited people were seen vociferating in different places. A drum was heard to rattle from time to time. Nevertheless, the rising tumult seemed to subside again after a season, owing partly to the exertions of the magistrates, partly to the absence of Ryhove. At four in the afternoon that gentleman entered the town, and riding directly to the head-quarters of the conspiracy, was incensed to hear that the work, which had begun so bravely, had been allowed to cool. "'Tis a time," he cried, "for vigilance. If we sleep now, we shall be dead in our beds before morning. Better to fan the fire which has begun to blaze in the people's heart. Better to gather the fruit while it is ripe. Let us go forward, each with his followers, and I pledge myself to lead the way. Let us scuttle the old ship of slavery; let us hunt the Spanish Inquisition, once for all, to the hell from whence it came!"2

"There spoke the voice of a man!"3 cried the Flemish captain, Miegheim, one of the chief conspirators; "lead on, Ryhove, I swear to follow you as far as our legs will carry us." Thus encouraged, Ryhove rushed about the city, calling upon the people everywhere to rise. They rose almost to a man. Arming and mustering at different points, according to previous arrangements, a vast number assembled by toll of bell, after nightfall, on the public square, whence, under command of Ryhove, they swept to the residence of Aerschot at Saint Bavon. The guards, seeing the fierce mob approaching, brandishing spears and waving torches, had scarce time to close the gates, as the people loudly demanded entrance and the delivery to them of the Governor. Both claims were refused. "Let us burn the birds in their nests," cried Ryhove, without hesitation.4 Pitch, light wood, and other combustibles, were brought at his command, and in a few moments the palace would have been in flames, had not Aerschot, seeing that the insurgents were in earnest, capitulated. As soon as the gates were open, the foremost of the mob rushed upon him, and would have torn him limb from limb, had not Ryhove resolutely interfered, and twice protected the life of the Governor, at the peril of his own.5 The Duke was then made a prisoner, and, under a strong guard, was conveyed, still in his night-gown, and bare-footed, to the mansion of Ryhove. All the other leading members of the Catholic party were captured, the arrests proceeding till a late hour in the night. Rassingham, Sweygehem, Fisch, De la Porta, and other prominent members of the Flemish estates or council, were secured, but Champagny was allowed to make his escape.6

---

6 "Zoo dat hy verreyst, verborgenn, oft door gunsten, verschoont moet geweezt zyn."—Hoofd, xii. 535.
The Bishops of Bruges and Ypres were less fortunate. Blood-councillor Hessels, whose letter—genuine or counterfeited—had been so instrumental in hastening this outbreak, was most carefully guarded, and to him and to Senator Fisch the personal consequences of that night’s work were to be very tragic.

Thus audaciously, successfully, and hitherto without bloodshed, was the anti-Catholic revolution commenced in Flanders. The event was the first of a long and most signal series. The deed was done. The provisional government was established, at the head of which was placed Ryhove, to whom oaths of allegiance were rendered, subject to the future arrangements of the states-general and Orange. On the 9th of November, the nobles, notables, and community of Ghent published an address, in which they elaborately defended the revolution which had been effected and the arrests which had taken place; while the Catholic party, with Aerschot at its head, was declared to be secretly in league with Don John to bring back the Spanish troops, to overthrow the Prince of Orange, to deprive him of the protectorate of Brabant, to set at nought the Ghent treaty, and to suppress the Reformed religion.\(^1\)

The effect of this sudden rising of the popular party was prodigious throughout the Netherlands. At the same time, the audacity of such extreme proceedings could hardly be countenanced by any considerable party in the states-general. Champagny wrote to the Prince of Orange that, even if the letter of Hessels were genuine, it proved nothing against Aerschot,\(^2\) and he urged the necessity of suppressing such scene of licence immediately, through the influence of those who could command the passions of the mob. Otherwise, he affirmed that all legitimate forms of justice would disappear, and that it would be easy to set the bloodhounds upon any game whatever. Saint Aldegonde wrote to the Prince, that it would be a great point, but a very difficult one, to justify the Ghent transaction; for there was little doubt that the Hessels letter was a forgery.\(^3\) It was therefore as well, no doubt, that the Prince had not decidedly committed himself to Ryhove’s plot, and thus deprived himself of the right to interfere afterwards, according to what seemed the claims of justice and sound policy.

He now sent Arend van Dorp to Ghent, to remonstrate with the leaders of the insurrection upon the violence of their measures, and to demand the liberation of the prisoners—a request which was only complied with in the case of Aerschot. That nobleman was liberated on the 14th of November, under the condition that he would solemnly pledge himself to forget and forgive the treatment which he had received, but the other prisoners were retained in custody for a much longer period. A few weeks afterwards, the Prince of Orange visited Ghent, at the earnest request of the four estates of Flanders, and it was hoped that his presence would contribute to the restoration of tranquility.\(^4\)

This visit was naturally honoured by a brilliant display of “rhetorical” spectacles and tableaux vivants; for nothing could exceed the passion of the Dutch of that century for apalogues and charades. In allegory they found an ever-present comforter in their deepest afflictions. The prince was escorted from the Town-gate to the Jacob’s church amid a blaze of tar-barrels and torches, although it was mid-day, where a splendid exhibition had been arranged by that sovereign guild of rhetoric, “Jesus with the Balsam Flower.” The drama was called Judas Maccabaeus, in compliment to the Prince. In the centre of the stage stood the Hebrew patriot, in full armour, symbolising the illustrious guest doing battle for his country. He was attended by the three estates of the country, ingeniously personified by a single individual, who wore the

---

1 Address of the Notables, in Bor, xi. 904, 905.
2 Archives du Roi de France, xi. 224.
3 Ibid., vi. 219, 220.
4 Bor, xi. 905, 916. The Prince came to the city on the 29th of December 1577.
Toleration. 287

velvet bonnet of a noble, the cassock of a priest, and the breeches of a burgher. Groups of allegorical personages were drawn up on the right and left;—Courage, Patriotism, Freedom, Mercy, Diligence, and other estimable qualities upon one side, were balanced by Murder, Rapine, Treason, and the rest of the sisterhood of Crime, on the other. The Inquisition was represented as a lean and hungry hog. The “Ghent Pacification” was dressed in crimson satin, and wore a cap on her head for a turban; while, tied to her apron-strings, were Catholicism and Protestantism, bound in a loving embrace by a chain of seventeen links, which she was forging upon an anvil. Under the anvil was an individual in complete harness, engaged in eating his heart; this was Discord. In front of the scene stood History and Rhetoric, attired as “triumphant maidens, in white garments,” each with a laurel crown and a burning torch. These personages, after holding a rhapsodical dialogue between themselves, filled with wonderful conceits and quibbles, addressed the Prince of Orange and Maccabeus, one after the other, in a great quantity of very detestable verses.

After much changing of scenes and groups, and an enormous quantity of Flemish-woven poetry, the “Ghent Peace” came forward, leading a lion in one hand, and holding a heart of pure gold in the other. The heart, upon which was inscribed Saceritas, was then presented to the real Prince, as he sat “reposing after the spectacle,” and perhaps slightly yawning, the gift being accompanied by another tremendous discharge of complimentary verses. After this, William of Orange was permitted to proceed towards the lodgings provided for him, but the magistrates and notables met him upon the threshold, and the pen-

sionary made him a long oration. Even after the Prince was fairly housed, he had not escaped the fangs of allegory; for, while he sat at supper refreshing his exhausted frame after so much personification and metaphor, a symbolical personage, attired to represent the town corporation, made his appearance, and poured upon him a long and particularly dull heroic poem. Fortunately, this episode closed the labours of the day.

On the 7th of December 1577, the states-general formally declared that Don John was no longer Stadholder, Governor, nor Captain-General, but an infractor of the peace which he had sworn to maintain, and an enemy of the fatherland. All natives of the country who should show him favour or assistance were declared rebels and traitors; and by a separate edict, issued the same day, it was ordained that an inventory of the estates of such persons should forthwith be taken.

Thus the war, which had for a brief period been suspended during the angry, tortuous, and hopeless negotiations which succeeded the arrival of Don John, was once more to be let loose. To this point had tended all the policy of Orange—faithful as ever to the proverb with which he had broken off the Breda conferences, “that war was preferable to a doubtful peace.” Even, however, as his policy had pointed to a war as the necessary forerunner of a solid peace with Spain, so had his efforts already advanced the cause of internal religious concord within the provinces themselves. On the 10th of December, a new act of union was signed at Brussels, by which those of the Roman Church and those who had retired from that communion bound themselves to respect and to protect each other with mutual guarantees against all enemies whatsoever.

1 Beschrijvinghe van het gene dat ver- toocht wierd ter inkomst Van der Excellentis, des Prinsen van Orangien, binnen der Stad van Ghendt.”—Ghendt, 1578.
2 Beschrijvinghe, etc.
3 Ibid.
4 Bor, 21. 916.
5 Meteoren, vii. 1274. Harrel Ann., iii. 209, 209.—It is singular that Bor, say,
was a step beyond the Ghent Pacification, and in the same direction. The first treaty tacitly introduced toleration by suppressing the right of persecution, but the new union placed the Reformed religion on a level with the old. This was the result of the Prince's efforts; and, in truth, there was no lack of eagerness among these professors of a faith which had been so long under ban to take advantage of his presence. Out of dark alleys, remote thickets, subterranean conventicles, where the dissenters had so long been trembling for their lives, the oppressed now came forth into the light of day. They intruded openly in those forms of worship which persecution had then regarded with as much holy horror as the Babylonian or Hermetic mysteries of Celtic ages could inspire, and they worshipped bodily to the common God of Catholics and Protestants, in the words most consonant to their tastes, without dreading the penalty as an inevitable result of their sincerity.

In truth, the time had arrived for bringing the northern and southern, the German and Dutch, the Protestant and Catholic hearts together, or else for continuing in their perpetual divisions if the spirit of unity in the cause of a common religion and of a common freedom of worship was ever to be known in the provinces. In the spirit of the great Helvetic confederation, it might be hoped to create a united North, if not alone, yet in the very heart of the country.

Under the Union of Brussels, every province under the Prince of Orange, in the name of the States-General, was to receive an annual contribution from the city of Amsterdam for the maintenance of the army and navy. The Union of Brussels had closed the door again. Contrary to the hopes of the Prince of Orange and of the patriots who followed in his track, the sanction given to the Roman religion had animated the Catholics to fresh arrogance and fresh persecution. In the course of a few months, the only fruits of the new union, from which so much had been hoped, were to be seen in imprisonments, confiscations, banishments, executions! The Perpetual Edict, by which the fifteen provinces had united in acknowledging Don John while the Protestant stronghold of Holland and Zealand had been placed in a state of isolation by the wise distrust of Orange, had widened the breach between Catholics and Protestants. The subsequent conduct of Don John had confirmed the suspicions and demonstrated the incapacity of the Prince. The seizure of Namur and the open hostility avowed by the Governor once more forced the provinces together. The suppressed flames of national unity burst forth again. Catholics and Protestants, Fleming and Holland, instinctively approached each other, and felt the necessity of standing shoulder to shoulder in defense of their common rights. The Prince of Orange was called for by the unanimous cry of the whole country. He came to Brussels. His first step, as already narrated, was to break off negotiations which had been already raised by the votes of the States-General. The measure was reconsidered, under pressure of adding certain amendments. Those amendments were the unconditional articles of surrender proposed by Don John's instrument in the 25th of September—articles which could only elicit words of defiance from his lips.

Thus for the Prince's object was accomplished. A treacherous peace, which would have insured destruction,
1577.]

The New Union of Brussels.

was averted, but a new obstacle to the development of his broad and energetic schemes arose in the intrigue which brought the Archdukes from Vienna. The cabals of Orange's secret enemies were again thwarted with the same adroitness to which his avowed antagonists were forced to succumb. Matthias was made the exponent of the new policy, the standard-bearer of the new union which the Prince now succeeded in establishing; for his next step was immediately to impress upon the provinces which had thus united in casting down the gauntlet to a common enemy the necessity of uniting in a permanent league. One province was already lost by the fall of Namur. The bonds of a permanent union for the other sixteen could be constructed of but one material—religious toleration, and for a moment, the genius of Orange, always so far beyond his age, succeeded in raising the mass of his countrymen to the elevation upon which he had so long stood alone.

The "new or nearer Union of Brussels" was signed on the 10th of December, eleven months after the formation of the first union. This was the third and, unfortunately, the last confederation of all the Netherlands. The original records have been lost, but it is known that the measure was accepted unanimously in the estates-general as soon as presented.1 The leading Catholic nobles were with the army, but a deputation, sent to the camp, returned with their signatures and hearty approval; with the signatures and approval of such determined Catholics as the Lalains, Meluns, Egmont, and La Motte.2 If such men could unite for the sake of the fatherland in an act of religious toleration, what lofty hopes for the future was not the Prince justified in forming; for it was the Prince alone3 who accomplished this victory of reason over passion. As a monument, not only of his genius, but of the elevated aspirations of a whole people in an age of intolerance, the "closer Union of Brussels" deserves especial place in the history of human progress. Unfortunately, it was destined to a brief existence. The battle of Gemblours was its death-blow, and before the end of a month, the union thus hopefully constructed was shattered for ever. The Netherlands people was never united again. By the Union of Utrecht, seven states subsequently rescued their existence, and lived to construct a powerful republic. The rest were destined to remain for centuries in the condition of provinces to a distant metropolis, to be shifted about as make-weights in political balances, and only in our own age to come into the honourable rank of independent constitutional states.

The Prince had, moreover, strengthened himself for the coming struggle by an alliance with England. The thrifty but politic Queen, fearing the result of the secret practices of Alençon—whom Orange, as she suspected, still kept in reserve to be played off, in case of need, against Matthias and Don John—had at last consented to a treaty of alliance and subsidy. On the 7th of January 1578, the Marquis Hárè, envoy from the estates, concluded an arrangement in London, by which the Queen was to lend them her credit—in other words, to endorse their obligations, to the amount of one hundred thousand pounds sterling. The money was to be raised wherever the states might be able to negotiate the bills, and her liability was to cease within a year. She was likewise to be collaterally secured by pledges from certain cities in the Netherlands.4 This amount was certainly not colossal, while the conditions were sufficiently parsimonious. At the same time a beginning was made, and the principle of subsidy was established. The Queen, furthermore, agreed to send five thousand infantry and one thousand cavalry to the provinces, under the command of an officer of high rank, who was to have a seat and vote in the Netherlands Council of State.5 These troops were

1 De Jonghe, p. 188.
2 Ibid., pp. 188-190.
3 Bor, xi, 902, 903. Muteren, vii. 128.
5
to be paid by the provinces, but furnished by the Queen. The estates were to form no treaty without her knowledge, nor undertake any movement of importance without her consent. In case she should be herself attacked by any foreign power, the provinces were to assist her to the same extent as the amount of aid now afforded to themselves; and in case of a naval war, with a fleet of at least forty ships. It had already been arranged that the appointment of the Prince of Orange as Lieutenant-General for Matthias was a sine qua non in any treaty of assistance with England. Soon after the conclusion of this convention, Sir Thomas Wilkes was despatched on a special mission to Spain, and Mr Leyton sent to confer privately with Don John. It was not probable, however, that the diplomatic skill of either would make this new arrangement palatable to Philip or his Governor.

Within a few days after their signature of this important treaty, the Prince had, at length, wholly succeeded in conquering the conflicting passions in the states-general, and in reconciling them, to a certain extent, with each other. The closer union had been accepted, and now thirty articles, which had been prepared under his superintendence, and had already on the 17th of December been accepted by Matthias, were established as the fundamental terms, according to which the Archduke was to be received as Governor-General. No power whatever was accorded to the young man, who had come so far with eager and ambitious views. As the Prince had neither solicited nor desired a visit which had, on the contrary, been the result of hostile machinations, the Archduke could hardly complain that the power accorded him was but shadowy, and that his presence was rendered superfluous. It was not surprising that the common people gave him the name of Greffer, or registering clerk to the Prince; for his functions were almost limited to the signing of acts which were countersigned by Orange. According to the stipulations of the Queen of England, and the views of the whole popular party, the Prince remained Ruward of Brabant, notwithstanding the appointment of a nominal Governor-General, by whom his own duties were to be superseded.

The articles which were laid down as the basis upon which the Archduke was to be accepted, composed an ample representative constitution, by which all the legislative and many of the executive powers of government were bestowed upon the states-general or upon the council by them to be elected. To avoid remaining in the condition of a people thus left without a head, the states declared themselves willing to accept Matthias as Governor-General, on condition of the King's subsequent approbation, and upon the general basis of the Ghent treaty. The Archduke, moreover, was to take an oath of allegiance to the King and to the states-general at the same time. He was to govern the land by the advice of a state-council, the members of which were to be appointed by the states-general, and were "to be native Netherlanders, true patriots, and neither ambitious nor greedy." In all matters discussed before the state-council, a majority of votes was to decide. The Governor-General, with his Council of State, should conclude nothing concerning the common affairs of the nation—such as requests, loans, treaties of peace or declarations of war, alliances or confederacies with foreign nations—without the consent of the states-general. He was to issue no edict or ordinance, and introduce no law, without the consent of the same body duly assembled, and representing each individual province. A majority of the members was declared necessary.

1 Bor, xi. 909-903. Metelen, ubi sup.
2 See the articles at full length in Bor, xi. 727-820. In the notes of De Reiffenberg to Van d. Ynckt, ii. 696-843; and in Metelen, vii. 129, they are given with much less exactness. Compare the remarks of Groom van Prinsterer, Archives, vi. 259, 260.
3 Tassius, iv. 290.
4 "Getrouwre en goede patriotten niet wesens: ambitieus of gierig."—Art. 4.
5 Art. 8.
1578.] A Free Constitution. 291

to a quorum of the council. All acts and despatches were to be drawn up by a member of the board. The states-general were to assemble when, where, and as often as, and remain in session as long as, they might think it expedient. At the request of any individual province, concerning matters about which a convention of the generality was customary, the other states should be bound to assemble without waiting for directions from the Governor-General. The estates of each particular province were to assemble at their pleasure. The governor and Council, with advice of the states-general, were to appoint all the principal military officers. Troops were to be enrolled and garrisons established by and with the consent of the states. Governors of provinces were to be appointed by the Governor-General, with advice of his council, and with the consent of the estates of the province interested. All military affairs were to be conducted during war by the governor, with advice of his council, while the estates were to have absolute control over the levying and expenditure of the common funds of the country.

It is sufficiently plain from this brief summary, that the powers thus conferred upon Matthias alone, were absolutely null, while those which he might exercise in conjunction with the state-council were not much more extensive. The actual force of the government—legislative, executive, and administrative—was lodged in the general assembly, while no authority was left to the King, except the nominal right to approve these revolutionary proceedings, according to the statement in the preamble. Such a reservation in favour of his Majesty seemed a superfluous sarcasm. It was furthermore resolved that the Prince of Orange should be appointed Lieutenant-General for Matthias, and be continued in his office of Ruward. This constitution, drawn up under the superintendence of the Prince, had been already accepted by Matthias, while still at Antwerp, and upon the 18th of January 1578, the ceremony of his inauguration took place.

It was the third triumphal procession which Brussels had witnessed within nine months. It was also the most brilliant of all; for the burghers, as if to make amends to the Archduke for the actual nullity to which he had been reduced, seemed resolved to raise him to the seventh heaven of allegory. By the rhetorical guilds he was regarded as the most brilliant constellation of virtues which had yet shone above the Flemish horizon. A brilliant cavalcade, headed by Orange, accompanied by Count John of Nassau, the Prince de Chimay and other notables, met him at Vilvoorde, and escorted him to the city gate. On an open field, outside the town, Count Bossu had arranged a review of troops, concluding with a sham-fight, which, in the words of a classical contemporary, seemed as "bloody a rencontre as that between Duke Militiades of Athens and King Darius upon the plains of Attica." The procession entered the Louvain gate, through a splendid triumphal arch, filled with a band of invisible musicians. "I believe that Orpheus had never played so melodiously on his harp," says the same authority, "nor Apollo on his lyre, nor Pan on his lute, as the city waits then performed." On entering

dagen Aertshoge Matthias binnen die Prinselijke Stadt van Brussel."—t' Antwerpen. Plantin, 1579. This little contemporary publication, drawn up by J. B. Houwaert, contains a detailed account of the festivities upon this occasion, together with all the poems sung and spoken, and well executed engravings of the decorations, temples, theatres, and triumphal arches. For the literary and artistic history of Flanders and Brabant, it is important. The copy used by the writer is in the "Collectio Ducanaiana" of the Royal Library at the Hague.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

The gates. Matthias was at once delivered over to the hands of mythology, the burgheers and rhetoricians taking possession of their illustrious captive, and being determined to outdo themselves in demonstrations of welcome. The representatives of the "nine nations" of Brussels met him in the Ritter-street, followed by a gorgeous retinue. Although it was midday, all bore flaming torches. Although it was January, the streets were strewed with flowers. The houses were festooned with garlands, and hung with brilliant silks and velvets. The streets were thronged with spectators, and encumbered with triumphal arches. On the Grande Place, always the central scene in Brussels, whether for comedies, or tournaments, or executions, the principal dramatic effects had been accumulated. The splendid front of the Hôtel de Ville was wreathed with scarfs and banners; its windows and balconies, as well as those of the picturesque houses which formed the square, were crowded with gaily-dressed women. Upon the area of the place, twenty-four theatres had been erected, where a series of magnificent living pictures were represented by the most beautiful young females that could be found in the city. All were attired in brocades, embroideries, and cloth of gold. The subjects of the tableaux vivants were, of course, most classic, for the Dutchers were nothing, if not allegorical; yet, as spectacles, provided by burgheers and artisans for the amusement of their fellow-citizens, they certainly proved a considerable culture in the people who could thus be amused. All the groups were artistically arranged. Upon one theatre stood Juno with her peacock, presenting Matthias with the city of Brussels, which she held, beautifully modelled, in her hand. Upon another, Cybele gave him the keys, Reason handed him a bridle, Hebe a basket of flowers, Wisdom a looking glass and two law books, DilIGENCE a pair of spurs; while Constancy, Magnanimity, Prudence, and other virtues, furnished him with a helmet, corset, spear, and shield. Upon other theatres, Bellona presented him with several men-at-arms, tied in a bundle; Fame gave him her trumpet, and Glory her crown. Upon one stage Quintus Curtius, on horseback, was seen plunging into the yawning abyss; upon six others Scipio Africanus was exhibited, as he appeared in the most picturesque moments of his career. The beardless Archduke had never achieved anything, save his nocturnal escape from Vienna in his night-gown; but the honest Flemings chose to regard him as a re-incarnation of those two eminent Romans. Carried away by their own learning, they already looked upon him as a myth; and such indeed he was destined to remain throughout his Dutch career. After surveying all these wonders, Matthias was led up the hill again to the ducal palace, where, after hearing speeches and odes till he was exhausted, he was at last allowed to eat his supper and go to bed.

Meantime the citizens feasted in the streets. Bonfires were blazing everywhere, at which the people roasted "geese, pigs, capons, partridges, and chickens," while upon all sides were the merriest piping and dancing. Of a sudden, a fiery dragon was seen flying through the air. It poised for a while over the heads of the revelling crowd in the Grande Place, and then burst with a prodigious explosion, sending forth rockets and other fireworks in every direction. This exhibition, then a new one, so frightened the people, that they all took to their heels, "as if a thousand soldiers had assaulted them," tumbling over each other in great confusion, and so dispersing to their homes.

The next day Matthias took the oaths as Governor-General, to support the new constitution, while the Prince of Orange was sworn in as Lieutenant-General and Governor of Brabant. Upon the next a splendid banquet was given them in the grand hall of the Hôtel de Ville, by the states-general.

1 Sommaro Beschryvinghe, etc.

2 Ibid.
and when the cloth was removed, Rhetoric made her last and most ingenious demonstration, through the famous guild of "Mary with the Flower Garland."

Two individuals—the one attired as a respectable burgher, the other as a clerical personage in gown and bands—made their appearance upon a stage, opposite the seats of their Highnesses, and pronounced a long dialogue in rhyme. One of the speakers rejoiced in the appellation of the "Desiring Heart," the other was called "Common Comfort." Common Sense might have been more to the purpose, but appeared to have no part in the play. Desiring Heart, being of an inquisitive disposition, propounded a series of puzzling questions, mythological in their nature, which seemed like classical conundrums, having reference, mainly, to the proceedings of Venus, Neptune, Juno, and other divinities. They appeared to have little to do with Matthias or the matter in hand, but Common Comfort knew better. That clerical personage, accordingly, in a handsome allowance of rhymes, informed his despairing colleague that everything would end well; that Jupiter, Diana, Venus, and the rest of them would all do their duty, and that Belgia would be relieved from all her woes, at the advent of a certain individual. Whereupon cried Desiring Heart:

Oh Common Comfort! who is he? His name, and of what family?

To which * Comfort responded by mentioning the Archduke, in a poetical and highly-complimentary strain, with handsome allusions to the inevitable Quintus Curtius and Scipio Africanus. The concluding words of the speech were not spoken, but were taken as the cue for a splendid charade; the long suffering Scipio again making his appearance, in company with Alexander and Hannibal; the group typifying the future government of Matthias. After each of these heroic individuals had spouted a hundred lines or so, the play was terminated, and Rhetoric took her departure. The company had remained at table during this long representation, and now the dessert was served, consisting of a "richly triumphant banquet of confectionary, marmalade, and all kinds of gentelmanesses in sugar."

Meanwhile, Don John sat chafing and almost frenzied with rage at Namur. Certainly he had reasons enough for losing his temper. Never since the days of Maximilian had king's brother been so bearded by rebels. The Cross was humbled in the dust, the royal authority openly derided, his Majesty's representative locked up in a fortress, while "the accursed Prince of Orange" reigned supreme in Brussels, with an imperial Archduke for his private secretary.

The Governor addressed a long, private, and most bitter letter to the Emperor, for the purpose of setting himself right in the opinion of that potentate, and of giving him certain hints as to what was expected of the imperial court by Philip and himself. He expressed confidence that the imperial commissioners would have some effect in bringing about the pacifica-

---

1 As for example—
"Wanneer sal Jupiter Saturnum verdrieven?  
Wanneer sal Neptunus Phaethon verdrijven,  
Wanneer sal Hercules Hydram ontvlissen,  

Or, in the vernacular—
When shall Jove his father follow,  
Or briny Neptune Phaethon swallow,  
Or Hercules leave off Hydra crimping,  
Or honest Vulcan give up limping,  
Or Brontes cease to forge his thunder?  
All these are wonder upon wonder—
etc., etc.

2 "Hy is van Keyserlicken stamme ghe- 
boren.  
Aartehertoge Matthias is sijnen name,  
Die generale staten hebben hem ghe- 
coren.  
Voor Gouverneur, door sijne goete  
fame  
Hy is als Julius Caesar eersame," etc., etc. Som. Beschryv.

He is formed of fine material,  
And is sprung of race imperial.  
He is brave as Julius Cesar,  
Archduke Matthias is his name;  
He is chosen Governor-General  
By the states, for his great fame—
etc., etc.
tion of the Netherlands, and protested
his own strong desire for such a result,
provided always that the two great
points of the Catholic religion and his
Majesty's authority were preserved in-
tact. "In the hope that those articles
would be maintained," said he, "I have
emptied cities and important places of
their garrisons, when I might easily
have kept the soldiers, and with the
soldiers the places, against all the
world, instead of consigning them to
the care of men who at this hour
have arms in their hand against their
natural prince." He declared vehe-
mently that in all his conduct, since
his arrival in the provinces, he had
been governed exclusively by the in-
terests of Philip, an object which he
should steadily pursue to the end. He
urged, too, that the Emperor, being of
the same house as Philip, and there-
fore more obliged than all others to
sustain his quarrel, would do well to
rescue his cause with all the warmth
possible. "The forgetfulness by vas-
sals," said Don John, "of the obedi-
ence due to their sovereign is so
dangerous, that all princes and poten-
tates, even those at the moment
exempt from trouble, should assist
in preparing the remedy, in order
that their subjects also may not take
it into their heads to do the like,
never being a contagious disease, which
goes on infecting one neighbour after
another, if the cure be not promptly ap-
plicated."

It was, he averred, a desper-
ate state of things for monarchs,
thanks to which, having obtained such
a position, the Netherlands had
nevertheless loved him and served
him. They showed, at the same time,
that the causes alleged for the
advent of new princes, in
the same way, were mere
pretexts, in order to
obtain the crown
of which they
might then
live,
and they
were
idle.

So many indecent acts had been
committed prejudicial to religion and to
his Majesty's grandeur, that the Gov-
ernor avowed his determination to have
no farther communication with the
provinces without fresh commands to
that effect. He begged the Emperor
to pay no heed to what the states said,
but to observe what they did. He as-
ured him that nothing could be more
senseless than the reports that Philip
and his Governor-General in the Ne-
thelands were negotiating with France,
for the purpose of alienating the pro-
vinces from the Austrian crown. Philip,
being chief of the family, and sovereign
of the Netherlands, could not commit
the absurdity of giving away his own
property to other people, nor would
Don John choose to be an instrument
in so foolish a transaction. The Gov-
ernor entreated the Emperor, there-
fore, to consider such fables as the in-
vention of malcontents and traitors, of
whom there were no lack at his court.
and to remember that nothing was
more necessary for the preservation of
the greatness of his family than to
cultivate the best relations with all its
members. "Therefore," said he, with
an absurd affectation of candour, "al-
though I make no doubt whatever that
the expedition hitherwards of the Arch-
duke Matthias has been made with
the best intentions; nevertheless, many are
of opinion that it would have been
better altogether omitted. If the Arch-
duke," he continued, with hardly dis-
sembled irony, "be desirous of taking
charge of his Majesty's affairs, it would
be preferable to employ himself in the
customary manner. Your Majesty
would do a laudable action by recall-
ing him from this place, according to
your Majesty's promise to me to that
effect." In conclusion, Don John ex-
plained that difficulties had been placed
in his way for making levies of troops
in the Empire, while every facility had

```
been afforded to the rebels. He therefore urgently insisted that so unnatural and unjust a condition of affairs should be remedied.¹

Don John was not sorry in his heart that the crisis was at last come. His chain was broken. His wrath exploded in his first interview with Leyton, the English envoy, whom Queen Elizabeth had despatched to calm, if possible, his inevitable anger at her recent treaty with the states.² He knew nothing of England, he said, nor of France, nor of the Emperor. His Catholic Majesty had commissioned him now to make war upon these rebellious provinces. He would do it with all his heart. As for the Emperor, he would unchain the Turks upon him for his perfidy. As for theburghers of Brussels, they would soon feel his vengeance.³

It was very obvious that these were not idle threats. War had again broken loose throughout these doomed provinces. A small but well-appointed army had been rapidly collecting under the banner of Don John at Luxemburg, Peter Ernest Mansfeld had brought many well-trained troops from France, and Prince Alexander of Parma had arrived with several choice and veteran regiments of Italy and Spain.⁴ The old school-fellow, playmate, and comrade of Don John, was shocked on his arrival, to witness the attenuated frame and care-worn features of his uncle.⁵ The son of Charles the Fifth, the hero of Lepanto, seemed even to have lost the air of majesty which was so natural to him, for petty insults, perpetual crosses, seemed to have left their squalid traces upon his features. Nevertheless, the crusader was alive again, at the notes of warlike preparations which now resounded throughout the land.

On the 25th of January he issued a proclamation, couched in three languages—French, German, and Flemish. He declared in this document that he had not come to enslave the provinces, but to protect them. At the same time he meant to re-establish his Majesty’s authority, and the down-trod religion of Rome. He summoned all citizens and all soldiers throughout the provinces to join his banners, offering them pardon for their past offences, and protection against heretics and rebels.⁶ This declaration was the natural consequence of the exchange of defiance which had already taken place, and it was evident also that the angry manifesto was soon to be followed up by vigorous blows. The army of Don John already numbered more than twenty thousand well-seasoned and disciplined veterans.⁷ He was himself the most illustrious chief-tain in Europe. He was surrounded by lieutenants of the most brilliant reputation. Alexander of Parma, who had fought with distinction at Lepanto, was already recognised as possessing that signal military genius which was soon to stamp him as the first soldier of his age; while Mansfeld, Mondragon, Mendoza, and other distinguished officers, who had already won so much fame in the Netherlands, had now returned to the scene of their former achievements.⁸

On the other hand, the military affairs of the states were in confusion. Troops in nearly equal numbers to those of the royal army had been assembled, but the chief offices had been bestowed, by a mistaken policy, upon the great nobles. Already the jealousy specie illa majestateque fortunatissimi Imperatoris.”—Ibid.

¹ Proclamation in Bor, xl. 982, 983. Compare Cabrera, xii. 982.
² Bor, xl. 981. Hooff, xlii. 546.
³ Ibid., xlii. 546. Ibid. Strada, ix. 460.
⁴ “Attenuata non magis valeudinie quam
of Orange, entertained by their whole order, was painfully apparent. Notwithstanding the signal popularity which had made his appointment as Lieutenant-General inevitable, it was not easy for him always to vindicate his authority over captious and rival magnates. He had every wish to conciliate the affections of men whom he could not in his heart respect, and he went as far in gratifying their ambition as combined with his own dignity; perhaps farther than was consistent with the national interests. He was still willing to trust Lalain, of whose good affection to the country he felt sure. He had even been desirous of declining the office of Lieutenant-General, in order to avoid giving that noblemen the least occasion to think "that he would do him, or any other gentleman of the army, prejudice in any single matter in the world." This magnanimity had not been repaid with corresponding confidence. We have already seen that Lalain had been secretly in the interest of Anjou ever since his wife and himself had lost their hearts to Margaret of Navarre; yet the Count was chief commander of the infantry in the states' army then assembled. Robert Melun, Viscount de Gand, was commander of the cavalry, but he had recently been private envoy from Don John to the English Queen. Both these gentlemen, together with Pardieu De la Motte, general of the artillery, were voluntarily absent from the forces, under pretense of celebrating the wedding of the Seigneur De Borsel with the niece and heiress of the unfortunate Marquis of Bergen. The ghost of that ill-starred noble might almost have seemed to rise at the nuptial banquet of his heiress, to warn the traitors of the signal and bloody massacre which their treachery was soon to occasion. Philip Egmont, eldest

son of the famous Lamoral, was with the army, as was the Seigneur de Hèze, hero of the State Council's arrest, and the unstable Havré. But little was to be hoped from such leaders. Indeed, the affairs of the states continued to be in as perplexed a condition as that which honest John of Nassau had described some weeks before. "There were very few patriots," he had said, "but plenty of priests, with no lack of inexperienced lads—some looking for distinction, and others for pelf." The two armies had been mustered in the latter days of January. The Pope had issued a bull for the benefit of Don John, precisely similar to those formerly employed in the crusades against the Saracens. Authority was given him to levy contributions upon ecclesiastical property, while full absolution, at the hour of death, for all crimes committed during a whole lifetime, was proclaimed to those who should now join the standard of the Cross. There was at least no concealment. The Crescent-wearing Zealards had been taken at their word, and the whole nation of Netherlanders were formally banned as unbelievers. The forces of Don John were mustered at Marche in Luxemburg; those of the states in a plain within a few miles of Namur. Both armies were nearly equal in number, amounting to nearly twenty thousand each, including a force of two thousand cavalry on each side. It had been the original intention of the patriots to attack Don John in Namur. Having learned, however, that he purposed marching forth himself to offer battle, they decided to fall back upon Gemblours, which was nine miles distant from that city. On the last day of January, they accordingly broke up their camp at Saint Martius, before dawn, and marched towards Gemblours. The chief commander was De Gogins, an old

1 Strada, ix. 464.
2 Letter of Prince of Orange, Archives de la Maison d'Orange, vi. 279.
3 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, vi. 279.
4 Strada, ix. 463.
5 Ibid., ix. 465. Hoofd, xiii. 448.
6 Letter to the Landgrave W. de Hesse,—Archives de la Maison d'Orange, vi. 227.
7 See it in Bor, xii. 935.
8 Bor, xii. 935, sqq. Hoofd, xiii. 548.
9 All the authorities agree as to the estimates of the forces of the states. Hoofd, xiii. 547. Cabrera, xii. 969. Strada, ix. 464, et mult. al.
10 Bor, xii. 933. Hoofd, xiii. 547. Strada, ix. 464.
of Charles the Fifth, who had also fought at Saint Quintin. The states' army was disposed in three divisions. The van consisted of the infantry regiments of De Héze and Montigny, flanked by a protective body of light horse. The centre, composed of the Walloon and German regiments, with a few companies of French, and thirteen companies of Scotch and English under Colonel Balfour, was commanded by two most distinguished officers, Bosu and Champagny. The rear, which, of course, was the post of responsibility and honour, comprised all the heavy cavalry, and was commanded by Philip Egmont and Lumey de la Marché. The Marquis Havré and the General-in-chief, Goignies, rode to and fro, as the army proceeded, each attended by his staff. The troops of Don John broke up from before Namur with the earliest dawn, and marched in pursuit of the retiring foe. In front was nearly the whole of the cavalry—carabiniers, lanciers, and heavy dragoons. The centre, arranged in two squares, consisted chiefly of Spanish infantry, with a lesser number of Germans. In the rear came the Walloons, marching also in a square, and protecting the baggage and ammunition. Charles Mansfeld had been left behind with a reserved force, stationed on the Meuse; Ottavio Gonzaga commanded in front, Ernest Mansfeld brought up the rear; while in the centre rode Don John himself, attended by the Prince of Parma. Over his head streamed the crucifix-emblazoned banner, with its memorable inscription—\textit{In hoc signo vici Tureos, in hoc haereticos vincam}. Small detachments of cavalry had been sent forward, under Olivera and Accota, to scour the roads and forests, and to disturb all ambuscades which might have been prepared. From some stragglers captured by these officers, the plans of the retiring generals were learned. The winter's day was not far advanced, when the rearward columns of the states' army were descried in the distance. Don John, making a selection of some six hundred cavalry, all picked men, with a thousand infantry, divided the whole into two bodies, which he placed under command of Gonzaga, and the famous old Christopher Mondragon. These officers received orders to hang on the rear of the enemy, to harass him, and to do him all possible damage consistent with the possibility of avoiding a general engagement, until the main army under Parma and Don John should arrive. The orders were at first strictly obeyed. As the skirmishing grew hotter, however, Gonzaga observed that a spirited cavalry officer, named Perotti, had already advanced, with a handful of men, much further within the reach of the hostile forces than was deemed expedient. He sent hastily to recall the too eager chieftain. The order, delivered in a tone more peremptory than agreeable, was flatly disobeyed. "Tell Ottavio Gonzaga," said Perotti, "that I never yet turned my back on the enemy, nor shall I now begin. Moreover, were I ever so much inclined to do so, retreat is impossible." The retiring army was then proceeding along the borders of a deep ravine, filled with mire and water, and as broad and more dangerous than a river. In the midst of the skirmishing, Alexander of Parma rode up to reconnoitre. He saw at once that the columns of the enemy were marching unstably to avoid being precipitated into this creek. He observed the waving of their spears, the general confusion of their ranks, and was quick to take advantage of the fortunate moment. Pointing out to the officers about him the opportunity thus offered of attacking the retiring army unawares in flank, he assembled, with great rapidity, the foremost companies of cavalry already detached from the main body. Mounting a fresh and

1 Bor, xii. 925, 926. Strada, ix. 464. Hooff, xiii. 544.
2 Bor, xii. 923. Hooff, xiii. 549. Strada, ix. 465.
3 Strada, ix. 465, 466. Hooff, xiii. 549. Bor, xii. 938, sqq.
4 Strada, ix. 466.
5 Strada, ubi sup. Bor, xii. 924. Hooff, xiii. 498.
powerful horse, which Camillo Monte held in readiness for him, he signified his intention of dashing through the dangerous ravine, and dealing a stroke where it was least expected. "Tell Don John of Austria," he cried to an officer whom he sent back to the Commander-in-chief, "that Alexander of Parma has plunged into the abyss, to perish there, or to come forth again victorious."

The sudden thought was executed with lightning-like celerity. In an instant the bold rider was already struggling through the dangerous swamp; in another, his powerful charger had carried him across. Halting for a few minutes, lance in rest, till his troops had also forced their passage, gained the level ground unperceived, and sufficiently breasted their horses, he drew up his little force in a compact column. Then, with a few words of encouragement, he launched them at the foe. The violent and entirely unexpected shock was even more successful than the Prince had anticipated. The hostile cavalry reeled and fell into hopeless confusion, Egmont in vain striving to rally them to resistance. That name had lost its magic. Gobineau also attempted, without success, to restore order among the panic-struck ranks. The sudden conception of Parma, executed as suddenly and in so brilliant a manner, had been decisive. Assaulted in flank and rear at the same moment, and already in temporary confusion, the cavalry of the enemy turned their backs and fled.

2 "Vincere ad virtute, la lampada puto," etc., etc. Colonna, vii. 188.
3 Strada, Hood, Eor, ubi supra.—Compare Colonna, vii. 568, 569; Motroni, viii. 133; Hucton Ann. hic. 273, 274; Tassus, iv. 293, 295, 354, etc. alt.
4 "Pur vincitori non mori quasi soluto obum," says Livonvoglio. "pochi restarono i conti" (Gueria di Gandia, v. 296). He however has the modesty to claim but three thousand killed on the Spanish side, with a large number of prisoners.
5 "Flagellis & sorcentis equitibus (tot summa incepserant ut non habie ad desconsolatum ventum), pedibus marti-domino domos, partum occé, partum captiv. ac reliquis exercitii non minus certo bellatorum multitudine Flagellato spiritu (cujus dissipatis, etc. Regnis Romanis et proligatis);

The centre of the states' army thus left exposed, was now warmed attacked by Parma. It had, moreover, been already thrown into disorder by the retreat of its own horse, as they charged through them in rapid and disgraceful panic. The whole army broke to pieces at once, and so great was the trepidation, that the conquered troops had hardly courage to run away. They were utterly incapable of combat. Not a blow was struck by the fugitives. Hardly a man in the Spanish ranks was wounded; while, in the course of an hour and a half, the whole force of the enemy was exterminated. It is impossible, as with the exact numbers slain. Some accounts spoke of ten thousand killed, or captive, with absolutely no loss on the royal side. Moreover, this slaughter was effected, not by the army under Don John, but by so small a fragment of it, that some historians have even set down the whole number of royalists engaged at the commencement of the action, at six hundred, increased afterwards to twelve hundred. By this calculation, each Spaniard engaged must have killed ten enemies with his own hand; and that within an hour and a half's space.

Other historians more wisely omit the exact statistics of the massacre, and allow that a very few—ten or eleven, at most—were slain within the Spanish ranks. This, however, is the utmost that is claimed by the Netherland historians, and it is, at any rate, certain that the whole states' army was annihilated. Rarely had a more brilliant victory been achieved."

—Strada, iv. 468. Rather too warm work even for the 51st of January.

According to Tassus (iv. 294), seven thousand of the states' army were killed or captured (the prisoners afterwards having been drowned), while only ten royalists were killed or wounded. According to Harssens (iii. 274), eight thousand of the states' army were slain by two thousand royalist troops (being four men a-piece for each royalist). He does not state that any of the King's soldiers were slain or even wounded. According to Cabrera (xii. 968), there were more than seven thousand of the Netherland army killed or taken (the number of the prisoners being nowhere stated at more than six hundred, all of whom were afterwards drowned or hanged) while of the Spanish troops two were killed and five wounded. According to Eor, thirty
Military Superiority of the Spaniards. 299

Gallant exploit was performed by a handful of cavalry. To the distinguished Alexander of Parma, who improvised so striking and complete a victory out of a fortuitous circumstance, belonged the whole credit of the day, for his quick eye detected a passing weakness of the enemy, and turned it to terrible account with the promptness which comes from genius alone. A whole army was overthrown. Everything belonging to the enemy fell into the hands of the Spaniards. Thirty-four standards, many field-pieces, much camp equipage, and ammunition, besides some seven or eight thousand dead bodies, and six hundred living prisoners, were the spoils of that winter's day. 1 Of the captives, some were soon afterwards hurled off the bridge at Namur, and drowned like dogs in the Meuse, 2 while the rest were all hanged, 3 none escaping with life. Don John's clemency was not superior to that of his sanguinary predecessors.

And so another proof was added—if proofs were still necessary—of Spanish prowess. The Netherlands may be pardoned if their foes seemed to them supernatural, and almost invulnerable. How else could these enormous successes be accounted for? How else could thousands fall before the Spanish swords, while hardly a single Spanish corpse told of effectual resistance? At Jemmingen, Alva had lost seven soldiers, and slain seven thousand; in the Antwerp Fury, two hundred Spaniards, at most, had fallen, while eight thousand burghers and states' troops had been butchered; and now at Gemblours, six, seven, eight, ten—Heaven knew how many—thousand had been exterminated, and hardly a single Spaniard had been slain! Undoubtedly, the first reason for this result was the superiority of the Spanish soldiers. They were the boldest, the best disciplined, the most experienced in the world. Their audacity, promptness, and ferocity made them almost invincible. In this particular action, at least half the army of Don John was composed of Spanish or Spanish-Italian veterans. Moreover, they were commanded by the most renowned captains of the age—by Don John himself, and Alexander of Parma, sustained by such veterans as Mondragon, the hero of the memorable submarine expeditions; Mendoza, the accomplished cavalry officer, diplomatist, and historian; and Mansfeld, of whom Don John had himself written to the King that his Majesty had not another officer of such account in all the Netherlands. 4 Such officers as these, besides Gonzaga, Camillo Monte, Mucio Pagano, at the head of such troops as fought that day under the banner of the Cross, might go far in accounting for this last and most tremendous victory of the Inquisition. On the other hand, although Bossu and Champagny were with the states' army, yet their hearts were hardly with the cause. Both had long

---

2. Bor, xii. 384. Hoofd, xiii. 555. The latter historian states that six hundred prisoners were hanged at Namur. Cabrera, on the contrary, asserts that Don John liberated the Scotch prisoners: "a Seiscientos Escoceses presos dio libertad Don Juan, mostrando su clemencia." To this very gratuitous assertion it is a sufficient answer that Tassis, who was on the spot, a leading privy councilor of Don John, expressly states that of the captives the greater part, who were Scotch, were thrown off Namur bridge into the river, "Ac capti, quorum magna pars, qui Schoti erant, ex ponte Namurici in fluvium postea precipitati," iv. 294.—Compare Hasei Ann., iii. 274, where it is stated that all the prisoners were hanged—"extemplo suspendo necantur."
3. "Y que no tuvi otro hombre de su estado."—Letter of Don John to Philip, Discours Sommier, p. 87, appendix.
been loyal, and had earned many laurels against the rebels, while Champagny was still devoutly a Papist, and wavered painfully between his hatred to heresy and to Spain. Egmont and De Hesse were raw, unpractised lads, in whom genius did not come to supply the place of experience. The Commander, De Goignies, was a veteran, but a veteran who had never gained much glory, and the chiefs of the cavalry, infantry, and artillery, were absent at the Brussels wedding. The news of this additional massacre inflicted upon a nation, for which Bergien and Montigny had laid down their lives, was the nuptial benediction for Bergien’s heiress; for it was to the chief wedding guests upon that occasion that the disaster was justly attributed. The rank and file of the states’ army were mainly mercenaries, with whom the hope of plunder was the prevailing motive; the chief commanders were absent; while those officers who were with the troops were neither heartily friendly to their own flag, nor sufficiently experienced to make it respected.

CHAPTER V.

Towns taken by Don John.—Wrath excited against the aristocratic party by the recent defeat—Attempts upon Amsterdam—“Satisfaction” of Amsterdam and its effects—De Selles sent with royal letters from Spain—Treaty offered by Phillip—Proclamation of Don John—Correspondence between De Selles and the States-General—Between the King and the Governor-General—New forces raised by the States—St. Aldegonda at the Disturbances in Middelburg—The Prince’s letter on the subject of the Anabaptists of Middelburg—The two armies inactive—De la Noue—Action at Rheims—John Casimir—Pervasive politics of Queen Elizabeth—Alençon in the Netherlands—Portrait of the Duke—Orange’s position in regard to him—Avowed and supposed policy of the French court—Anger of Elizabeth—Terms arranged between Alençon and the Estates—Renewed negotiations with Don John—Severe terms offered him—Interview of the English envoys with the Governor—Despondency of Don John—Orange’s attempts to enforce a religious peace—His isolation in sentiment—The discontented party—Count John Governor of Gelderland—Proposed form of religious peace—Proclamation to that effect by Orange. In Antwerp—A petition in favour of the Roman Church presented by Champagny and other Catholic nobles to the States-General—Consequent commotion in Brussels—Champagny and others imprisoned—Indolence and poverty of the two armies—Illness and melancholy of Don John—His letters to Doria, to Mendoza, and to the King.—Death of Don John.—Suspicion of poison—Pompous burial—Removal of his body to Spain.—Concluding remarks upon his character.

Don John having thus vindicated his own military fame and the amazing superiority of the Spanish arms, followed up his victory by the rapid reduction of many towns of second-rate importance. Louvain, Jodoigne, Tirlemont, Aerschot, Bouvignes, Sichem, Nivelles, Rouez, Soignies, Binc, Beaumont, Walcourt, Mauzeguics, and Chimay, either submitted to their conqueror, or were taken after short sieges. The usual atrocities were inflicted upon the unfortunate inhabitants of towns where resistance was attempted. The commandant of Sichem was hanged out of his own window, along with several chiefburgers and officers, while the garrison was put to the sword, and the bodies cast into the Demer. The only crime committed by these unhappines was to have ventured a blow or two in behalf of the firesides which they were employed to protect.

In Brussels, on the other hand, there was less consternation excited by these events than boundless rage against the aristocratic party; for the defeat of Gemblours was attributed, with justice, to the intrigues and the incapacity of the Catholic magistrates. It was with difficulty that Orange,

1 Bor, xii. 934, sqq. Hooff, xiii. 561. Metheren, viii. 33. Strada, ix. 473. “Alexandus caesus interpectra lamentat,” says the professed panegyrist of the Parcae family—“ex ipsa arce decem palam suspensa, reliquas (centum circiter annos antiquae) noctis jagulatae in subjectum annos projicet jubet.”
Amsterdam.

301

Going about by night from house to house, from street to street, succeeded in calming the indignation of the people, and in preventing them from sweeping in a mass to the residence of the leading nobles, in order to inflict summary vengeance on the traitors. All looked to the Prince as their only saviour, not a thought nor a word being wasted upon Matthias. Not a voice was raised in the assembly to vindicate the secret proceedings of the Catholic party, nor to oppose the measures which the Prince might suggest. The terrible disaster had taught the necessity of union. All parties heartily joined in the necessary steps to place the capital in a state of complete defence, and to assemble forthwith with new troops to take the place of the army just annihilated. The victor gained nothing by his victory, in comparison with the profit acquired by the states through their common misfortune. Nor were all the towns which had recently fallen into the hands of Don John at all comparable in importance to the city of Amsterdam, which now, by a most timely arrangement, furnished a rich compensation to the national party for the disaster of Gemblours.

Since the conclusion of the Ghent Pacification, it had been the most earnest wish of the Prince, and of Holland and Zealand, to recover possession of this most important city. The wish was naturally shared by every true patriot in the states-general. It had, however, been extremely difficult to arrange the terms of the "Satisfaction." Every fresh attempt at an amicable compromise was wrecked upon the obstinate bigotry of the leading civic authorities. They would make no agreement to accept the authority of Orange, except, as Saint Aldegonde expressed himself, upon terms which would enable them "to govern their governor." The influence of the monks, who were resident in large numbers within the city, and of the magistrates, who were all stanch Catholics, had been hitherto sufficient to outweigh the efforts made by the large masses of the Reformed religionists composing the bulk of the population. It was, however, impossible to allow Amsterdam to remain in this isolated and hostile attitude to the rest of Holland. The Prince, having promised to use no coercion, and loyally adhering to his pledge, had only with extreme difficulty restrained the violence of the Hollanders and Zealanders, who were determined, by fair means or foul, to restore the capital city to its natural place within his stadholderate. He had been obliged, on various occasions, particularly on the 21st of October of the preceding year, to address a most decided and peremptory letter to the estates of Holland and Zealand, forbidding the employment of hostile measures against Amsterdam. His commands had been reluctantly, partially, and only temporarily obeyed. The states desisted from their scheme of reducing the city by famine, but they did not the less encourage the secret and unofficial expeditions which were daily set on foot to accomplish the annexation by a sudden enterprise.

Late in November, a desperate attempt had been made by Colonel Helling, in conjunction with Governor Sonoy, to carry the city by surprise. The force which the adventurer collected for the purpose was inadequate, and his plans were unskilfully arranged. He was himself slain in the streets, at the very commencement of the action; whereupon, in the quaint language of the contemporary chronicler, "the hearts of his soldiers sank in their shoes," and they evacuated the city with much greater rapidity than they had entered it. The Prince was indignant at these violent measures,

1 Reidani Ann., ii. 22. "Ne quidem ha-

nisse rationem Archiducis Matthiae sed

Orangianum populum subtraxit pericu-


Bor. xi. 536. Laguer ad Eyd., p. 314,
317, 329.

2 Archives et Correspondance, vi. 117.

3 Bor. xi. 897, 898.

4 Ibid., xi. 906-908.

5 "En het hert sonck de soldaaden in de

schoen; so men seid," etc.—Bor. xi. 999.

Hooff, xii. 537, 538.
which retarded rather than advanced the desired consummation. At the same time it was an evil of immense magnitude—this anomalous condition of his capital. Ceaseless schemes were concerted by the municipal and clerical conspirators within its walls, and various attempts were known, at different times, to have been contemplated by Don John, to inflict a home-thrust upon the provinces of Holland and Zealand at the most vulnerable and vital point. The "Satisfaction" accepted by Utrecht, in the autumn of 1577, had, however, paved the way for the recovery of Amsterdam; so that upon February the 8th, 1578, certain deputies from Utrecht succeeded at last in arranging terms, which were accepted by the sister city. The basis of the treaty was, as usual, the nominal supremacy of the Catholic religion, with toleration for the Reformed worship. The necessary effect would be, as in Harlem, Utrecht, and other places, to establish the new religion upon an entire equality with the old. It was arranged that no congregations were to be disturbed in their religious exercises in the places respectively assigned to them. Those of the Reformed faith were to celebrate their worship without the walls. They were, however, to enjoy the right of burying their dead within these precincts, and it is singular how much importance was attached at that day to a custom, at which the common sentiment and the common sense of modern times revolt. "To bury our dead within our own cities is a right hardly to be denied to a dog," said the Prince of Orange; and accordingly this right was amply secured by the new Satisfaction of Amsterdam. It was, however, stipulated that the funerals should be modest, and attended by no more than twenty-four persons at once. The treaty was hailed with boundless joy in Holland and Zealand, while countless benedictions were invoked upon the "blessed peace-makers," as the Utrecht deputies walked through the streets of Amsterdam. There is no doubt that the triumph thus achieved by the national party far counterbalanced the Governor-General's victory at Gemblours.

Meanwhile, the Seigneur De Selles, brother of the deceased Noircarmes, had arrived from Spain. He was the special bearer of a letter from the King to the states-general, written in reply to their communications of the 24th of August and 8th of September of the previous year. The tone of the royal despatch was very affectionate, the substance such as entirely to justify the whole policy of Orange. It was obvious that the penetrating and steadfast statesman had been correct in refusing to be moved to the right or the left by the specious language of Philip's former letters, or by the apparent frankness of Don John. No doubt the Governor had been sincere in his desire for peace, but the Prince knew very well his incapacity to confer that blessing. The Prince knew—what no man else appeared fully to comprehend at that epoch—that the mortal combat between the Inquisition and the Reformation was already fully engaged. The great battle between Divine reason and right Divine, on which the interests of unborn generations were hanging, was to be fought out, before the eyes of all Christendom, on the plain of the Netherlands.

Orange was willing to lay down his arms if he could receive security for the Reformed worship. He had no desire to exterminate the ancient religion, but he meant also to protect the new against extermination. Such security, he felt, would never be granted, and he had therefore resolutely refused to hearken to Don John, for he was sure that peace with him was impossible. The letters now produced by De Selles confirmed his positions

---

1 Bor. xi. 893-896.
2 Bor. xi. 810.—"—die men schieren honden niet en soude konnen onteggenn." etc., etc.
3 Satisfactie, in Bor. xii, 924, 925, Art. 1; also Hooff, xiii. 554-555.
4 The twenty-four articles of the "Satisfaction" are given at length in Bor. xi. 924-926.
5 Bor. xii. 926.
6 Ibid., xii. 938. Hooff, xiii. 553.
7 See the letter in Bor. xii. 938.
completely. The King said not a word concerning the appointment of a new governor-general, but boldly insisted upon the necessity of maintaining the two cardinal points—his royal supremacy, and the Catholic religion upon the basis adopted by his father, the Emperor Charles the Fifth. 1

This was the whole substance of his communication: the supremacy of royalty and of papacy as in the time of Charles the Fifth. These cabalistic words were repeated twice in the brief letter to the estates. They were repeated five times in the instructions furnished by his Majesty to De Selles. 2 The letter and the instructions, indeed, contained nothing else. Two simples were offered for the cure of the body politic, racked by the fever and convulsion of ten horrible years—two simples which the patient could hardly be so unreasonable as to reject—unlimited despotism and religious persecution. The whole matter lay in a nut-shell, but it was a nut-shell which enclosed the flaming edicts of Charles the Fifth, with their scaffolds, gibbets, racks, and funeral piles. The Prince and the states-general spurned such pacific overtures, and preferred rather to gird themselves for the combat.

That there might be no mistake about the matter, Don John, immediately after receiving the letter, issued a proclamation to enforce the King’s command. He mentioned it as an acknowledged fact that the states-general had long ago sworn the maintenance of the two points of royal and Catholic supremacy, according to the practice under the Emperor Charles. 3 The states instantly published an indignant rejoinder, affirming the indisputable truth, that they had sworn to the maintenance of the Ghent Pacification, and proclaiming the assertion of Don John an infamous falsehood. It was an outrage upon common sense, they said, that the Ghent treaty could be tortured into sanctioning the placards and the Inquisition, evils which that sacred instrument had been expressly intended to crush. 4

A letter was then formally addressed to his Majesty, in the name of the Archduke Matthias and of the estates, demanding the recall of Don John and the maintenance of the Ghent Pacification. 5 De Selles, in reply, sent a brief, deprecatory paper, enclosing a note from Don John, which the envoy acknowledged might seem somewhat harsh in its expressions. The letter contained, indeed, a sufficiently fierce and peremptory summons to the states to obey the King’s commands with regard to the system of Charles the Fifth, according to their previous agreement, together with a violent declaration of the Governor’s displeasure that they had dared to solicit the aid of foreign princes. 6 On the 18th of February came a proposition from De Selles, that the Prince of Orange should place himself in the hands of Don John, while the Prince of Parma, alone and without arms, would come before the assembly, to negotiate with them upon these matters. 7 The reply returned by the states-general to this absurd suggestion expressed their regret that the son of the Duchess Margaret should have taken part with the enemy of the Netherlanders, complained of the bull by which the Pope had invited war against them as if they had been Saracens, repeated their most unanswerable argument—that the Ghent Pacification had established a system directly the reverse of that which existed under Charles the Fifth—and affirmed their resolution never more to submit to Spanish armies, executioners, edicts, or inquisitions, and never more to return to the principles of the Emperor and of Alva. 8 To this diplomatic correspondence succeeded a war of words and of pamphlets, some of them very inflammatory and very eloquent. Meantime, the preparations for active hostilities were pro-

---

1 Letter of the King, December 18, 1577, in Bor, xii. 988.
2 The instructions are likewise in Bor, xii. 990.
3 Bor, xii. 940, 941.
4 In Bor, xii. 942.
5 Proclamation, or Letters Patent, in Bor, xii. 940.
6 Bor, xii. 980, 940.
7 In Bor, xii. 940.
8 Letter of states-general, Feb. 28, 1579, in Bor, xii. 942, sqq.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic. [1578.]

ceeding daily. The Prince of Orange, through his envoys in England, had arranged for subsidies in the coming campaign, and for troops which were to be led to the Netherlands, under Duke Casimir of the palatinate. He sent commissioners through the provinces to raise the respective contributions agreed upon, besides an extraordinary quota of four hundred thousand guilders monthly. He also negotiated a loan of a hundred and twenty thousand guilders from the citizens of Antwerp. Many new taxes were imposed by his direction, both upon income and upon consumption. By his advice, however, and with the consent of the states-general, the provinces of Holland and Zeeland held no community of burthens with the other provinces, but of their own free will contributed more than the sums for which they would have been assessed. Mr. Leyton, who was about to return from his unsuccessful mission from Elizabeth to Don John, was requested by the states-general to convey to her Majesty a faithful report of the recent correspondence, and especially of the language held by the Governor-General. He was also urged to use his influence with the Queen, to the end that her promises of assistance might be speedily fulfilled.1

Troops were rapidly enrolled, and again, by the same honest but mistaken policy, the chief offices were conferred upon the great nobles—Aerschot, Chamagny, Bossu, Egmont, Lalain, the Viscount of Ghent, Baron de Ville, and many others, most of whom were to desert the cause in the hour of its need. On the other hand, Don John was proceeding with his military preparations upon an extensive scale. The King had recently furnished him with one million nine hundred thousand dollars, and had promised to provide him with two hundred thousand more, monthly. With these funds his Majesty estimated that an army of thirty thousand foot, sixteen thousand cavalry, and thirty pieces of artillery, could be levied and kept on foot. If more remittances should prove to be necessary, it was promised that they should be forthcoming.2

This was the result of many earnest remonstrances made by the Governor concerning the dilatory policy of the King. Wearied by being constantly ordered "to blow hot and cold with the same breath," he had insisted that his Majesty should select the hot or the cold, and furnish him with the means of enforcing the choice. For himself, Don John assured his brother that the hottest measures were most to his taste, and most suitable to the occasion. Fire and sword could alone save the royal authority, for all the provinces had "abandoned themselves, body and soul, to the greatest heretic and tyrant that prince ever had for vassal."3 Unceasing had been the complaints and entreaties of the Captain-General, called forth by the apathy or irresolution of Philip. It was only by assuring him that the Netherlands actually belonged to Orange, that the monarch could be aroused. "His they are, and none other's,"4 said the Governor, dolefully. The King had accordingly sent back De Billy, Don John's envoy, with decided injunctions to use force and energy to put down the revolt at once, and with an intimation that funds might be thereupon more regularly depended upon, as the Indian fleets were expected in July. Philip also advised his brother to employ a portion of his money in purchasing the governors and principal persons who controlled the cities and other strong places belonging to the states.5

Meantime, Don John thundered ya de todo punto a la obediencia y sucesión del mayor heresía y tiniebra que truvo nunca principal por vasallo."—Ibid. 5 "Sola el P. de Oruasses, que suyas són y no de otro," etc.—Ibid. 6 Letter of Don John, MS. Bib. de Bourg. —Compare Cabrera, xli. 978.

1 Dor, xii. 948, 949. 2 Letter of Philip, in Cabrera, xii. 373. 3 "Sin encargar mias que solo frio y caliento, porque no lo comprota el negocio, sino que bien lo uno o lo otro," etc., etc.—Carta del S. D. Juan al Rey, mano propia, MS. Bib. de Bourg., No. xvi. 355. 4 "Estas gentes sean dada y entregado
forth a manifesto which had been recently prepared in Madrid, by which the estates, both general and particular, were ordered forthwith to separate, and forbidden to assemble again, except by special licence. All commissions, civil or military, granted by states’ authority, were moreover annulled, together with a general prohibition of any act of obedience to such functionaries, and of contribution to any imposts which might be levied by their authority. Such thunder were now comparatively harmless, for the states had taken their course, and were busily engaged, both at home and abroad, in arming for the conflict. Saint Aldegonde was deputed to attend the Imperial diet, then in session at Worms, where he delivered an oration, which was very celebrated in its day as a composition, but which can hardly be said to have produced much practical effect. The current was setting hard in Germany against the Reformed religion and against the Netherland cause, the Augsburg Confessionists showing hardly more sympathy with Dutch Calvinists than with Spanish Papists.

Envoys from Don John also attended the diet, and requested Saint Aldegonde to furnish them with a copy of his oration. This he declined to do. While in Germany, Saint Aldegonde was informed by John Casimir that Duke Charles of Sweden had been solicited to furnish certain ships of war for a contemplated operation against Amsterdam. The Duke had himself given information of this plot to the Prince Palatine. It was therefore natural that Saint Aldegonde should forthwith despatch the intelligence to his friends in the Netherlands, warning them of the dangers still to be apprehended from the machinations of the Catholic agents and functionaries in Amsterdam; for although the Reformation had made rapid progress in that important city since the conclusion of the Satisfaction, yet the magistracy remained Catholic.

William Bardez, son of a former high-sheriff, a warm partisan of Orange and of the “religion,” had already determined to overthrow that magistracy and to expel the friars who infested the city. The recent information despatched by Saint Aldegonde confirmed him in his purpose. There had been much wrangling between the Popish functionaries and those of the Reformed religion concerning the constitution of the burgher guard. The Calvinists could feel no security for their own lives, or the repose of the commonwealth of Holland, unless they were themselves allowed a full participation in the government of those important bands. They were, moreover, dissatisfied with the assignment which had been made of the churchyards to the members of their communion. These causes of discord had maintained a general irritation among the body of the inhabitants, and were now used as pretexts by Bardez for his design. He knew the city to be ripe for the overthrow of the magistracy, and he had arranged with Governor Sonoy to be furnished with a sufficient number of well-tried soldiers, who were to be concealed in the houses of the confederates. A large number of citizens were also ready to appear at his bidding with arms in their hands.

On the 24th of May, he wrote to Sonoy, begging him to hold himself in readiness, as all was prepared within the city. At the same time, he requested the governor to send him forthwith a “morion and a buckler of proof,” for he intended to see the matter fairly through. Sonoy answered encouragingly, and sent him the armour, as directed. On the 28th of May, Bardez, with four confederates, went to the council-room, to remonstrate with the senate concerning the grievances which had been so often discussed. At about mid-day, one of the confederates, upon leaving the council-room, stepped out for a mo-
ment upon the balcony, which looked towards the public square. Standing there for a moment, he gravely removed his hat, and then as gravely replaced it upon his head. This was a preconcerted signal. At the next instant a sailor was seen to rush across the square, waving a flag in both hands. "All ye who love the Prince of Orange, take heart and follow me!" he shouted. In a moment the square was alive. Soldiers and armed citizens suddenly sprang forth, as if from the bowels of the earth. Bardez led a strong force directly into the council-chamber, and arrested every one of the astonished magistrates. At the same time, his confederates had severed the town and taken every friar in the city into custody. Monks and senators were then marched solemnly down towards the quay, where a vessel was in readiness to receive them. "To the gallows with them—to the gallows with them!" shouted the populace, as they passed along. "To the gibbet, whither they have brought many a good fellow before his time!" Such were the openly expressed desires of their fellow-citizens, as these dignitaries and holy men proceeded to what they believed their doom. Although treated respectfully by those who guarded them, they were filled with trepidation, for they believed the exhortations of the populace the harbingers of their fate. As they entered the vessel, they felt convinced that a watery death had been substituted for the gibbet. Poor old Heinrich Dirckzoon, ex-burgomaster, pathetically rejected a couple of clean shirts which his careful wife had sent him by the hands of the housemaid. "Take them away; take them home again," said the rueful burgomaster; "I shall never need clean shirts again in this world." He entertained no doubt that it was the intention of his captors to scuttle the vessel as soon as they had put a little out to sea, and so to leave them to their fate. No such tragic end was contemplated, however, and, in fact, never was a complete municipal revolution accomplished in so good-natured and jocose a manner. The Catholic magistrates and friars escaped with their fright. They were simply turned out of town, and forbidden, for their lives, ever to come back again. After the vessel had proceeded a little distance from the city, they were all landed high and dry upon a dyke, and so left unharmful within the open country.

A new board of magistrates, of which stout William Bardez was one, was soon appointed; the trainbands were reorganised, and the churches thrown open to the Reformed worship—to the exclusion, at first, of the Catholics. This was certainly contrary to the Ghent treaty, and to the recent Satisfaction; it was also highly repugnant to the opinions of Orange. After a short time, accordingly, the Catholics were again allowed access to the churches, but the tables had now been turned for ever in the capital of Holland, and the Reformation was an established fact throughout that little province.

Similar events occurring upon the following day at Harlem, accompanied with some bloodshed—for which, however, the perpetrator was punished with death—opened the great church of that city to the Reformed congregations, and closed them for a time to the Catholics.

Thus, the cause of the new religion was triumphant in Holland and Zealand, while it was advancing with rapid strides through the other provinces. Public preaching was of daily occurrence everywhere. On a single Sunday, fifteen different ministers of the Reformed religion preached in different places in Antwerp. "Do you think this can be put down?" said Orange to the remonstrating burgomaster of that city. "'Tis for you to repress it," said the functionary. "I grant your Highness full power to do so." "And do

---

1 Hoofd, xiii. 571. Wagenaer, vii. 206.
2 Wagenaer, vii. 207.
3 Hoofd, xiii. 571. Bor, xii. 953. Wagenaer, vii. 207.
5 Bor, Hoofd, ubi sup.
1578.]

A Patriot Victory. 307

you think," replied the Prince, "that I can do at this late moment, what the Duke of Alva was unable to accomplish in the very plentitude of his power?" At the same time, the Prince of Orange was more than ever disposed to rebuke his own Church for practising persecution in her turn. Again he lifted his commanding voice in behalf of the Anabaptists of Middelburg. He reminded the magistrates of that city that these peaceful burghers were always perfectly willing to bear their part in all the common burthens, that their word was as good as their oath, and that as to the matter of military service, although their principles forbade them to bear arms, they had ever been ready to provide and pay for substitutes. "We declare to you, therefore," said he, "that you have no right to trouble yourselves with any man's conscience, so long as nothing is done to cause private harm or public scandal. We therefore expressly ordain that you desist from molesting these Baptists, from offering hindrance to their handicraft and daily trade, by which they can earn bread for their wives and children, and that you permit them henceforth to open their shops and to do their work, according to the custom of former days. Beware, therefore, of disobedience and of resistance to the ordinance which we now establish." 2

Meantime, the armies on both sides had been assembled, and had been moving towards each other. Don John was at the head of nearly thirty thousand troops, including a large proportion of Spanish and Italian veterans. 3 The states' army hardly numbered eighteen thousand foot and two thousand cavalry, under the famous François de la Noue, surnamed Bras de Fer, who had been recently appointed Maréchal de Camp, and, under Count Bossu, commander-in-chief. 4 The muster-place of the provincial forces was in the plains between Herentals and Lier. At this point they expected to be reinforced by Duke Casimir, who had been, since the early part of the summer, in the country of Zutphen, but who was still remaining there ingloriously and inactive, until he could be furnished with the requisite advance-money to his troops. 5

Don John was determined, if possible, to defeat the states' army, before Duke Casimir, with his twelve thousand Germans, should effect his juncture with Bossu. The Governor therefore crossed the Demer, near Aerschot, towards the end of July, and offered battle, day, after day, to the enemy. A series of indecisive skirmishes was the result, in the last of which, near Rijnmans, on the first day of August, the royalists were worsted and obliged to retire, after a desultory action of nearly eight hours, leaving a thousand dead upon the field. 6 Their offer of "double or quits," the following morning, was steadily refused by Bossu, who, secure within his intrenchments, was not to be induced at that moment to encounter the chances of a general engagement. For this he was severely blamed by the more violent of the national party. 7 His patriotism, which was of such recent origin, was vehemently suspected; and his death, which occurred not long afterwards, was supposed to have alone prevented

allow twenty killed and fifty wounded.—Compare Hooff, ubi sup. Not the least picturesque feature in this celebrated action is one reported by Strada. The heat of the day was so oppressive that a band of Scotch veterans under Robert Stuart thought it more comfortable to strip themselves to their shirts; and, at last, as the weather and the skirmish grew hotter, to lay aside even those integuments, and to fight all day long, in the costume of ancient Picts.—Strada, x. 497. The date of the battle in Strada, and in Bentivoglio, x. 213, is the first of August. The same date is given by Hooff. Bor says 31st of July.

2 This letter of the Prince to the Calvinist authorities of Middelburg is given by Bor, xii. 998, and by Brandt, Hist. der Ref., i. 669, 610.
3 Bor, xii. 987. Meteren, viii. 140. Strada, Bentivoglio, and others allow only sixteen or seventeen thousand men.—Compare Hooff, xiii. 581.
4 Hooff, xiii. 581.
5 Ibid., xiii. 581. Bor, xii. 987. Strada, x. 497.
6 Bor, xii. 987. Meteren, viii. 140. Hooff, xiii. 581.—The Spaniards, however, only
his deserting the states to fight again under Spanish colours. These suspicions were probably unjust. Bossu’s truth of character had been as universally recognised as was his signal bravery. If he refused upon this occasion a general battle, those who reflected upon the usual results to the patriot banner of such engagements, might confess, perhaps, that one disaster the more had been avoided. Don John, finding it impossible to accomplish his purpose, and to achieve another Gemblours victory, fell back again to the neighbourhood of Namur.\footnote{1}

The states’ forces remained waiting for the long-promised succour of John Casimir. It was the 29th of August, however, before the Duke led his twelve thousand men to the neighbourhood of Mechlin, where Bossu was encamped.\footnote{2} This young prince possessed neither the ability nor the generosity which were requisite for the heroic part which he was ambitious to perform in the Netherland drama. He was inspired by a vague idea of personal aggrandisement, although he professed at the same time the utmost deference to William of Orange. He expressed the hope that he and the Prince “should be but two heads under one hat;”\footnote{3} but he would have done well to ask himself whether his own contribution to this partnership of brains would very much enrich the silent statesman. Orange himself regarded him with respectful contempt, and considered his interference with Netherland matters but as an additional element of mischief. The Duke’s right hand man, however, Peter Peuterich, the “equestrian doctor”—as Sir Philip Sydney called him—equally skilful with the sword as with the pen, had succeeded, while on a mission to England, in acquiring the Queen’s favour for his master.\footnote{4} To Casimir, therefore, had been entrusted the command of the levies, and the principal expenditure of the subsidies which she had placed at the disposition of the states. Upon Casimir she relied, as a counterweight to the Duke of Alençon, who, as she knew, had already entered the provinces at the secret solicitation of a large faction among the nobles. She had as much confidence as ever in Orange, but she imagined herself to be strengthening his cause by providing him with such a lieutenant. Casimir’s immediate friends had but little respect for his abilities. His father-in-law, Augustus of Saxony, did not approve his expedition. The Landgrave William, to whom he wrote for counsel, answered, in his quaint manner, that it was always difficult for one friend to advise another in three matters—to wit, in taking a wife, going to sea, and going to war; but that, nevertheless, despite the ancient proverb, he would assume the responsibility of warning Casimir not to plunge into what he was pleased to call the “confusum chaos of Netherland politics.” The Duke felt no inclination, however, to take the advice which he had solicited. He had been stung by the sarcasm which Alva had once uttered, that the German potentates carried plenty of lions, dragons, eagles, and griffins on their shields; but that these ferocious animals were not given to biting or scratching. He was therefore disposed, once for all, to shew that the teeth and claws of German princes could still be dangerous. Unfortunately, he was destined to add a fresh element of confusion to the chaos, and to furnish rather a proof than a refutation of the correctness of Alva’s gibe.\footnote{5}

This was the hero who was now thrust, head and shoulders as it were, into the entangled affairs of the dem andern, dem gemeinen Sprichwort nach, rathen,” etc.—Letter of Landgrave William, Archives de la Maison d’Orange, vi. 317. He adds that the Netherladders were a wild, godless, and irresponsible crew, neither attached to the true religion, nor having any real regard for the Prince, etc., etc.—Ibid. See also Archives et Correspondance, vi. 300 and 427.
Netherlanders, and it was Elizabeth of England, more than ever alarmed at the schemes of Alençon, who had pushed forward this Protestant champion, notwithstanding the disinclination of Orange.

The Queen was right in her uneasiness respecting the French Prince. The Catholic nobles, relying upon the strong feeling still rife throughout the Walloon country against the Reformed religion, and inflamed more than ever by their repugnance to Orange, whose genius threw them so completely into the shade, had already drawn closer to the Duke. The same influences were at work to introduce Alençon, which had formerly been employed to bring Matthias from Vienna. Now that the Archduke, who was to have been the rival, had become the dependent of William, they turned their attention to the son of Catherine de' Medici. Orange himself having always kept the Duke in reserve, as an instrument to overcome the political coquetry of Elizabeth. That great Princess never manifested less greatness than in her earlier and most tormenting connexion with the Netherlands. Having allured them for years with bright but changeful face, she still looked coldly down upon the desolate sea where they were drifting. She had promised much; her performance had been nothing. Her jealousy of French influence had at length been turned to account; a subsidy and a levy extorted from her fears. Her ministers and prominent advisers were one and all in favour of an open and generous support to the provinces. Walsingham, Burleigh, Knollys, Davison, Sidney, Leicester, Fleetwood, Wilson, all desired that she should frankly espouse their cause. A bold policy they believed to be the only prudent one in this case; yet the Queen considered it sagacious to despatch envoys both to Philip and to Don John, as if after what they knew of her secret practices, such missions could effect any useful purpose. Better, therefore, in the opinion of the honest and intrepid statesmen of England, to throw down the gauntlet at once in the cause of the oppressed than to shuffle and palter until the dreaded rival should cross the frontier. A French Netherlands they considered even more dangerous than a Spanish, and Elizabeth partook of their sentiments, although incapable of their promptness. With the perverseness which was the chief blot upon her character, she was pleased that the Duke should be still a danger for her hand, even while she was intriguing against his political hopes. She listened with undisguised rapture to his proposals of love, while she was secretly thwarting the plans of his ambition.

Meanwhile, Alençon had arrived at Mons, and we have seen already the feminine adroitness with which his sister of Navarre had prepared his entrance. Not in vain had she cajoled the commandant of Cambrai citadel; not idly had she led captive the hearts of Lalain and his Countess, thus securing the important province of Hainault for the Duke. Don John might, indeed, gnash his teeth with rage, as he marked the result of all the feasting and flat- tery, the piping and dancing at Namur.

Francis Duke of Alençon, and—since the accession of his brother Henry to the French throne—Duke of Anjou was, upon the whole, the most despicable personage who had ever entered the Netherlands. His previous career at home had been so flagrantly false that he had forfeited the esteem of every honest man in Europe, Catholic or Lutheran, Huguenot or Malcontent, The world has long known his character. History will always retain him as an example, to shew mankind the amount of mischief which may be perpetrated by a prince, ferocious without courage, ambitious without talent, and bigoted without opinions. Incapable of religious convictions himself, he had alternately aspired to be a commander of Catholic and of Huguenot zealots, and he had acquired

---

1 See, for example, a letter from Sir Amyas Paulet to the Earl of Leicester, in Groen v. Prinst., vi. 421–423.
nothing by his vacillating course, save the entire contempt of all parties and of both religions. Scared from the side of Navarre and Condé by the menacing attitude of the "league," fearing to forfeit the succession to the throne, unless he made his peace with the court, he had recently resumed his place among the Catholic commanders. Nothing was easier for him than to return shamelessly to a party which he had shamelessly deserted, save perhaps to betray it again, should his interest prompt him to do so, on the morrow. Since the peace of 1576, it had been evident that the Protestants could not count upon his friendship, and he had soon afterwards been placed at the head of the army which was besieging the Huguenots of Issoire. He sought to atone for having commanded the troops of the new religion by the barbarity with which he now persecuted its votaries. When Issoire fell into his hands, the luckless city was spared none of the misery which can be inflicted by a brutal and frenzied soldiery. Its men were butchered, its females outraged, its property plundered with a thoroughness which rivalled the Netherland practice of Alva, or Frederic Toledo, or Julian Romero. The town was sacked and burned to ashes by furious Catholics, under the command of Francis Alençon, almost at the very moment when his fair sister, Margaret, was preparing the way in the Netherlands for the fresh treason which he already meditated to the Catholic cause. The treaty of Bergerac, signed in the autumn of 1577, again restored a semblance of repose to France, and again afforded an opportunity for Alençon to change his politics, and what he called his religion. Recking with the blood of the Protestants of Issoire, he was now at leisure to renew his dalliance with the Queen of Protestant England, and to resume his correspondence with the great chieftain of the revolution in the Netherlands.

the perspicacity of Orange, that he could tolerate this mischief and worthless "son of France," even for the grave reasons which influenced him. Nevertheless, it must be remembered that he only intended to keep him in reserve, for the purpose of irritating the jealousy and quickening the friendship of the English Queen. Those who see anything tortuous in such politics must beware of judging the intriguing age of Philip and Catherine de' Medici by the higher standard of later, and possibly more candid times. It would have been puerile for a man of William the Silent's resources, to allow himself to be outwitted by the intrigues of all the courts and cabinets in Europe. Moreover, it must be remembered that, if he alone could guide himself and his country through the perplexing labyrinth in which they were involved, it was because he held in his hand the clue of an honest purpose. His position in regard to the Duke of Alençon had now become sufficiently complicated, for the tiger that he had led in a chain had been secretly unloosed by those who meant mischief. In the autumn of the previous year, the aristocratic and Catholic party in the states-general had opened their communications with a prince, by whom they hoped to be indemnified for their previous defeat.

The ill effects of Elizabeth's coquetry too plainly manifested themselves at last, and Alençon had now a foothold in the Netherlands. Precipitated by the intrigues of the party which had always been either openly or secretly hostile to Orange, his advent could no longer be delayed. It only remained for the Prince to make himself his master, as he had already subdued each previous rival. This he accomplished with his customary adroitness. It was soon obvious, even to so dull and so base a nature as that of the Duke, that it was his best policy to continue to cultivate so powerful a friendship. It cost him little to

1 Ne Thon, vii. liv. 1xiiii. Mémoires de
2 But three men were spared, according to de Thou, vii. 509; liv. 1xiiii.
3 Du Thou, vii. 520, liv. 1xiv.
Invasion of Alençon.

crouch, but events were fatally to prove at a later day, that there are natures too malignant to be trusted or to be tamed. For the present, however, Alençon professed the most friendly sentiments towards the Prince. Solicited by so ardent and considerable a faction, the Duke was no longer to be withheld from trying the venture, and if he could not effect his entrance by fair means, was determined to do so by force. He would obtrude his assistance, if it were declined. He would do his best to dissuade the provinces, if only a portion of them would accept his proffered friendship. Under these circumstances, as the Prince could no longer exclude him from the country, it became necessary to accept his friendship, and to hold him in control. The Duke had formally offered his assistance to the states-general, directly after the defeat of Gemblours, and early in July had made his appearance in Mons. Hence he despatched his envoys, Des Pruneaux and Rochefort, to deal with the states-general and with Orange, while he treated Matthias with contempt, and declared that he had no intention to negotiate with him. The Archduke burst into tears when informed of this slight, and feebly expressed a wish that succour might be found in Germany which would render this French alliance unnecessary. It was not the first nor the last mortification which the future Emperor was to undergo. The Prince was addressed with distinguished consideration; Des Pruneaux protesting that he desired but three things—the glory of his master, the glory of God, and the glory of William of Orange.

The French King was naturally supposed to be privy to his brother’s schemes, for it was thought ridiculous to suggest that Henry’s own troops could be led by his own brother, on this foreign expedition, without his connivance. At the same time, private letters, written by him at this epoch, expressed disapprobation of the schemes of Alençon, and jealousy of his aggrandisement. It was, perhaps, difficult to decide as to the precise views of a monarch who was too weak to form opinions for himself, and too false to maintain those with which he had been furnished by others. With the Medecian mother it was different, and it was she who was believed to be at the bottom of the intrigue. There was even a vague idea that the Spanish Sovereign himself might be privy to the plot, and that a possible marriage between Alençon and the Infanta might be on the cards. In truth, however, Philip felt himself outraged by the whole proceedings. He resolutely refused to accept the excuses proffered by the French court, or to doubt the complicity of the Queen Dowager, who, it was well known, governed all her sons. She had, to be sure, thought proper to read the envoys of the states-general a lecture upon the impropriety of subjects opposing the commands of their lawful Prince, but such artifices were thought too transparent to deceive. Granvelle scouted the idea of her being ignorant of Anjou’s scheme, or opposed to its success. As for William of Hesse, while he bewailed more than ever the luckless plunge into “confusum chaos” which Casimir had taken, he unhesitatingly expressed his conviction that the invasion of Alençon was a master-piece of Catherine. The whole responsibility of the transaction he divided, in truth, between the Dowager and the comet, which just then hung over the world, filling the soul of the excellent Landgrave with dismal apprehension.

---

1 See the remarks and citations of Groen v. Prins., Archives, etc., vi. pp. 364-370.—Compare Apologie d’Orange, p. 107, and Bor, xii. 975.
3 Archives de Correspondance, vi. 404, seq.
4 Letter of Des Pruneaux, in Archives de la Maison d’Orange, vi. 599.
5 Meteren, viii. 140b. Bor, xii. 950.
6 This was Granvelle’s opinion. See letter from Granvelle to Bellefontaine, Archives de la Maison d’Orange, vi. 426.
8 “— Summa, der comet und die grosse
The Queen of England was highly incensed by the actual occurrence of the invasion which she had so long dreaded. She was loud in her denunciations of the danger and dishonour which would be the result to the provinces of this French alliance. She threatened not only to withdraw herself from their cause, but even to take arms against a commonwealth which had dared to accept Alençon for its master. She had originally agreed to furnish one hundred thousand pounds by way of loan. This assistance had been afterwards commuted into a levy of three thousand foot and two thousand horse, to be added to the forces of John Casimir, and to be placed under his command. It had been stipulated, also, that the Palatine should have the rank and pay of an English general-in-chief, and be considered as the Queen's lieutenant. The money had been furnished and the troops enrolled. So much had been already bestowed, and could not be recalled, but it was not probable that, in her present humour, the Queen would be induced to add to her favours.¹

The Prince, obliged by the necessity of the case, had prescribed the terms and the title under which Alençon should be accepted. Upon the 13th of August the Duke's envoy concluded a convention in twenty-three articles, which were afterwards subscribed by the Duke himself, at Mons, upon the twentieth of the same month.² The substance of this arrangement was that Alençon should lend his assistance to the provinces against the intolerable tyranny of the Spaniards and the unjustifiable military invasion of Don John. He was, moreover, to bring into the field ten thousand foot and two thousand horse for three months. After the expiration of this term, his forces might be reduced to three thousand foot and five hundred horse. The states were to confer upon him the title of "Defender of the Liberty of the Netherlands against the Tyranny of the Spaniards and their adherents." He was to undertake no hostilities against Queen Elizabeth. The states were to aid him, whenever it should become necessary, with the same amount of force with which he now assisted them. He was to submit himself contentedly to the civil government of the country, in everything regarding its internal polity. He was to make no special contracts or treaties with any cities or provinces of the Netherlands. Should the states generally accept another prince as sovereign, the Duke was to be preferred to all others, upon conditions afterwards to be arranged. All cities which might be conquered within the territory of the united provinces were to belong to the states. Such places not in that territory, as should voluntarily surrender, were to be apportioned, by equal division, between the Duke and the states. The Duke was to bring no foreign troops but French into the provinces. The month of August was reserved, during which the states were, if possible, to make a composition with Don John.³

These articles were certainly drawn up with skill. A high-sounding but barren title, which gratified the Duke's vanity and signified nothing, had been conferred upon him; while at the same time he was forbidden to make conquests or contracts, and was obliged to submit himself to the civil government of the country: in short, he was to obey the Prince of Orange in all things—and so here was another plot of the Prince's enemies neutralised. Thus, for the present at least, had the position of Anjou been defined.

As the month of August, during which it was agreed⁴ that negotiations with the Governor-General should remain open, had already half expired, certain articles, drawn up by the

¹ See especially Articles 4, 5, 10, 14, 15, 16, 21.
² Bor, xii. 978-979. Meteren, vii. 140, 141.
³ See especially Articles 4, 5, 10, 14, 15, 16, 21.
⁴ Article 21 of the Convention.—See Bor, xii. 978; Meteren, vii. 141.
Result of the Conference.

1578.]

states-general, were at once laid before Don John. Lord Cobham and Sir Francis Walsingham were then in the Netherlands, having been sent by Elizabeth for the purpose of effecting a pacification of the estates with the Governor, if possible. They had also explained—so far as an explanation was possible—the assistance which the English government had rendered to the rebels, upon the ground that the French invasion could be prevented in no other way. This somewhat lame apology had been passed over in silence rather than accepted by Don John. In the same interview the envoys made an equally unsuccessful effort to induce the acceptance by the Governor of the terms offered by the states. A further proposition, on their part, for an “Interim,” upon the plan attempted by Charles the Fifth in Germany, previously to the Peace of Passau, met with no more favour than it merited, for certainly that name—which became so odious in Germany that cats and dogs were called “Interim” by the common people, in derision—was hardly a potent word to conjure with, at that moment, in the Netherlands. They then expressed their intention of retiring to England, much grieved at the result of their mission. The Governor replied that they might do as they liked, but that, at least, had done all in his power to bring about a peace, and that the King had been equally pacific in his intentions. He then asked the envoys what they themselves thought of the terms proposed. “Indeed, they are too hard, your highness,” answered Walsingham, “but ‘tis only by you menace that we extorted them from the states, unfavourable though they seem.”

“Then you may tell them,” replied the Governor, “to keep their offers to themselves. Such terms will go but little way in any negotiation with me.”

The envoys shrugged their shoulders.

“What is your own opinion on the whole affair?” resumed Don John. “Perhaps your advice may yet help me to a better conclusion.”

The envoys continued silent and pensive.

“We can only answer,” said Walsingham, at length, “by imitating the physician, who would prescribe no medicine until he was quite sure that the patient was ready to swallow it. ‘Tis no use wasting counsel or drugs.”

The reply was not satisfactory, but the envoys had convinced themselves that the sword was the only surgical instrument likely to find favour at that juncture. Don John referred, in vague terms, to his peaceable inclinations, but protested that there was no treating with so unbridled a people as the Netherlands. The ambassadors soon afterwards took their leave. After this conference, which was on the 24th of August 1578, Walsingham and Cobham addressed a letter to the states-general, deploring the disingenuous and procrastinating conduct of the Governor, and begging that the failure to effect a pacification might not be imputed to them. They then returned to England.

The Imperial envoy, Count Schwartzburg, at whose urgent solicitation this renewed attempt at a composition had been made, was most desirous that the Governor should accept the articles. They formed, indeed, the basis of a liberal, constitutional, representative government, in which the Spanish monarch was to retain only a strictly limited sovereignty. The proposed convention required Don John, with all his troops and adherents, forthwith to leave the land after

---

1 "Y desculpando a la Reyna su ama de lo que avia hecho en favor de los Estados, y que avia sido por mejor y porque al francés no metiose pie en ellos."—Lo que en substancia ha pasado con su Alteza, 14 Agosto, 1578. Acta Stat. Belg. iii. f. 71.—MS. Hague Archives.
2 Ibid.
3 "Que in veritatem erano troppo duri."—The conversation was carried on partly in Italian, partly in French, partly in Spanish.—MS. Memorandum, dict. act.
4 MS. Memorandum, dict. act.
6 Bor. xiii. 979. Hoefn. xii. 587.
7 See the thirteen articles in Bor. xii. 979, 980.
giving up all strongholds and cities in his possession. It provided that the Archduke Matthias should remain as Governor-general, under the conditions according to which he had been originally accepted. It left the question of religious worship to the decision of the states-general. It provided for the release of all prisoners, the return of all exiles, the restoration of all confiscated property. It stipulated that upon the death or departure of Matthias, his Majesty was not to appoint a governor-general without the consent of the states-general.1

When Count Schwartzburg waited upon the Governor with these astonishing propositions—which Walsingham might well call somewhat hard—he found him less disposed to explode with wrath than he had been in previous conferences. Already the spirit of the impetuous young soldier was broken, both by the ill health which was rapidly undermining his constitution and by the helpless condition in which he had been left while contending with the great rebellion. He had soldiers, but no money to pay them withal; he had no means of upholding that supremacy of crown and church which he was so vigorously instructed to maintain; and he was heartily wearied of fulminating edicts which he had no power to enforce. He had repeatedly solicited his recall, and was growing daily more impatient that his dismissal did not arrive. Moreover, the horrible news of Escovedo’s assassination had sicken him to the soul.2 The deed had flashed a sudden light into the abyss of dark duplicity in which his own fate was suspended. His most intimate and confidential friend had been murdered by royal command, while he was himself abandoned by Philip, exposed to insult, left destitute of defence. No money was forthcoming, in spite of constant importunities and perpetual promises.3

1 Articles 6 and 12 of the proposed Convention, Bor. xxii. 979.
2 That event had occurred, as already stated, upon the 31st of March of this year (1575).
3 See the letter of Philip in Cabrera, xii.

Plenty of words were sent him; he complained, as if he possessed the art of extracting gold from them, or as if war could be carried on with words alone.4

Being in so despairing a mood, he declined entering into any controversy with regard to the new propositions, which, however, he characterized as most iniquitous. He stated merely that his Majesty had determined to refer the Netherland matters to the arbitration of the Emperor; that the Duke de Terra Nova would soon be empowered to treat upon the subject at the imperial court; and that, in the meantime, he was himself most anxiously awaiting his recall.5 A synod of the Reformed churches had been held, during the month of June, at Dort. There they had laid down a platform of their principles of church government in one hundred and one articles.6 In the same month, the leading members of the Reformed Church had drawn up an ably reasoned address to Matthias and the Council of State on the subject of a general peace of religion for the provinces.7

William of Orange did his utmost to improve the opportunity. He sketched a system of provisional toleration, which he caused to be signed by the Archduke Matthias, and which, at least for a season, was to establish religious freedom.8 The brave, tranquil, solitary man still held his track across the raging waves, shedding as much light as one clear human soul could dispense; yet the dim lantern, so far in advance, was swallowed in the mist, ere those who sailed in his wake could shape their course by his example. No man understood him. Not even his nearest friends comprehended his views, nor saw that he strove to establish not freedom for Calvinism, but freedom for conscience. Saint Aldegonde complained that the Prince would not persecute the An-

978. 4 Strada, x. 602.
6 Bor. xii. 981.—Compare Materen, xii. 140, 141.
8 Given in Bor. xii. 981-985.
7 In Bor. xii. 971
9 Bor. xii. 976.
baptists. Peter Dathenus denounced him as an atheist, while even Count John, the only one left of his valiant and generous brothers, opposed the religious peace—except where the advantage was on the side of the new religion. Where the Catholics had been effectually put down, as in Holland and Zealand, honest John saw no reason for allowing them to lift themselves up again. In the Popish provinces, on the other hand, he was for a religious peace. In this bigoted spirit he was followed by too many of the Reforming mass, while, on their part, the Walloons were already banding themselves together in the more southern provinces, under the name of Malcontenta. Stigmatised by the Calvinists as “Pater nooster Knechten,” they were daily drawing closer their alliance with Alençon, and weakening the bonds which united them with their Protestant brethren. Count John had at length become a permanent functionary in the Netherlands. Urgently solicited by the leaders and the great multitude of the Reformers, he had long been unwilling to abandon his home, and to neglect the private affairs which his devotion to the Netherlands cause had thrown into great confusion. The Landgrave, too, whose advice he had asked, had strongly urged him not to “dip his fingers into the olla podrida.”

The future of the provinces was, in his opinion, so big with disaster, that the past, with all its horrors, under Alva and Requesens, had only furnished the “prologus” of that which was to come. For these desperate views his main reason, as usual, was the comet; that mischievous luminary still continuing to cast a lurid glare across the Landgrave’s path. Notwithstanding these direful warnings from a prince of the Reformation, notwithstanding the “olla podrida” and the “comet,” Count John had nevertheless accepted the office of Governor of Gelderland, to which he had been elected by the estates of that province on the 11th of March. That important bulwark of Holland, Zealand, and Utrecht on the one side, and of Groningen and Friesland on the other—the main buttress, in short, of the nascent republic, was now in hands which would defend it to the last. As soon as the discussion came up in the states-general on the subject of the Dort petitions, Orange requested that every member who had formed his opinions should express them fully and frankly. All wished, however, to be guided and governed by the sentiments of the Prince. Not a man spoke, save to demand their leader’s views, and to express adhesion in advance to the course which his wisdom might suggest. The result was a projected convention, a draft for a religious peace, which, if definitely established, would have healed many wounds and averted much calamity. It was not, however, destined to be accepted at that time by the states of the different provinces where it was brought up for discussion; and several changes were made, both of form and substance, before the system was adopted at all. Meantime, for the important city of Antwerp, where religious broils were again on the point of breaking out, the Prince preferred a provisional arrangement, which he forthwith carried into execution. A proclamation, in the name of the Archduke Matthias and of the State Council, assigned five special places in the city where the members of the “pretended Reformed religion” should have liberty to exercise their religious worship, with preaching, singing, and

---

2 Spen v. Print., Archives, etc. vi. 434, 441.
3 “Pater nooster Knechten.”—Meteer, vi. 143. Bor. xii. 998.—Compare Benti-
weg, z. 216.
4 Spen v. Print., Archives, vi. 317.
5 Archives de la Maison d’Orance, vi. 256.
7 Archives et Correspondance, vi. 308.
9 According to the 8d and 4th Articles, the Catholic or the Reformed religion was to be re-established and freely exercised in any town or village where such re-establishment should be demanded by one hundred families.—Meteer, viii. 143.
the sacraments. The churchyards of the parochial churches were to be opened for the burial of their dead, but the funerals were to be unaccompanied with exhortation, or any public demonstration which might excite disturbance. The adherents of one religion were forbidden to disturb, to insult, or in any way to interfere with the solemnities of the other. All were to abstain from mutual jeerings—by pictures, ballads, books, or otherwise—and from all injuries to ecclesiastical property. Every man, of whatever religion, was to be permitted entrance to the churches of either religion, and when there, all were to conform to the regulations of the Church with modesty and respect. Those of the new religion were to take oaths of obedience to the authorities, and to abstain from meddling with the secular administration of affairs. Preachers of both religions were forbidden to preach out of doors, or to make use of language tending to sedition. All were to bind themselves to assist the magistrates in quelling riots, and in sustaining the civil government.

This example of religious peace, together with the active correspondence thus occasioned with the different state assemblies, excited the jealousy of the Catholic leaders and of the Walloon population. Champagny, who, despite his admirable qualities and brilliant services, was still unable to place himself on the same platform of toleration with Orange, now undertook a decided movement against the policy of the Prince. Catholic to the core, he drew up a petition, remonstrating most vigorously against the draft for a religious peace, then in circulation through the provinces. To this petition he procured many signatures among the more ardent Catholic nobles. De Héze, De Glimes, and others of the same stamp, were willing enough to follow the lead of so distinguished a chieftain. The remonstrance was addressed to the Archduke, the Prince of Orange, the State Council, and the States-general, and called upon them all to abide by their solemn promises to permit no schism in the ancient Church. Should the exercise of the new religion be allowed, the petitioners insisted that the godless licentiousness of the Netherlands would excite the contempt of all peoples and potentates. They suggested, in conclusion, that all the principal cities of France—and in particular the city of Paris—had kept themselves clear of the exercise of the new religion, and that repose and prosperity had been the result.

This petition was carried with considerable solemnity by Champagny, attended by many of his confederates, to the Hôtel de Ville, and presented to the magistracy of Brussels. These functionaries were requested to deliver it forthwith to the Archduke and Council. The magistrates demurred. A discussion ensued, which grew warmer and warmer as it proceeded. The younger nobles permitted themselves abusive language, which the civic dignitaries would not brook. The session was dissolved, and the magistrates, still followed by the petitioners, came forth into the street. The confederates, more inflamed than ever, continued to vociferate and to threaten. A crowd soon collected in the square. The citizens were naturally curious to know why their senators were thus browbeaten and insulted by a party of insolent young Catholic nobles. The old politician at their head, who, in spite of many services, was not considered a friend to the nation, inspired them with distrust. Being informed of the presentation of

1 See the document in Bor. xii. 974, 975. Hooff, xiii. 575.
2 Bor. xii. 974, 975. The principle of the religious peace was adopted, and churches accordingly allotted to the members of the Reformed Church, in the cities of Antwerp, Brussels, Mechlin, Bergen, Emden, Liere, Bruges, Ypres, and in many cities of Gelderland and Friesland. —Meteren, viii. 142.
3 Bor. xii. 975. Hooff. xiii. 575.
4 See the Petition in Bor. xii. 988, 990.—Compare Hooff. xiii. 578. Meteren, viii. 142.
5 Petition in Bor. xii. 988, 990.
6 Bor. xii. 988. Champagny was a Catholic and the brother of Gravelle; he was also one of the most patriotic and honourable—as he was unquestionably one of the bravest—of the Netherlands nobles. His
the petition, the multitude loudly demanded that the document should be read. This was immediately done. The general drift of the remonstrance was anything but acceptable, but the allusion to Paris, at the close, excited a tempest of indignation. "Paris! Paris! Saint Bartholomew! Saint Bartholomew! Are we to have Paris weddings in Brussels also?" howled the mob, as is often the case, extracting but a single idea, and that a wrong one, from the public lecture which had just been made. "Are we to have a Paris massacre, a Paris blood-bath here in the Netherland capital? God forbid! God forbid! Away with the conspirators! Down with the Papists!"

It was easily represented to the inflamed imaginations of the populace that a Brussels Saint Bartholomew had been organised, and that Champagny, who stood there before them, was its originator and manager. The ungrateful Netherlanders forgot the heroism with which the old soldier had arranged the defence of Antwerp against the "Spanish Fury" but two years before. They heard only the instigations of his enemies; they remembered only that he was the hated Granvelle’s brother; they believed only that there was a plot by which, in some utterly incomprehensible manner, they were all to be immediately engaged in cutting each other’s throats and throwing each other out of the windows, as had been done half a dozen years before in Paris. Such was the mischievous intention ascribed to a petition, which Champagny and his friends had as much right to offer—however narrow and mistaken their opinions might now be considered—as had the synod of Dort to present their remonstrances. Never was a more malignant or more stupid perversion of a simple and not very alarming phrase. No allusion had been made to Saint Bartholomew, but all its horrors were supposed to be concealed in the sentence which referred to Paris. The nobles were arrested on the spot and hurried to prison, with the exception of Champagny, who made his escape at first, and lay concealed for several days. He was, however, finally ferreted out of his hiding-place and carried off to Ghent. There he was thrown into strict confinement, being treated in all respects as the accomplice of Aerschot and the other nobles who had been arrested in the time of Ryhove’s revolution. Certainly, this conduct towards a brave and generous gentleman was ill calculated to increase general sympathy for the cause, or to merit the approbation of Orange. There was, however, a strong prejudice against Champagny. His brother Granvelle had never been forgotten by the Netherlanders, and was still regarded as their most unrelenting foe, while Champagny was supposed to be in close league with the Cardinal. In these views the people were entirely wrong.

While these events were taking place in Brussels and Antwerp, the two armies of the states and of Don John were indolently watching each other. The sinews of war had been cut upon both sides. Both parties were cramped by the most abject poverty. The troops under Bossu and Casimir, in the camp near Mechlin, were already discontented, for want of pay. The one hundred thousand pounds of Elizabeth had already been spent, and it was not probable that the offended Queen would soon furnish another subsidy. The states could with difficulty extort anything like the assessed quotas from the different provinces. The Duke of Alençon was still at Mons, from which place he had issued a violent proclamation of war against Don John—a manifesto which had, however, not been followed up by...
very vigorous demonstrations. Don John himself was in his fortified camp at Bouge, within a league of Namur, but the hero was consuming with mental and with bodily fever. He was, as it were, besieged. He was left entirely without funds, while his royal brother obstinately refused compliance with his earnest demands to be recalled, and coldly neglected his importunities for pecuniary assistance.

Compelled to carry on a war against an armed rebellion with such gold only as could be extracted from royal words; stung to the heart by the suspicion of which he felt himself the object at home, and by the hatred with which he was regarded in the provinces; outraged in his inmost feelings by the murder of Escoveito; foiled, outwitted, reduced to a political nullity by the masterly tactics of the "odious heretic of heretics" to whom he had originally offered his own patronage and the royal forgiveness, the high-spirited soldier was an object to excite the tenderness even of religious and political opponents. Weared with the turmoil of camps without battle and of cabinets without counsel, he sighed for repose, even if it could be found only in a cloister or the grave. "I rejoice to see by your letter," he wrote, pathetically, to John Andrew Doria, at Genoa, "that your life is flowing on with such calmness, while the world around me is so tumultuously agitated. I consider you most fortunate that you are passing the remainder of your days for God and yourself; that you are not forced to put yourself perpetually in the scales of the world's events, nor to venture yourself daily on its hazardous games." He proceeded to inform his friend of his own painful situation, surrounded by innumerable enemies, without means of holding out more than three months, and cut off from all assistance by a government which could not see that if the present chance were lost, all was lost. He declared it impossible for him to fight in the position to which he was reduced, pressed as he was within half a mile of the point which he had always considered as his last refuge. He stated also that the French were strengthening themselves in Hainault, under Alençon, and that the King of France was in readiness to break in through Burgundy, should his brother obtain a firm foothold in the provinces. "I have besought his Majesty over and over again," he continued, "to send to me his orders; if they come they shall be executed, unless they arrive too late. They have cut off our hands, and we have now nothing for it but to stretch forth our heads also to the axe. I grieve to trouble you with my sorrows, but I trust to your sympathy as a man and a friend. I hope that you will remember me in your prayers, for you can put your trust where, in former days, I never could place my own."

The dying crusader wrote another letter, in the same mournful strain, to another intimate friend, Don Pedro Mendoza, Spanish envoy in Genoa. It was dated upon the same day from his camp near Namur, and repeated the statement that the King of France was ready to invade the Netherlands, so soon as Alençon should prepare an opening. "His Majesty," continued Don John, "is resolved upon nothing; at least, I am kept in ignorance of his intentions. Our life is doled out to us here by moments. I cry aloud, but it profits me little. Matters will soon be disposed, through our negligence, exactly as the Devil would best wish them. It is plain that we are left here to pine away till our last breath. God direct us all as He may see fit; in His hands are all things."

Four days later he wrote to the King, stating that he was confined to his chamber with a fever, by which he was already as much reduced as if he

---

1 Bor, xii. 907, 998. Hooft, xiv. 584, 585. The States had agreed to pay 600,000 gulden per month. The expenses of the army were estimated at 800,000 gulden per month.

—Green v. Prince, Archives, vi. 397. Proclamation in Bor, xii. 906, 997.

2 Letter to Doria; Bor, Hooft, ubi sup.

3 Letter to Pedro de Mendoza; Bor, xii. 1005. Hooft, xiv. 696.

4 Letter to Pedro de Mendoza; Bor, xii. 1005. Hooft, xiv. 696.
had been ill for a month. "I assure your Majesty," said he, "that the work here is enough to destroy any constitution and any life." He reminded Philip how often he had been warned by him as to the insidious practices of the French. Those prophecies had now become facts. The French had entered the country, while some of the inhabitants were frightened, others disaffected. Don John declared himself in a dilemma. With his small force, hardly enough to make head against the enemy immediately in front, and to protect the places which required guarding, "was impossible for him to leave his position to attack the enemy in Burgundy. If he remained stationary, the communications were cut off through which his money and supplies reached him. "Thus I remain," said he, "perplexed and confused, desiring, more than life, some decision on your Majesty's part, for which I have implored so many times." He urged the King most vehemently to send him instructions as to the course to be pursued; adding that it wounded him to the soul to find them so long delayed. He begged to be informed "whether he was to attack the enemy in Burgundy, whether he should await where he then was the succour of his Majesty, or whether he was to fight, and if so with which of his enemies: in fine, what he was to do; because, losing or winning, he meant to conform to his Majesty's will. He felt deeply pained, he said, at being disgraced and abandoned by the King, having served him, both as a brother, and a man, with love and faith and heartiness. "Our lives," said he, "are at stake upon this game, and all we wish is to lose them honourably." He begged the King to send a special envoy to France, with remonstrances on the subject of Alençon, and another to the Pope to ask for the Duke's excommunication. He protested that he would give his blood rather than occasion so much annoyance to the King, but that he felt it his duty to tell the naked truth. The pest was ravaging his little army. Twelve hundred were now in hospital, besides those nursed in private houses, and he had no means or money to remedy the evil. Moreover, the enemy, seeing that they were not opposed in the open field, had cut off the passage into Liège by the Meuse, and had advanced to Nivelles and Chimay for the sake of communications with France, by the same river. 5

Ten days after these pathetic passages had been written, the writer was dead. Since the assassination of Escovedo, a consuming melancholy had settled upon his spirit, and a burning fever came, in the month of September, to destroy his physical strength. The house where he lay was a hovel, the only chamber of which had been long used as a pigeon-house. This wretched garret was cleaned, as well as it could be of its filth, and hung with tapestry emblazoned with armorial bearings. In that dovecot the hero of Lepanto was destined to expire. During the last few days of his illness, he was delirious. Tossing upon his uneasy couch, he again arranged in imagination, the combinations of great battles, again shouted his orders to rushing squadrons, and listened with brightening eye to the trumpet of victory. Reason returned, however, before the hour of death, and permitted him the opportunity to make the dispositions rendered necessary by his condition. He appointed his nephew, Alexander of Parma, who had been watching assiduously over his deathbed, to succeed him, provisionally, in the command of the army and in his other dignities, received the last sacraments with composure, and tranquilly breathed his last upon the first day of October, the month which, since the 1 "La orden de como tengo de gobernar."—These words in Don John's letter were underlined by Philip, who made upon reading them the following most characteristic annotation: "The marked request I will not grant. I will not tell;" (lo rayado no yo le dict.)

2 "Nos van las vidas en esto juego," etc., etc.

3 Carta (descifrada) del Sr. D. Juan a Su Magestad, 19 Sept. 1573. MA Royal Library, Hago, f. 41-44v. 4
batttle of Lepanto, he had always considered a festive and a fortunate one. It was inevitable that suspicion of poison should be at once excited by his disease. Those suspicions have been never set at rest, and never proved. Two Englishmen, Ratcliff and Gray by name, had been arrested and executed on a charge of having been employed by Secretary Walsingham to assassinate the Governor. The charge was doubtless an infamous falsehood; but had Philip, who was suspected of being the real criminal, really compassed the death of his brother, it was none the less probable that an innocent victim or two would be executed, to save appearances. Now that time has unveiled to us many mysteries, now that we have learned from Philip’s own lips and those of his accomplices the exact manner in which Montigny and Escovedo were put to death, the world will hardly be very charitable with regard to other imputations. It was vehemently suspected that Don John had been murdered by the command of Philip, but no such fact was ever proved.

The body, when opened that it might be embalmed, was supposed to offer evidence of poison. The heart was dry, the other internal organs were likewise so desiccated as to crumble when touched, and the general colour of the interior was of a blackish brown, as if it had been singed. Various persons were mentioned as the probable criminals; various motives assigned for the commission of the deed. Nevertheless, it must be admitted that there were causes, which were undisputed, for his death, sufficient to render a search for the more mysterious ones comparatively superfluous. A disorder called the pest was raging in his camp, and had carried off a thousand of his soldiers within a few days, while his mental sufferings had been acute enough to turn his heart to sease. Disappointed, tormented by friend and foe, suspected, insulted, broken spirited, it was not strange that he should pray an easy victim to a pestilent disorder before which many stronger men were daily falling.

On the third day after his decease, the funeral rites were celebrated. A dispute between the Spaniards, Germans, and Netherlanders in the army arose, each claiming precedence in the ceremony, on account of superior national propinquity to the illustrious deceased. All were, in truth, equally near to him, for different reasons, and it was arranged that all should share equally in the obsequies. The corpse disembowelled and embalmed, was laid upon a couch of state. The hero was clad in complete armour; his sword, helmet, and steel gauntlets lying at his feet, a coronet, blazing with precious stones, upon his head, the jewelled chain and insignia of the Golden Fleece about his neck, and perfumed gloves upon his hands. Thus royally and martially arrayed, he was placed upon his bier and borne forth from the house where he had died, by the gentlemen of his bedchamber. From them he was received by the colonels of the regiments stationed next his own quarters. These chiefs, followed by their troops with inverted arms and muffled...

pressing his regrets that such a brave son of Mars should have died in his bed (“—comme si c’êtait este quelque mignon de Venus?”), suggests that he was poisoned by means of perfumed boots (certainly an original method, and one which was not likely to make his “interior” look as if “toasted”): “—car on tient tout qu’il mourut empoisonné par des bottines parfumées.”—Homm. Hist. et Gr., cap. ii. 140. The poisoning was attributed to various persons; to Philip, to the Prince of Orange, and to the Abbé of St Gertrude, who is said to have effected the deed through one Guerin, a well-known poisoner of Marseilles.—V. Wyn Aann. op Wagenaer, xii. 65. See also Hook, xiv. 591; Bor, xii. 1004.
drums, escorted the body to the next station, where it was received by the commanding officers, of other national regiments, to be again transmitted to those of the third. Thus by soldiers of the three nations, it was successively conducted to the gates of Namur, where it was received by the civic authorities. The pall-bearers, old Peter Ernest Mansfield, Ottavio Gonzaga, the Marquis de Villa Franca, and the Count de Reux, then bore it to the church, where it was deposited until the royal orders should be received from Spain. The heart of the hero was permanently buried beneath the pavement of the little church, and a monumental inscription, prepared by Alexander Farnese, still indicates the spot where that lion heart returned to dust.  

It had been Don John's dying request to Philip that his remains might be buried in the Escorial by the side of his imperial father, and the prayer being granted, the royal order in due time arrived for the transportation of the corpse to Spain. Permission had been asked and given for the passage of a small number of Spanish troops through France. The thrifty king had, however, made no allusion to the fact that those soldiers were to bear with them the mortal remains of Lepanto's hero, for he was disposed to save the expense which a public transportation of the body and the exchange of pompous courtesies with the authorities of every town upon the long journey would occasion. The corpse was accordingly divided into three parts, and packed in three separate bags; and thus the different portions, to save weight, being suspended at the saddle-bows of different troopers, the body of the conqueror was conveyed to its distant resting-place.  

"Exponde Hannibalem: quot libros in duce summo  
Inveniis!" . . . . . . . . . .

Thus irreverently, almost blasphemously, the disjointed relics of the great warrior were hurried through France; France, which the romantic Saracen slave had traversed but two short years before, filled with high hopes, and pursuing extravagant visions. It has been recorded by classic historians, that the different fragments, after their arrival in Spain, were re-united, and fastened together with wire; that the body was then stuffed, attired in magnificent habiliments, placed upon its feet, and supported by a martial staff, and that thus prepared for a royal interview, the mortal remains of Don John were presented to his Most Catholic Majesty. Philip is said to have manifested emotion at sight of the hideous spectre—for hideous and spectral, despite of jewels, balsams, and brocades, must have been that unburied corpse, aping life in attitude and vestment, but standing there only to assert its privilege of descending into the tomb. The claim was granted, and Don John of Austria at last found repose by the side of his imperial father.  

A sufficient estimate of his character has been apparent in the course of the narrative. Dying before he had quite completed his thirty-third year, he excites pity and admiration almost as much as censure. His military career

---

1 Strada, x. 515. Hooff, xiv. 691. "Relacion de la enfermedad y muerte del S. D. Juan."—Documentos Inéditos, vii. 443-444. —Compare Tassia, iv. 326; Hooff, xiv. 591; Haraszus (Ann. iii. 385). The inscription on the tablet may yet be read at Namur, although a new church has replaced the one in which the heart was originally deposited.


3 "ubi ossibus iterum commensis, araeque nexui flili colligatis, totam facile articulare compaginem corporis."—Strada, x. 519. "Quod toquanto expleton, ac superindutis armis, protosis vestibus exornatum its Regis obtulere oculis quasi pedibus ininitens, Imperatori videlicet basculi adumento, plane supere spireo siderarum."—Ibid. The story must be received, however, with extreme caution, as being perhaps only one of the imaginative embroideries of that genial Jesuit, Strada.

There is no mention of the circumstance in the "Relacion de la enfermedad," etc., but, on the contrary, the body of the hero is there represented as having been wrapped decently in a shroud of "delicate Hollands," and placed in a coffin covered within and without with black velvet."—Documentos Inéditos, vii. 443-444.

4 Strada, x. 519.

5 Tassia, iv. 326. Cabrera, xii. 1099. Strada, x. 503. Bentivoglio, x. 213.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic. [1578.

was a time of glory. Commanding in the Moord war at twenty-three, and in the Turkish campaigns at twenty-six, he had achieved a marvellous renown before he had emerged from early youth: but his star was destined to go down at once. He found neither splendour nor power in the Netherlands, where he was despised by his king and crushed by the superior genius of the Prince of Orange. Although he vindicated his martial skill at Gemblours, the victory was fruitless. It was but the military spring of the tiger from his cage, and after that striking conflict his life was ended in darkness and obscurity. Possessing military genius of a high order, with extraordinary personal bravery, he was the last of the paladins and the crusaders. His accomplishments were also considerable, and he spoke Italian, German, French, and Spanish with fluency. His beauty was remarkable; his personal fascinations acknowledged by either sex; but as a commander of men, excepting upon the battle-field, he possessed little genius. His ambition was the ambition of a knighthood, an adventurer, a Norman pirate; it was a personal and tawdry ambition. Vague and contradictory dreams of crowns, of royal marriages, of extemporized dynasties, floated ever before him; but he was himself always the hero of his own romance. He sought a throne in Africa or in Britain; he dreamed of espousing Mary of Scotland at the expense of Elizabeth, and was even thought to aspire secretly to the hand of the great English Queen herself. 1 Thus, crusader and bigot as he was, he was willing to be reconciled with heresy, if heresy could furnish him with a throne.

It is superfluous to state that he was no match by mental endowments, for William of Orange; but even had he been so, the moral standard by which each measured himself placed the Emperor far below the Father of a people. It must be admitted that Don John is entitled to but small credit for his political achievements in the Netherlands. He was incapable of perceiving that the great contest between the Reformation and the Inquisition could never be amicably arranged in those provinces, and that the character of William of Orange was neither to be softened by royal smiles, nor perverted by appeals to sordid interests. It would have been perhaps impossible for him, with his education and temperament, to have embraced what seems to us the right cause, but it ought, at least, to have been in his power to read the character of his antagonist, and to estimate his own position with something like accuracy. He may be forgiven that he did not succeed in reconciling hostile parties, when his only plan to accomplish such a purpose was the extermination of the most considerable faction; but although it was not to be expected that he would look on the provinces with the eye of William the Silent, he might have comprehended that the Netherlands chieftain was neither to be purchased nor cajoled. The only system by which the two religions could live together in peace had been discovered by the Prince; but toleration, in the eyes of Catholics, and of many Protestants, was still thought the deadliest heresy of all.

1 This project, among other visions, may have occupied the dreamy mind of Don John himself, but it seems astonishing that grave historians should record their opinion that such a scheme had ever been sanctioned by Elizabeth. Yet Cabrera, Bentivoglio, Strada, and even the more modern Van der Vynckt, allude to the report. — Vid D. Cabrera, xii. 971. Bentivoglio, x. 518. Strada, x. 509. Van d. Vynckt, ii. 354. — Comp. Groen v. Prinsterer, vi. 453.
PART VI.
ALEXANDER OF PARMA.
1578–1584.

CHAPTER I.

Birth, education, marriage, and youthful character of Alexander Farnese—His private adventures—Exploits at Lepanto and at Gemblours—He succeeds to the government—Personal appearance and characteristics—Aspect of affairs—Internal dissensions—Anjou at Mons—John Casimir's intrigues at Ghent—Anjou disbands his soldiers—The Netherlands ravaged by various foreign troops—Anarchy and confusion in Ghent—Imbiso and Ryhove—Fate of Hessels and Visch—New Pacification drawn up by Orange—Representations of Queen Elizabeth—Remonstrance of Brussels—Riots and image-breaking in Ghent—Displeasure of Orange—His presence implored at Ghent, where he establishes a Religious Peace—Painful situation of John Casimir—Sharp rebukes of Elizabeth—He takes his departure—His troops apply to Farnese, who allows them to leave the country—Anjou's departure and manifesto—Elizabeth's letters to the states-general with regard to him—Complimentary addresses by the Estates to the Duke—Death of Bosau—Calumnies against Orange—Vendetta of the Malcontent grandees—La Motte's treason—Intrigues of the Prior of Béthune—Saint Alégonde at Arras—The Prior of St. Vast's exertions—Opposition of the clergy in the Walloon provinces to the taxation of the general government—Triangular contest—Municipal revolution in Arras led by Gosson and others—Counter-revolution—Rapid trials and executions—'Reconciliation' of the malcontent chieftains—Secret treaty of Mount St. Elé—Mischiefs made by the Prior of Béthune—His accusations against the reconciled lords—Vengeance taken upon him—Counter-movement by the liberal party—Union of Utrecht—The Act analysed and characterised.

A fifth governor now stood in the place which had been successively vacated by Margaret of Parma, by Alva, by the Grand Commander, and by Don John of Austria. Of all the eminent personages to whom Philip had confided the reins of that most difficult and dangerous administration, the man who was now to rule was by far the ablest and the best fitted for his post. If there were living charioteers skilful enough to guide the wheels of state, whirling now more dizzyly than ever through "confussion chaos," Alexander Farnese was the charioteer to guide—his hand the only one which could control.

He was now in his thirty-third year—his uncle Don John, his cousin Don Carlos, and himself, having all been born within a few months of each other. His father was Ottavio Farnese, the faithful lieutenant of Charles the Fifth, and grandson of Pope Paul the Third; his mother was Margaret of Parma, first Regent of the Netherlands after the departure of Philip from the provinces. He was one of the twins by which the reunion of Margaret and her youthful husband had been blessed, and the only one that survived. His great-grandfather, Paul, whose secular name of Alexander he had received, had placed his hand upon the new-

born infant's head, and prophesied that he would grow up to become a mighty warrior.¹ The boy, from his earliest years, seemed destined to verify the prediction. Though apt enough at his studies, he turned with impatience from his literary tutors to military exercises and the hardest sports. The din of arms surrounded his cradle. The trophies of Ottavio, returning victorious from beyond the Alps, had dazzled the eyes of his infancy, and when but six years of age he had witnessed the siege of his native Parma, and its vigorous defence by his martial father. When Philip was in the Netherlands—in the years immediately succeeding the abdication of the Emperor—he had received the boy from his parents as a hostage for their friendship. Although but eleven years of age, Alexander had begged earnestly to be allowed to serve as a volunteer on the memorable day of Saint Quentin, and had wept bitterly when the amazed monarch refused his request.² His education had been completed at Alcalá, and at Madrid, under the immediate supervision of his royal uncle, and in the companionship of the Infante Carlos and the brilliant Don John. The imperial bastard was alone able to surpass, or even to equal the Italian prince in all martial and manly pursuits. Both were equally devoted to the chase and to the tournay; both longed impatiently for the period when the irksome routine of monkish pedantry, and the fictitious combats which formed their main recreation, should be exchanged for the substantial delights of war. At the age of twenty he had been allied to Maria of Portugal, daughter of Prince Edward, granddaughter of King Emanuel, and his nuptials with that peerless princess were, as we have seen, celebrated soon afterwards with much pomp in Brussels. Sons and daughters were born to him in due time, during his subsequent residence in Parma. Here, however, the fiery and impatient spirit of the future illustrious commander was doomed for a time to fret under restraint, and to corrode in distasteful repose. His father, still in the vigour of his years, governing the family duchies of Parma and Piacenza, Alexander had no occupation in the brief period of peace which then existed. The martial spirit, pinning for a wide and lofty sphere of action, in which alone its energies could be fitly exercised, now sought delight in the pursuits of the duellist and gladiator. Nightly did the hereditary prince of the land perambulate the streets of his capital, disguised, well armed, alone, or with a single confidential attendant.³ Every chance passenger of martial aspect whom he encountered in the midnight streets was forced to stand and measure swords with an unknown, almost unseen, but most redoubtable foe, and many were the single combats which he thus enjoyed, so long as his incognito was preserved. Especially, it was his wont to seek and defy every gentleman whose skill or bravery had ever been commended in his hearing. At last, upon one occasion it was his fortune to encounter a certain Count Torelli, whose reputation as a swordsman and duellist was well established in Parma. The blades were joined, and the fierce combat had already been engaged in the darkness, when the torch of an accidental passenger flashed full in the face of Alexander. Torelli, recognising thus suddenly his antagonist, dropped his sword and implored forgiveness,⁴ for the wily Italian was too keen not to perceive that even if the death of neither combatant should be the result of the fray, his own position was, in every event, a false one. Victory would ensure him the hatred, defeat the contempt of his future sovereign. The unsatisfactory issue and subsequent notoriety of this encounter put a termination to those midnight joys of Alexander, and for a season he felt obliged to assume more pacific habits, and to solace himself with the society of that "Phoenix of Portugal," who had so long sat brooding on his domestic hearth.

¹ Strype, ix. 451, x. 508.
² Ibid., ix. 458.
³ Ibid., ix. 454, 455.
⁴ Ibid., ix. 455.
At last the holy league was formed, the new and last crusade proclaimed, his uncle and bosom friend appointed to the command of the united troops of Rome, Spain, and Venice. He could no longer be restrained. Disdaining the pleadings of his mother and of his spouse, he extorted permission from Philip, and flew to the seat of war in the Levant. Don John received him with open arms, just before the famous action of Lepanto, and gave him an excellent position in the very front of the battle, with the command of several Genoese galleys. Alexander's exploits on that eventful day seemed those of a fabulous hero of romance. He laid his galley alongside of the treasure-ship of the Turkish fleet, a vessel, on account of its importance, doubly manned and armed. Impatient that the Crescent was not lowered, after a few broadsides, he sprang on board the enemy alone, waving an immense two-handed sword—his usual weapon—and moving a passage right and left through the hostile ranks for the warriors who tardily followed the footsteps of their vehement chief. Mustapha Bey, the treasurer and commander of the ship, fell before his sword, besides many others, whom he hardly saw or counted. The galley was soon his own, as well as another, which came to the rescue of the treasure-ship, only to share its defeat. The booty which Alexander's crew secured was prodigious, individual soldiers obtaining two and three thousand ducats each.1 Don John received his nephew after the battle with commendations, not, however, unmixed with censure. The successful result alone had justified such insane and desperate conduct, for had he been slain or overcome, said the commander-in-chief, there would have been few to applaud his temerity. Alexander gaily replied by assuring his uncle that he had felt sustained by a more than mortal confidence, the prayers which his saintly wife was incessantly offering in his behalf since he went to the wars being a sufficient support and shield in even greater danger than he had yet confronted.2 This was Alexander's first campaign, nor was he permitted to reap any more glory for a few succeeding years. At last, Philip was disposed to send both his mother and himself to the Netherlands, removing Don John from the rack where he had been enduring such slow torture. Granvelle's intercession proved fruitless with the Duchess, but Alexander was all eagerness to go where blows were passing current, and he gladly led the reinforcements which were sent to Don John at the close of the year 1577. He had reached Luxemburg on the 18th of December of that year, in time, as we have seen, to participate, and, in fact, to take the lead in the signal victory of Gemblours. He had been struck with the fatal change which disappointment and anxiety had wrought upon the beautiful and haughty features of his illustrious kinman.3 He had since closed his eyes in the camp, and erected a marble tablet over his heart in the little church. He now governed in his stead.

His personal appearance corresponded with his character. He had the head of a gladiator, round, compact, combative, with something alert and snake-like in its movements. The black, closely-shorn hair was erect and bristling. The forehead was lofty and narrow. The features were handsome, the nose regularly aquiline, the eyes well opened, dark, piercing, but with something dangerous and sinister in their expression.4 There was an habitual look askance, as of a man seeking to parry or inflict a mortal blow—the look of a swordsman and professional fighter. The lower part of the face was swallowed in a bushy beard; the mouth and chin being quite invisible. He was of middle stature, well formed, and graceful in person, princely in demeanour, sumptuous and stately in apparel.5 His high ruff of point lace, his badge of the Golden Fleece, his gold-inlaid Milan armour, marked him and the portraits confirm the statement.

1 Strada, ix. 456, 457.
2 Ibid., ix. 458.
3 Ibid., ix. 460.
4 "Een felsgezicht," says Bor, S. xxix. 681;
at once as one of high degree. On the field of battle, he possessed the rare gift of inspiring his soldiers with his own impetuous and chivalrous courage. He ever led the way upon the most dangerous and desperate ventures, and, like his uncle and his imperial grandfather, well knew how to reward the devotion of his readiest followers with a poniard, a feather, a riband, a jewel, taken with his own hands from his own attire.¹

His military abilities—now for the first time to be largely called into employment—were unquestionably superior to those of Don John, whose name had been surrounded with such splendour by the world-renowned battle of Lepanto. Moreover, he possessed far greater power for governing men, whether in camp or cabinet. Less attractive and fascinating, he was more commanding than his kinsman. Decorous and self-poised, he was only passionate before the enemy, but he rarely permitted a disrespectful look or word to escape condign and deliberate chastisement. He was no schemer or dreamer. He was no knight errant. He would not have crossed seas and mountains to rescue a captive queen, nor have sought to place her crown on his own head as a reward for his heroism. He had a single and concentrated kind of character. He knew precisely the work which Philip required, and felt himself to be precisely the workman that had so long been wanted. Cool, incisive, fearless, artful, be united the unscrupulous audacity of a condottiere with the wily patience of a Jesuit. He could unperceived through unsuspected paths, could strike suddenly, sting mortally. He came prepared, not only to shame the Dutchers in the open field, but to cope with them in tortuous policy; to outwatch and outweary them in the game to which his impatient predecessor had fallen a baffled victim. He possessed the art and the patience—as time was to prove—not only to undermine their most impregnable cities, but to delve below the intrigues of their most accomplished politicians. To circumvent at once both their negotiators and their men-at-arms was his appointed task. Had it not been for the courage, the vigilance, and the superior intellect of a single antagonist, the whole of the Netherlands would have shared the fate which was reserved for the more southern portion. Had the life of William of Orange been prolonged, perhaps the evil genius of the Netherlands might have still been exercised throughout the whole extent of the country.

As for religion, Alexander Farnese was, of course, strictly Catholic, regarding all seceders from Romanism as mere heathen dogs. Not that he practically troubled himself much with sacred matters—for, during the lifetime of his wife, he had cavalierly thrown the whole burden of his personal salvation upon her saintly shoulders. She had now flown to higher spheres, but Alexander was, perhaps, willing to rely upon her continued intercessions in his behalf. The life of a bravo in time of peace—the deliberate project in war to exterminate whole cities full of innocent people, who had different notions on the subject of image-worship and ecclesiastical ceremonies from those entertained at Rome, did not seem to him at all incompatible with the precepts of Jesus. Hanging, drowning, burning and butchering heretics were the legitimate deductions of his theology. He was no casuist nor pretendor to holiness: but in those days every man was devout, and Alexander looked with honest horror upon the impiety of the heretics, whom he persecuted and massacred. He attended mass regularly—in the winter mornings by torch-light—and would as soon have foregone his daily tennis as his religious exercises. Romanism was the creed of his caste. It was the religion of princes and gentlemen of high degree. As for Lutheranism, Zwinglianism, Calvinism, and similar systems, they were but the fantastic rites of weavers,
1578.] Universal Discord. 327

which had been proclaimed at Antwerp had hardly found favour anywhere. As the provinces, for an instant, had seemingly got the better of their foe, they turned madly upon each other, and the fires of religious discord, which had been extinguished by the common exertions of a whole race trembling for the destruction of their fatherland, were now re-lighted with a thousand brands plucked from the sacred domestic hearth. Fathers and children, brothers and sisters, husbands and wives, were beginning to wrangle, and were prepared to persecute. Catholic and Protestant, during the momentary relief from pressure, forgot their voluntary and most blessed Pacification, to renew their internecine feuds. The banished Reformers, who had swarmed back in droves at the tidings of peace and good-will to all men, found themselves bitterly disappointed. They were exposed in the Walloon provinces to the persecutions of the Malcontents, in the Frisian regions to the still powerful coercion of the royal stadholders.

Persecution begat counter-persecution. The city of Ghent became the centre of a system of insurrection, by which all the laws of God and man were outraged under the pretence of establishing a larger liberty in civil and religious matters. It was at Ghent that the opening scenes in Parma's administration took place. Of the high-born suitors for the Netherland bride, two were still watching each other with jealous eyes. Anjou was at Mons, which city he had secretly but unsuccessfully attempted to master for his own purposes. John Casimir was at Ghent, fomenting an insurrection which he had neither skill to guide, nor intelligence to comprehend. There was a talk of making him Count of Flanders, and his paltry ambition was dazzled by the glittering prize. Anjou, who meant to be Count of Flanders himself, as well as Duke or Count of all the other Netherlands, was highly indignant at this report, which he chose to consider true. He wrote

---

1 Brv, xxix. 661b. d. iii. 3 Ibid., 3, xiii. 3. 8 Ibid.
to the estates to express his indignation. He wrote to Ghent to offer his mediation between the burghers and the Malcontents. Casimir wanted money for his troops. He obtained a liberal supply, but he wanted more. Meanwhile, the mercenaries were expatiating on their own account throughout the southern provinces; eating up every green leaf, robbing and pillaging, where robbery and pillage had gone so often that hardly anything was left for rapine. Thus dealt the soldiers in the open country, while their master at Ghent was plunging into the complicated intrigues spread over that unfortunate city by the most mischievous demagogues that ever polluted a sacred cause. Well had Cardinal Granvelle, his enemy, William of Hesse, his friend and kinsman, understood the character of John Casimir. Robbery and pillage were his achievements, to make chaos more confounded was his destiny. Anjou—disgusted with the temporary favour accorded to a rival whom he affected to despise—disbanded his troops in dudgeon, and prepared to retire to France. Several thousand of these mercenaries took service immediately with the Malcontents under Montigny, thus swelling the ranks of the deadliest foes to that land over which Anjou had assumed the title of protector. The states' army, meanwhile, had been rapidly dissolving. There were hardly men enough left to make a demonstration in the field, or properly to garrison the more important towns. The unhappy provinces, torn by civil and religious dissensions, were overrun by hordes of unpaid soldiers of all nations, creeds, and tongues—Spaniards, Italians, Burgundians, Walloons, Germans, Scotch and English; some who came to attack and others to protect, but who all achieved nothing and agreed in nothing save to maltreat and to outrage the defenceless peasantry and denizens of the smaller towns. The contemporary chronicles are full of harrowing domestic tragedies, in which the actors are always the insolent foreign soldiery and their desperate victims.

Ghent—energetic, opulent, powerful, passionate, unruly Ghent—was now the focus of discord, the centre from whence radiated not the light and warmth of reasonable and intelligent liberty, but the bale-fires of murderous licence and savage anarchy. The second city of the Netherlands, one of the wealthiest and most powerful cities of Christendom, it had been its fate so often to overstep the bounds of reason and moderation in its devotion to freedom, so often to incur ignominious chastisement from power which its own excesses had made more powerful, that its name was already becoming a by-word. It now, most fatally and for ever, was to misunderstand its true position. The Prince of Orange, the great architect of his country's fortunes, would have made it the keystone of the arch which he was labouring to construct. Had he been allowed to perfect his plan, the structure might have endured for ages, a perpetual bulwark against tyranny and wrong. The temporary and slender frame by which the great artist had supported his arch while still unfinished, was plucked away by rude and ribald hands; the keystone plunged into the abyss, to be lost for ever, and the great work of Orange remained a fragment from its commencement. The acts of demagogues, the conservative disgust at licence, the jealousy of rival nobles, the venality of military leaders, threw daily fresh stumbling-blocks in his heroic path. It was not six months after the advent of Farnese to power, before that bold and subtle chieftain had seized the double-edged sword of religious dissension as firmly as he had grasped his celebrated brand when he boarded the galley of Mustapha Bey, and the Netherlands were cut in twain, to be re-united nevermore. The separate treaty of the Walloon provinces was soon destined to separate the Celtic and Romanesque elements from the Batavian and Frisian.

---

1 Bor. 3. xiii. 3. 2 Ibid. 12. 3 Ibid. Meteoren. viii. 114. 4 Bor. b. xiii. Hooft. b. xiv. Meteoren. b. viii. passim.
portion of a nationality, which, thoroughly fused in all its parts, would have formed as admirable a compound of fire and endurance as history has ever seen.

Meantime, the grass was growing and the cattle were grazing in the streets of Ghent, where once the tramp of workmen going to and from their labour was like the movement of a mighty army. The great majority of the burghers were of the Reformed religion, and disposed to make effectual resistance to the Malcontents, led by the disaffected nobles. The city, considering itself the natural head of all the southern country, was indignant that the Walloon provinces should dare to reassert that supremacy of Romanism which had been so effectually suppressed, and to admit the possibility of friendly relations with a sovereign who had been virtually disowned. There were two parties, however, in Ghent. Both were led by men of abandoned and dangerous character. Imbize, the worse of the two demagogues, was inconstant, cruel, cowardly, and treacherous, but possessed of eloquence and a talent for intrigue. Ryhove was a bolder ruffian—wrathful, bitter, and unscrupulous. Imbize was at the time opposed to Orange, disliking his moderation, and trembling at his firmness. Ryhove considered himself the friend of the Prince. We have seen that he had consulted him previously to his memorable attack upon Aerschot, in the autumn of the preceding year, and we know the result of that conference. The Prince, with the slight dissimulation which belonged less to his character than to his theory of politics, and which was perhaps not to be avoided, in that age of intrigue, by any man who would govern his fellow-men, whether for good or evil, had winked at a project which he would not openly approve. He was not thoroughly acquainted, however, with the desperate character of the man, for he would have scorned an instrument so thoroughly base as Ryhove subsequently proved. The violence of that personage on the occasion of the arrest of Aerschot and his colleagues was mildness compared with the deed with which he now disgraced the cause of freedom. He had been ordered out from Ghent to oppose a force of Malcontents which was gathering in the neighbourhood of Courtray; but he swore that he would not leave the gates so long as two of the gentlemen whom he had arrested on the twenty-eighth of the previous October, and who yet remained in captivity, were still alive. These two prisoners were ex-procurator Visch and Blood-Councilor Hessels. Hessels, it seemed, had avowed undying hostility to Ryhove for the injury sustained at his hands, and he had sworn, "by his grey beard," that the ruffian should yet hang for the outrage. Ryhove, not feeling very safe in the position of affairs which then existed, and knowing that he could neither trust Imbize, who had formerly been his friend, nor the imprisoned nobles, who had ever been his implacable enemies, was resolved to make himself safe in one quarter at least, before he set forth against the Malcontents. Accordingly, Hessels and Visch, as they sat together in their prison, at chess, upon the 4th of October, 1578, were suddenly summoned to leave the house, and to enter a carriage which stood at the door. A force of armed men brought the order, and were sufficiently strong to enforce it. The prisoners obeyed, and the coach soon rolled slowly through the streets, left the Courtray gate, and proceeded a short distance along the road towards that city.

After a few minutes a halt was made. Ryhove then made his appearance at the carriage-window, and announced to the astonished prisoners that they were forthwith to be hanged upon a tree which stood by the roadside. He proceeded to taunt the aged Hessels with his threat against himself, and with his vow "by his grey

1 Van d. Vynckt, iii. 3.
2 Guicciardini, Descrip. Gandav.
3 Van d. Vynckt, iii. 33, 39. Bos, xiii. 5.
4 Hoefd. xiv. 599.
5 Ibid. xiii. 5.
6 Hoefd. xiv. 593. Bos, xiii. 5.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

beard.” “Such grey beard shalt thou never live thyself to wear, ruffian,” cried Hessels, stoutly—furious rather than terrified at the suddenness of his doom. “There thou liest, false traitor!” roared Ryhove in reply; and to prove the falsehood, he straightway tore out a handful of the old man’s beard, and fastened it upon his own cap like a plume. His action was imitated by several of his companions, who cut for themselves locks from the same grey beard, and decorated themselves as their leader had done. This preliminary ceremony having been concluded, the two aged prisoners were forthwith hanged on a tree, without the least pretence of trial or even sentence.\(^1\)

Such was the end of the famous councillor who had been wont to shout “ad patibulum” in his sleep. It was cruel that the fair face of civil liberty shewing itself after years of total eclipse, should be insulted by such bloody deeds on the part of her votaries. It was said that the crimes of men like Imbize and Ryhove should have cost more to the cause of religious and political freedom than the lives of twenty thousand such ruffians were worth. But for the influence of demagogues like these, counteracting the lofty efforts and pure life of Orange, the separation might never have occurred between the two portions of the Netherlands. The Prince had not power enough, however, nor the nascent commonwealth sufficient consistency, to repress the disorganising tendency of a fanatical Romanism on the one side, and a retaliatory and cruel ochlocracy on the other.

Such events, with the hatred growing daily more intense between the Walloons and the Ghenters, made it highly important that some kind of an accord should be concluded, if possible. In the country, the Malcontents, under pretence of protecting the Catholic clergy, were daily abusing and plundering the people, while in Ghen the clergy were maltreated, the cloisters pillaged, under the pretence of maintaining liberty.\(^2\) In this emergency the eyes of all honest men turned naturally to Orange.

Deputies went to and fro between Antwerp and Ghent. Three points were laid down by the Prince as indispensable to any arrangement—firstly, that the Catholic clergy should be allowed the free use of their property; secondly, that they should not be disturbed in the exercise of their religion; thirdly, that the gentlemen kept in prison since the memorable twenty-eighth of October should be released.\(^3\)

If these points should be granted, the Archduke Matthias, the states-general, and the Prince of Orange would agree to drive off the Walloon soldiery, and to defend Ghent against all injury.\(^4\) The two first points were granted, upon condition that sufficient guaranties should be established for the safety of the Reformed religion. The third was rejected, but it was agreed that the prisoners, Champagny, Swerveghem, and the rest—who, after the horrid fate of Hessels and Vlech, might be supposed to be sufficiently anxious as to their own doom—should have legal trial, and be defended in the meantime from outrage.\(^5\)

On the 3d of November, 1578, a formal act of acceptance of these terms was signed at Antwerp.\(^6\) At the same time, there was murmuring at Ghent, the extravagant portion of the liberal party averring that they had no intention of establishing the “religious peace” when they agreed not to molest the Catholics. On the 11th of November, the Prince of Orange sent messengers to Ghent in the name of the Archduke and the states-general, summoning the authorities to a faithful execution of the act of acceptance. Upon the same day the English envoy, Davidson, made an energetic representation to the same magistrates, declaring that the conduct of the Ghenters was exciting regret throughout the

---

\(^2\) Bor, xiii. Hoofd, xiv. Van der Vynckt,  
\(^3\) Bor, xiii. 5, seq.  
\(^4\) Ibid.  
\(^5\) See the Act of Acceptance; Bor, xiii. 5, seqq.  
\(^6\) Bor, xiii. 6, 7.
Image Breaking at Ghent.

world, and affording a proof that it was their object to protract, not suppress, the civil war which had so long been raging. Such proceedings, he observed, created doubts whether they were willing to obey any law or any magistracy. As, however, it might be supposed that the presence of John Casimir in Ghent at that juncture was authorised by Queen Elizabeth—insomuch as it was known that he had received a subsidy from her—the envoy took occasion to declare that her Majesty entirely disavowed his proceedings. He observed further that, in the opinion of her Majesty, it was still possible to maintain peace by conforming to the counsels of the Prince of Orange and of the states-general. This, however, could be done only by establishing the three points which he had laid down. Her Majesty likewise warned the Ghenters that their conduct would soon compel her to abandon the country's cause altogether, and, in conclusion, she requested, with characteristic thriftiness, to be immediately furnished with a city bond for forty-five thousand pounds sterling.  

Two days afterwards, envoys arrived from Brussels to remonstrate, in their turn, with the sister city, and to save her, if possible, from the madness which had seized upon her. They recalled to the memory of the magistrates the frequent and wise counsels of the Prince of Orange. He had declared that he knew of no means to avert the impending desolation of the fatherland save union of all the provinces and obedience to the general government. His own reputation, and the honour of his house, he felt now to be at stake; for, by reason of the offices which he now held, he had been ceaselessly calumniated as the author of all the crimes which had been committed at Ghent. Against these calumnies he had avowed his intention of publishing his defence.  

1 Bor. xiii. 7.  
2 Ibid, xiii. 8.  
3 "Als naest God niemand kennende die de gemenne sake en inwendig nood beter verzet et de remedien beter kan dirigen."—Bor, ubi sup.  

Thus reasoned the envoys from the states-general and from Brussels, but even while they were reasoning, a fresh tumult occurred at Ghent. The people had been inflamed by demagogues, and by the insane howlings of Peter Dathenus, the unfrocked monk of Poperingen, who had been the servant and minister both of the Pope and of Orange, and who now hated each with equal fervour. The populace, under these influences, rose in its wrath upon the Catholics, smote all their images into fragments, destroyed all their altar pictures, robbed them of much valuable property, and turned all the Papists themselves out of the city. The riot was so furious that it seemed, says a chronicler, as if all the inhabitants had gone raving mad.  

4 The drums beat the alarm, the magistrates went forth to expostulate, but no commands were heeded till the work of destruction had been accomplished, when the tumult expired at last by its own limitation. Affairs seemed more threatening than ever. Nothing more excited the indignation of the Prince of Orange than such senseless iconomachy. In fact, he had at one time procured an enactment by the Ghent authorities, making it a crime punishable with death. He was of Luther's opinion, that idol-worship was to be eradicated from the heart, and that then the idols in the churches would fall of themselves. He felt too with Landgrave William, that "the destruction of such worthless idols was ever avenged..."
The Rise of the Dutch Republic. [1578.

by torrents of good human blood."1 Therefore it may be well supposed that this fresh act of senseless violence, in the very teeth of his remonstrances, in the very presence of his envoys, met with his stern disapprobation. He was on the point of publishing his defence against the calumnies which his toleration had drawn upon him from both Catholic and Calvinist. He was deeply revolving the question, whether it were not better to turn his back at once upon a country which seemed so incapable of comprehending his high purposes, or seconding his virtuous efforts. From both projects he was dissuaded; and although bitterly wronged by both friend and foe, although feeling that even in his own Holland there were whispers against his purity, since his favouring inclinations towards Arjou had become the general topic, yet he still preserved his majestic tranquillity, and smiled at the arrows which fell harmless at his feet. "I admire his wisdom, daily more and more," cried Hubert Lantier: "I see those who profess themselves his friends causing him more annoyance than his foes; while, nevertheless, he ever remains true to himself, is driven by no tempests from his equanimity, nor provoked by repeated injuries to immo-late anger."

The Prince had that year been chosen unani-mously by the four members of Parliament to be governor of that province, but had again declined the place. The inhabitants, nevertheless, continuing the fur-est assurance that he would attend to his person, and respect for his authority. He was impelled to go to the city. His presence, and that alone, would restore the neighbors to their reason, but the task was not a grateful one. It was also not interrupted with danger, although this was a consideration which never influ-enced him from the commencement of his career to its close. Nature and his crew were capable of resorting to any extremity or any ambush, to destroy the man whom they feared and hated. The presence of John Casimir was an additional complication; for Orange, while he despised the man, was unwilling to offend his friends. Moreover, Casimir had professed a willingness to assist the cause, and to defer to the better judgment of the Prince. He had brought an army into the field, with which, however, he had accomplished nothing except a thorough pillaging of the peasantry. While, at the same time, he was loud in his demands upon the states to pay his soldiers' wages. The soldiers of the different armies who now overran the country, indeed, sided with each other in extravagant insolence. "Their outrages are most execrable," wrote Marquis Havré; "they demand the most exquisite food, and drink Champa-gne and Burgundy by the bucketful." Nevertheless, on the 4th of December, the Prince came to Ghent. He held constant and anxious conferences with the magistrates. He was received daily with John Casimir, whose vanity and extravagance of temper he managed with his usual skill. He even dined with him, and thus, by soothing difficulties and reconciling angry passions, he succeeded at last in obtaining the consent of all to a religious peace, which was published on the 5th of December 1576. It contained the same provisions as those of the project prepared and proposed during the previous summer throughout the Netherlands. Exercise of both reli-gions was established: mutual insults and insul-tations—whether by word, book, picture, song, or gesture,—were prohibited, under severe penalties, while all persons were sworn to pro- test the common tranquillity by blood, purse, and life. The Catholics, by virtue of this peace, re-entered into possession of their churches and close-
of collusion with his designs, and of a disposition to seek their private advantage and not the general good of the whole Netherlands; the imminent danger, which he had aggravated, that the Walloon provinces, actuated by such suspicions, would fall away from the "generality" and seek a private accord with Parma; these and similar sins of omission and commission were sharply and shrewdly set forth in the Queen’s epistle. 4

'Twas not for such marauding and intriguing work that she had appointed him her lieutenant, and furnished him with troops and subsidies. She begged him forthwith to amend his ways, for the sake of his name and fame, which were sufficiently soiled in the places where his soldiers had been plundering the country which they came to protect. 5

The Queen sent Daniel Rogers with instructions of similar import to the states-general, repeatedly and expressly disavowing Casimir’s proceedings and censuring his character. She also warmly insisted on her bonds. In short, never was unlucky prince more soundly berated by his superiors, more thoroughly disgraced by his followers. In this contemptible situation had Casimir placed himself by his rash ambition to prove before the world that German princes could bite and scratch like griffins and tigers as well as carry them in their shields. From this position Orange partly rescued him. He made his peace with the states-general. He smoothed matters with the extravagant Reformers, and he even extorted from the authorities of Ghent the forty-five thousand pounds bond, on which Elizabeth had insisted with such obstinacy. 6 Casimir repaid these favours of the Prince in the coin with which narrow minds and jealous tempers are apt to discharge such obligations—ingratitude. The friendship which he openly manifested at first grew almost immediately cool. Soon afterwards he left Ghent and departed for Germany, leaving behind

1 Green v. Prinz., Archives, etc., vi. 507, sqq. See the Accord in Bos., xiii. 10, 11.
2 Bos., xiii. 12.
3 Archives du Corrrespondance, vi. 479.
4 Bos., xiii. 13, sqq.
5 Ibid., xiii. 13.
6 Ibid., xiii. 11, sqq.
him a long and tedious remonstrance, addressed to the states-general, in which document he narrated the history of his exploits, and endeavoured to vindicate the purity of his character. He concluded this very tedious and superfluous manifesto by observing that—for reasons which he thought proper to give at considerable length—he felt himself "neither too useful nor too agreeable to the provinces." As he had been informed, he said, that the states-general had requested the Queen of England to procure his departure, he had resolved, in order to spare her and them inconvenience, to return of his own accord, "leaving the issue of the war in the high and mighty hand of God." 1

The estates answered this remonstrance with words of unlimited courtesy; expressing themselves "obliged to all eternity" for his services, and holding out vague hopes that the monies which he demanded on behalf of his troops should ere long be forthcoming. 2

Casimir having already answered Queen Elizabeth's reproachful letter by throwing the blame of his apparent misconduct upon the states-general, and having promised soon to appear before her Majesty in person, tarried accordingly but a brief season in Germany, and then repaired to England. Here he was feasted, flattered, caressed, and invested with the order of the Garter. 3 Pleased with royal blandishments, and highly enjoying the splendid hospitality of England, he quite forgot the "thirty thousand devils" whom he had left running loose in the Netherlands, while these wild soldiers, on their part, being absolutely in a starving condition—for there was little left for booty in a land which had been so often plundered—now had the effrontery to apply to the Prince of Parma for payment of their wages. 4

Alexander Farnese laughed heartily at the proposition, which he considered an excellent jest. It seemed in truth, a jest, although but a sorry one. Parma replied to the messenger of Maurice of Saxony who had made the proposition, that the Germans must be mad to ask him for money, instead of offering to pay him a heavy sum for permission to leave the country. Nevertheless, he was willing to be so far indulgent as to furnish them with passports, provided they departed from the Netherlands instantly. Should they interpose the least delay, he would set upon them without further preface, and he gave them notice, with the arrogance becoming a Spanish general, that the courier was already waiting to report to Spain the number of them left alive after the encounter. Thus deserted by their chief, and hectored by the enemy, the mercenaries, who had little stomach for fight without wages, accepted the passports proffered by Parma. 5 They revenged themselves for the harsh treatment which they had received from Casimir and from the states-general, by singing, everywhere as they retreated, a doggerel ballad—half Flemish, half German—in which their wrongs were expressed with uncouth vigour.

Casimir received the news of the departure of his ragged soldiery on the very day which witnessed his investment with the Garter by the fair hands of Elizabeth herself. 6 A few days afterwards he left England accompanied by an escort of lords and gentlemen, especially appointed for that purpose by the Queen. He landed in Flushing, where he was received with distinguished hospitality, by order of the Prince of Orange, and on the 14th of February, 1579, he passed through Utrecht. 7 Here he conversed freely at his lodgings in the "German House" on the subject of his vagabond troops, whose final adventures and departure seemed to afford him considerable amusement; and he, moreover, diverted his com-

1 See the document at length in Bor, xiii. 13-17.  
2 Ibid., xiii. 34, 35.  
3 Ibid., xiii. 34, sqq. Strada, Dec. 2, 1.  
5 Strada, 2, 1, 27, 28.  
6 Ibid., 2, 1, 28.  
7 Langest., ad Synnecum, 90; Groen v. Prins, Archives, etc., vi. 571, 572. Bor, xiii. 94 (ll.).
pany by singing, after supper, a few verses of the ballad already mentioned.\footnote{Bor—who heard the Duke sing the song at the “German House” in Utrecht, 5. xili. 34.} The Duke of Anjou, meantime, after disbanding his troops, had lingered for a while near the frontier. Upon taking his final departure, he sent his resident minister, Des Prunex, with a long communication to the states-general, complaining that they had not published their contract with himself, nor fulfilled its conditions. He excused, as well as he could, the awkward fact that his disband troopers had taken refuge with the Walloons, and he affected to place his own departure upon the ground of urgent political business in France, to arrange which his royal brother had required his immediate attendance. He furthermore most hypocritically expressed a desire for a speedy reconciliation of the provinces with their sovereign, and a resolution that—although for their sake he had made himself a foe to his Catholic Majesty—he would still interpose no obstacle to so desirable a result.\footnote{A translation of a single verse may serve as a specimen of the song:—}

\begin{quote}
O, have you been in Brabant, fighting for the states?
O, have you brought back anything except your broken pates?
O, I have been in Brabant, myself and all my mates.
\end{quote}

sandbank of female and royal coquetry. Those who judge only by the result, will be quick to censure a policy which might have had very different issue. They who place themselves in the period anterior to Anjou’s visit to England, will admit that it was hardly human not to be deceived by the political aspects of that moment. The Queen, moreover, took pains to upbraid the states-general, by letter, with their disrespect and ingratitude towards the Duke of Anjou—behaviour with which he had been “justly scandalised.” For her own part, she assured them of her extreme displeasure at learning that such a course of conduct had been held with a view to her especial contentment—“as if the person of Monsieur, son of France, brother of the King, were disagreeable to her, or as if she wished him ill;” whereas, on the contrary, they would best satisfy her wishes by shewing him all the courtesy to which his high degree and his eminent services entitled him.\footnote{Bor, xiii. 12, sqq.}

The estates, even before receiving this letter, had, however, acted in its spirit. They had addressed elaborate apologies and unlimited professions to the Duke. They thanked him heartily for his achievements, expressed unbounded regret at his departure, with sincere hopes for his speedy return, and promised “eternal remembrance of his heroic virtues.”\footnote{We’ll go no more to Brabant, unless our brains were addle.
We’re coming home on foot, we went there in the saddle;
For there’s neither gold nor glory got, in fighting for the states,” etc., etc.} They assured him, moreover, that should the first of the following March arrive without bringing with it an honourable peace with his Catholic Majesty, they should then feel themselves compelled to declare that the King had forfeited his right to the sovereignty of these provinces. In this case they concluded that, as the inhabitants would

\begin{quote}
“Sijn bewesen bystand en sijne hercike
degt ik zouden sy nimmermeer vergoven.”—Bor, xiii. 12, sqq.
\end{quote}
be then absolved from their allegiance to the Spanish monarch, it would then be in their power to treat with his Highness of Anjou concerning the sovereignty, according to the contract already existing.  

These assurances were ample, but the states, knowing the vanity of the man, offered other inducements, some of which seemed sufficiently puerile. They promised that “his statue, in copper, should be placed in the public squares of Antwerp and Brussels, for the eternal admiration of posterity,” and that a “crown of olive-leaves should be presented to him every year.” The Duke—not inexpressible to such courteous solicitations—was willing to achieve both immortality and power by continuing his friendly relations with the states, and he answered accordingly in the most courteous terms. The result of this interchange of civilities it will be soon our duty to narrate.

At the close of the year the Count of Bossu died, much to the regret of the Prince of Orange, whose party—since his release from prison by virtue of the Ghent treaty—he had warmly espoused. “We are in the deepest distress in the world,” wrote the Prince to his brother, three days before the Count’s death, “for the dangerous malady of M. de Bossu. Certainly, the country has much to lose in his death, but I hope that God will not so much afflict us.” Yet the calumniators of the day did not scruple to circulate, nor the royalist chroniclers to perpetuate, the most senseless and infamous fables on the subject of this nobleman’s death. He died of poison, they said, administered to him “en oyers,” by command of the Prince of Orange, who had likewise made a point of standing over him on his death-bed, for the express purpose of snatching at the Catholic ceremonies by which his dying agonies were solaced. Such were the tales which grave historians have recorded concerning the death of Maximilian of Bossu, who owed so much to the Prince. The command of the states’ army, a yearly pension of five thousand florins, granted at the special request of Orange but a few months before, and the profound words of regret in the private letter just cited, are a sufficient answer to such slanders.

The personal courage and profound military science of Parma were invaluable to the royal cause; but his subtle, unscrupulous, and subterranean combinations of policy were even more fruitful at this period. No man ever understood the art of bribery more thoroughly or practised it more skilfully. He bought a politician, or a general, or a grandee, or a regiment of infantry, usually at the cheapest price at which those articles could be purchased, and always with the utmost delicacy with which such traffic could be conducted. Men conveyed themselves to government for a definite price—fixed accurately in florins and groats, in places and pensions—while a decent gossamer of conventional phraseology was ever allowed to float over the nakedness of unblushing treason. Men high in station, illustrious by ancestry, brilliant in valour, hastened themselves, and swindled a confiding country for as ignoble motives as ever led counterfeiters or braves to the gallows, but they were dealt with in public as if actuated only by the laziest principles. Behind their ancient shields, ostentatiously embazoned with fidelity to church and king, they thrust forth their itching paws with the mendicity which would be hardly credible, were it not attested by the monuments more perennial than brass, of their own letters and recorded conversations.

Already, before the accession of Parma to power, the true way to discover the provinces had been indicated by the famous treason of the Seliger.
de la Motte. This nobleman commanded a regiment in the service of the states-general, and was Governor of Gravelines. On promise of forgiveness for all past disloyalty, of being continued in the same military posts under Philip which he then held for the patriots, and of a "merced" large enough to satisfy his most avaricious dreams, he went over to the royal government. The negotiation was conducted by Alonso Curiel, financial agent of the King, and was not very nicely handled. The paymaster, looking at the affair purely as a money transaction—which in truth it was—had been disposed to drive rather too hard a bargain. He offered only fifty thousand crowns for La Motte and his friend Baron Montigny, and assured his government that those gentlemen, with the soldiers under their command, were very dear at the price. La Motte haggled very hard for more, and talked pathetically of his services and his wounds—for he had been a most distinguished and courageous campaigner—but Alonso was implacable. Moreover, one Robert Bien-Aimé, Prior of Renity, was present at all the conferences. This ecclesiastic was a busy intriguer, but not very adroit. He was disposed to make himself useful to government, for he had set his heart upon putting the mitre of Saint Omer upon his head, and he had accordingly composed a very ingenious libel upon the Prince of Orange, in which production, "although the Prior did not pretend to be Apelles or Lysippus," he hoped that the Governor-General would recognise a portrait coloured to the life. This accomplished artist was, however, not so successful as he was picturesque and industrious. He was inordinately vain of his services, thinking himself, said Alonso, spherically, worthy to be carried in a pro-

1 Reconciliation des Provinces Wallones, 1, 2-12, 392, 418-419, 227-234, 271, 272.
2 Cartas interceptadas do Contador Alonso Curiel ao Pn de Parma, Plantin, Anvers, 1774, etc.—"con cien mil renons i muy alto precio."
3 "— con cien mil renons y heridas," etc.—Ibid.
4 Rentent to Prince of Parma, Rec. Prov. Wall., III. 97. MS.
5 "— que alvn V. Altem de mandar traer en armas y armas," etc. Lettres interceptées de Curiel.
had sent Saint Aldegonde to Arras.
The states of Artois, then assembled in that city, had made much difficulty in according to an assessment of seven thousand florins laid upon them by the central authority. The occasion was skilfully made use of by the agents of the royal party to weaken the allegiance of the province, and of its sister Wallon provinces, to the patriot cause. Saint Aldegonde made his speech before the assembly, taking the ground boldly, that the war was made for liberty of conscience and of fatherland, and that all were bound, whether Catholic or Protestant, to contribute to the sacred fund. This vote passed, but it was provided, that a moiety of the assessment should be paid by the ecclesiastical branch, and the stipulation excited a tremendous uproar. The clerical bench regarded the tax as both a robbery and an affront. "We came nearly to knife-playing," said the most distinguished priest in the assembly, "and if we had done so, the ecclesiastics would not have been the first to cry enough." They all withdrew in a rage, and held a private consultation upon "these exorbitant and more than Turkish demands." John Sarsin, Prior of Saint Vaast, the keenest, boldest, and most indefatigable of the royal partisans of that epoch, made them an artful harangue. This man—a better politician than the other prior—was playing for a mitre too, and could use his cards better. He was soon to become the most invaluable agent in the great treason preparing. No one could be more delicate, noiseless, or unequipped, and he was soon recognised both by Governor-General and King as the individual above all others to whom the re-establishment of the royal authority over the Wallon provinces was owing.

With the shoes of swiftness on his feet, the coat of darkness on his back, and the wishing purse in his hand, he sped silently and invisibly from one great Malcontent chieftain to another, buying up centurions, and captains, and common soldiers; circumventing Orangists, Ghent democrats, Anjou partisans; weaving a thousand intrigues, ventilating a hundred hostile mines, and passing unharmed through the most serious dangers and the most formidable obstacles. Eloquent, too, at a pinch, he always understood his audience, and upon this occasion unsheathed the most incisive, if not the most brilliant weapon which could be used in the debate. It was most expensive to be patriotic, he said, while silver was to be saved, and gold to be earned by being loyal. They ought to keep their money to defend themselves, not give it to the Prince of Orange, who would only put it into his private pocket on pretence of public necessities. The Ruward would soon be sinking back to his lair, he observed, and leave them all in the fangs of their enemies. Meantime, it was better to rush into the embrace of a bountiful king, who was still holding forth his arms to them. They were approaching a precipice, said the Prior; they were entering a labyrinth; and not only was the "semipenal loss of body and soul impending over them, but their property was to be taken also, and the cat to be thrown against their legs." By this sudden descent into a very common proverbial expression, Sarsin meant to intimate that they were getting themselves into a difficult position, in which they were sure to reap both danger and responsibility.

The harangue had much effect upon his hearers, who were now more than ever determined to rebel against the and spirit. They are in the Collection of Correspondence between Don John, Parma, and others, and the Malcontent nobles, entitled "Reconciliation des Provinces Wallonnes," five vols., Royal Archives in Brussels. An examination of these most interesting documents is indispensable to a thorough understanding of the permanent separation of the Netherlans effected in the years 1578 and 1579.
government which they had so recently accepted, preferring, in the words of the Prior, "to be maltreated by their prince, rather than to be barbarously tyrannized over by a heretic." So much anger had been excited in celestial minds by a demand of thirty-five hundred florins.

Saint Aldegonde was entertained in the evening at a great banquet, followed by a theological controversy, in which John Sarrasin complained that "he had been attacked upon his own dung-hill." Next day the distinguished patriot departed on a canvassing tour among the principal cities; the indefatigable monk employing the interval of his absence in aggravating the hostility of the Artesian orders to the pecuniary demands of the general government. He was assisted in his task by a peremptory order which came down from Brussels, ordering, in the name of Matthias, a levy upon the ecclesiastical property, "rings, jewels, and reliquaries," unless the clerical contribution should be forthcoming. The rage of the benediction was now intense, and by the time of Saint Aldegonde's return a general opposition had been organised. The envoy met with a chilling reception; there were no banquets any more—no discussions of any kind. To his demands for money, "he got a fine aïst," said Saint Vaast; and as for polemics, the only conclusive argument for the country would be, as he was informed on the same authority, the "finishing of Orange and of his minister along with him." More than once had the Prior intimated to government—as so many had done before him—that to "despatch Orange, author of all the troubles," was the best preliminary to any political arrangement. From Philip and his Governor-General, down to the humblest partisan, this conviction had been daily strengthening. The knife or bullet of an assassin

was the one thing needful to put an end to this incarnated rebellion.¹

Thus matters grew worse and worse in Artois. The Prior, busier than ever in his schemes, was one day arrested along with other royal emissaries, kept fifteen days "in a stinking cellar, where the scullion washed the dishes," and then sent to Antwerp to be examined by the states-general. He behaved with great firmness, although he had good reason to tremble for his neck. Interrogated by Leoninus on the part of the central government, he boldly avowed that these pecuniary demands upon the Walloon estates, and particularly upon their ecclesiastical branches, would never be tolerated. "In Alva's time," said Sarrasin, "men were flayed, but not torn." Those who were more attached to their skin than their fleece might have thought the practice in the good old times of the Duke still more objectionable. Such was not the opinion of the Prior and the rest of his order. After an unsatisfactory examination and a brief duress, the busy ecclesiastic was released; and as his secret labours had not been detected, he resumed them after his return more ardently than ever.²

A triangular intrigue was now fairly established in the Walloon country. The Duke of Alençon's head-quarters were at Mons; the rallying-point of the royalist faction was with La Motte at Gravelines; while the ostensible leader of the states' party, Viscount Ghent, was governor of Artois, and supposed to be supreme in Arras. La Motte was provided by government with a large fund of secret-service money, and was instructed to be very liberal in his bribes to men of distinction; having a tender regard, however, to the excessive demands of this nature now daily made upon the royal purse.³

The "little Count," as the Prior called

vant tout le monde l'adorait et tentait pour son seigneur, maintenant l'on ose bien dire qu'il faut tuer et son minstre aussi."—

MS. letters of Saint Vaast, before cited.

² MS. letters of Saint Vaast, Rec. Prov. Wall., i. 369, 270, MS.

³ Parma to La Motte, Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. 140-142, MS.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic. [1578.

Lalain, together with his brother, Baron Montigny, were considered highly desirable acquisitions for government, if they could be gained. It was thought, however, that they had the “Nœur-de-lyn imprinted too deeply upon their hearts,” for the effect produced upon Lalain, governor of Hainault, by Margaret of Valois, had not yet been effaced. His brother also had been disposed to favour the French prince, but his mind was more open to conviction. A few private conferences with La Motte, and a course of ecclesiastical tuition from the Prior—whose golden opinions had irresistible resonance—soon wrought a change in the Malcontent chief’s mind. Other leading seigneurs were secretly dealt with in the same manner. Lalain, Héze, Havré, Capres, Egmont, and even the Viscount of Ghent, all seriously inclined their ears to the charmer, and looked longingly and lovingly at the wily Prior rolled in his tangles before them—“to mischief swift.” Few had yet declared themselves; but of the grandees who commanded large bodies of troops, and whose influence with their order was paramount, none were safe for the patriot cause throughout the Walloon country.

The nobles and ecclesiastics were ready to join hands in support of church and king, but in the city of Arras, the capital of the whole country, there was a strong Orange and liberal party. Gossen, a man of great wealth, one of the most distinguished advocates in the Netherlands, and possessing the gift of popular eloquence to a remarkable degree, was the leader of this bourgeois faction. In the earlier days of Parma’s administration, just as a thorough union of the Walloon provinces in favour of the royal government had nearly been formed, these Orangists of Arras raked a daring stroke. Inflamed by the harangues of Goessen, and supported by five hundred foot soldiers and fifty troopers under one Captain Ambrose, they rose against the city magistracy, whose sentiments were unequivocally for Parma, and thrust them all into prison.

They then constituted a new board of fifteen, some Catholics and some Protestants, but all patriots, of whom Goessen was chief. The stroke took the town by surprise, and was for a moment successful. meantime, they depended upon assistance from Brabant. The royal and ecclesiastical party, however, not so easily deflected, and an old soldier, named Bourgeois, loudly denounced Captain Ambrose, the general of the revolutionary movement, as a vile coward, and affirmed that with thirty good men-at-arms he would undertake to pound the whole rebel army to powder—“a pack of scarecrows,” he said, “who were not worth as many owls for military purposes.”

Three days after the imprisonment of the magistracy, a strong Catholic rally was made in their behalf in the Fishmarket, the ubiquitous Prior of Saint Vaast flitting about among the Malcontents, blithe and busy as usual when storms were brewing. Matthew Doucet, of the revolutionary faction—a man both martial and pacific in his pursuits, being eminent both as a gingerbread baker and a sword-player—a war he would have the little monk’s

26, 1578) in Rec. Prov. Wall., i. 440—445.—The whole episode is also most admirably related in a manuscript fragment by an eyewitness, entitled “Discours Veritable de ce qui s’est passé en la ville d’Arras,” Bibl. de Bourgogne, N°. 6042. The author was Pontus Payen, Seigneur des Essarts, a warm Catholic and partisan of the royal cause, whose larger work—also unpublished—upon the earlier troubles in the Netherlands, has been often cited in previous parts of this history. A chapter in the history of René de France is also devoted to this series of events; Troubles des P. B., iv. c. 8.

4 “Faisers des pains d’espices, opére et jouer d’espée.”—Letter from Arras, br-
life if he had to take him from the very horns of the altar; but the Prior had braved sharper threats than these. Moreover, the grand altar would have been the last place to look for him on that occasion. While Gosson was making a tremendous speech in favour of conscience and fatherland at the Hotel de Ville, practical John Sarasin, purse in hand, had challenged the rebel general, Ambrose, to private combat. In half an hour, that warrior was routed, and fled from the field at the head of his scarecrows, for there was no resisting the power before which the Montignys and the La Mottes had succumbed. Eloquent Gosson was left to his fate. Having the Catholic magistracy in durance, and with nobody to guard them, he felt, as was well observed by an ill-natured contemporary, like a man holding a wolf by the ears, equally afraid to let go or to retain his grasp.

His dilemma was soon terminated. While he was deliberating with his colleagues—Mordaq, an old campaigner, Cruguet, Bertoul, and others—whether to stand or fly, the drums and trumpets of the advancing royalists were heard. In another instant the Hotel de Ville was swarming with men-at-arms, headed by Bourgeois, the veteran who had expressed so slighting an opinion as to the prowess of Captain Ambrose. The tables were turned, the miniature revolution was at an end, the counter-revolution effected. Gosson and his confederates escaped out of a back door, but were soon afterwards arrested. Next morning, Baron Capres, the great Malcontent seignior, who was stationed with his regiment in the neighbourhood, and who had long been secretly coquetting with the Prior and Parma, marched into the city at the head of a strong detachment, and straightway proceeded to erect a very tall gibbet in front of the Hotel de Ville. This looked practical in the eyes of the liberated and reinstated magistrates, and Gosson, Cruguet, and the rest were summoned at once before them. The advocate thought, perhaps, with a sigh, that his judges, so recently his prisoners, might have been the fruit for another gallows-tree, had he planted it when the ground was his own; but taking heart of grace, he encouraged his colleagues—now his fellow-culpits. Cruguet, undismayed, made his appearance before the tribunal, arrayed in a corset of proof, with a golden hilted sword, a scarf embroidered with pearls and gold, and a hat bravely plumaged with white, blue, and orange feathers—the colours of William the Silent—of all which finery he was stripped, however, as soon as he entered the court.

The process was rapid. A summons from Brussels was expected every hour from the general government, ordering the cases to be brought before the federal tribunal, and as the Walloon provinces were not yet ready for open revolt, the order would be an inconvenient one. Hence the necessity for haste. The superior court of Artois, to which an appeal from the magistrates lay, immediately held a session in another chamber of the Hotel de Ville, while the lower court was trying the prisoners, and Bertoul, Cruguet, Mordaq, with several others, were condemned in a few hours to the gibbet. They were invited to appeal, if they chose, to the council of Artois, but hearing that the court was sitting next door, so that there was no chance of a rescue in the streets, they declared themselves satisfied with the sentence. Gosson had not been tried, his case being reserved for the morrow.

Meantime, the short autumnal day had drawn to a close. A wild, stormy, rainy night then set in, but still the royalist party—citizens and soldiers intermingled—all armed to the teeth, and uttering fierce cries, while the whole scene was fitfully illuminated with the glare of flambeaux and blazing tar-barrels, kept watch in the open square around the city hall. A series of terrible Rembrandt-like night-pieces

---

1 Letter from Arras, MS.
2 P. Payen, Troubles d'Arras, MS.
3 Ibid.
succeeded—grim, fantastic, and gory. Bertoul, an old man, who for years had so surely felt himself destined to his present doom that he had kept a gibbet in his own house to accustom himself to the sight of the machine, was led forth the first, and hanged at ten in the evening.\(^1\) He was a good man, of perfectly blameless life, a sincere Catholic, but a warm partisan of Orange.

Valentine de Mordacq, an old soldier, came from the Hotel de Ville to the gallows at midnight. As he stood on the ladder, amid the flaming torches, he broke forth into furious excursions, wagging his long white beard to and fro, making hideous grimaces, and cursing the hard fate which, after many dangers on the battle-field and in beleaguered cities, had left him to such a death. The cord strangled his curses. Cruguet was executed at three in the morning, having obtained a few hours' respite in order to make his preparations, which he accordingly occupied himself in doing as tranquilly as if he had been setting forth upon an agreeable journey. He looked like a phantom, according to eye-witnesses, as he stood under the gibbet, making a most pious and Catholic address to the crowd.

The whole of the following day was devoted to the trial of Gosson. He was condemned at nightfall, and heard by appeal before the superior court directly afterwards. At midnight of the 25th of October 1578, he was condemned to lose his head, the execution to take place without delay. The city guards and the infantry under Capres still bivouacked upon the square; the howling storm still continued, but the glare of fagots and torches made the place as light as day. The ancient advocate, with haggard eyes and features distorted by wrath, walking between the sheriff and a Franciscan monk, advanced through the long lane of halberdiers, in the grand hall of the Town House, and thence emerged upon the scaffold erected before the door. He shook his fists with rage at the released magistrates, so lately his prisoners, exclaiming that to his misplaced mercy it was owing that his head, instead of their own, was to be placed upon the block. He bitterly reproached the citizens for their cowardice in shrinking from dealing a blow for their fatherland, and in behalf of one who had so faithfully served them. The clerk of the court then read the sentence amid a silence so profound that every syllable he uttered, and every sigh and ejaculation of the victim, were distinctly heard in the most remote corner of the square. Gosson then, exclaiming that he was murdered without cause, knelt upon the scaffold. His head fell while an angry imprecation was still upon his lips.\(^2\)

Several other persons of lesser note were hanged during the week—among others, Matthew Doucet, the truculent man of gingerbread, whose rage had been so judiciously but so unsuccessful directed against the Prior of Saint Vaast. Captain Ambrose, too, did not live long to enjoy the price of his treachery. He was arrested very soon afterwards by the states' government in Antwerp, put to the torture, hanged and quartered.\(^3\) In troublous times like those, when honest men found it difficult to keep their heads upon their shoulders, rogues were apt to meet their deserts, unless they had the advantage of lofty lineage and elevated position.

"Illae crucem sceleris pretium tulit, hic diadema."

This municipal revolution and counter-revolution, obscure though they seem, were in reality of very grave importance. This was the last blow struck for freedom in the Walloon country. The failure of the movement made that scission of the Netherlands certain, which has endured till our days, for the influence of the ecclesiastics in the states of Artois and Hainault, together with the military power of the Malcontent grandees, whom Parma and John Sarsarin had purchased, could no longer be resisted.

---

\(^1\) P. Payen, Troubles d'Arras, MS.
\(^2\) Ibid.
\(^3\) Letter of Saint Vaast, Rec. Prov. Wall. fo. 41, 42, MS.
The liberty of the Celtic provinces was sold, and a few high-born traitors received the price. Before the end of the year (1578) Montigny had signified to the Duke of Alençon that a prince who avowed himself too poor to pay for soldiers was no master for him.\(^1\) The Baron, therefore, came to an understanding with La Motte and Sarrasin, acting for Alexander Farnese, and received the command of the infantry in the Walloon provinces, a mercer of four thousand crowns a year, together with as large a slice of La Motte's hundred thousand florins for himself and soldiers, as that officer could be induced to part with.\(^2\) Baron Capres, whom Sarrasin—being especially enjoined to purchase him—had, in his own language, "sweated blood and water" to secure, at last agreed to reconcile himself with the King's party upon condition of receiving the government-general of Artois, together with the particular government of Hesdin—very lucrative offices, which the Viscount of Ghent then held by commission of the states-general.\(^3\) That politic personage, however, whose disinclination to desert the liberty party which had clothed him with such high functions, was apparently so marked that the Prior had caused an ambush to be laid both for him and the Marquis of Havré, in order to obtain bodily possession of two such powerful enemies,\(^4\) now, at the last moment, displayed his true colours. He consented to reconcile himself also, on condition of receiving the royal appointment to the same government which he then held from the patriot authorities, together with the title of Marquis of Richebourg, the command of all the cavalry in the royalist provinces, and certain rewards in money besides. By holding himself at a high mark, and keeping at a distance, he had obtained his price. Capres, for whom Philip, at Parma's suggestion, had sent the commission as governor of Artois and of Hesdin, was obliged to renounce those offices, notwithstanding his earlier "reconciliation," and the "blood and water" of John Sarrasin.\(^5\) Ghent was not even contented with these guerdons, but insisted upon the command of all the cavalry, including the band of ordnance which, with handsome salary, had been assigned to Lalain, as a part of the wages for his treason,\(^6\) while the "little Count"—fiery as his small and belligerent cousin\(^7\) whose exploits have been recorded in the earlier pages of this history—boldly taxed Parma and the King with cheating him out of his promised reward, in order to please a noble whose services had been less valuable than those of the Lalain family.\(^8\) Having thus obtained the lion's share, due, as he thought, to his well known courage and military talents, as well as to the powerful family influence which he wielded—his brother, the Prince of Espinoy, hereditary seneschal of Hainault, having likewise rallied to the King's party—Ghent joyously intimated to Parma his intention of helping himself to the two best horses in the Prince's stables in exchange for those lost at Gembours,\(^9\) in which disastrous action he had commanded the cavalry for the states. He also sent two terriers to Farnese, hoping that they would "prove

\(^1\) Mémoire de ce qui s'est passé à l'entrevue entre le Sr. de Montigny, Comte de Lafling, Duc d'Arleschot, Marquis d'Havré, et al.; Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. 104, 105, MS.
\(^2\) MS. letters of Parma, Saint Vaast, Montigny, La Motte, et al.; Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. 82-87, 118; iii. 190; iv. 221.
\(^3\) Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. 130-133, MS.
\(^4\) Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. f. 73. MS.—Compare Correspond. Alex. Farnese, p. 61.—Parma to Philip II.
\(^5\) MS. letters of Vicomte de Gand to Philip II., and of Philip II. to Vicomte de Gand, Marquis de Richebourg; Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. 197, 210.—Compare Correspondance, Alex. Farnese, 81, 85, 89, 97.
\(^6\) Rec. Prov. Wall., iv. 223, Lalain to Parma, MS.
\(^7\) Anthony, Count of Hoogstraaten, the friend of Orange.
\(^8\) "— J'espère que S. M. ne jugera les services que j'ai fait et fais journellement à icelle maindre que ceux du dit Marquis de Richebourg, et que pour son seul respect elle ne m'estimera si peu, de me frander, de ce que le Comte de Mansfeld m'avait auparavant fait entendre de la part de V. E., etc.—Lalain to Parma, Rec. Prov. Wall., iv. 276, M.S. Parma to Lalain, Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. 75-77.
\(^9\) Rec. Prov. Wall., ii. 203-204, MS.
more useful than beautiful.”¹ The Prince might have thought, perhaps, as much of the Viscount’s treason.

John Sarrasin, the all-accomplished Prior, as the reward of his exertions, received from Philip the abbey of Saint Vaast, the richest and most powerful ecclesiastical establishment in the Netherlands. At a subsequent period his grateful sovereign created him Archbishop of Cambrai.²

Thus the “troubles of Arras”—as they were called—terminated. Gossau, the respected, wealthy, eloquent, and virtuous advocate, together with his colleagues—Catholic, but at the same time patriots and liberals—died the death of felons for their unfortunate attempt to save their fatherland from an ecclesiastical and venal conspiracy; while the actors in the plot, having all performed well their parts, received their full meed of prizes and applause.

The private treaty by which the Walloon provinces of Artois, Hainault, Lille, Douay, and Orchies, united themselves in a separate league was signed upon the 6th of January 1579, but the final arrangements for the reconciliation of the Malcontent nobles and their soldiers were not completed until April 6th, upon which day a secret paper was signed at Mount Saint Eloi.

The secret current of the intrigue had not, however, flowed on with perfect smoothness until this placid termination. On the contrary, there had been much bickering, heart-burning, and mutual suspicions and recriminations. There had been violent wranglings among the claimants of the royal rewards. Lalain and Capres were not the only Malcontents who had cause to complain of being cheated of the promised largesses. Montigny, in whose favour Parma had distinctly commanded La Motte to be liberal of the King’s secret-service money, furiously charged the Governor of Gravelines with having received a large supply of gold from Spain, and of “locking the rascal counters from his friends,” so that Parma was obliged to quiet the Baron, and many other barons in the same predicament, out of his own purse. All complained bitterly, too, that the King, whose promises had been so profuse to the nobles while the reconciliation was pending, turned a deaf ear to their petitions and left their letters unanswered, after the deed was accomplished.³

The unlucky Prior of Renty, whose disclosures to La Motte concerning the Spanish sarcasms upon his venality, had so nearly caused the preliminary negotiation with that seignior to fail, was the cause of still further mischief through the interception of Alonzo Curiel’s private letters. Such revelations of corruption, and of contempt on the part of the corruptors, were eagerly turned to account by the states’ government. A special messenger was despatched to Montigny ⁴ with the intercepted correspondence, accompanied by an earnest prayer that he would not contaminate his sword and his noble name by subserviency to men who despised even while they purchased traitors. That noble, both confirmed and exasperated, was for a moment inclined to listen to the voice of honour and patriotism, but reflection and solitude induced him to pocket up his wrongs and his “merced” together. The states-general also sent the correspondence to the Walloon provincial authorities, with an eloquent adress, begging them to study well the pitiful part which La Motte had enacted in the private comedy then performing, and to behold as in a mirror their own position, if they did not recede ere it was too late.⁵

The only important effect produced by the discovery was upon the Prior of Renty himself. Ottavio Gonzaga,

¹ Rec. Prov. Wall., iii. 127, Marquis de Richebourg to Parma, M3.
² Correspondance Alex. Farnese, 41, 45, 55.
the intimate friend of Don John, and now high in the confidence of Parma, wrote to La Motte, indignantly denying the truth of Bien Aime’s tattle, and denying that not a word had ever been uttered by himself or by any gentleman in his presence to the disparagement of the Governor of Gravelines. He added that if the Prior had worn another coat, and were of quality equal to his own, he would have made him eat his words or a few inches of steel. In the same vehement terms he addressed a letter to Bien Aime himself. Very soon afterwards, notwithstanding his coat and his quality, that unfortunate ecclesiastic found himself beset one dark night by two soldiers, who left him severely wounded and bleeding nearly to death upon the high road, but escaping with life, he wrote to Parma, recounting his wrongs and the “sword-thrust in his left thigh,” and made a demand for a merced.

The Prior recovered from this difficulty only to fall into another, by publishing what he called an apologue, in which he charged that the reconciled nobles were equally false to the royal and to the rebel government, and that, although “the fatted calf had been killed for them, after they had so long been feeding with perverse heretical pigs,” they were, in truth, as mutinous as ever, being bent upon establishing an oligarchy in the Netherlands, and dividing the territory among themselves, to the exclusion of the sovereign. This naturally excited the wrath of the Viscount and others. The Seigneur d’Auberville, in a letter written in what the writer himself called the “gross style of a gendarme,” charged the Prior with maligning honourable lords and—in the favourite colloquial phrase of the day—with attempting “to throw the cat against their legs.” The real crime of the meddling priest, however, was to have let that troublesome animal out of the bag. He was accordingly waylaid again, and thrown into prison by Count Lalain. While in durance he published an abject apology for his apologue, explaining that his allusions to “returned prodigals,” “heretic swine,” and to “Sodom and Gomorrah,” had been entirely misconstrued. He was, however, retained in custody until Parma ordered his release on the ground that the punishment had been already sufficient for the offence. He then requested to be appointed Bishop of Saint Omer, that see being vacant. Parma advised the King by no means to grant the request—the Prior being neither endowed with the proper age nor discretion for such a dignity—but to bestow some lesser reward, in money or otherwise, upon the discomfited ecclesiastic, who had rendered so many services and incurred so many dangers.

The states-general and the whole national party regarded, with prophetic dismay, the approaching dismemberment of their common country. They sent deputation on deputation to the Walloon states, to warn them of their danger, and to avert, if possible, the fatal measure. Meantime, as by the already accomplished movement, the “generality” was fast disappearing, and was indeed but the shadow of its former self, it seemed necessary to make a vigorous effort to restore something like unity to the struggling country. The Ghent Pacification had been their outer wall, ample enough and strong enough to enclose and to protect all the provinces. Treachery and religious fanaticism had undermined the bulwark almost as soon as reared. The whole beleaguered country was in danger of becoming utterly exposed to a foe who grew daily more threatening. As in besieged cities, a sudden breakwater is thrown up internally, when the outward defences are crumbling—so the energy of Orange had been silently preparing the Union of Utrecht, as a temporary defence until the foe should be beaten back, and there should be time to decide on their future course of action.


2 Priuer de Renti to Parma, MS., Rec. Prov. Wall., iii. 146.


4 Gron. v. Prinsterer; vi. 587.
During the whole month of December, an active correspondence had been carried on by the Prince and his brother John with various agents in Gelderland, Friesland, and Groningen, as well as with influential personages in the more central provinces and cities. Gelderland, the natural bulwark to Holland and Zeeland, commanding the four great rivers of the country, had been fortunately placed under the government of the trusty John of Nassau, that province being warmly in favour of a closer union with its sister provinces, and particularly with those more nearly allied to itself in religion and in language. Already, in December (1578), Count John, in behalf of his brother, had laid before the states of Holland and Zeeland, assembled at Goudern, the project of a new union with “Gelderland, Ghent, Friesland, Utrecht, Overijssel, and Groningen.” The proposition had been favourably entertained, and commissioners had been appointed to confer with other commissioners at Utrecht, whenever they should be summoned by Count John. The Prince, with the silence and caution which belonged to his whole policy, chose not to be the ostensible mover in the plan himself. He did not choose to start, unnecessarily the Archduke Matthis—the cipher who had been placed by his side, whose sudden subtraction would occasion more loss than his presence had conferred benefit. He did not choose to be cried out upon as infringing the Ghent Pacification, although the whole world knew that treaty to be hopelessly annulled. For these and many other weighty motives, he proposed that the new Union should be the apparent work of other hands, and only offered to him and to the country, when nearly completed.

After various preliminary meetings in December and January, the deputies of Gelderland and Zutphen, with Count John, stadholder of these provinces, at their head, met with the deputies of Holland, Zeeland, and the provinces between the Ems and the Lauwers, early in January, 1579, and on the 23d of that month, without waiting longer for the deputies of the other provinces, they agreed provisionally upon a treaty of union which was published afterwards on the 28th, from the Town House of Utrecht.

This memorable document—which is ever regarded as the foundation of the Netherland Republic—contained twenty-six articles.

The preamble stated the object of the union. It was to strengthen, not to forsake the Ghent Pacification, already nearly annihillated by the force of foreign soldiery. For this purpose, and in order more conveniently to defend themselves against their foes, the deputies of Gelderland, Zutphen, Holland, Zeeland, Utrecht, and the Frisian provinces, thought it desirable to form a still closer union. The contracting provinces agreed to remain eternally united, as if they were but one province. At the same time, it was understood that each was to retain its particular privileges, liberties, laudable and traditioy custom, and other laws. The cities, corporations, and inhabitants of every province were to be guaranteed as to their ancient constitutions. Disputes concerning these various statutes and customs were to be decided by the neal tribunals, by “good men,” or by aveable compromise. The provinces, by virtue of the Union, were to defend each other “with life, goods, and blood,” against all force brought against them in the King’s name or behalf. They were also to defend each other against all foreign or domestic potentates, provinces, or cities, provided such defence were controlled by the “generality” of the union. For the express occasioned by the protection of the provinces, certain imposits and expenses were to be equally assessed and collectable.

---

2 Ibid., vi. 479, seqq.
3 Kluit, Hist. der Holl. Staatsreg., i. 176, sqq., in id. 21, sqq.
4 The whole document is given by Hur. xiii. 26-50, and, somewhat abridged, by Wagenaar, vii. 239-282; Metselaar, ii. 211; 153; Thassis, v. 330, seqq.; Hood, xi. 446-415.
5 Articles, 1, 2, &c.
ed. No truce or peace was to be concluded, no war commenced, no impost established affecting the "generality," but by unanimous advice and consent of the provinces. Upon other matters the majority was to decide; the votes being taken in the manner then customary in the assembly of states-general. In case of difficulty in coming to a unanimous vote when required, the matter was to be referred to the stadholders then in office. In case of their inability to agree, they were to appoint arbitrators, by whose decision the parties were to be governed. None of the united provinces, or of their cities or corporations, were to make treaties with other potentates or states, without consent of their confederates. If neighbouring princes, provinces, or cities, wished to enter into this confederacy, they were to be received by the unanimous consent of the united provinces. A common currency was to be established for the confederacy. In the matter of divine worship, Holland and Zealand were to conduct themselves as they should think proper. The other provinces of the union, however, were either to conform to the religious peace already laid down by Archduke Matthias and his council, or to make such other arrangements as each province should for itself consider appropriate for the maintenance of its internal tranquillity—provided always that every individual should remain free in his religion, and that no man should be molested or questioned on the subject of divine worship, as had been already established by the Ghent Pacification. As a certain dispute arose concerning the meaning of this important clause, an additional paragraph was inserted a few days afterwards. In this it was stated that there was no intention of excluding from the confederacy any province or city which was wholly Catholic, or in which the number of the Reformed was not sufficiently large to entitle them, by the religious peace, to public worship. On the contrary, the intention was to admit them, provided they obeyed the articles of union, and conducted themselves as good patriots; it being intended that no province or city should interfere with another in the matter of divine service. Disputes between two provinces were to be decided by the others, or—in case the generality were concerned—by the provisions of the ninth article.

The confederates were to assemble at Utrecht whenever summoned by those commissioned for that purpose. A majority of votes was to decide on matters then brought before them, even in case of the absence of some members of the confederacy, who might, however, send written proxies. Additions or amendments to these articles could only be made by unanimous consent. The articles were to be signed by the stadholders, magistrates, and principal officers of each province and city, and by all the train-bands, fraternities, and socialities which might exist in the cities or villages of the union. Such were the simple provisions of that instrument which became the foundation of the powerful Commonwealth of the United Netherlands. On the day when it was concluded, there were present deputies from five provinces only. Count John of Nassau signed first, as stadholder of Gelderland and Zutphen. His signature was followed by those of four deputies from that double province; and the envoys of Holland, Zealand, Utrecht and the Frisian provinces, then signed the document.

The Prince himself, although in
reality the principal director of the movement, delayed appending his signature until May the 3d, 1579.\textsuperscript{1} Herein he was actuated by the reasons already stated, and by the hope which he still entertained that a wider union might be established, with Matthijs for its nominal chief. His enemies, as usual, attributed this patriotic delay to baser motives. They accused him of a desire to assume the governor-generalship himself, to the exclusion of the Archduke—an insinuation which the states of Holland took occasion formally to denounce as a calumny.\textsuperscript{2} For those who have studied the character and history of the man, a defence against such slander is superfluous. Matthijs was but the shadow, Orange the substance. The Archduke had been accepted only to obviate the evil effects of a political intrigue, and with the express condition that the Prince should be his lieutenant-general in name, his master in fact. Directly after his departure in the following year, the Prince’s authority, which nominally departed also, was re-established in his own person, and by express act of the states-general.\textsuperscript{3}

The Union of Utrecht was the foundation-stone of the Netherland Republic; but the framers of the confederacy did not intend the establishment of a Republic, or of an independent commonwealth of any kind. They had not forsaken the Spanish monarch. It was not yet their intention to forsake him. Certainly the act of union contained no allusion to such an important step. On the contrary, in the brief preamble they expressly stated their intention to strengthen the Ghent Pacification, and the Ghent Pacification acknowledged obedience to the King. They intended no political innovation of any kind. They expressly accepted matters as they were. All statutes, charters, and privileges of provinces, cities, or corporations were to remain untouched. They intended to form neither an independent state nor an independent federal system.\textsuperscript{4} No doubt the formal renunciation of allegiance, which was to follow within two years, was contemplated by many as a future probability; but it could not be foreseen with certainty.

The simple act of union was not regarded as the constitution of a commonwealth. Its object was a single one—defence against a foreign oppressor. The contracting parties bound themselves together to spend all their treasure and all their blood in expelling the foreign soldiery from their soil. To accomplish this purpose, they carefully abstained from intermeddling with internal politics and with religion. Every man was to worship God according to the dictates of his conscience. Every combination of citizens, from the provincial states down to the humblest rhetoric club, was to retain its ancient constitution. The establishment of a Republic, which lasted two centuries, which threw a girdle of rich dependencies entirely round the globe, and which attained so remarkable a height of commercial prosperity and political influence, was the result of the Utrecht Union; but it was not a premeditated result. A state, single towards the rest of the world, a unit in its external relations, while permitting internally a variety of sovereignties and institutions—in many respects the prototype of our own much more extensive and powerful union—was destined to spring from the act thus signed by the envoys of five provinces. Those envoys were acting, however, under the pressure of extreme necessity, and for what was believed an evanescent purpose. The future confederacy was not to resemble the system of the German empire, for it was to acknowledge no single head. It was to differ from the Achaian league, in the far inferior amount of power which it permitted to its general assembly, and in the consequently greater proportion of sovereign attributes which were re-

\textsuperscript{1} Bor, 2, xiii. 50.
\textsuperscript{3} Kluit, I. 180, 181, note 15.
\textsuperscript{4} Kluit, Holl. Staatsreg., I. 182, sqq.—Compare Groen v. Prinst., Archives de la Maison d’Orange, vi. 689-694.
tained by the individual states. It was, on the other hand, to furnish a closer and more intimate bond than that of the Swiss confederacy, which was only a union for defence and external purposes, of cantons otherwise independent. It was, finally, to differ from the American federal commonwealth in the great feature that it was to be merely a confederacy of sovereignties, not a representative Republic. Its foundation was a compact, not a constitution. The contracting parties were states and corporations, who considered themselves as representing small nationalities de jure et de facto, and as succeeding to the supreme power at the very instant in which allegiance to the Spanish monarch was renounced. The general assembly was a collection of diplomatic envoys, bound by instructions from independent states. The voting was not by heads, but by states. The deputies were not representatives of the people, but of the states; for the people of the United States of the Netherlands never assembled—as did the people of the United States of America two centuries later—to lay down a constitution, by which they granted a generous amount of power to the union, while they reserved enough of sovereign attributes to secure that local self-government which is the life-blood of liberty.

The Union of Utrecht, narrowed as it was to the nether portion of that country which, as a whole, might have formed a commonwealth so much more powerful, was in origin a proof of this lamentable want of patriotism. Could the jealousy of great nobles, the rancour of religious differences, the Catholic bigotry of the Walloon population on the one side, contending with the democratic insanity of the Ghent populace on the other, have been restrained within bounds by the moderate counsels of William of Orange, it would have been possible to unite seventeen provinces instead of seven, and to save many long and blighting years of civil war.

The Utrecht Union was, however, of inestimable value. It was time for some step to be taken, if anarchy were not to reign until the inquisition and absolutism were restored. Already, out of Chaos and Night, the coming Republic was assuming substance and form. The union, if it created nothing else, at least constructed a league against a foreign foe whose armed masses were pouring faster and faster into the territory of the provinces. Farther than this it did not propose to go. It maintained what it found. It guaranteed religious liberty, and accepted the civil and political constitutions already in existence. Meantime, the defects of those constitutions, although visible and sensible, had not grown to the large proportions which they were destined to attain.

Thus by the Union of Utrecht on the one hand, and the fast approaching reconciliation of the Walloon provinces on the other, the work of decomposition and of construction went hand in hand.

CHAPTER II.

Parma's feint upon Antwerp—He invests Maastricht—Deputation and letters from the states-general from Brussels, and from Parma, to the Walloon provinces—Active negotiations by Orange and by Farnese—Walloon envoys in Parma's camp before Maastricht—Festivities—The Treaty of Reconciliation—Rejoicings of the royalist party—Comedy enacted at the Paris theatres—Religious tumults in Antwerp, Utrecht, and other cities—Religious Peace enforced by Orange—Philip Egmont's unsuccessful attempt upon Brussels—Siege of Maastricht—Failure at the Tongres gate—Mining and countermining—Partial destruction of the Tongres ravelin—Simultaneous attack upon the Tongres and Bois-le-Duc gates—The Spaniards repulsed with great loss—Gradual encroachments of the besiegers—Bloody contests—The town taken—Horrible massacre—Triumphal entrance and solemn thanksgiving—Calumnious attacks upon Orange—Renewed troubles in Ghent—Imbisse and Dalenius—The presence of the Prince solicited—Coup d'état of Imbisse—Ordar restored, and Imbisse expelled by Orange.

1 Compare Klis, I, 193, 194.
The political movements in both directions were to be hastened by the military operations of the opening season. On the night of the 2d of March, 1579, the Prince of Parma made a demonstration against Antwerp. A body of three thousand Scotch and English, lying at Borgerhout, was rapidly driven in, and a warm skirmish ensued, directly under the walls of the city. The Prince of Orange, with the Archduke Matthias, being in Antwerp at the time, remained on the fortifications, superintending the action, and Parma was obliged to retire after an hour or two of sharp fighting, with a loss of four hundred men. This demonstration was, however, only a feint. His real design was upon Maestricht, before which important city he appeared in great force, ten days afterwards, when he was least expected.

Well fortified, surrounded by a broad and deep moat, built upon both sides of the Meuse, upon the right bank of which river, however, the portion of the town was so inconsiderable that it was merely called the village of Wyk, this key to the German gate of the Netherlands was, unfortunately, in braye but feeble hands. The garrison was hardly one thousand strong; the trained bands of burghers amounted to twelve hundred more; while between three and four thousand peasants, who had taken refuge within the city walls, did excellent service as sappers and miners. Parma, on the other hand, had appeared before the walls with twenty thousand men, to which number he received constant reinforcements. The Bishop of Liege, too, had sent him four thousand pioneers—a most important service; for mining and countermining was to decide the fate of Maestricht.

Early in January the royalists had surprised the strong chateau of Carpen, in the neighbourhood of the city, upon which occasion the garrison were all hanged by moonlight on the trees in the orchard. The commandant shared their fate; and it is a curious fact that he had, precisely a year previously, hanged the royalist captain, Blomert, on the same spot, who, with the rope around his neck, had foretold a like doom to his destroyer.

The Prince of Orange, feeling the danger of Maestricht, lost no time in warning the states to the necessary measures, imploring them “not to fall asleep in the shade of a peace negotiation,” while meantime Parma threw two bridges over the Meuse, above and below the city, and then invested the place so closely that all communication was absolutely suspended. Letters could pass to and fro only at extreme peril to the messengers, and all possibility of reinforcing the city at the moment was cut off.

While this eventful siege was proceeding, the negotiations with the Walloons were ripening. The siege and the conferences went hand in hand. Besides the secret arrangements already described for the separation of the Walloon provinces, there had been much earnest and eloquent remonstrance on the part of the states-general and of Orange—many solemn embassies and public appeals. As usual, the Pacification of Ghent was the two-sided shield which hung between the parties to cover or to justify the blows which each dealt at the other. There is no doubt as to the real opinion entertained concerning that famous treaty by the royal party. “Through the peace of Ghent,” said Saint Vaast, “all our woes have been brought upon us.” La Motte informed Parma that it was necessary to pretend a respect for the Pacification, however, on account of its popularity, but that it was well understood by the leaders of the Walloon movement, that the intention was to restore the system of Charles the Fifth. Parma

---

1 Bor, xiii. 35, 39. Hooft, xv. 620.
2 Ibid., xiii. 36. Hooft, ubi sup. Strada, 2, ii. 58.
3 Bentivoglio, 2, lib. i. 225. Bor, xiii. 36. According to Strada (2, ii. 81), 3000.
4 Letter of G. de Merode, Ordinaria De-
Deputations to the Walloons.

signified his consent to make use of that treaty as a basis, "provided always it were interpreted healthily, and not dislocated by cavillations and sinister interpolations, as had been done by the Prince of Orange." The Malcontent generals of the Walloon troops were inexpressibly anxious lest the cause of religion should be endangered; but the arguments by which Parma convinced those military casualties as to the compatibility of the Ghent peace with sound doctrine have already been exhibited. The influence of the reconciled nobles was brought to bear with fatal effect upon the states of Artois, Hainault, and of a portion of French Flanders. The Gallic element in their blood, and an intense attachment to the Roman ceremonial, which distinguished the Walloon population from their Batavian brethren, were used successfully by the wily Parma to destroy the unity of the revolted Netherlands. Moreover, the King offered good terms. The monarch, feeling safe on the religious point, was willing to make liberal promises upon the political questions. In truth, the great grievance of which the Walloons complained was the insolence and intolerable outrages of the foreign soldiers. This, they said, had alone made them malcontent. It was, therefore, obviously the cue of Parma to promise the immediate departure of the troops. This could be done the more easily, as he had no intention of keeping the promise.

Meantime the efforts of Orange, and of the states-general, where his influence was still paramount, were unceasing to counteract the policy of Parma. A deputation was appointed by the generality to visit the estates of the Walloon provinces. Another was sent by the authorities of Brussels. The Marquis of Havré, with several colleagues on behalf of the states-general, waited upon the Viscount of Ghent, by whom they were received with extreme insolence. He glared upon them, without moving, as they were admitted to his presence; "looking like a dead man, from whom the soul had entirely departed." Recovering afterwards from this stony trance of indignation, he demanded a sight of their instructions. This they courteously refused, as they were accredited not to him, but to the states of Artois. At this he fell into a violent passion, and threatened them with signal chastisement for daring to come thither with so reasonable a purpose. In short, according to their own expression, he treated them "as if they had been rogues and vagabonds." The Marquis of Havré, high-born though he was, had been sufficiently used to such conduct. The man who had successively served and betrayed every party, who had been the obsequious friend and the avowed enemy of Don John within the same fortnight, and who had been able to swallow and inwardly digest many an insult from that fiery warrior, was even vain to brook the insolence of Robert Melun.

The papers which the deputation had brought were finally laid before the states of Artois, and received replies as prompt and bitter as the addresses were earnest and eloquent. The Walloons, when summoned to hold to thategis of national unity, the Ghent peace, replied that it was not they, but the heretic portion of the states-general, who were for dashed to the ground. The Ghent treaty was intended to impair the supremacy of the Catholic religion, said those provinces, which were already on the point of separating for ever from the rest. The Ghent treaty was intended expressly to destroy the inquisition and the placards, answered the national party. Moreover, the "very marrow of that treaty" was the departure of the foreign soldiers, who were even then overrunning the land. The Walloons answered that

1 Bor, Hooff, Strada, ubi sup. Archives, etc., de la Maison d'Orange, vi. 610-618.
2 Strada, 2, i. 50, 51.
3 Bor, xiii. 87, 88. Hooff, xv. 622, sqq. Motiers, ix. 150, 151.
4 Report of the Commissioners, Bor, xiii. 45.
5 "De substantie en principaal morg van solve pacificatie."—Bor, xiii. 59.
Alexander had expressly conceived the withdrawal of the troops. "Believe not the flouting and the piping of the crafty foe," urged the patriots. Promises are made profusely enough—but only to lure you to perdition. Your enemies allow you to slake your hunger and thirst with this idle hope of the troops' departure, but you are still in fetters, although the chain be of Spanish pinchbeck, which you mistake for gold. "'Tis not we," cried the Walloons, "who wish to separate from the generality; 'tis the generality which separates from us. We had rather die the death than not maintain the union." 2 In the very same breath, however, they boasted of the excellent terms which the monarch was offering, and of their strong inclination to accept them. "Kings, struggling to recover a lost authority, always promise golden mountains and every sort of miracles," replied the patriots; 3 but the warning was uttered in vain.

Meantime the deputation from the city of Brussels arrived, on the 28th of March at Mons, in Hainault, where they were received with great courtesy by Count de Lalain, governor of the province. The enthusiasm with which he had espoused the cause of Queen Margaret and her brother Anjou had cooled, but the Count received the Brussels envoys with a kindness in marked contrast with the brutality of Melun. He made many fine speeches—protesting his attachment to the union, for which he was ready to shed the last drop of his blood—entertained the deputies at dinner, proposed toasts to the prosperity of the united provinces, and dismissed his guests at last with many flowery professions. After dancing attendance for a few days, however, upon the estates of the Wallon provinces, both sets of deputies were warned to take their instant de-

1 "De vijand hem sal behelpen met het woord van de Religie aeng met een bedriegerslijk pijnken of fluiten om ons met de Turre te vangen."—Address of the States-General, March 3, 1579. Bor, xiii. 41.
2 Bor, xiii. 33.
3 "Gewoont slui to belovens goude berge.
4 parature as mischief-makers and rebels. They returned, accordingly, to Brussels, bringing the written answers which the estates had vouchsafed to send. 4

The states-general, too, inspired by William of Orange, addressed a solemn appeal to their sister provinces, thus about to abjure the bonds of relationship for ever. 5 It seemed right, once for all, to grapple with the Ghent Pacification for the last time, and to strike a final blow in defence of that large, statesmanlike interpretation, which alone could make the treaty live. This was done eloquently and logically. The Walloons were reminded that at the epoch of the Ghent peace the number of Reformers outside of Holland and Zealand was supposed small. Now the new religion had spread its roots through the whole land, and innumerable multitudes desired its exercise. If Holland and Zealand chose to "re-establish the Catholic worship within their borders, they could manifestly do so without violating the treaty of Ghent. Why then was it not competent to other provinces, with equal allegiance to the treaty, to sanction the Reformed religion within their limits? 6

Parma, on his part, publicly invited the states-general, by letter, to sustain the Ghent treaty by accepting the terms offered to the Walloons, and by restoring the system of the Emperor Charles, of very lofty memory. To this superfluous invitation the states-general replied, on the 19th of March, that it had been the system of the Emperor Charles, of lofty memory, to maintain the supremacy of Catholicism and of Majesty in the Netherlands by burning Netherlanders—a custom which the states, with common accord, had thought it desirable to do away with. 7

4 Bor, xili. 44. Hooff, xv. 622, sqq.
5 Bor (xii. 39-42) gives the text in full.
6 Address of the States, apud Bor, 3, xiii. 46, sqq.
7 Letter of the States-general.—Ibid., xiii. 49.
In various fervently-written appeals by Orange, by the states-general, and by other bodies, the wavering provinces were warned against seduction. They were reminded that the Prince of Parma was using this minor negotiation "as a second string to his bow," that nothing could be more puerile than to suppose the Spaniards capable, after securing Maastricht, of sending away their troops—thus "deserting the bride in the midst of the honeymoon." They expressed astonishment at being invited to abandon the great and general treaty which had been made upon the theatre of the whole world by the intervention of the principal princes of Christendom, in order to partake in underhand negotiation with the commissioners of Parma—men, "who, it would not be denied, were felons and traitors." They warned their brethren not to embark on the enemy's ships in the dark, for that, while chaffering as to the price of the voyage, they would find that the false pilots had hoisted sail and borne them away in the night. In vain would they then seek to reach the shore again. The example of La Motte and others, "bird-lined with Spanish gold," should be salutary for all—men who were now driven forward with a whip, laughed to scorn by their new masters, and forced to drink the bitter draught of humiliation along with the sweet poison of bribery. They were warned to study well the intercepted letters of Curiel, in order fully to fathom the deep designs and secret contempt of the enemy.1

Such having been the result of the negotiations between the states-general and the Walloon provinces, a strong deputation now went forth from those provinces, towards the end of April, to hold a final colloquy with Parma, then already busied with the investment of Maastricht. They were met upon the road with great ceremony, and escorted into the presence of Farnese with drum, trumpet, and flaunting banners.2 He received them with stately affability, in a magnificently decorated pavilion, carelessly inviting them to a repast, which he called an afternoon's lunch, but which proved a most sumptuous and splendidly appointed entertainment.3 This "trifling foolish banquet" finished, the deputies were escorted, with great military parade, to the lodgings which had been provided for them in a neighbouring village. During the period of their visit, all the chief officers of the army and the household were directed to entertain the Walloons with showy festivals, dinners, suppers, dances, and carousals of all kinds. At one of the most brilliant of these revels—a magnificent ball, to which all the matrons and maids of the whole country round had been bidden—the Prince of Parma himself unexpectedly made his appearance. He gently rebuked the entertainers for indulging in such splendid hospitality without, at least, permitting him to partake of it. Charmingly affable to the ladies assembled in the ball-room, courteous, but slightly reserved, towards the Walloon envoys, he excited the admiration of all by the splendid decorum of his manners. As he moved through the halls, modulating his steps in grave cadence to the music, the dignity and grace of his deportment seemed truly majestic; but when he actually danced a measure himself the enthusiasm was at its height.4 They should, indeed, be rustics, cried the Walloon envoys in a breath, not to give the hand of fellowship at once to a Prince so condescending and amiable.5 The exclamation seemed to embody the general wish, and to foreshadow a speedy conclusion.

Very soon afterwards a preliminary accord was signed between the King's government and the Walloon provinces.

---

2 Stada, 2, i, 49, sqq.
3 Regis epulis quas exstensit ad superbum vocabulum, pomeridianam gustomloneum.
4 Strada, 2, i, 58, who describes the scene with laughable gravity.
5 Ibid.—"Agreste se plus nimio visum iri, nisi alio semel amabilissque ingenii viro manus darent."
The provisions on his Majesty’s part were sufficiently liberal. The religious question furnishing no obstacle, it was comparatively easy for Philip to appear benignant. It was stipulated that the provincial privileges should be respected; that a member of the King’s own family, legitimately born, should always be Governor-General, and that the foreign troops should be immediately withdrawn. The official exchange and ratification of this treaty were delayed till the 4th of the following September, but the news that the reconciliation had been definitely settled soon spread through the country. The Catholics were elated, the patriots dismayed. Orange—the “Prince of Darkness,” as the Walloons of the day were fond of calling him—still unwilling to despair, reluctant to accept this dismemberment, which he foresew was to be a perpetual one, of his beloved country, addressed the most passionate and solemn adjurations to the Walloon provinces, and to their military chieftains. He offered all his children as hostages for his good faith in keeping sacredly any covenant which his Catholic countrymen might be willing to close with him. It was in vain. The step was irretrievably taken; religious bigotry, patrician jealousy, and wholesale bribery, had severed the Netherlands in twain for ever. The friends of Romanism, the enemies of civil and religious liberty, exulted from one end of Christendom to the other, and it was recognised that Parma had indeed, achieved a victory which although bloodless, was as important to the cause of absolutism as any which even his sword was likely to achieve.

The joy of the Catholic party in Paris manifested itself in a variety of ways. At the principal theatre an uncouth pantomime was exhibited, in which his Catholic Majesty was introduced upon the stage, leading by a halter a sleek cow, typifying the Netherlands. The animal by a sudden effort, broke the cord, and capered wildly about. Alexander of Parma hasted to fasten the fragments together while sundry personages, representing the states-general, seized her by the horns, some leaping upon her back, others calling upon the bystanders to assist in holding the restive beast. The Emperor, the King of France, and the Queen of England—which last personage was observed now to smile upon one party, now to affect deep sympathy with the other—remained stationary; but the Duke of Alençon rushed upon the stage, and caught the cow by the tail. The Prince of Orange and Hans Casimir then appeared with a bucket, and set themselves busily to milk her, when Alexander again seized the halter. The cow gave a plunge, upset the pail, prostrated Casimir with one kick and Orange with another, and then followed Parma with docility as he led her back to Philip. This seems not very “admirable fooling,” but it was highly relished by the polite Parisians of the sixteenth century.

There is something almost comic in the preamble to the ratification. “Certain good personages in our province of Artois,” etc., says Philip, “scandalous in the service of God, and desirous to escape danger to their property, and seeing the attempt to establish over the ecclesiastics, nobles, and good burgesses, a popular tyranny, which, by exorbitant contributions, is gnawing the nation to the bone, having at length opened their own eyes, have done their best to awaken their neighbours,” etc.

1 The preliminary accord was signed May 17, 1679. A copy was sent by the Prince of Orange to the united states, on August 1, 1679.—Bor. xiii. 85-98. Tratado de Reconciliacion de las Provincias d’Artois, Hayman, Lille, Douay, y Orchies; Rec. Prov. Wall., iii. f. 238-246. MS. The terms of the treaty were not bad. The Genti Pacification was to be maintained and the foreign troops were to be removed. Unfortunately the secret correspondence of the parties shews that the faithful observance of that pacification was very far from their thoughts, while the subsequent history of the country was to prove the removal of the troops to have been a comedy, in which the principal actor soon renounced the part which he had reluctantly consented to sustain.

2 Rec. Prov. Wall., iii. f. 179, 180. MS.—

3 “Le Prince d’Orange, qu’ils nommeront en ce temps Prince des Ténèbres,” etc.—Renom de France, iv. c. xii., MS. At least, in pour Tom’s phrase, “the prince of darkness was a gentleman.”

4 Strada, 2, l. 65. 6 Ib. 2, l. 65, 55.
and has been thought worthy of record by classical historians.

The Walloon accord was an auspicious prelude, in the eyes of the friends of absolutism, to the negotiations which were opened in the month of May, at Cologne. Before sketching, as rapidly as possible, those celebrated but barren conferences, it is necessary, for the sake of unity in the narrative, to cast a glance at certain synchronical events in different parts of the Netherlands.

The success attained by the Catholic party in the Walloon negotiations had caused a corresponding bitterness in the hearts of the Reformers throughout the country. As usual, bitterness had begot bitterness; intolerance engendered intolerance. On the 28th of May, 1579, as the Catholics of Antwerp were celebrating the Ommegang—the same festival which had been the exciting cause of the memorable tumults of the year sixty-five—the irritation of the populace could not be repressed. The mob rose in its wrath to put down these demonstrations—which, taken in connection with recent events, seemed ill-timed and insolent—of a religion whose votaries then formed but a small minority of the Antwerp citizens. There was a great tumult. Two persons were killed. The Archduke Matthias, who was himself in the Cathedral of Notre Dame assisting at the ceremony, was in danger of his life. The well-known cry of "paapen uit!" (out with the papists) resounded through the streets, and the priests and monks were all hustled out of town amid a tempest of execrations. Orange did his utmost to quell the mutiny, nor were his efforts fruitless—for the uproar, although seditious and disgraceful, was hardly sanguinary. Next day the Prince summoned the magistracy, the Monday council, the guild officers, with all the chief municipal functionaries, and expressed his indignation in decided terms. He protested that if such tumults, originating in that very spirit of intolerance which he most deplored, could not be repressed for the future, he was determined to resign his offices, and no longer to affect authority in a city where his counsellors were derided. The magistrates, alarmed at his threats, and sympathising with his anger, implored him not to desert them, protesting that if he should resign his offices, they would instantly lay down their own. An ordinance was then drawn up and immediately proclaimed at the Town House, permitting the Catholics to re-enter the city, and to enjoy the privileges of religious worship. At the same time, it was announced that a new draft of a religious peace would be forthwith issued for the adoption of every city. A similar tumult, arising from the same cause, at Utrecht, was attended with the like result. On the other hand, the city of Brussels was astonished by a feeble and unsuccessful attempt at treason, made by a youth who bore an illustrious name. Philip, Count of Egmont, eldest son of the unfortunate Lamoral, had command of a regiment in the service of the States. He had, besides, a small body of cavalry in immediate attendance upon his person. He had for some time felt inclined—like the Lalains, Meluns, La Mottes, and others—to reconcile himself with the Crown, and he wisely thought that the terms accorded to him would be more liberal if he could bring the capital of Brabant with him as a peace-offering to his Majesty. His residence was in Brussels. His regiment was stationed outside the gates, but in the immediate neighbourhood of the city. On the morning of the 4th of June he despatched his troopers—as had been frequently his custom—on various errands into the country. On their return, after having summoned the regiment, they easily mastered and butchered the guard at the gate through which they had re-entered, supplying their place with men from their own ranks. The Egmont regiment then came marching through the gate in

1 Bor. xiii. 67.
2 Ibid. Meteren ix. 158.
3 Bor. xiii. 65.
4 Ibid., 70-73.
5 Ibid., xiii. 66, sqq. Meteren, ix. 158.
6 Hoofd, xv. 637, sqq.
good order—Count Philip at their head—and proceeded to station themselves upon the Grande Place in the centre of the city. All this was at dawn of day. The burghers, who looked forth from their houses, were astounded and perplexed by this movement at so unwonted an hour, and hastened to seize their weapons. Egmont sent a detachment to take possession of the palace. He was too late. Colonel Van der Tympel, commandant of the city, had been beforehand with him, had got his troops under arms, and now secured the rebellious detachment. Meantime, the alarm had spread. Armed burghers came from every house, and barricades were hastily thrown up across every one of the narrow streets leading to the square. Every issue was closed. Not a man of Egmont's adherents—if he indeed had adherents among the towns—men dared to show his face. The young traitor and his whole regiment, drawn up on the Grande Place, were completely entrapped. He had not taken Brussels, but assuredly Brussels had taken him. All day long he was kept in his self-elected prison and pillory, bursting with rage and shame. His soldiers, who were without meat or drink, became insolent and uproarious, and he was doomed also to hear the bitter and well-merited taunts of the townspeople. A thousand stinging gibes, suggested by his name and the locality, were mercilessly launched upon him. He was asked if he came thither to seek his father's head. He was reminded that the morrow was the anniversary of that father's murder—upon that very spot—by those with whom the son would now make his reasonable peace. He was bidden to tear up but a few stones from the pavement beneath his feet, that the hero's blood might ery out against him from the very ground. Tears of shame and fury sprang from the young man's eyes as he listened to these biting sarcasms, but the night closed upon that memorable square, and still the Count was a prisoner.

Eleven years before, the summer stars had looked down upon a more dense array of armed men within that place. The preparations for the pompous and dramatic execution, which on the morrow was to startle all Europe, had been carried out in the midst of a hushed and overawed population; and now, on the very anniversary of the midnight in which that scaffold had risen, should not the grand spectacle of the victim have started from the grave to chide his traitorous son?

Thus for a whole day and night was the baffled conspirator compelled to remain in the ignominious position which he had selected for himself. On the morning of the 5th of June he was permitted to depart, by a somewhat inexplicable indulgence, together with all his followers. He rode out of the gate at early dawn, contemptible and crest-fallen, at the head of his regiment of traitors, and shortly afterwards—pillaging and levying black mail as he went—made his way to Montigny's quarters.  

It might have seemed natural, after such an exhibition, that Philip Egmont should accept his character of renegade, and confess his intention of reconciling himself with the murderers of his father. On the contrary, he addressed a letter to the magistracy of Brussels, denying with vehemence "any intention of joining the party of the pernicious Spaniards," warmly protesting his zeal and affection for the states, and denouncing the " perverse inventors of these calumnies against him as the worst enemies of the poor afflicted country." The magistrates replied by expressing their inability to comprehend how the Count, who had suffered villainous wrongs from the Spaniards, such as he could never sufficiently deplore or avenge, should ever be willing to enslave himself to those tyrants. Nevertheless, exactly at the moment of this correspondence, Egmont was in close negotiation with Spain, having fifteen days before the
Preparations for Defence.

1579.]

357

date of his letter to the Brussels senate, conveyed to Parma his resolution to “embrace the cause of his Majesty and the ancient religion”—an intention which he vaunted himself to have proved “by cutting the throats of three companies of states’ soldiers at Nivelle, Grandmont, and Ninove.” Parma had already written to communicate the intelligence to the King, and to beg encouragement for the Count. In September, the monarch wrote a letter to Egmont, full of gratitude and promises, to which the Count replied by expressing lively gratification that his Majesty was pleased with his little services by showing profound attachment to Church and King, and by asking eagerly for money, together with the government of Aloot. He soon became singularly importunate for rewards and promotion, demanding, among other posts, the command of the “band of ordnance,” which had been his father’s. Parma, in reply, was prodigal of promises, reminding the young noble “that he was serving a sovereign who well knew how to reward the distinguished exploits of his subjects.” Such was the language of Philip the Second and his Governor to the son of the headless hero of Saint Quentin; such was the fawning obsequiousness with which Egmont could kiss that royal hand reeking with his father’s blood.

Meanwhile the siege of Maastricht had been advancing with steady precision. To military minds of that epoch—perhaps of later ages—this achievement of Parma seemed a masterpiece of art. The city commanded the Upper Meuse, and was the gate into Germany. It contained thirty-four thousand inhabitants. An army, numbering almost as many souls, was brought against it; and the number of deaths by which its capture was at last effected, was probably equal to that of a moiety of the population. To the technical mind, the siege no doubt seemed a beautiful creation of human intelligence. To the honest student of history, to the lover of human progress, such a manifestation of intellect seems a sufficiently sad exhibition. Given, a city with strong walls and towers, a slender garrison and a devoted population on one side; a consummate chieftain on the other, with an army of veterans at his back, no interruption to fear, and a long season to work in; it would not seem to an unsophisticated mind a very lofty exploit for the soldier to carry the city at the end of four months’ hard labour.

The investment of Maastricht was commenced upon the 12th of March 1579. In the city, besides the population, there were two thousand peasants, both men and women, a garrison of one thousand soldiers, and a trained burgher guard, numbering about twelve hundred. The name of the military commandant was Melchior. Sebastian Tappin, a Lorraine officer of much experience and bravery, was next in command, and was, in truth, the principal director of the operations. He had been despatched thither by the Prince of Orange, to serve under La Noue, who was to have commanded in Maastricht, but had been unable to enter the city. Feeling that the siege was to be a close one, and knowing how much depended upon the issue, Sebastian lost no time in making every needful preparation for coming events. The walls were strengthened everywhere; shafts were sunk, preparatory to the countermining operations which were soon to become necessary; the moat was deepened and cleared, and the forts near the gates were put in estimated at twenty thousand men, and four thousand had fallen in the two assaults of April alone—Bor, ubi sup.


Strada, 2, ii. 59, 159. At the termination of the siege, the army of Parma was

8 Bor, xiii. 86. Hoofd, xv. 628. Meteren, ix. 154.—Compare Strada, 2, ii. 59, who reckons the civic guards at six thousand, and the boors at as many more.
thorough repair. On the other hand, Alexander had encircled the city, and had thrown two bridges, well fortified, across the river. There were six gates to the town, each provided with ravelins, and there was a doubt in what direction the first attack should be made. Opinions wavered between the gate of Bois-le-Duc, next the river, and that of Tongres on the south-western side, but it was finally decided to attempt the gate of Tongres.

Over against that point the platforms were accordingly constructed, and after a heavy cannonade from forty-six great guns continued for several days, it was thought, by the 25th of March, that an impression had been made upon the city. A portion of the brick curtain had crumbled, but through the breach was seen a massive terreplein, well moated, which, after six thousand shots already delivered on the outer wall—still remained uninhured. It was recognised that the gate of Tongres was not the most assailable, but rather the strongest portion of the defences, and Alexander therefore determined to shift his batteries to the gate of Bois-le-Duc. At the same time, the attempt upon that of Tongres was to be varied, but not abandoned. Four thousand miners, who had passed half their lives in burrowing for coal in that anthracite region, had been furnished by the Bishop of Liege, and this force was now set to their subterranean work. A mine having been opened at a distance, the besiegers slowly worked their way towards the Tongres gate, while at the same time the more ostensible operations were in the opposite direction. The besieged had their miners also, for the peasants in the city had been used to work with mattock and pickaxe. The women, too, enrolled themselves into companies, chose their officers—or "mine-mistresses," as they were called—and did good service daily in the caverns of the earth. Thus a whole army of gnomes were noiselessly at work to destroy and defend the beleaguered city. The mine advanced towards the gate; the besieged delved deeper, and intersected it with a transverse excavation, and the contending forces met daily, in deadly encounter, within those sepulchral gangways. Many stratagems were mutually employed. The citizens secretly constructed a dam across the Spanish mine, and then deluged their foe with hogheads of boiling water. Hundreds were thus scalced to death. They heaped branches and light fagots in the hostile mine, set fire to the pile, and blew thick volumes of smoke along the passage with organ-bellsows brought from the churches for the purpose. Many were thus suffocated. The discomfited besiegers abandoned the mine where they had met with such able countermine, and sunk another shaft, at midnight, in secret, at a long distance from the Tongres gate. Still towards that point, however, they burrowed in the darkness; guiding themselves to their destination with magnet, plumbline and level, as the mariner crosses the trackless ocean with compass and chart. They worked their way, unobstructed, till they arrived at their subterranean port, directly beneath the doomed ravelin. Here they constructed a spacious chamber, supporting it with columns, and making all their architectural arrangements with as much precision and elegance as if their object had been purely aesthetic. Coffers full of powder, to an enormous amount, were then placed in every direction across the floor, the train was laid, and Parma informed that all was ready. Alexander, having already arrayed the troops destined for the assault, then proceeded in person to the mouth of the shaft, and gave orders to spring the mine. The explosion was prodigious; a part of the tower fell with the concussion, and the moat was choked with heaps of rubbish. The assailants sprang across the passage thus afforded, and mastered the ruined portion of the fort. They were met in the breach, however, by the unflinching defenders of the city, and, after a fierce combat of some hours, were obliged to retire; remaining

1 Strada, ii, 65, 66.
2 Bor, xili, 36. Hooft, xv, 628. Strada.
3 "Magistras cunicularias appellabant."—Strada, 76.
masterys, however, of the most, and of the ruined portion of the ravelin. This was upon the 3d of April.¹

Five days afterwards, a general assault was ordered. A new mine having been already constructed towards the Tongres ravelin, and a faithful cannonade having been kept up for a fortnight against the Bois-le-Duc gate, it was thought advisable to attack at both points at once. On the 8th of April, accordingly, after uniting in prayer, and listening to a speech from Alexander Farnese, the great mass of the Spanish army advanced to the breach. The most had been rendered practicable in many places by the heaps of rubbish with which it had been encumbered, and by the fagots and earth with which it had been filled by the besiegers. The action at the Bois-le-Duc gate was exceedingly warm. The tried veterans of Spain, Italy, and Burgundy, were met face to face by the burghers of Maastricht, together with their wives and children. All were armed to the teeth, and fought with what seemed superhuman valour. The women, fierce as tigresses defending their young, swarmed to the walls, and fought in the foremost rank. They threw pails of boiling water on the besiegers, they hurled firebrands in their faces, they quotted blazing pitch-hoops with unerring dexterity about their necks. The rustics too, armed with their ponderous flails, worked as cheerfully at this bloody harvesting as if threshing their corn at home. Heartily did they winnow the ranks of the royalists who came to butcher them, and thick and fast fell the invaders, fighting bravely, but baffled by these novel weapons used by peasant and woman, coming to the aid of the sword, spear, and musket of trained soldiery. More than a thousand had fallen at the Bois-le-Duc gate, and still fresh besiegers mounted the breach, only to be beaten back, or to add to the mangled heap of the slain.² At the Tongres gate, mean-

while, the assault had fared no better. A herald had been despatched thither in hot haste, to shout at the top of his lungs, “Santiago! Santiago! the Lombards have the gate of Bois-le-Duc!” while the same stratagem was employed to persuade the invaders on the other side of the town that their comrades had forced the gate of Tongres.³ The soldiers, animated by this fiction, and advancing with fury against the famous ravelin, which had been but partly destroyed, were received with a broadside from the great guns of the unshattered portion, and by a rattling discharge of musketry from the walls. They wavered a little. At the same instant the new mine—which was to have been sprung between the ravelin and the gate, but which had been secretly countermined by the townspeople, exploded with a horrible concussion, at a moment least expected by the besiegers. Five hundred royalists were blown into the air. Ortiz, a Spanish captain of engineers, who had been inspecting the excavations, was thrown up bodily from the subterranean depth. He fell back again instantly into the same cavern, and was buried by the returning shower of earth which had spouted from the mine. Forty-five years afterwards, in digging for the foundation of a new wall, his skeleton was found. Clad in complete armour, the helmet and cuirass still sound, with his gold chain around his neck, and his mattock and pickaxe at his feet, the soldier lay⁴ un mutilated, seeming almost capable of resuming his part in the same war which—even after his hundred years's sleep—was still ravaging the land.

Five hundred of the Spaniards perished by the explosion,⁵ but none of the defenders were injured, for they had been prepared. Recovering from the momentary panic, the besiegers again rushed to the attack. The battle raged. Six hundred and seventy officers, commissioned or non-commissioned, had already fallen, more

¹ Strada, 2, ii, 606-671. ² Ibid. 2, ii, 68-71. ³ Hoofd, xv, 630. Muteren, ix, 154. Strada, 2, ii, 75. ⁴ Strada, 2, ii, 76. ⁵ Five to a hundred, according to a letter written between the 12th and 16th of April 1579, by a citizen of Maastricht, and quoted by Bor, xii, 51, 52.
than half mortally wounded. Four thousand royalists, horribly mutilated, lay on the ground. It was time that the day's work should be finished, for Maastricht was not to be carried upon that occasion. The best and bravest of the surviving officers besought Parma to put an end to the carnage by recalling the troops; but the gladiator-heart of the commander was heated, not softened, by the savage spectacle. "Go back to the breach," he cried, "and tell the soldiers that Alexander is coming to lead them into the city in triumph, or to perish with his comrades." He rushed forward with the fury which had marked him when he boarded Mustapha's galley at Lepanto; but all the generals who were near him threw themselves upon his path, and implored him to desist from such insensate rashness. Their expostulations would have probably been in vain, had not his confidential friend, Serbelloni, interposed with something like paternal authority, reminding him of the strict commands contained in his Majesty's recent letters, that the Governor-General, to whom so much was entrusted, should refrain, on pain of the royal displeasure, from exposing his life like a common fighter.

Alexander reluctantly gave the signal of recall at last, and accepted the defeat. For the future he determined to rely more upon the sapper and miner, and less upon the superiority of veterans to townsmen and rustics in open fight. Sure to carry the city at last, according to line and rule, determined to pass the whole summer beneath the walls, rather than abandon his purpose, he calmly proceeded to complete his circumvallations. A chain of eleven forts upon the left, and five upon the right side of the Meuse, the whole connected by a continuous wall, afforded him perfect security against interruptions, and allowed him to continue the siege at leisure. His numerous army was well housed and amply supplied, and he had built a strong and populous city in order to destroy another. Relief was impossible. But a few thousand men were now required to defend Farnese's improvised town, while the bulk of his army could be marched at any moment against an advancing foe. A force of seven thousand, painfully collected by the Prince of Orange, moved towards the place, under command of Hohenlo and John of Nassau, but struck with wonder at what they saw, the leaders recognised the hopelessness of attempting relief. Maastricht was surrounded by a second Maastricht.

The efforts of Orange were now necessarily directed towards obtaining, if possible, a truce of a few weeks from the negotiators at Cologne. Parma was too crafty, however, to allow Terranova to consent; and as the Duke disclaimed any power over the direct question of peace and war, the siege proceeded. The gates of Bois-le-Duc and Tongres having thus far resisted the force brought against them, the scene was changed to the gate of Brussels. This adjoined that of Tongres, was farthest from the river, and faced westwardly towards the open country. Here the besieged had constructed an additional ravelin, which they had christened, in derision, "Parma," and against which the batteries of Parma were now brought to bear. Alexander erected a platform of great extent and strength directly opposite the new work, and after a severe and constant cannonade from this elevation, followed by a bloody action, the "Parma" fort was carried. One thousand, at least, of the defenders fell, as forced gradually from one defence to another, they saw the triple walls of their ravelin crumble successively before their eyes. The tower was absolutely annihilated before they abandoned its ruins, and retired within their last defences. Alexander being now master of the fosse and the

---

1 Letter from Maastricht above cited.— Comparo Strada, 2, ii. 79. Hoofd, xv, 629, who puts the number of Spaniards slain in this assault at two thousand—a lateren, ix. 154. Haraseus (Thunuk. Belg.) i. iii. 299.
2 Strada, 2, ii. 77.
3 Ibid. The letter of Philip is partly given by the historian.
4 Strada, 2, ii. 80. Bor, xii. 82.
5 Strada, 2, ii. 83.
6 See a remarkable letter from Parma to the Duke of Terranova, dated Camp before Maastricht, May 31, 1579, in Bor, xii. 57, 58.
defences of the Brussels gate, drew up a large force on both sides of that portal, along the margin of the moat, and began mining beneath the inner wall of the city. Meantime, the garrison had been reduced to four hundred soldiers, nearly all of whom were wounded. Wearied and driven to despair, these soldiers were willing to treat. The townspeople, however, answered the proposition with a shout of fury, and protested that they would destroy the garrison with their own hands if such an insurrection were repeated. Sebastian Tappin, too, encouraged them with the hope of speedy relief, and held out to them the wretched consequences of trusting to the mercy of their foes. The garrison took heart again, while that of the burgheers and their wives had never faltered. Their main hope now was in a fortification which they had been constructing inside the Brussels gate—a demi-lune of considerable strength. Behind it was a breastwork of turf and masonry, to serve as a last bulwark when every other defence should be forced. The whole had been surrounded by a fosse thirty feet in depth, and the besiegers, as they mounted upon the breaches which they had at last effected in the outer curtain, near the Brussels gate, saw for the first time this new fortification.

The general condition of the defences, and the disposition of the inhabitants, had been revealed to Alexander by a deserter from the town. Against this last fortress the last efforts of the foe were now directed. Alexander ordered a bridge to be thrown across the city moat. As it was sixty feet wide and as many deep, and lay directly beneath the guns of the new demi-lune, the enterprise was sufficiently hazardous. Alexander led the way in person, with a mallet in one hand and a mattock in the other. Two men fell dead instantly, one on his right hand and his left, while he calmly commenced, in his own person, the driving of the first pile for the bridge. His soldiers fell fast around him. Count Berlaymont was shot dead, many officers of distinction were killed or wounded, but no soldier dared recoil while their chieftain wrought amid the bullets like a common pioneer. Alexander, unharmed, as by a miracle, never left the spot till the bridge had been constructed, and till ten great guns had been carried across it, and pointed against the demi-lune. The battery was opened, the mines previously excavated were sprung, a part of the demi-lune was blown into the air, and the assailants sprang into the breach. Again a furious hand-to-hand conflict succeeded; again, after an obstinate resistance, the townspeople were forced to yield. Slowly abandoning the shattered fort, they retired behind the breastwork in its rear—their innermost and last defence. To this barrier they clung as to a spar in shipwreck, and here at last they stood at bay, prepared dearly to sell their lives.

The breastwork, being still strong, was not attempted upon that day. The assailants were recalled, and in the meantime a herald was sent by Parma, highly applauding the courage of the defenders, and begging them to surrender at discretion. They answered the messenger with words of haughty defiance, and, rushing in a mass to the breastwork, began with spade, pickaxe, and trowel, to add to its strength. Here all the able-bodied men of the town took up their permanent position, and here they ate, drank, and slept upon their posts, while their food was brought to them by the women and children.

A little letter, "written in a fine neat handwriting," now mysteriously arrived in the city, encouraging them in the name of the Archduke and the

1 Bor, xiii. 64. Strada, ii. 115–117.
2 Strada, 2, ii. 117, 118.
3 Better known as Baron Hierges, eldest son of the celebrated royalist, afterwards Count Berlaymont. Hierges had not long before succeeded to the title on the death of his father.—Strada, 2, ii. 119.—Comparo,
4 Strada, 2, ii. 118.
5 Bor, xiii. 64. Hooff, xv. 630. Strada, 2, ii. 129, 121.
Prince of Orange, and assuring them of relief within fourteen days. A brief animation was thus produced, attended by a corresponding languor upon the part of the besiegers, for Alexander had been lying ill with a fever since the day when the demilune had been carried. From his sick bed he rebuked his officers severely that a temporary breastwork, huddled together by boors andburghers in the midst of a siege, should prove an insurmountable obstacle to men who had carried everything before them. The morrow was the festival of Saint Peter and Saint Paul, and it was meet that so sacred a day should be hallowed by a Christian and Apostolic victory. Saint Peter would be there with his keys to open the gate; Saint Paul would lead them to battle with his invincible sword. Orders were given accordingly, and the assault was assigned for the following morning.

Meantime, the guards were strengthened and commanded to be more than usually watchful. The injunction had a remarkable effect. At the dead of night, a soldier of the watch was going his rounds on the outside of the breastwork, listening, if perchance he might catch, as was not unusual, a portion of the conversation among the beleaguered burghers within. Prying about on every side, he at last discovered a chink in the wall, the result, doubtless, of the last cannonade, and hitherto overlooked. He enlarged the gap with his fingers, and finally made an opening wide enough to admit his person. He crept boldly through, and looked around in the clear starlight. The sentinels were all slumbering at their posts. He advanced stealthily in the dusky streets. Not a watchman was going his rounds. Soldiers, burghers, children, women, exhausted by incessant fatigue, were all asleep. Not a footfall was heard; not a whisper broke the silence; it seemed a city of the dead. The soldier crept back through the crevice, and hastened to apprise his superiors of his adventure.

Alexander, forthwith instructed as to the condition of the city, at once ordered the assault, and the last wall was suddenly stormed before the morning broke. The soldiers forced their way through the breach or sprang over the breastwork, and surprised at last—in its sleep—the city which had so long and vigorously defended itself. The burghers, startled from their slumber, bewildered, unprepared, found themselves engaged in unequal conflict with alert and savage foes. The battle, as usual when Netherland towns were surprised by Philip's soldiers, soon changed to a massacre. The townspeople rushed hither and thither, but there was neither escape, nor means of resisting an enemy who now poured into the town by thousands upon thousands. An indiscriminate slaughter succeeded. Women, old men, and children, had all been combatants; and all, therefore, had incurred the vengeance of the conquerors. A cry of agony arose which was distinctly heard at the distance of a league. Mothers took their infants in their arms, and threw themselves by hundreds into the Meuse—and against women the blood-thirst of the assailants was especially directed. Females who had fought daily in the trenches, who had delved in mines and mustered on the battlements, had unsexed themselves in the opinion of those whose comrades they had helped to destroy. It was nothing that they had laid aside the weakness of women in order to defend all that was holy and dear to them on earth. It was sufficient that many a Spanish, Burgundian, or Italian mercenary had died by their hands. Women were pursued from house to house, and hurried from roof and window. They were hunted into the river; they were torn limb from limb in the streets. Men and children fared no better; but the heart sickens at the oft-repeated tale.

1 This letter is still preserved in the Archives of Holland.—Gronk v. Prinst. Archives de la Maison d'Orange, vi. 622, note. Bor, xiii. 65.
2 25th of June 1579.
3 Strada, 2. iii. 121.
Horrors, alas, were commonplaces in the Netherlands. Cruelly too monstrous for description, too vast to be believed by a mind not familiar with the outrages practised by the soldiers of Spain and Italy upon their heretic fellow-creatures, were now committed afresh in the streets of Maastricht.  

On the first day four thousand men and women were slaughtered. The massacre lasted two days longer; nor would it be an exaggerated estimate, if we assume that the amount of victims upon the two last days was equal to half the number sacrificed on the first. It was said that not four hundred citizens were left alive after the termination of the siege. These soon wandered away, their places being supplied by a rabble rout of Walloon sutlers and vagabonds. Maastricht was depopulated as well as captured. The booty obtained after the massacre was very large, for the city had been very thriving, its cloth manufacture extensive and important. Sebastian Tappin, the heroic defender of the place, had been shot through the shoulder at the taking of the Parma ravelin, and had been afterwards severely injured at the capture of the demi-lune. At the fall of the city he was mortally wounded, and carried a prisoner to the hostile camp, only to expire. The governor, Swartzenberg, also lost his life.  

Alexander, on the contrary, was raised from his sick bed with the joyful tidings of victory, and as soon as he could be moved, made his appearance in the city. Seated in a splendid chair of state, borne aloft on the shoulders of his veterans, with a golden canopy above his head to protect him from the summer's sun, attended by the officers of his staff, who were decked by his special command in their gayest trappings, escorted by his body guard, followed by his “plumed troops,” to the number of twenty thousand, surrounded by all the vanities of war, the hero made his stately entrance into the town. His way led through deserted streets of shattered houses. The pavement ran red with blood. Headless corpses, mangled limbs—an obscene mass of wretchedness and corruption, were spread on every side, and tainted the summer air. Through the thriving city which, in the course of four months, Alexander had converted into a slaughter-house and a solitude, the pompous procession took its course to the church of Saint Servais. Here humble thanks were offered to the God of Love, and to Jesus of Nazareth, for this new victory. Especially was gratitude expressed to the Apostles Paul and Peter, upon whose festival, and by whose sword and key the crowning mercy had been accomplished, and by whose special agency eight thousand heretics now lay unburied in the streets. These acts of piety performed, the triumphal procession returned to the camp, where, soon afterwards, the joyful news of Alexander Farnese’s entire convalescence was proclaimed.  

The Prince of Orange, as usual, was blamed for the tragic termination to this long drama. All that one man could do, he had done to awaken his countrymen to the importance of the siege. He had repeatedly brought the subject solemnly before the assembly, they all wandered away. The place, which had been so recently a very thriving and industrious town, remained a desert. During the ensuing winter most of the remaining buildings were torn down, that the timber and wood-work might be used as firewood by the soldiers and vagabonds who from time to time housed there.—Meteren, Hoofd, Bor, ubi sup.  

2 This is the estimate of the Jesuit Strada.  
3 Strada puts the total number of inhabitants of Maastricht, slain during the four months’ siege, at eight thousand, of whom seventeen hundred were women.—P. 127.  
4 Not more than three or four hundred, says Bor, xiii. 85. Not more than four hundred, says Hoofd, xv. 633. Not three hundred, says Meteren, ix. This must, of course, be an exaggeration, for the population had numbered thirty thousand at the commencement of the siege. At any rate, the survivors were but a remnant, and
assembly, and implored for Maestricht, almost upon his knees. Lukewarm and parsimonious, the states had responded to his eloquent appeals with wrangling addresses and insufficient votes. With a special subsidy obtained in April and May, he had organised the slight attempt at relief, which was all which he had been empowered to make, but which proved entirely unsuccessful. Now that the massacre to be averted was accomplished, men were loud in reproach, who had been silent, and passive while there was yet time to speak and to work. It was the Prince, they said, who had delivered so many thousands of his fellow-countrymen to butchery. To save himself, they insinuated he was now plotting to deliver the land into the power of the treacherous Frenchman, and he alone, they asserted, was the insuperable obstacle to an honourable peace with Spain.¹

A letter, brought by an unknown messenger, was laid before the states’ assembly, in full session, and sent to the clerk’s table, to be read aloud. After the first few sentences, that functionary faltered in his recital. Several members also peremptorily ordered him to stop; for the letter proved to be a violent and calumnious libel upon Orange, together with a strong appeal in favour of the peace propositions then under debate at Cologne. The Prince alone, of all the assembly, preserving his tranquillity, ordered the document to be brought to him, and forthwith read it aloud himself, from beginning to end. Afterwards, he took occasion to express his mind concerning the ceaseless calamities of which he was the mark. He especially alluded to the oft-repeated accusation that he was the only obstacle to peace, and repeated that he was ready at that moment to leave the land, and to close his lips for ever, if by so doing he could benefit his country, and restore her to honourable repose. The outcry, with the protestations of attachment and confidence which at once broke from the assembly, convinced him, however, that he was deeply rooted in the hearts of all patriotic Netherlanders, and that it was beyond the power of slanderers to loosen his hold upon their affection.³

Meantime, his efforts had again and again been demanded to restore order in that abode of anarchy, the city of Ghent. After his visit during the previous winter, and the consequent departure of John Casimir to the palatinate, the pacific arrangements made by the Prince had for a short time held good. Early in March, however, that master of misrule, John van Imbize, had once more excited the populace to sedition. Again the property of Catholics, clerical and lay, was plundered; again the persons of Catholics, of every degree, was maltreated. The magistrates, with first senator Imbize at their head, rather encouraged than rebuked the disorder; but Orange, as soon as he received official intelligence of the event, hastened to address them in the words of earnest warning and wisdom.³ He allowed that the inhabitants of the province had reason to be discontented with the presence and the misconduct of the Walloon soldiery. He granted that violence and the menaces of a foreign tyranny made it difficult for honestburgers to gain a livelihood. At the same time he expressed astonishment that reasonable men should seek a remedy for such evils in tumults which would necessarily bring utter destruction upon the land. "It was," he observed, "as if a patient should, from impatience, tear the bandages from his wounds, and, like a maniac, instead of allowing himself to be cured, plunge a dagger into his own heart."⁴

¹ Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., vii. 621, 622; viii. 41, 42. Bor, xiii. Hooff, xvi., passim.
³ Archives, etc., vii. 42, 48.
³ Ibid., vi. 586, sqq.
⁴ Ibid., vi. 589.
accused him of intriguing with France for his own benefit, of being a Papist in disguise, of desiring to establish what he called a "religious peace," merely to restore Roman idolatry. In all these insane ravings, the demagogue was most ably seconded by the ex-
munk. Incessant and unlicensed were the invectives hurled by Peter Dath-
cius from his pulpit upon William the Silent's head. He denounced him—
as he had often done before—as an atheist in heart; as a man who
changed his religion as easily as his garments; as a man who knew no God
but state expediency, which was the
idol of his worship; a mere politician
who would tear his shirt from his
back and throw it in the fire, if he
thought it were tainted with religion.¹

Such witless but vehement denun-
ciation from a preacher who was both
popular and comparatively sincere,
could not but affect the imagination
of the weaker portion of his hearers.
The faction of Imbize became trium-
phant. Ryhove—the ruffian whose
hands were stained with the recent
blood of Visch and Hessels—rather
did damage than service to the cause
of order. He opposed himself to the
demagogue who was prating daily of
Greece, Rome, and Geneva, while his
clerical associate was denouncing
William of Orange, but he opposed
himself in vain. An attempt to secure
the person of Imbize failed,² but by the
influence of Ryhove, however, a
messenger was despatched to Antwerp
in the name of a considerable portion
of the community of Ghent. The
counsel and the presence of the man
to whom all hearts in every part of
the Netherlands instinctively turned
in the hour of need, were once more
invoked.²

The Prince again addressed them in
language which none but he could em-
ploy with such effect. He told them
that his life, passed in service and sa-

¹ Ch. Gesch., ii. 106, cited in Gr. v. Pimst.,
Archives, etc., vii. 81, note.
² Archives, etc., vi. 530, sqq. and vii. 18.
³ Van der Vynckt, iii. 29, sqq.
⁴ "Dieu merci, je ne sais pas si peu con-
noissant que je me sache bien qu'il faut né-
cessairement trahir, soit de paix, soit de

crifice, ought to witness sufficiently for
his fidelity. Nevertheless, he thought
it necessary—in view of the calumnies
which were circulated—to repeat once
more his sentiment that no treaty of
peace, war, or alliance, ought to be
negotiated, save with the consent of
the people.³ His course in Holland and
Zeeland had proved, he said, his
willingness always to consult the
wishes of his countrymen. As for the
matter of religion it was almost in-
credible that there should be any who
doubted the zeal which he bore the
religion for which he had suffered so
much. "I desire," he continued, fer-
vently, "that men should compare
that which has been done by my acce-
sors during ten years past with that
which I have done. In that which
touches the true advancement of reli-
gion, I will yield to no man. They
who so boldly accuse me have no liberty
of speech, save that which has been
acquired for them by the blood of my
kindred, by my labours, and my ex-
cessive expenditures. To me they owe
it that they dare speak at all." This
letter (which was dated on the 24th
of July 1573) contained an assurance
that the writer was about to visit
Ghent.⁴

On the following day, Imbize exe-
cuted a coup d'état. Having a body of
near two thousand soldiers at his dis-
posal, he suddenly secured the persons
of all the magistrates and other no-
table individuals not friendly to his
policy, and then, in violation of all
law, set up a new board of eighteen
irresponsible functionaries, according
to a list prepared by himself alone.
This was his way of enforcing the
democratic liberty of Greece, Rome,
and Geneva, which was so near to his
heart. A proclamation, in fourteen
articles, was forthwith issued, justifying
this arbitrary proceeding. It was
declared that the object of the some-
what irregular measure "was to pre-
guerre, soit d'alliance, avec le gré du peu-
pé," etc.—Letter of Orange, Archives, etc.,
vii. 20, sqq.
⁴ Ibid.—The whole of this noble document
should be read again and again by all who
feel interested in the character of William of
Orange.
vent the establishment of the religious peace, which was merely a method of replanting uprooted papistry and the extinguished tyranny of Spain. Although the arrangements had not been made in strict accordance with formal usage and ceremony, yet they were defended upon the ground that it had been impossible, by other means, to maintain their ancient liberties and their religious freedom. At the same time a pamphlet, already prepared for the occasion by Dathenus, was extensively circulated. In this production the arbitrary resolution effected by a demagogue was defended with censure, while the character of Orange was loaded with customary abuse. To prevent the traitor from coming to Ghent, and establishing what he called his religious peace, these irregular measures in the urgency, had been wisely taken.

Such were the efforts of John Imbize — such as the columns of Peter Dathenus — in order to counteract the patriotic endeavours of the Prince; but neither the ruffianism of John nor the libels of Peter were destined upon this occasion to be successful. William the Silent treated the slanderers of the scolding monk with dignified contempt.

"Having been informed," said he to the magistrates of Ghent, "that Master Peter Dathenus has been denouncing me as a man without religion or fidelity, and full of ambition, with other propositions hardly becoming his cloth, I do not think it worth while to answer more at this time than that I willingly refer myself to the judgment of all who know me."

The Prince came to Ghent, great as had been the efforts of Imbize and his partisans to prevent his coming. His presence was like magic. The demagogue and his whole flock vanished like unclean birds at the first rays of the sun. Imbize dared not look the Father of his country in the face. Orange rebuked the populace in the strong and indignant language that public and private virtue, energy, and a high purpose enabled such a leader of the people to use. He at once set aside the board of eighteen—the Grecian-Roman-Genevese establishment of Imbize—and remained in the city until the regular election, in conformity with the privileges, had taken place. Imbize, who had shrunk at his approach, was meantime discovered by his own companions. He had stolen forth secretly on the night before the Prince’s arrival, and was found crowning in the cabin of a vessel, half dead with fear, by an ale-house keeper who had been his warm parti\-san. "No skulking," cried the honest friend, seizing the tribune of the people by the shoulder; "no sailing away in the night-time. You have got us all into this bog, and must come back, and abide the issue with your supporters." 3

In this exhausted state was the windy demagogue, who had filled half Flanders with his sound and fury, conveyed before the patriot Prince. He met with grave and bitter rebukes, but felt sufficiently relieved when allowed to depart unharmed. 4 Judging of his probable doom by the usual practice of himself and his fellows in similar cases, he had anticipated nothing short of the gibbet. That punishment, however, was to be inflicted at a later period, by other hands, and not until he had added treason to his country and a shameless recantation of all his violent professions in favour of civil and religious liberty to the list of his crimes. On the present occasion he was permitted to go free. In company with his clerical companion, Peter Dathenus, he fled to the abode of his excellent friend. John Casimir, who received both with open arms, and allowed them each a pension. 5

Order being thus again restored in Ghent by the exertions of the Prince, when no other human hand could have

---

1 Archives et Correspondance, v. ii. 81. Van der Vynckt, i. 38. sqq. Meteren, i. 106. sqq. — Rev. v. 84, 85.
2 Archives et Correspondance, v. iii. 54.
3 Rev. xii. 55, sqq. Meteren, i. 106, sqq. Van der Vynckt, ii. 58, sqq.
4 Meteren. Van der Vynckt, ubi supr.
5 Van der Vynckt, iii. 58–42. — Compil. H. 184, 145–156.
dispelled the anarchy which seemed to reign supreme, William the Silent, having accepted the government of Flanders, which had again and again been urged upon him, now returned to Antwerp.\footnote{Archives, vii. 60, and Meturen, ix. 1638, but the Prince says, in his Apologie, published eighteen months later (Dec. 1580), that he had hitherto, although often urged to accept, refused the government of Flanders.—Apologie, etc., 108, 109. It is probable that his acceptance was only conditional, as, indeed, Meturen observes.}

CHAPTER III.

The Cologne conference—Intentions of the parties—Preliminary attempt by government to purchase the Prince of Orange—Offer and rejection of various articles among the plenipotentiaries—Departure of the Imperial commissioners—Ultimatum of the States compared with that of the royal government—Barren negotiations terminated—Treason of De Bours, Governor of Mechlin—Liberal theories concerning the nature of government—Abjuration of Philip Imminent—Self-denial of Orange—Attitude of Germany—of England—Marriage negotiations between Elizabeth and Anjou—Orange favours the election of the Duke as sovereign—Address and speeches of the Prince—Parnassus and provincial jealousy rebuked.—Secret correspondence of Count Renneberg with the royal government—His treason at Groningen.

Since the beginning of May, the Cologne negotiations had been dragging their slow length along. Few persons believed that any good was likely to result from these stately and ponderous conferences; yet men were so weary of war, so desirous that a termination might be put to the atrophy under which the country was languishing, that many an eager glance was turned towards the place where the august assembly was holding its protracted session. Certainly, if wisdom were to be found in mitred heads—if the power to heal angry passions and to settle the conflicting claims of prerogative and conscience were to be looked for among men of lofty station, then the Cologne conferences ought to have made the rough places smooth and the crooked paths straight throughout all Christendom. There was the Archbishop of Rossano, afterwards Pope Urban VII., as plenipotentiary from Rome; there was Charles of Aragon, Duke of Terranova, supported by five councillors, as ambassador from his Catholic Majesty; there were the Duke of Aerschot, the Abbot of Saint Gertrude, the Abbot of Maroilles, Doctor Bucho Ayta, Caspar Schets, Lord of Gribendonck, that learned Frisian, Aegius van Alba, with seven other wise men, as envoys from the states-general. There were their Serene Highnesses the Elector and Archbishops of Cologne and Treves, with the Bishop of Wurzburg. There was also a numerous embassy from his imperial Majesty, with Count Otto de Schwarzenburg at its head.\footnote{Bor, xiii. 52. Meturen, ix. 155.}

Here then were holiness, serenity, dignity, law, and learning in abundance. Here was a pope in posse, with archbishops, princes, dukes, jurisconsults, and doctors of divinity in esse, sufficient to remodel a world, if worlds were to be remodelled by such instruments. If protocols, replications, annotations, apostilles, could heal a bleeding country, here were the physicians to furnish those drugs in unlimited profusion. If reams of paper, scrawled over with barbarous technicalities, could smother and bury a quarrel which had its origin in the mutual antagonism of human elements, here were the men to scribble unfinchingly, till the reams were piled to a pyramid. If the same idea presented in many aspects could acquire additional life, here were the word-mongers who could clothe one shivering thought in a hundred thousand garments, till it attained all the majesty which decoration could impart. In truth, the envoys came from Spain, Rome, and Vienna, pro
vides with but two ideas. Was it not a diplomatic masterpiece, that from this frugal store they could contrive to eke out seven mortal months of negotiation? Two ideas—the supremacy of his Majesty's prerogative, the exclusive exercise of the Roman Catholic religion—these were the be-all and the end-all of their commission. Upon these two strings they were to harp, at least till the walls of Maastricht had fallen. The envoys did their duty well; they were sent to enact a solemn comedy, and in the most stately manner did they walk through their several parts. Not that the King was belligerent; on the contrary, he was heartily weary of the war. Prerogative was weary—Romanism was weary—Conscience was weary—The Spirit of Freedom was weary—but the Prince of Orange was not weary. Blood and treasure had been pouring forth so profusely during twelve flaming years, that all but that one tranquil spirit were beginning to flag.

At the same time, neither party had more disposition to concede than stomach to fight. Certainly the royal party had no inclination to yield. The King had granted easy terms to the Walloons, because upon the one great point of religion there was no dispute, and upon the others there was no intention of keeping faith. With regard to the present negotiation, it was desirable to gain a little time. It was thought probable that the religious difference, judiciously managed at this juncture, might be used to effect a permanent severance of the provinces so lately banded together in a common union. "To divide them," wrote Tassis, in a very confidential letter, "no better method can be found than to amuse them with this peace negotiation. Some are ready for a pacification from their desire of repose, some from their fear of war, some from the different

ences which exist among themselves, and which it is especially important to keep alive." Above all things, it was desirable to maintain the religious distraction till Maastricht had been taken. That siege was the key to the whole situation. If the separate Walloon accord could be quietly made in a corner, while Parma was battering that stronghold on the Meuse, and while decorous negotiation was smoothly holding its course on the Rhine, much disorganisation, it was hoped, would be handsomely accomplished before the end of the year.

"As for a suspension of arms," wrote Alexander to Terranova, on the 21st of May, "the longer 'tis deferred the better. With regard to Maastricht, everything depends upon it that we possess, or desire to possess. Truly, if the Prince of Orange can relieve the city he will do it. If he does so, neither will this expedition of ours, nor any other expedition, be brought to a good end. As soon as men are aware that our affairs are looking badly, they will come again to a true union, and all will join together, in hope to accomplish their boaste." Therefore, it was natural that the peace-wrights of Cologne should industriously ply their task.

It is not desirable to disturb much of that learned dust, after its three centuries' repose. A rapid sketch of the course of the proceedings, with an indication of the spirit which animated the contending parties, will be all that is necessary. They came and they separated with precisely opposite views. "The desires of Terranova and of the estates," says the royalist, Tassis, "were diametrically contrary to each other. The King wished that the exercise of the Roman Catholic religion should be exclusively established, and the absolute prerogative preserved in its integrity." On the other hand, the pro-

1 This is most evident from the correspondence of Parma, both before and after the treaty of Aix-la-Prov. Wallonius, MS., Brussels Archives, particularly vols. IV. and V.
2 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, viii. 50.
3 Also in a manuscript, in writing to a friend, three pages afterward, observed: "Les traités de Cologne ont suffisamment montré qu'elle a été l'intention de l'ennemi en proposant ce beau nom de Paix, à savoir de diviser et rompre les provinces et submerger les villes."—Mem. de Murray, i. p. 75.
4 Letter of Parma, May 21, 1579, from his camp before Maastricht, apud Bor, 2, xiii. 57.
5 Com. de Tum. Belg., v. 367.
Attemps to Bribe Orange.

... provinces desired their charters and religious peace. In these perpetual lines and curves ran the asymptotical negotiation from beginning to end—and so it might have run for two centuries, without hope of coincidence. Neither party was yet vanquished. The freshly united provinces were no readier now than before to admit that the Holy Office formed part of their national institutions. The despotic faction was not prepared to renounce that establishment. Foiled, but not disheartened, sat the Inquisition, like a bel dame, upon the border, impotently threatening the land whence she had been for ever excluded; while industrious as the Paracae, distaff in hand, sat, in Cologne, the inexorable three—Spain, the Empire, and Rome—grimly spinning and severing the web of mortal destinies.

The first step in the proceedings had been a secret one. If by any means the Prince of Orange could be detached from his party—if by bribery, however enormous, he could be induced to abandon a tottering cause, and depart for the land of his birth—he was distinctly but indirectly given to understand that he had but to name his terms. We have seen the issue of similar propositions made by Don John of Austria. Probably there was no man living who would care to make distinct application of this dishonourable nature to the Father of his country. The Aechsche, the Melms, the Lalains, and a swarm of other nobles, had their price, and were easily transferable from one to another, but it was not easy to make a direct offer to William of Orange. They knew—as he said shortly afterwards in his famous Apology—that "neither for property nor for life, neither for wife nor for children, would he mix in his cup a single drop of treason." Nevertheless, he was distinctly given to understand that "there was nothing he could demand for himself personally that would not be granted." All his confiscated property, restoration of his imprisoned son, liberty of worship for himself, payment of all his debts, reimbursement of all his past expenses, and anything else which he could desire, were all placed within his reach. If he chose to retire into another land, his son might be placed in possession of all his cities, estates, and dignities, and himself indemnified in Germany; with a million of money over and above as a gratuity. The imperial envoy, Count Schwartzenburg, pledged his personal honour and reputation that every promise which might be made to the Prince should be most sacredly fulfilled.

It was all in vain. The indirect applications of the imperial commissioners made to his servants and his nearest relations were entirely unsuccessful. The Prince was not to be drawn into a negotiation in his own name or for his own benefit. If the estates were satisfied, he was satisfied. He wanted no conditions but theirs; "nor would he, directly or indirectly," he said, "separate himself from the cause on which hung all his evil or felicity." He knew that it was the object of the enemy to deprive the country of its head, and no inducements were sufficient to make him a party to the plot.

At the same time, he was unwilling to be an obstacle, in his own person, to the conclusion of an honourable peace. He would resign his offices, which he held at the solicitation of the whole country, if thus a negotiation were likely to be more successful. "The Prince of Parma and the disunited provinces," said he to the states-general, "affect to consider this war as one waged against me and in my name—as if the question alone concerned the

1 "Si je ne veuille ni pour les biens ni pour la vie, ni pour femme ni pour enfans, meuser en mon brevage une seule goutte de venin de trahison."—Apologie, p. 127.
2 "— Que je n'ecrue rien auy demander pour mon particulier, qu'on ne m'este ac- cordé, et que donnez-moi un million."—Ibid.—Compare Strada, who wrote with all the secret papers of the Farnese family before him, —— si hanc omniam abuturo homin omnis sufficiat, neque habe neque quaequemque persilium conditionem repudiandam," etc.—2, ii. 88. Compare, particularly, Ev. Rudini, Ann., ii. 29. Compare Garchard, Correspondance de Guillaume de Taux, vol. iv., iufaca.
nesses had no better intention, and the Duke of Terranova no ampler commission, the whole matter might have been despatched, not in six months, but in six days."

Thus ended the conferences, and the imperial commissioners departed. Nevertheless, Schwartzenzburg remained yet a little time at Cologne, while five of the states' envoys also protracted their stay, in order to make their private peace with the King. It is hardly necessary to observe that the chief of these penitents was the Duke of Aerschot. The ultimatum of the states was deposited by the departing envoys with Schwartzenzburg, and a comparison of its terms with those offered by the imperial mediators, as the best which could be obtained from Spain, shews the hopelessness of the pretended negotiation. Departure of the foreign troops, restitution of all confiscated property, unequivocal recognition of the Ghent treaty and the perpetual edict, appointment to office of none but natives, oaths of allegiance to the King and the states-general, exercise of the Reformed religion and of the Confession of Augsburg in all places where it was then publicly practiced: such were the main demands of the patriot party.

In the secret instructions furnished by the states to their envoys, they were told to urge upon his Majesty the absolute necessity, if he wished to retain the provinces, of winking at the exercise of the Reformed and the Augsburg creeds. "The new religion had taken too deep root," it was urged, "ever to be torn forth, save with the destruction of the whole country."

Thus, after seven dreary months of negotiation, after protocols and memoranda in ten thousand folia, the august diplomatists had travelled round to the points from which they had severally started. On the one side, unlimited prerogative and exclusive Catholicism; on the other, constitutional liberty, with freedom of conscience for Catholic and Protestant alike: these were the claims which each party announced at the commencement, and to which they held with equal firmness at the close of the conferences.

The congress had been expensive. Though not much had been accomplished for the political or religious advancement of mankind, there had been much excellent eating and drinking at Cologne during the seven months. Those drouthy deliberations had needed moistening. The Bishop of Wurtzburg had consumed "eighty hogheads of Rhenish wine and twenty great casks of beer." The expense of the states' envoys were twenty-four thousand guildens. The Archbishop of Cologne had expended forty thousand thalers. The deliberations were, on the whole, excessively detrimental to the cause of the provinces, "and a great personage" wrote to the states-general, that the King had been influenced by no motive save to cause dissension. This was an exaggeration, for his Majesty would have been well pleased to receive the whole of the country on the same terms which had been accepted by the Walloons. Mean time, those southern provinces had made their separate treaty, and the Netherlands were permanently discovered. Maestricht had fallen. Disunion and dismay had taken possession of the country.

During the course of the year other severe misfortunes had happened to the states. Treachery, even among the men who had done good service to the cause of freedom, was daily shew-

---

1 Bor, xiii. 101, sqq. Meteren, i. 157, sqq. —Compare Strada, ii. 110, 111.
2 Bor, xiii. 108.
3 Apud Bor. xiii. 108—110.
4 Apud Bor. xiii. 110—113.
5 Apud Bor. xiii. 116—118.
6 All the most important documents of this elaborate but sterile negotiation are given in full by Bor, iii. 12, sqq. The whole mass of the protocols and arguments is also to be found in a volume entitled, "Acta pacificationis quae coram sac. ces. maj. inter ser. reg. Hisp. et Princip. Matth. ordinumique Belg. leg. Coloniae habitas sunt." Leyden, 1580.—Compare Strada, ii. 82—112; Harzel, Tunn. Belg., iii. 292—298; Tassius, Com. Tunn. Belg., v. 343—355; Meteren, i. 155—161; Wagenser, Vind. Hist. vii. 273—285, and 310—316; Hoofd, x. 658, 672, and xvi. 658—672, et mult. al.
7 Ibid.
8 Ibid.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

ing her hateful visage. Not only the great chief-tains who had led the Malcontent Walloon party, with the fickle Aerschot and the wavering Havré besides, had made their separate reconciliations with Parma, but the epidemic treason had mastered such bold partisans as the Seigneur de Bours, the man whose services in rescuing the citadel of Antwerp had been so courageous and valuable. He was governor of Mechlin; Count Renneberg was governor of Friesland. Both were trusted implicitly by Orange and by the estates; both were on the eve of repaying the confidence reposed in them by the most venial treason.

It was already known that Parma had tampered with De Bours; but Renneberg was still unsuspected. "The Prince," wrote Count John, "is deserted by all the noblemen, save the stadholder of Friesland and myself, and has no man else in whom he can repose confidence." The brothers were doomed to be rudely awakened from the repose with regard to Renneberg, but previously the treason of a less important functionary was to cause a considerable but less lasting injury to the national party.

In Mechlin was a Carmelite friar, of audacious character and great eloquence; a man who, "with his sweet, poisonous tongue, could ever persuade the people to do his bidding." This dangerous monk, Peter Lupus, or Peter Wolf, by name, had formed the design of restoring Mechlin to the Prince of Parma, and of obtaining the bishopric of Namur as the reward of his services. To this end he had obtained a complete mastery over the intellect of the bold but unprincipled De Bours. A correspondence was immediately opened between Parma and the governor, and troops were secretly admitted into the city. The Prince of Orange, in the name of the Archduke and the estates, in vain endeavoured to recall the infatuated governor to do his duty. In vain he conjured him, by letter after letter, to be true to his own bright fame so nobly earned. An old friend of De Bours, and like himself a Catholic, was also employed to remonstrate with him. This gentleman, De Fromont by name, wrote him many letters; but De Bours expressed his surprise that Fromont, whom he had always considered a good Catholic and a virtuous gentleman, should wish to force him into a connexion with the Prince of Orange and his heretic supporters. He protested that his mind was quite made up, and that he had been guaranteed by Parma not only the post which he now held, but even still farther advancement.

De Fromont reminded him, in reply, of the frequent revolutions of fortune's wheel, and warned him that the advancement of which he boasted would probably be an entire degradation. He bitterly recalled to the remembrance of the new zealot for Romanism his former earnest efforts to establish Calvinism. He reproached him, too, with having melted up the silver images of the Mechlin churches, including even the renowned shrine of Saint Rombout, which the Prince of Orange had always respected. "I don't say how much you took of that plunder for your own share," continued the indignant De Fromont, "for the very children cry it in your ears as you walk the streets. 'Tis known that if God himself had been changed into gold you would have put him in your pocket."

This was plain language, but as just as it was plain. The famous shrine of Saint Rombout—valued at seventy thousand guilders, of silver gilt, and enriched with precious stones—had been held sacred alike by the fanatical iconoclasts and the greedy Spaniards who had successively held the city. It had now been melted up, and appropriated by Peter Lupus, the Carmelite, and De Bours, the Catholic convert, whose mouthes were full of

---

1 Archives de la Maison d'Orange, vii. 36, 37; letter of July 31, 1579.
2 "En konde met zijn soete fenijnige tonge het volk luidden en bewegen daer hy too wilde."—Bor, xiii. 50.
3 Bor. xiii. 80-83. Hoofd, x. 686, 687.
4 Letter of Pontus de Novelles, Seigneur de Bours, apud Bor. xiii. 83.
5 Letter of J. v. Bourgoin, St. de Fromont, apud Bor. v. 83.

devotion to the ancient Church and of horror for heresy.\footnote{1

The efforts of Orange and of the states were unavailing. De Bours surrendered the city, and fled to Parma, who received him with cordiality, gave him five thousand florins—the price promised for his treason, besides a regiment of infantry—but expressed surprise that he should have reached the camp alive.\footnote{2 His subsequent career was short, and he met his death two years afterwards, in the trenches before Tourna.\footnote{3 The archiepiscopal city was thus transferred to the royal party, but the gallant Van der Teympe, governor of Brussels, retook it by surprise within six months of its acquisition by Parma, and once more restored it to the jurisdiction of the states. Peter Lupus, the Carmelite, armed to the teeth, and fighting fiercely at the head of the royalists, was slain in the street, and thus forfeited his chance for the mitre of Namur.\footnote{4

During the weary progress of the Cologne negotiations, the Prince had not been idle, and should this august and slow-moving congress be unsuccessful in restoring peace, the provinces were pledged to an act of abjuration. They would then be entirely without a head. The idea of a nominal Republic was broached by none. The contest had not been one of theory, but of facts; for the war had not been for revolution, but for conservation, so far as political rights were concerned. In religion, the provinces had advanced from one step to another, till they now claimed the largest liberty—freedom of conscience—for all. Religion, they held, was God’s affair, not man’s, in which neither people nor king had power over each other, but in which both were subject to God alone. In politics it was different. Hereditary sovereignty was acknowledged as a fact, but at the same time, the spirit of freedom was already learning its appropriate language. It already claimed boldly the natural right of mankind to be governed according to the laws of reason and of Divine justice. If a prince were a shepherd, it was at least lawful to deprive him of his crook when he butchered the flock which he had been appointed to protect.

“What reason is there,” said the states-general, “why the provinces should suffer themselves to be continually oppressed by their sovereign, with robbings, burnings, stragglings, and murderings?\footnote{5 Why, being thus oppressed, should they still give their sovereign—exactly as if he were well conducting himself\footnote{6—the honour and title of lord of the land?” On the other hand, if hereditary rule were an established fact, so also were ancient charters. To maintain, not to overthrow, the political compact, was the purpose of the states. “Je maintien-
dris” was the motto of Orange’s escutcheon. That a compact existed between prince and people, and that the sovereign held office only on condition of doing his duty, were startling truths which men were beginning, not to whisper to each other in secret, but to proclaim in the market-place. “‘Tis well known to all,” said the famous Declaration of Independence, two years afterwards, “that if a prince is appointed by God over the land, ’tis to protect them from harm, even as a shepherd to the guardianship of his flock. The subjects are not appointed by God for the behoof of the prince, but the prince for his subjects, with-

\footnote{1 Meeren, x, 172. Bor, ubi sup. Hoofd, xv, 386. \footnote{2 Bor (xiii, 84) states that he was treated with great contempt by Parma, and deprived of his poets. In this the faithful old chronicler is mistaken; as it appears from the manuscript letters of the Prince that he received the traitor with many caresses and with much greater respect than he deserved. Reports to the contrary were very current; however, in consequence of the Seigneur de Bosaignot having been appointed by Parma, governor of Mechlin in place of De Bours.—Letter of Prince of Parma to Mansfeld, Rec. Prov. Wall, iv, f. 324–223, MS. Royal Archives, Brussels. \footnote{3 Bor, xv, 288. \footnote{4 Ibid., xiv, 175. \footnote{5 “Wat reden is dat de Lantden altijd zullen van hunne Heere getrainenl, be- dorven en met roven, branden, worgen en moorden continuëlijk overvallen en ver- kracht worden,” etc., etc.—Address of States-general, July 1579, Bor, xiii, 93a. \footnote{6 Gelijk als ob hij wel dedit,” etc.—Ibid.}
out whom he is no prince. Should he violate the laws, he is to be forsaken by his meanest subject, and to be recognised no longer as prince."

William of Orange always recognised these truths, but his scheme of government contemplated a permanent chief, and as it was becoming obvious that the Spanish sovereign would soon be abjured, it was necessary to fix upon a substitute. "As to governing these provinces in the form of a republic," said he, speaking for the states-general, "those who know the condition, privileges, and ordinances of the country, can easily understand that 'tis hardly possible to dispense with a head or superintendent." At the same time, he plainly intimated that this "head or superintendent" was to be, not a monarch—a one-ruler—but merely the hereditary chief magistrate of a free commonwealth.

Where was this hereditary chief magistrate to be found? His own claims he absolutely withdrew. The office was within his grasp, and he might easily have constituted himself sovereign of all the Netherlands. Perhaps it would have been better at that time had he advanced his claims, and accepted the sovereignty which Philip had forfeited. As he did not believe in the possibility of a republic, he might honestly have taken into his own hands the sceptre which he considered indispensable. His self-abnegation was, however, absolute. Not only did he decline sovereignty, but he repeatedly avowed his readiness to lay down all the offices which he held, if a more useful substitute could be found. "Let no man think," said he, in a remarkable speech to the states-general, "that my good-will is in any degree changed or diminished. I agree to obey—as the least of the lords or gentlemen of the land could do—whatever person it may please you to select. You have but to com-

mand my services wheresoever they are most wanted; to guard a province or a single city, or in any capacity in which I may be found most useful. I promise to do my duty, with all my strength and skill, as God and my conscience are witnesses that I have done it hitherto." The negotiations pointed to a speedy abjuration of Philip; the Republic was contemplated by none; the Prince of Orange absolutely refused to stretch forth his own hand;—who, then, was to receive the sceptre which was so soon to be bestowed? A German prince had been tried—in a somewhat abnormal position—but had certainly manifested small capacity for aiding the provinces. Nothing could well be more insignificant than the figure of Matthias; and, moreover, his imperial brother was anything but favourably disposed. It was necessary to manage Rudolph. To treat the Archduke with indignity, now that he had been partly established in the Netherlands, would be to incur the Emperor's enmity. His friendship, however, could hardly be secured by any advancement bestowed upon his brother; for Rudolph's services against prerogative and the Pope were in no case to be expected. Nor was there much hope from the Protestant princes of Germany. The day had passed for generous sympathy with those engaged in the great struggle which Martin Luther had commenced. The present generation of German Protestants were more inclined to put down the Calvinistic schism at home than to save it from oppression abroad. Men were more disposed to wrangle over the thrice-gnawed bones of ecclesiastical casuistry, than to assist their brethren in the field. "I know not," said Calv-
theological abstractions we owe it that
to many are ready to breathe blood and
slaughter against their own brethren.
The hatred of the Lutherans has
reached that point that they can
rather tolerate Papists than our-

ourselves."

In England, there was much sym-
pathy for the provinces, and there-
although the form of government was
still arbitrary—the instincts for civil
and religious freedom, which have ever
characterised the Anglo-Saxon race,
were not to be repressed. Upon many
a battle-field for liberty in the Nether-
lands, “men whose limbs were made
in England” were found contending
for the right. The blood and treasure
of Englishmen flowed freely in the
cause of their relatives by religion and
race, but these were the efforts of
individuals. Hitherto but little as-
sistance had been rendered by the
English Queen, who had, on the con-
trary, almost distracted the provinces
by her fast-and-loose policy, both to-
wards them and towards Anjou. The
political rivalry between that Prince
and herself in the Netherlands had,
however, now given place to the
memorable love-passage from which im-
portant results were expected, and it
was thought certain that Elizabeth
would view with satisfaction any dig-
nity conferred upon her lover.

Orange had a right to form this
opinion. At the same time, it is well
known that the chief councillors of
Elizabeth—while they were all in
favour of assisting the provinces—
looked with anything but satisfaction
upon the Anjou marriage. “The
Duke,” wrote Davidson to Walsing-
ham (in July 1579), “seeks, forsooth,
under a pretext of marriage with her
Highness, the rather to espouse the
Low Countries—the chief ground and
object of his pretended love, howsoever
it be disguised.” The envoy believed
both Elizabeth and the provinces in
danger of taking unto themselves a
very bad master. “Is there any
means,” he added, “so apt to sound
the very bottom of our estate, and to
hinder and break the neck of all such
good purpose as the necessity of the
tyme shall set abrooch?”

The provinces of Holland and Zea-
land, notwithstanding the love they
bore to William of Orange, could never
be persuaded by his arguments into
favouring Anjou. Indeed, it was
rather on account of the love they
bore the Prince—whom they were
determined to have for their sovereign
—that they refused to listen to any
persuasion in favour of his rival, al-
though coming from his own lips. The
states-general, in a report to the states
of Holland, drawn up under the super-
intendence of the Prince, brought
forward all the usual arguments for
accepting the French duke, in case
the abjuration should take place. They
urged the contract with Anjou
(of August 13th, 1578), the great ex-
penses he had already incurred in
their behalf; the danger of offending
him; the possibility that in such case
he would ally himself with Spain; the
prospect that, in consequence of such
a result, there would be three enemies
in the field against them—the Wal-
loons, the Spaniards, and the French,
all whose forces would eventually be
turned upon Holland and Zealand
alone. It was represented that the
selection of Anjou would, on the other
hand, secure the friendship of France
—an alliance which would inspire
both the Emperor and the Spanish
monarch with fear; for they could
not contemplate without jealousy a
possible incorporation of the provinces
with that kingdom. Moreover, the
geographical situation of France made
its friendship inexpressibly desirable.
The states of Holland and Zealand
were, therefore, earnestly invited to
send deputies to an assembly of the

1 Groen v. Prinst., Archives, etc., vii. 7.
Hubert Languet, too, lamented the coldness
of Germany towards her brethren in blood
and creed. “Germania suo more,” he writes
to Sir Philip Sidney, “set otiosa spectatrix
tragediarum, quae apud vicinas ipsi gentes

aguntur et ex alienis incommodi sua com-
moda capit.”—Ep. 71, p. 254.
2 Letter of Orange to the “Nearer-united
states,” apud Bor. 3, xiv. 135.
3 Archives de la Maison d’Orange, etc., vi.
646, sqq.
4 Report in Bor. xiii. 92-95.
as Lieutenant-General, to keep the subjects of the land equally under his protection; and that he had
in all his acts. He rebuked the parasitic
which placed the accepted chief of the provinces in a sordid and con-
temptible position. "The Archduke
has been compelled," said he, in August,
the states-general, "to break up
housekeeping, for want of means.
Wretched and diabolical for
the country. If he should be compelled,
very poverty, to leave the land!"
be reduced to lay down all the power
in which he had himself been
enjoyed in, if he were to con-

was impossible," he said, "for him
to serve Order in the same footing as himself, without
power or authority, without means,
without money, without

He reminded the
states-general, that the enemy—under
a pretext of peace negotiations—were
muttering malicious statements
in the effect that he was personally the

The real object
of these latter negotiations was to
new dissension throughout the land, to
set brother against brother, house
against house. As in Italy, Guise's
and Melun's—of France, the
New and Boleyn—of England, the
Stuarts and Commons, by their

the fact that he was personally the

The real object
of these latter negotiations was to
new dissension throughout the land, to
set brother against brother, house
against house. As in Italy, Guise's
and Melun's—of France, the
New and Boleyn—of England, the
Stuarts and Commons, by their

The real object
of these latter negotiations was to
new dissension throughout the land, to
set brother against brother, house
against house. As in Italy, Guise's
and Melun's—of France, the
New and Boleyn—of England, the
Stuarts and Commons, by their

The real object
of these latter negotiations was to
new dissension throughout the land, to
set brother against brother, house
against house. As in Italy, Guise's
and Melun's—of France, the
New and Boleyn—of England, the
Stuarts and Commons, by their

ful as religious difference to set friend against friend, father against son, husband against wife.¹

He warned the states against the peace propositions of the enemy. Spain had no intention to concede, but was resolved to extirpate. For himself, he had certainly everything to lose by continued war. His magnificent estates were withheld, and—added he with simplicity—there is no man who does not desire to enjoy his own.² The liberation of his son, too, from his foreign captivity, was, after the glory of God and the welfare of the fatherland, the dearest object of his heart. Moreover, he was himself approaching the decline of life. Twelve years he had spent in perpetual anxiety and labour for the cause. As he approached old age, he had sufficient reason to desire repose. Nevertheless, considering the great multitude of people who were leaning upon him, he should account himself disgraced if, for the sake of his own private advantage, he were to recommend a peace which was not perfectly secure. As regarded his own personal interests, he could easily place himself beyond danger—yet it would be otherwise with the people. The existence of the religion which through the mercy of God he professed, would be sacrificed, and countless multitudes of innocent men would, by his act, be thrown bodily into the hands of the blood-thirsty inquisitors who, in times past, had murdered so many persons, and so utterly desolated the land. In regard to the ceaseless insinuations against his character which men uttered "over their tables and in the streets," he observed philosophically, that "mankind were naturally inclined to calumny, particularly against those who exercised government over them. His life was the best answer to those slanders. Being overwhelmed with debt, he should doubtless do better in a personal point of view to accept the excellent and profitable offers which were daily made to him by the enemy."³ He might be justified in such a course, when it was remembered how many had deserted him and forsworn their religion. Nevertheless, he had ever refused, and should ever refuse, to listen to offers by which only his own personal interests were secured. As to the defence of the country, he had thus far done all in his power, with the small resources placed at his command. He was urged by the "nearer-united states" to retain the post of Lieutenant-General. He was ready to consent. He was, however, not willing to hold office a moment, unless he had power to compel cities to accept garrisons, to enforce the collection of needful supplies throughout the provinces, and in general to do everything which he judged necessary for the best interests of the country.⁴

Three councils were now established—one to be in attendance upon the Archduke and the Prince of Orange, the two others to reside respectively in Flanders and in Utrecht. They were to be appointed by Matthias and the Prince, upon a double nomination from the estates of the united provinces. Their decisions were to be made according to a majority of votes, and there was to be no secret cabinet behind and above their deliberations.⁵ It was long, however, before these councils were put into working order. The fatal jealousy of the provincial authorities, the small ambition of local magistrates, interposed daily obstacles to the vigorous march of the generality.⁶ Never was jealousy more mischievous, never circumspection more misapplied. It was not a land nor a crisis in which there was peril of centralisation. Local municipal governo

---

¹ Letter to the States-General, Sept. 18, 1579, Bor, 2, xiv. 131, sqq.
² "Daer is niemand by soude wel begeren het zyne te gebruiken." Letter to the States-General.
³ "Om alzulke goede vorderlijke conditien en te nemen als de selve zijn gepresenteert en aengoboden even verre by daer,
⁴ Letter to the States-General, Sept. 18, 1579, Bor, 2, xiv. 131, sqq.
⁵ Bor, xiv. 135. Archives de la M. d'Orange, vi. 107.
⁶ Archives, etc., vii. 94.
manded chastisement, if any act of misadministration on his part could be found, and repeated his anxious desire either to be relieved from his functions, or to be furnished with the means of discharging them with efficiency.

On the 29th of December 1579, he again made a powerful speech in the States-General. Upon the 9th of January 1580, following, he made an elaborate address upon the state of the country, urging the necessity of raising instantly a considerable army of good and experienced soldiers. He fixed the indispensable number of such a force at twelve thousand foot, four thousand horse, and at least twelve thousand piquets. "Weigh well the matters relate, in conclusion, which have thus been urged, and which are of the greatest necessity. Men in numbers daily are coming to the question, as if I held power over life and death. At the same time, I am astonished that by reason of the greatness of the states, he was ever so slight a mischiefe when he knew the matter to be within reach. Yet, however, my masters," he added, "I believe that this address will not be without effect. To refuse them will cause the speedy destruction of the land. Whatever else I write, I pray you to consider that with a spirit and in an honest manner, I do write for you."

The Prince was not pleased with the disappointment, which his loss in a severe battle, in which the Requemerg, governor of the province of Gelder, had been killed, and the Prince was mortally wounded, in the field of Normandy. He was carried to the city of Amiens, where he died on the 9th of August, 1580, and was buried in the church of St. John.
ing friend of Orange. He had been brought up in the family of his cousin, the Count de Lalain, governor of Hainault, and had inherited the title of Renneberg from an uncle, who was a dignitary of the church. For more than a year there had been suspicions of his fidelity. He was supposed to have been tampered with by the Duke of Terranova, on the first arrival of that functionary in the Netherlands. Nevertheless, the Prince of Orange was unwilling to listen to the whispers against him. Being himself the mark of calumny, and having a tender remembrance of the elder brother, he persisted in reposing confidence in a man who was in reality unworthy of his friendship. George Lalain, therefore, remained stadholder of Friesland and Drenthe, and in possession of the capital city, Groningen.

The rumours concerning him proved correct. In November 1579, he entered into a formal treaty with Terranova, by which he was to receive—as he contemplated—the price of “the virtuous resolution which he contemplated”—the sum of ten thousand crowns in hand, a further sum of ten thousand crowns within three months, and a yearly pension of ten thousand florins. Moreover, his barony of Ville was to be erected into a marquiseate, and he was to receive the order of the Golden Fleece at the first vacancy. He was likewise to be continued in the same offices under the King which he now held from the estates. The bill of sale, by which he agreed with a certain Quislain le Bally to transfer himself to Spain, fixed these terms with the technical scrupulosity of any other mercantile transaction. Renneberg sold himself as one would sell a yoke of oxen, and his motives were no whit nobler than the cynical contract would indicate.

“See you not,” said he in a private letter to a friend, “that this whole work is brewed by the Nassaus for the sake of their own greatness, and that they are everywhere provided with the very best crumbs? They are to be stadholders of the principal provinces; we are to content ourselves with Overysel and Drente. Therefore I have thought it best to make my peace with the King, from whom more benefits are to be got.”

Jealousy and selfishness, then, were the motives of his “virtuous resolution.” He had another, perhaps a nobler incentive. He was in love with the Countess Meghen, widow of Lancelot Berlaymont, and it was privately stipulated that the influence of his Majesty’s government should be employed to bring about his marriage with the lady. The treaty, however, which Renneberg had made with Quislain le Bailly was not immediately carried out. Early in February 1580, his sister and evil genius, Cornelia Lalain, wife of Baron Monceau, made him a visit at Groningen. She implored him not to give over his soul to perdition by oppressing the Holy Church. She also appealed to his family pride, which should keep him, she said, from the contamination of companionship with “base-born weavers and furriers.” She was of opinion that to contaminate his high-born fingers with base bribes were a lower degradation. The pension, the crowns in hand, the marquiseate, the

---

1 Bor, xv. 276.
2 Bor, xiv. 162, sqq. Meteren, x. 168.
3 Hooff, xvi. 651.
4 Compare Byvoogels, Auth Stuck, tot P. Bor, ii. 3. 4. The terms of the bargain thus coldly set forth, are worthy attention, as shewing the perfectly mercantile manner in which these great nobles sold themselves. An honest attachment, such as was manifestly fostered by cavaliers like Berlaymont and his four brave sons, to the royal and Catholic cause, can be respected, even while we regret that so much bravery should have been expended in support of so infamous a tyranny. But while their fanaticism can be forgiven, no language is strong enough to stigmatise the men who deserted the cause of liberty and conscience for hire. It must be remembered that Renneberg was much more virtuous than a large number of his distinguished compatriots, many of whom were transferred so often from one side to the other, that they at last lost all convertible value.

5 Kuyk. Holl. Staatsreg., i. 176, note 5.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

...collar of the Golden Fleece, were all held before his eyes again. He was persuaded, moreover, that the fair hand of the wealthy widow would be the crowning prize of his treason, but in this he was destined to disappointment. The Countess was reserved for a more brilliant and a more bitter fate. She was to espouse a man of higher rank, but more worthless character, also a traitor to the cause of freedom, to which she was herself devoted, and who was even accused of attempting her life in her old age, in order to supply her place with a younger rival.

The artful eloquence of Cornelia de Lalaing did its work, and Rennenberg entered into correspondence with Parma. It is singular with how much indulgence his conduct and character were regarded both before and subsequently to his treason. There was something attractive about the man. In an age when many German and Netherland nobles were given to drunkenness and debauchery, and were distinguished rather for coarseness of manner and brutality of intellect than for refinement or learning, Count Rennenberg, on the contrary, was an elegant and accomplished gentleman—the Sydney of his country in all but loyalty of character. He was a classical scholar, a votary of music and poetry, a graceful troubadour, and a valiant knight. He was "sweet and lovely of conversation," generous and bountiful by nature. With so many good gifts, it was a thousand pities that the gift of truth had been denied him. Never did treason look more amiable, but it was treason of the blackest die. He was treacherous, in the hour of her utmost need, to the country which had trusted him. He was treacherous to the great man who had leaned upon his truth, when all others had abandoned him.

He was treacherous from the most sordid of motives—jealousy of his friend and love of place and pel; but his subsequent remorse and his early death have cast a veil over the blackness of his crime.

While Cornelia de Lalaing was in Groningen, Orange was in Holland. Intercepted letters left no doubt of the plot, and it was agreed that the Prince, then on his way to Amsterdam, should summon the Count to an interview. Rennenberg’s trouble at the proximity of Orange could not be suppressed. He felt that he could never look his friend in the face again. His plans were not ripe; it was desirable to dissemble for a season longer; but how could he meet that tranquil eye which "looked quite through the deeds of men?" It was obvious to Rennenberg that his deed was to be done forthwith, if he would escape discomfiture. The Prince would soon be in Groningen, and his presence would dispel the plots which had been secretly constructed.

On the evening of March 34, 1580, the Count entertained a large number of the most distinguished families of the place at a ball and banquet. At the supper-table, Hildbrand, chief burgomaster of the city, bluntly interrogated his host concerning the calamitous reports which were in circulation, expressing the hope that there was no truth in these inventions of his enemies. Thus summoned, Rennenberg, seizing the hands of Hildbrand in both his own, exclaimed, "Oh, my father! you whom I esteem as my father, can you suspect me of such guilt? I pray you, trust me, and fear me not!"

With this he restored the burgomaster and all the other guests to calm.

---

1 Meteren, x. 163. Bor, xiv. 161, and Hooff, xviii. 423.
2 See the letters of Count John of Nassau and of the Landgrave William, in Archives, vol. vi. and vii, passim.
3 Hooff, xviii. 775.
4 "Soet en lieflijk van conversatie."—Bor, xvi. 270.
5 "Je me suis trouvé," wrote the Prince in March 1580, to Lazarus Schwendi, "et trouve encore à présent abandonné sans mal de secours et assistance, mais ma partie de communication et de conseils, en la plus grande difficulté du temps et dangereuses occurrences qui me tombent sur les bras."—Archives, vii. 291.
6 Bor, xiv. 167.
7 Bor, 167. Meteren, x. 169. Hooff, xvi. 682.
A Coup d'Etat.

1580.

foremost gentleman, who was no other than burgomaster Hildebrand. He fell dead at the feet of the stadholder — of the man who had clasped his hands a few hours before, called him father, and implored him to entertain no suspicions of his honour. The death of this distinguished gentleman created a panic, during which Renneberg addressed his adherents, and stimulated them to stone by their future zeal in the King's service for their former delinquency. A few days afterwards the city was formally reunited to the royal government, but the Count's measures had been precipitated to such an extent, that he was unable to carry the province with him, as he had hoped. On the contrary, although he had secured the city, he had secured nothing else. He was immediately beleaguered by the state's forces in the province under the command of Barthold Entes, Hohenlo, and Philip Louis Nassau, and it was necessary to send for immediate assistance from Parma.

While he was speaking, a few citizens of the highest class forced their way through the throng and addressed the mob in tones of authority. They were evidently magisterial persons endeavouring to quell the riot. As they advanced, one of Renneberg's men-at-arms discharged his carabine at the

CHAPTER IV.


1 Van 't hoop tem voete gewapent."—Bor, ubi sup. "In volle harnas."—Hoofd, xvi. 682. "Hy sag anders niet dan een dood mensch."—Bor, xiv. 1699. "Heel bestorven om de kraeken."—Hoofd, ubi sup.

The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1890.]

The war continued in a languid and desultory manner in different parts of the country. At an action near Ingel-munster, the brave and accomplished De la Noue was made prisoner. This was a severe loss to the states, a cruel blow to Orange, for he was not only one of the most experienced soldiers, but one of the most accomplished writers of his age. His pen was as celebrated as his sword. In exchange for the illustrious Frenchman the states in vain offered Count Egmont, who had been made prisoner a few weeks before, and De Selles, who was captured shortly afterwards. Parma answered, contemptuously, that he would not give a lion for two sheep. Even Champagny was offered in addition, but without success. Parma had written to Philip, immediately upon the capture, that, were it not for Egmont, Selles, and others, then in the power of Orange, he should order the execution of La Noue. Under the circumstances, however, he had begged to be informed as to his Majesty’s pleasure, and in the meantime had placed the prisoner in the castle of Limburg, under charge of De Billy. His Majesty, of course, never signified his pleasure, and the illustrious soldier remained for five years in a loathsome dungeon more befitting a condemned malefactor than a prisoner of war. It was in the donjon keep of the castle, lighted only by an aperture in the roof, and was therefore exposed to the rain and all inclemencies of the sky, while rats, toads, and other vermin housed in the miry floor.

Here this distinguished personage, Francis with the Iron Arm, whom all Frenchmen, Catholic or Huguenot, admired for his genius, bravery, and purity of character, passed five years of close confinement. The government was most anxious to take his life, but the captivity of Egmont and others prevented the accomplishment of their wishes. During this long period, the wife and numerous friends of La Noue were unwarried in their efforts to effect his ransom or exchange, but none of the prisoners in the hands of the patriots were considered a fair equivalent.

The obscure proposition was even made by Philip the Second to La Noue, that he should receive his liberty if he would permit his eyes to be put out, as a preliminary condition. The fact is attested by several letters written by La Noue to his wife. The prisoner, wearied, shattered in health, and sighing for air and liberty, was disposed and even anxious to accept the infamous offer, and discussed the matter philosophically in his letters. That lady, however, horror-struck at the suggestion, implored him to reject the condition, which he accordingly consented to do. At last, in June 1585, he was exchanged, on extremely rigorous terms, for Egmont. During his captivity in this vile dungeon, he composed not only his famous political and military discourses, but several other works, among the rest, Annotations upon Plutarch and upon the Histories of Guicciardini.

The siege of Groningen proceeded, and Parma ordered some forces under Martin Schoenck to advance to its relief. On the other hand, the meagre states’ forces under Sonoy, Hohenlo, Enes, and Count John of Nassau’s young son, William Louis, had not yet made much impression upon the city. There

---

1 Bor. xv. 194. 195. Hoeft, xvi. 699.
2 "Che egli habbia saputo," says Bentivoglio, "cosi ben maneggiare la penna come la spada; e valore in pace non punto meno che in guerra."—Guerra di Flandra, 2. 1. 484.
5 Strada, d. 2. iii. 155, 156. Parma is said to have hinted to Philip that De Billy would willingly undertake the private assassination of La Noue.—Popelinère, Hist. des Pays Bas, 1556–1584.
7 "Enfin on en vint jusques à ce degré de barbarie que de lui faire succéder sous main, que pour donner une suffisante caution de ne porter jamais les armes contre le Roy Catholique, il fallait qu’il se laissât crever les yeux. A peine l’heureuse vie si je ne l’avais aisé que par la lecture des histoires et par le rapport d’un tiers. Mais 7 ou 8 lettres qu’il a faictes de sa propre main à sa femme m’ont rendu la chose si indubitable, que sur sa foi je la donne icy pour telle."—Amiraute, pp. 280, 281–298. —Compare Strada, 2. iii. 166.
8 Bor. xv. 203–205. Hoeft, xvi. 691, 692.

--Moterau, x. 169, 170.
was little military skill to stone for the feebleness of the assaulting army, although there was plenty of rude valour. Barthold Entes, a man of desperate character, was impatient at the dilatoriness of the proceedings. After having been in disgrace with the states, since the downfall of his friend and patron, the Count De la Marche, he had recently succeeded to a regiment in place of Colonel Yesselstein, "dismissed for a homicide or two." On the 17th of May, he had been dining at Roeda, in company with Hohenlo and the young Count of Nassau. Returning to the trenches in a state of wild intoxication, he accosted a knot of super- officers, informing them that they were but boys, and that he would show them how to carry the faubourg of Groningen on the instant. He was answered that the faubourg, being walled and moated, could be taken only by escalade or battery. Laughing loudly, he rushed forward toward the countergarde, waving his sword, and brandishing on his left arm the cover of a butter firkin, which he had taken instead of his buckler. He had advanced, however, but a step, when a bullet from the faubourg pierced his brain, and he fell dead without a word.

So perished one of the wild founders of the Netherland commonwealth—one of the little band of reckless adventurers who had captured the town of Brill in 1572, and thus laid the foundation-stone of a great republic, which was to dictate its laws to the empire of Charles the Fifth. He was in some sort a type. His character was emblematical of the worst side of the liberating movement. Desperate, lawless, ferocious—a robber on land, a pirate by sea—he had rendered great service in the cause of his fatherland, and had done it much disgrace. By the evil deeds of men like himself, the fair face of liberty had been profaned at its first appearance. Born of a respectable family, he had been noted, when a student in this very Groningen where he had now found his grave, for the youthful proficiacy of his character. After dissipating his patrimony, he had taken to the sea, the legalised piracy of the mortal struggle with Spain offering a welcome refuge to spendthrifts like himself. In common with many a banished noble of ancient birth and broken fortunes, the riotous student became a successful corsair, and it is probable that his prizes were made as well among the friends as the enemies of his country. He amassed in a short time one hundred thousand crowns—no contemptible fortune in those days. He assisted La Marche in the memorable attack upon Brill, but behaved badly and took to flight when Mondragon made his memorable expedition to relieve Tergees. He had subsequently been imprisoned with La Marche for insubordination, and during his confinement had dissipated a large part of his fortune. In 1576, after the violation of the Ghent treaty, he had returned to his piratical pursuits, and having prospered again as rapidly as he had done during his former cruises, had been glad to exchange the ocean for more honourable service on shore. The result was the tragic yet almost ludicrous termination which we have narrated. He left a handsome property, the result of his various piracies, or, according to the usual euphemism, prizes. He often expressed regret at the number of traders whom he had cast into the sea, complaining, in particular, of one victim whom he had thrown overboard, who would never sink, but who for years long ever floated in his wake, and stared him in the face whenever he looked over his vessel's side. A gambler, a profligate, a pirate, he had yet rendered service to the cause of freedom, and his name—sullying the purer and nobler ones of other founders of the commonwealth—"is enrolled in the capitol."
berg was set free to resume his operations on a larger scale, and the fate of all the north-eastern provinces was once more swinging in the wind. The boors of Drenthe and Friesland rose again. They had already mustered in the field at an earlier season of the year, in considerable force. Calling themselves "the desperates," and bearing on their standard an eggshell with the yolk running out—to indicate that they were ready to fight for the shell—(they had swept through the open country, plundering and burning. Hohenlo had ambushed them in two encounters, slaying a large number of their forces, and reduced them for a time to tranquillity.

His late overthrow once more set them loose. Renneberg, always apt to be suspicious in prosperity, as he was naturally frightened in adversity, now assumed the air of a conqueror. He had only eight thousand men under his orders, but his strength lay in the weakness of his adversaries. A small war now succeeded, with small armies, small battles, small campaigns, small successes. For the time, the Prince was well enough content to see so brave a general as Hohenlo.

In truth, he was almost alone. "Donec

..." he said emphatically—

\[\text{Duces sunt multis, amici,}\
\[\text{Reliqua sunt mulibus multis.}\]

But the summer was doomed to a short span of observation by the final steps of his brother John from the north.

The war had been carried out by the boors. It was a fortunate state of affairs that befriended him with the States. It was fortunate that there was neither official nor religious authority over them, or that they did not pay, or a tax when they did not protect...
There were endless quarrels between the various boards of municipal and provincial government—particularly concerning contributions and expenditures. During this wrangling, the country was exposed to the forces of Parma, to the private efforts of the Malcontents, to the unpaid soldiery of the states, to the armed and rebellious peasantry. Little heed was paid to the admonitions of Count John, who was of a hotter temper than was the tranquil Prince. The stadholder gave way to fits of passion at the meanness and the insolence to which he was constantly exposed. He readily recognised his infirmity, and confessed himself unable to accommodate his irascibility to the "humores" of the inhabitants. There was often sufficient cause for his petulance. Never had pretor of a province a more penurious civil list. "The baker has given notice," wrote Count John, in November, "that he will supply no more bread after to-morrow, unless he is paid." The states would furnish no money to pay the bill. It was no better with the butcher. "The cook has often no meat to roast," said the Count, in the same letter, "so that we are often obliged to go supperless to bed." His lodgings were a half-roofed, half-finished, unfurnished barrack, where the stadholder passed his winter days, his bed being in a small, dark, freezing-cold chamber, often without fire-wood. Such circumstances were certainly not calculated to excite envy. When in addition to such wretched parsimony, it is remembered that the Count was perpetually worried by the quarrels of the provincial authorities with each other and with himself, he may be forgiven for becoming thoroughly exhausted at last. He was growing "grey and grizzled" with perpetual perplexity. He had been fed with annoyance, as if—to use his own homely expression—"he had eaten it with a spoon." Having already loaded himself with a debt of six hundred thousand florins, which he had spent in the states' service, and having struggled manfully against the petty tortures of his situation, he cannot be severely censured for relinquishing his post. The affairs of his own Countship were in great confusion. His children—boys and girls—were many, and needed their fathers' guidance, while the eldest, William Louis, was already in arms for the Netherlands, following the instincts of his race. Distinguished for a rash valour, which had already gained the rebuke of his father and the applause of his comrades, he had commenced his long and glorious career by receiving a severe wound at Coevorden, which caused him to halt for life. Leaving so worthy a representative, the Count was more justified in his departure. His wife, too, had died in his absence, and household affairs required his attention. It must be added, however, that if the memory of his deceased spouse had its claims, the selection of her successor was still more prominent among his anxieties.

1 When the extraordinary generosity of the Count himself, and the altogether unexampled sacrifices of the Prince are taken into account, it may well be supposed that the patience of the brothers would be sorely tried by the parsimony of the states. It appears a document laid before the states-general in the winter of 1580-1581, that the Count had himself advanced to Orange 570,000 florins in the cause. The total of money spent by the Prince himself for the sake of Netherland liberty was 2,500,000. These vast sums had been raised in various ways and from various personages. His estates were deeply hypothecated, and his creditors so troublesome, that, in his own language, he was unable to attend properly to his affairs, so frequent and so threatening were the applications made upon him for payment. Day by day he felt the necessity advancing more closely upon him of placing himself personally in the hands of his creditors and making over his estates to their mercy until the uttermost farthing should be paid. In his two campaigns against Alva (1568 and 1572) he had spent 1,050,000 florins. He owed the Elector Palatine 150,000 florins, the Landgraves 60,000, Count John 570,000, and other sums to other individuals.—Staat ende kort begrip van het geen, M. E. Heere den P. van Orange betal'd mag hebben mitsgaders het geene synne V. G. schuldig is gebleven, etc. Ordin. Depechen Boek, A* 1580, 1581, f. 245° sqq., MS. Hague Archives.

2 Archives et Correspondance, viii. 109, 113, 323, 329.

3 Ibid., viii. 384, 487.

The worthy gentleman had been supernaturally directed as to his second choice, ere that choice seemed necessary; for before the news of his wife's death had reached him, the Count dreamed that he was already united in second nuptials to the fair Cunigunda, daughter of the deceased Elector Palatine—a vision which was repeated many times. On the morrow he learned, to his amazement, that he was a widower, and entertained no doubt that he had been specially directed towards the princess seen in his slumbers, whom he had never seen in life. His friends were in favour of his marrying the Electress Dowager, rather than her daughter, whose years numbered less than half his own. The honest Count, however, "after ripe consideration," decidedly preferred the maid to the widow. "I confess," he said, with much gravity, "that the marriage with the old Electress, in respect of her God-fearing disposition, her piety, her virtue, and the like, would be much more advisable. Moreover, as she hath borne her cross, and knows how to deal with gentlemen, so much the better would it be for me. Nevertheless, inasmuch as she has already had two husbands, is of a tolerable age, and is taller of stature than myself, my inclination is less towards her than towards her daughter." 3

For these various considerations, Count John, notwithstanding the remonstrances of his brother, definitely laid down his government of Gelderland, and quitted the Netherlands about midsummer. 4 Enough had not been done, in the opinion of the Prince, so long as aught remained to do, and he could not bear that his brother should desert the country in the hour of its darkness, or doubt the Almighty when His hand was veiled in clouds.

1 Archives, etc., vii. 323, sqq. This conviction of Divine interposition was inserted in the marriage contract.—Vide Memorial von Gr. Ernst zu Schwenburg and Dr. Jacob Schwartz. Archives et Correspondance, vii. 561, sqq.
2 Archives et Correspondance, vii. 525 and 561, note.—"Item:" says the marriage memorial already cited, "the widow is a tolerably stout lady, which would be almost derogatory to his Grace. When they should be in company of other gentlemen and ladies, or should be walking together in the streets, his Grace would seem almost little at her side."—Memoir of Dr Schwartz.
3 Archives, etc., vii. 390.
4 Archives et Correspondance, vii. 316.
5 Bor. xv. 212, 213.
6 Ibid.

"One must do one's best," said he, "and believe that when such misfortunes happen, God desires to prove us. If He sees that we do not lose our courage, He will assuredly help us. Had we thought otherwise, we should never have pierced the dykes on a memorable occasion, for it was an uncertain thing and a great sorrow for the poor people; yet did God bless the undertaking. He will bless us still, for His arm hath not been shortened." 4

On the 22d of July 1580, the Archduke Matthias, being fully aware of the general tendency of affairs, summoned a meeting of the generality in Antwerp. He did not make his appearance before the assembly, but requested that a deputation might wait upon him at his lodgings, and to this committee he unfolded his griefs. He expressed his hope that the states were not—in violation of the laws of God and man—about to throw themselves into the arms of a foreign prince. He reminded them of their duty to the holy Catholic religion, and to the illustrious house of Austria, while he also pathetically called their attention to the necessities of his own household, and hoped that they would, at least, provide for the arrears due to his domestics. 5

The states-general replied with courtesy as to the personal claims of the Archduke. For the rest, they took higher grounds, and the coming declaration of independence already pierced through the studied decorum of their language. They defended their negotiation with Anjou on the ground of necessity, averring that the King of Spain had proved inexorable to all intercession, while, through the intrigues of their bitterest enemies, they had been entirely forsaken by the Empire. 6

Soon afterwards, a special legation,
Granvelle Recommends the Ban.

with Saint Aldegonde at its head, was despatched to France to consult with the Duke of Anjou, and settled terms of agreement with him by the treaty of Flessis les Tours (on the 29th of September 1580), afterwards definitely ratified by the convention of Bordeaux, signed on the 23rd of the following January. 1

The states of Holland and Zeeland, however, kept entirely aloof from this transaction, being from the beginning opposed to the choice of Anjou. From the first to the last, they would have no master but Orange, and to him, therefore, this year they formally offered the sovereignty of their provinces; but they offered it in vain.

The conquest of Portugal had effect ed a diversion in the affairs of the Netherlands. It was but a transitory one. The provinces found the hopes which they had built upon the necessity of Spain for large supplies in the peninsula—to their own consequent relief—soon changed into fears, for the rapid success of Alva in Portugal gave his master additional power to oppress the heretics of the north. Henry, the Cardinal King, had died in 1580, after succeeding to the youthful adventurer, Don Sebastian, slain during his chivalrous African campaign (4th of August 1578). The contest for the succession which opened upon the death of the aged monarch was brief, and in fifty-eight days, the bastard Antonio, Philip's only formidable competitor, had been utterly defeated and driven forth to lurk, like a hunted wild beast, among rugged mountain caverns, with a price of a hundred thousand crowns upon his head. 2

In the course of the succeeding year, Philip received homage at Lisbon as King of Portugal. 3 From the moment of this conquest, he was more disposed, and more at leisure than ever, to vent his wrath against the Netherlands, and against the man whom he considered the incarnation of their revolt.

Cardinal Granvelle had ever whispered in the King's ear the expediency of taking off the Prince by assassination. It has been seen how subtly distilled, and how patiently hoarded, was this priest's venom against individuals, until the time arrived when he could administer the poison with effect. His hatred of Orange was intense and of ancient date. He was of opinion, too, that the Prince might be scared from the post of duty, even if the assassin's hand were not able to reach his heart. He was in favour of publicly setting a price upon his head—thinking that if the attention of all the murderers in the world were thus directed towards the illustrious victim, the Prince would tremble at the dangers which surrounded him. "A sum of money would be well employed in this way," said the Cardinal, "and, as the Prince of Orange & a vile coward, fear alone will throw him into confusion." 4 Again, a few months later, renewing the subject, he observed, "twould be well to offer a reward of thirty or forty thousand crowns to any one who will deliver the Prince dead or alive; since from very fear of it—as he is pusillanimous—it would not be unlikely that he should die of his own accord." 5

It was insulting even to Philip's intelligence to insinuate that the Prince would shrink before danger, or die of fear. Had Orange ever been inclined to bombast, he might have answered the churchman's calumnies, as Caesar the soothsayer's warning:

1 Bor, xxii. cap. 29; xii. cap. 2, 5, 6, pp. 1095-1139. 2 Archives, etc., viii. 988, sqq.
3 He wore on the occasion of the ceremony "a censock of crimson brocade, with large folds." With his sceptre grasped in his right hand, and his crown upon his head, he looked, says his enthusiastic biographer, "like King David—red, handsome, and venerable." "Parecía al Rey David, rojo, hermoso á la vista, i venerable en la Majestad que representaba." —Cabrera, xii. 1126.
4 Archives, etc., viii. 166. —"Y cualquier dinero sería muy bien empleado — y como es vil y cobardiz, al miedo le pondría en confusión."—Letter of the Cardinal to Philip, August 8, 1579.
5 "Tambien se podríal Príncipe d'Orange poner tacha de 30 o 40 mil escudos, á quien le matase o diése vivo, como hacen todos los potentados de Italia, con miedo solo, desto como es pusillanimus, no seria mucho morséase de suyo," etc.—Ibid.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1580.

"—Danger knows full well that Caesar is more dangerous than he—"

and in truth, Philip had long trembled on his throne before the genius of the man who had foiled Spain’s boldest generals and wildest statesmen. The King, accepting the priest’s advice, resolved to fulminate a ban against the Prince, and to set a price upon his head. "It will be well," wrote Philip to Parma, "to offer thirty thousand crowns or so to any one who will deliver him dead or alive. Thus the country may be rid of a man so pernicious; or at any rate he will be held in perpetual fear, and therefore prevented from executing leisurely his designs." 1

In accordance with these suggestions and these hopes, the famous ban was accordingly drawn up, and dated on the 15th of March 1580. It was, however, not formally published in the Netherlands until the month of June of the same year. 2

This edict will remain the most lasting monument to the memory of Cardinal Granvelle. It will be read when all his other state-papers and epistles—able as they incontestably are—shall have passed into oblivion. No panegyric of friend, no palliating magnanimity of foe, can roll away this rock of infamy from his tomb. It was by Cardinal Granvelle and by Philip that a price was set upon the head of the foremost man of his age, as if he had been a savage beast, and that admission into the ranks of Spain’s haughty nobility was made the additional bribe to tempt the assassin.

The ban 3 consisted of a preliminary narrative to justify the penalty with which it was concluded. It referred to the favours conferred by Philip and his father upon the Prince; to his signal ingratitude and dissimulation. It accused him of originating the Request, the image-breaking, and the public preaching. It censured his marriage with an abbess—even during the lifetime of his wife; alluded to his campaigns against Alva, to his rebellion in Holland, and to the horrible massacres committed by Spaniards in that province—as the necessary consequences of his treason. It accused him of introducing liberty of conscience, of procuring his own appointment as Ruward, of violating the Ghent treaty, of foiling the efforts of Don John, and of frustrating the counsels of the Cologne commissioners by his perpetual distrust. It charged him with a newly-organised conspiracy, in the erection of the Utrecht Union; and for these and similar crimes—set forth with involutions, slow, spiral, and cautious as the head and front of the indictment was direct and deadly—it denounced the chas- tisement due to the "wretched hypocrite" who had committed such offences.

"For these causes," concluded the ban, "we declare him traitor and miscreant, enemy of ourselves and of the country. As such we banish him perpetually from all our realms, forbidding all our subjects, of whatever quality, to communicate with him openly or privately—to administer to him victuals, drink, fire, or other necessaries. We allow all to injure him in property or life. We expose the said William Nassau as an enemy of the human race—giving his property to all who may seize it. And if any one of our subjects or any stranger should be found sufficiently generous of heart to rid us of this pest, delivering him to us, alive or dead, or taking his life, we will cause to be furnished to him immediately after the deed shall have been done, the sum of twenty-five thousand crowns in gold. If he have committed any crime, however heinous, we promise to pardon him; and if he be not already noble, we will ennoble him for his valour."

Such was the celebrated ban against the Prince of Orange. It was answered before the end of the year by the memorable "Apology of the Prince

---


2 Wagenaar, Vat. Hist., vii. 345, 346.

3 It is appended to the "Apology," in the edition of Sylvius, pp. 145-169.
of Orange," one of the most startling documents in history. No defiance was ever thundered forth in the face of a deep in more terrible tones. It had become sufficiently manifest to the royal party that the Prince was not to be purchased by "millions of money," or by unlimited family advancement—not to be cajoled by flattery or offers of illustrious friendship. It had been decided, therefore, to terrify him into retreat, or to remove him by murder. The Government had been thoroughly convinced that the only way to finish the revolt, was to "finish Orange," according to the ancient advice of Antonio Perez. The mask was thrown off. It had been decided to forbid the Prince bread, water, fire, and shelter; to give his wealth to the fisc, his heart to the assassin, his soul, as it was hoped, to the Father of Evil. The rupture being thus complete, it was right that the "wretched hypocrite" should answer ban with ban, royal denunciation with sublime scorn. He had ill-deserved, however, the title of hypocrite, he said. When the friend of government, he had warned them that by their complicated and perpetual persecutions they were twisting the rope of their own ruin. Was that hypocrisy? Since becoming their enemy, there had likewise been little hypocrisy found in him—unless it were hypocrisy to make open war upon government, to take their cities, to expel their armies from the country.

The proscribed rebel, towering to a moral and even social superiority over the man who affected to be his master by right divine, swept down upon his antagonist with crushing effect. He repudiated the idea of a king in the Netherlands. The word might be legitimate in Castile, or Naples, or the Indies, but the provinces knew no such title. Philip had inherited in those countries only the power of Duke or Count—a power closely limited by constitutions more ancient than his birthright. Orange was no rebel then—Philip no legitimate monarch. Even were the Prince rebellious, it was no more than Philip's ancestor, Albert of Austria, had been towards his anointed sovereign, Emperor Adolphus of Nassau, ancestor of William. The ties of allegiance and conventional authority being severed, it had become idle for the King to affect superiority of lineage to the man whose family had occupied illustrious stations when the Habsburgs were obscure squires in Switzerland, and had ruled as sovereign in the Netherlands before that overshadowing house had ever been named.

But whatever the hereditary claims of Philip in the country, he had forfeited them by the violation of his oaths, by his tyrannical suppression of the charters of the land; while by his personal crimes he had lost all pretension to sit in judgment upon his fellow man. Was a people not justified in rising against authority when all their laws had been trodden under foot, "not once only, but a million of times?"—and was William of Orange, lawful husband of the virtuous Charlotte de Bourbon, to be denounced for moral delinquency by a lascivious, incestuous, adulterous, and murderous king? With horrible distinctness he laid before the monarch all the crimes of which he believed him guilty, and having thus told Philip to his beard, "thou dostest," he had a withering word for the priest who stood at his back. "Tell me," he cried, "by whose command Cardinal Granvelle administered poison to the Emperor Maximilian? I know what the Emperor told me, and how much fear he felt afterwards for the King and for all Spaniards."

He ridiculed the effrontery of men like Philip and Granvelle, in charging "distrust" upon others, when it was the very atmosphere of their own existence. He proclaimed that sentiment to be the only salvation for the country. He reminded Philip of the words which his namesake of Macedon—a schoolboy in tyranny, compared to himself—had heard from the lips of Demosthenes—that the strongest fortress of a free people against a tyrant was distrust. That sentiment, worthy of eternal memory, the Prince declared that he had taken from the "divine
The rise of the Dutch Republic.

A great struggle went on in the hearts of the people, and they prayed God that it might be resolved in favor of the cause which they had so readily believed to be their own. But the voice of the majority had been heard by his majesty.

He readily assented to the peace, but he was not willing to admit the idea of the way of neutrality, and he was determined to prevent the breach of the various contracts which had been made in the interests of the republic. He was ready to go to any length to maintain his independence.

To this end, he declared, in a private audience, that he had not accepted the peace as a means of escape. He was not willing to sacrifice the honor of his country for the sake of personal interests. He was ready to fight to the last, and he was determined to maintain his independence.

His words were full of eloquence, and they were accompanied by a firmness and resolution which were not to be gainsaid. He was ready to risk his life, and to face the consequences, rather than to submit to a dishonorable peace.

The peace was signed, and the terms were accepted by both parties. The Dutch republic was thus saved from the jaws of destruction, and its independence was maintained.

—Il will obey. Here is my head, over which no prince, no monarch, has power but yourselves. Dispose of it for your good, for the preservation of your republic, but if you judge that the moderate amount of experience and industry which is in me, if you judge that the remainder of my property and of my life can yet be of service to you, I dedicate them anew to you and to the country."

His words—most appropriate to his life and character—"Je maintiendrai," was the concluding phrase of the document. His arms and signature were also formally appended, and the Apology, translated into the most modern languages, was sent to nearly every potentate in Christendom. It had been previously, on the 15th of December 1580, read before the assembly of the united states at Delhi, and approved as certainly as the sun was ingenuously denounced.

During the remainder of the year 1580, and the half of the following year, the scene of hostilities was mainly in the north-east—Pavia, while waiting the arrival of fresh troops, being inactive. The operations, like the armies and the generals, were petty. Holstein was opposed to Renemburg. After a few insignificant victories, the latter had seized on Steenwyck, a city in possession of no great importance, but the key to the provinces of Friesland. The garrison consisted of six hundred soldiers and half as many trained archers. Renemburg, having six thousand foot and twelve hundred horse, summoned the place to surrender, but was answered with defiance. Captain Kempf, who had escaped from Groningen, after unsuccessively warning the citizens of Renemburg's meditated
treason, commanded in Steenwyk, and his courage and cheerfulness sustained the population of the city during a close winter siege. Tumultuous mobs in the streets demanding that the place should be given over ere it was too late, he denounced to their faces as "flocks of gabbling geese," unworthy the attention of brave men. To a butcher who, with the instinct of his craft, begged to be informed what the population were to eat when the meat was all gone, he coolly observed, "We will eat you, villain, first of all, when the time comes: so go home and rest assured that you, at least, are not to die of starvation."1 With such rough but cheerful admonitions did the honest soldier, at the head of his little handful, sustain the courage of the beleaguered city. Meantime Renneberg pressed it hard. He bombarded it with red-hot balls, a new invention introduced five years before by Stephen Bathor, King of Poland, at the siege of Dantzig.2 Many houses were consumed, but still Compton and the citizens held firm. As the winter advanced, and the succour which had been promised still remained in the distance, Renneberg began to pelt the city with sarcasms, which, it was hoped, might prove more effective than the red-hot balls. He sent a herald to know if the citizens had eaten all their horses yet; a question which was answered by an ostentatious display of sixty starving hacks—all that could be mustered—upon the heights. He sent them on another occasion, a short letter, which ran as follows:—

"MOST HONOURABLE, MOST STEADFAST.—As, during the present frost, you have but little exercise in the trenches—as you cannot pass your time in twirling your finger-rings, seeing that they have all been sold to pay your soldiers' wages—as you have nothing to rub your teeth upon,

nor to scour your stomachs withal, and as, nevertheless, you require something if only to occupy your minds, I send you the enclosed letter, in hope it may yield amusement.—January 15, 1581."3

The enclosure was a letter from the Prince of Orange to the Duke of Anjou, which, as it was pretended, had been intercepted. It was a clumsy forgery, but it answered the purpose of more skilful counterfeiting, at a period when political and religious enmity obscured men's judgment. "As to the point of religion," the Prince was made to observe, for example, to his illustrious correspondent, "that is all plain and clear. No sovereign who hopes to come to any great advancement ought to consider religion, or hold it in regard. Your Highness, by means of the garrisons and fortresses, will be easily master of the principal cities in Flanders and Brabant, even if the citizens were opposed to you. Afterwards you will compel them without difficulty to any religion which may seem most conducing to the interests of your Highness."4

Odious and cynical as was the whole tone of the letter, it was extensively circulated. There were always natures base and brutal enough to accept the calumny and to make it current among kindred souls. It may be doubted whether Renneberg attached faith to the document; but it was natural that he should take a malicious satisfaction in spreading this libel against the man whose perpetual scorn he had so recently earned. Nothing was more common than such forgeries, and at that very moment a letter, executed with equal grossness, was passing from hand to hand, which purported to be from the Count himself to Parma.5 History has less interest in contradicting the calumnies against a man like Renneberg. The fictitious epistle of

---

1 Hoofd, xvii. 715. Muteren, x. 178c.
2 Muteren, x. 179d. Wagenaer, vii. 359.
3 Muteren, x. 179e.
4 The whole letter is given by Bor, of course as a forgery, xvi. 239-241. It was probably prepared by Assenleville.—Ibid. Compare Groen v. Prinst., Archives, vii. 339.
5 This letter, the fictitious character of which is as obvious as that of the forged epistle of Orange, is given at length by Bor, xv. 211, 212. It is amusing to see the gravity with which the historian introduces the ridiculous document, evidently without entertaining a doubt as to its genuineness.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic

Orange, however, was so often republished, and the copies so carefully distributed, that the Prince had thought it important to add an express repudiation of its authorship, by way of appendix to his famous Apology. He took the occasion to say, that if a particle of proof could be brought that he had written the letter, or any letter resembling it, he would forthwith leave the Netherlands, never to show his face there again.  

Notwithstanding this well known denial, however, Rennenberg thought it facetious to send the letter into Steenwyk, where it produced but small effect upon the minds of the burghers. Meantime, they had received intimation that succour was on its way. Hollow balls containing letters were shot into the town, bringing the welcome intelligence that the English colonel, John Norris, with six thousand states' troops, would soon make his appearance for their relief, and the brave Corput added his cheerful exhortations to heighten the satisfaction thus produced. A day or two afterwards, three quails were caught in the public square, and the commandant improved the circumstance by many quaint homilies. The number three, he observed, was typical of the Holy Trinity, which had thus come symbolically to their relief. The Lord had sustained the fainting Israelites with quails. The number three indicated three weeks, within which time the promised succour was sure to arrive. Accordingly, upon the 22d of February 1581, at the expiration of the third week, Norris succeeded in victualling the town, the merry and steadfast Corput was established as a true prophet, and Count Rennenberg abandoned the siege in despair.  

The subsequent career of that unhappy nobleman was brief. On the 19th of July his troops were signal defeated by Sonoy and Norris, the fugitive royalists retreating into Groningen at the very moment when their general, who had been prevented by illness from commanding them, was receiving the last sacraments. remorse, shame, and disappointment had literally brought Rennenberg to his grave. “His treason,” says a contemporary, “was a nail in his coffin,” and on his deathbed he bitterly bemoaned his crime. “Groningen! Groningen! would that I had never seen thy walls!” he cried repeatedly in his last hours. He refused to see his sister, whose insidious counsels had combined with his own evil passions to make him a traitor; and he died on the 23d of July 1581, repentant and submissive.  

His heart, after his decease, was found “shrivelled to the dimensions of a walnut,” a circumstance attributed to poison by some, to remorse by others. His regrets, his early death, and his many attractive qualities, combined to save his character from universal denunciation, and his name, although indelibly stained by treason, was ever mentioned with pity rather than with rancour.  

Great changes, destined to be perpetual, were steadily preparing in the internal condition of the provinces. A preliminary measure of an important character had been taken early this year by the assembly of the united provinces held in the month of January at Delft. This was the establishment of a general executive council. The constitution of the board was arranged on the 18th of the month, and was embraced in eighteen articles. The number of councilors was fixed at thirty, all to be native Netherlands; a certain proportion to be appointed from each province by its estates. The advice and consent of this body as to treaties with foreign powers were to be indispensable, but they were not to interfere with the rights and duties of the states-general, nor to interpose any obstacle to the

---

1 Bor, xvi. 230.  
3 Bor, xvi. 276. Hooff, xviii. 773. Meteor, x. 184.  
4 “So verderrekt en kleon als een walse note.”—Bor, xvi. 976.  
5 His death was attributed by the royalists to regret at his ill success in accomplishing the work for which he had received so large a price.—MS. letter of Henri de Neube to Prince of Parma, July 22, 1581. Reit. Gron. und Rennenberg, ii. 2. 184, Royal Archives, Brussels.
arrangements with the Duke of Anjou.\footnote{The Constitution of the "Land Raad" is given in full by Bow, xvi. 241-243.}

While this additional machine for the self-government of the provinces was in the course of creation, the Spanish monarch, on the other hand, had made another effort to recover the authority which he felt slipping from his grasp. Philip was in Portugal, preparing for his coronation in that new kingdom—an event to be nearly contemporaneous with his deposition from the Netherland sovereignty, so solemnly conferred upon him a quarter of a century before in Brussels; but although thus distant, he was confident that he could more wisely govern the Netherlands than the inhabitants could do, and unwilling as ever to confide in the abilities of those to whom he had delegated his authority. Provided, as he unquestionably was at that moment, with a more energetic representative than any who had before exercised the functions of royal governor in the provinces, he was still disposed to harass, to doubt, and to interfere. With the additional cares of the Portuguese Conquest upon his hands, he felt as irresistibly impelled as ever to superintend the minute details of provincial administration. To do this was impossible. It was, however, not impossible, by attempting to do it, to produce much mischief. "It gives me pain," wrote Granvelle, "to see his Majesty working as before—choosing to understand everything and to do everything. By this course, as I have often said before, he really accomplishes much less."\footnote{Archives, etc., vii. 568.} The King had, moreover, recently committed the profound error of sending the Duchess Margaret of Parma to the Netherlands again. He had the fatuity to believe her memory so tenderly cherished in the provinces as to ensure a burst of loyalty at her reappearance, while the irritation which he thus created in the breast of her son he affected to disregard. The event was what might have been foreseen. The Netherlands were very moderately excited by the arrival of their former regent, but the Prince of Parma was furious. His mother actually arrived at Namur in the month of August 1580, to assume the civil administration of the provinces,\footnote{Wagenaar, vii. 344, 345. Strada, 2, iii. 156.} and he was himself, according to the King’s request, to continue in the command of the army. Any one who had known human nature at all, would have recognised that Alexander Farnese was not the man to be put into leading strings. A sovereign who was possessed of any administrative sagacity, would have seen the absurdity of taking the reins of government at that crisis from the hands of a most determined and energetic man, to confide them to the keeping of a woman. A king who was willing to reflect upon the consequences of his own acts, must have foreseen the scandal likely to result from an open quarrel for precedence between such a mother and son. Margaret of Parma was instantly informed, however, by Alexander, that a divided authority like that proposed was entirely out of the question. Both offered to resign; but Alexander was unfinching in his determination to retain all the power or none. The Duchess, as docile to her son after her arrival as she had been to the King on undertaking the journey, and feeling herself unequal to the task imposed upon her, implored Philip’s permission to withdraw, almost as soon as she had reached her destination. Granvelle’s opinion was likewise opposed to this interference with the administration of Alexander, and the King at last suffered himself to be overruled. By the end of the year 1581, letters arrived confirming the Prince of Parma in his government, but requesting the Duchess of Parma to remain privately in the Netherlands. She accordingly continued to reside there under an assumed name until the autumn of 1583, when she was at last permitted to return to Italy.\footnote{Strada, 2, iii. 156. Wagenaar, vii. 10-11.}

During the summer of 1581, the
same spirit of persecution which had inspired the Catholics to inflict such infinite misery upon those of the Reformed faith in the Netherlands, began to manifest itself in overt acts against the Papists by those who had at last obtained political ascendancy over them. Edicts were published in Antwerp, in Utrecht, and in different cities of Holland, suspending the exercise of the Roman worship. These statutes were certainly a long way removed in horror from those memorable placards which sentenced the Reformers by thousands to the axe, the cord, and the stake, but it was still melancholy to see the persecuted becoming persecutors in their turn. They were excited to these stringent measures by the noisy zeal of certain Dominican monks in Brussels, whose extravagant discourses were daily inflaming the passions of the Catholics to a dangerous degree. The authorities of the city accordingly thought it necessary to suspend, by proclamation, the public exercise of the ancient religion, assigning, as their principal reason for this prohibition, the shocking jugglery by which simple-minded persons were constantly deceived. They alluded particularly to the practice of working miracles by means of relics, pieces of the holy cross, bones of saints, and the perspiration of statues. They charged that bits of lath were daily exhibited as fragments of the cross; that the bones of dogs and monkeys were held up for adoration as those of saints; and that oil was poured habitually into holes drilled in the heads of statues, that the populace might believe in their miraculous sweating. For these reasons, and to avoid the tumult and possible bloodshed to which the disgust excited by such charlatanny might give rise, the Roman Catholic worship was suspended until the country should be restored to greater tranquillity. Similar causes led to similar proclamations in other cities. The Prince of Orange lamented the intolerant spirit thus shewing itself among those who had been its martyrs, but it was not possible at that moment to keep it absolutely under control.

A most important change was now to take place in his condition, a most vital measure was to be consummated by the provinces. The step, which could never be retraced was, after long hesitation, finally taken upon the 26th of July 1581, upon which day the united provinces, assembled at the Hague, solemnly declared their independence of Philip, and renounced their allegiance for ever. This act was accomplished with the deliberation due to its gravity. At the same time it left the country in a very divided condition. This was inevitable. The Prince had done all that one man could do to hold the Netherlands together and unite them perpetually into one body politic, and perhaps, if he had been inspired by a keener personal ambition, this task might have been accomplished. The seventeen provinces might have accepted his dominion, but they would agree to that of no other sovereign. Providence had not decreed that the country, after its long agony, should give birth to a single and perfect commonwealth. The Walloon provinces had already fallen off from the cause, notwithstanding the entreaties of the Prince. The other Netherlands, after long and tedious negotiation with Anjou, had at last consented to his supremacy, but from this arrangement Holland and Zealand held themselves aloof. By a somewhat anomalous proceeding, they sent deputies along with those of the other provinces, to the conferences with the Duke, but it was expressly understood that they would never accept him as sovereign. They were willing to contract with him and with their sister provinces—over which he was soon to exercise authority—a firm and perpetual league, but as to their own

3 See the Proclamation in Bor, xiv. 260, 261.
4 Bor, xvi. 276. Meteren, x. 157. Strak, 2 iv. 178, sqq.
chief, their hearts were fixed. The Prince of Orange should be their lord and master, and none other. It lay only in his self-denying character that he had not been clothed with this dignity long before. He had, however, persisted in the hope that all the provinces might be brought to acknowledge the Duke of Anjou as their sovereign, under conditions which constituted a free commonwealth with an hereditary chief, and in this hope he had constantly refused concession to the wishes of the northern provinces. He in reality exercised sovereign power over nearly the whole population of the Netherlands. Already in 1580, at the assembly held in April, the states of Holland had formally requested him to assume the full sovereignty over them, with the title of Count of Holland and Zeeland forfeited by Philip. He had not consented, and the proceedings had been kept comparatively secret. As the negotiations with Anjou advanced, and as the corresponding abjuration of Philip was more decisively indicated, the consent of the Prince to this request was more warmly urged. As it was evident that the provinces, thus bent upon placing him at their head, could by no possibility be induced to accept the sovereignty of Anjou—as, moreover, the act of renunciation of Philip could no longer be deferred, the Prince of Orange reluctantly and provisionally accepted the supreme power over Holland and Zeeland. This arrangement was finally accomplished upon the 24th of July 1581, and the act of abjuration took place two days afterwards. The offer of the sovereignty over the other united provinces had been accepted by Anjou six months before.

Thus, the Netherlands were divided into three portions—the reconciled provinces, the united provinces under Anjou, and the northern provinces under Orange; the last division forming the germ, already nearly developed, of the coming republic. The constitution, or catalogue of conditions, by which the sovereignty accorded to Anjou was reduced to such narrow limits as to be little more than a nominal authority; while the power remained in the hands of the representative body of the provinces, will be described, somewhat later, together with the inauguration of the Duke. For the present it is necessary that the reader should fully understand the relative position of the Prince and of the northern provinces. The memorable act of renunciation—the Netherland declaration of independence—will then be briefly explained.

On the 29th of March 1580, a resolution passed the assembly of Holland and Zeeland never to make peace or enter into any negotiations with the King of Spain on the basis of his sovereignty. The same resolution provided that his name—hitherto used in all public acts—should be forever discarded, that his seal should be broken, and that the name and seal of the Prince of Orange should be substituted in all commissions and public documents. At almost the same time the states of Utrecht passed a similar resolution. These offers were, however, not accepted, and the affair was preserved profoundly secret. On the 5th of July 1581, “the knights, nobles, and cities of Holland and Zeeland,” again, in an urgent and solemn manner, requested the Prince to accept the “entire authority as sovereign and chief of the land, as long as the war should continue.” This limitation as to time was inserted most reluctantly by the states, and because it was perfectly well understood that without it the Prince would not accept the sovereignty at all. The act by which this dignity was offered, conferred full power to command all forces by land and sea, to appoint all military officers, and to conduct all warlike operations,

---

without the control or advice of any person whatsoever. It authorised him, with consent of the states, to appoint all financial and judicial officers, created him the supreme executive chief, and fountain of justice and pardon, and directed him "to maintain the exercise only of the Reformed evangelical religion, without, however, permitting that inquiries should be made into any man's belief or conscience, or that any injury or hindrance should be offered to any man on account of his religion."1

The sovereignty thus pressingly offered, and thus limited as to time, was finally accepted by William of Orange, according to a formal act dated at the Hague, 5th of July 1581,2 but it will be perceived that no powers were conferred by this new instrument beyond those already exercised by the Prince. It was, as it were, a formal continuance of the functions which he had exercised since 1576 as the King's stadholder, according to his old commission of 1555, although a vast difference existed in reality. The King's name was now discarded and his sovereignty disowned, while the proscribed rebel stood in his place, exercising supreme functions, not vicariously, but in his own name. The limitation as to time was, moreover, soon afterwards secretly, and without the knowledge of Orange, cancelled by the states.3 They were determined that the Prince should be their sovereign—if they could make him so—for the term of his life.

The offer having thus been made and accepted upon the 5th of July, oaths of allegiance and fidelity were exchanged between the Prince and the states upon the 24th of the same month. In these solemnities, the states, as representing the provinces, declared that because the King of Spain, contrary to his oath as Count

1 Bor, xv, 183, 184.  
2 Ibid.  
3 Kluit, i, 213, 214.  
4 Bor, xv, 185, 186.  
5 The document is given in full by Bor, xvi, 276–290, by Metten, x, 187–190. The nature and consequences of the measure are commented upon by Kluit, the constitutional historian of Holland, in a masterly manner (x. Hooff, vol. i, 186–200). See also Wagenaer, vii, 391.—Compare Strada, who introduces his account of the abjuration with sepulchral solemnity: "Jam nihil dicendum est facinus, cujus a commonaria, quasi abhorrente animo,actus supersedil," etc.—Bell, Belg., iv, 175, seq.
At the very outset of the Abjuration, these fathers of the Republic laid down wholesome truths, which at that time seemed startling blasphemies in the ears of Christendom. "All mankind know," said the preamble, "that a prince is appointed by God to cherish his subjects, even as a shepherd to guard his sheep. When, therefore, the prince does not fulfil his duty as protector; when he oppresses his subjects, destroys their ancient liberties, and treats them as slaves, he is to be considered, not a prince, but a tyrant. As such, the estates of the land may lawfully and reasonably depose him, and elect another in his room."  

Having enunciated these maxims, the estates proceeded to apply them to their own case, and certainly never was an ampler justification for renouncing a prince since princes were first instituted. The states ran through the history of the past quarter of a century, patiently accumulating a load of charges against the monarch, a tithe of which would have furnished cause for his dethronement. Without passion or exaggeration, they told the world their wrongs. The picture was not highly coloured. On the contrary, it was rather a feeble than a striking portrait of the monstrous iniquity which had so long been established over them. Nevertheless, they went through the narrative conscientiously and earnestly. They spoke of the King's early determination to govern the Netherlands, not by natives but by Spaniards; to treat them not as constitutional countries, but as conquered provinces; to regard the inhabitants not as liege subjects, but as enemies; above all, to supersede their ancient liberty by the Spanish Inquisition, and they alluded to the first great step in this scheme—the creation of the new bishopric, each with its staff of inquisitors.  

They noticed the memorable Petiti

---

1 Act of Abjuration.
2 "— en door de voorwa Canoniken de Spaansche Inquisitie ingebrocht de welke in dese altij so schrickelijk en odieus als de uiterste slavernye," etc.—Act of Abjuration.
3 "Ook onder de wroete en tyrannigste
nature—desirous of maintaining the
rights, charters, and liberties of their
fatherland—determined to escape from
slavery to Spaniards—and making
known their decision to the world,
they declared the King of Spain de-
posed from his sovereignty, and pro-
claimed that they should recognise
thenceforth neither his title nor juris-
diction. Three days afterwards, on
the 29th of July, the assembly adopted
a formula, by which all persons were
to be required to signify their abjura-
tion.1

Such were the forms by which the
united provinces threw off their allegi-
ance to Spain, and ipso facto establish-
ed a republic, which was to flourish
for two centuries. This result, how-
ever, was not exactly foreseen by the
congress which deposed Philip. The
fathers of the commonwealth did not
baptize it by the name of Republic.
They did not contemplate a change in
their form of government. They had
neither an aristocracy nor a democracy
in their thoughts.2 Like the actors in
our own great national drama, these
Netherland patriots were struggling
to sustain, not to overthrow; unlike
them, they claimed no theoretical free-
dom for humanity—promulgated no
doctrine of popular sovereignty: they
insisted merely on the fulfilment of
actual contracts, signed, sealed, and
sworn to by many successive sove-
igns. Acting upon the principle that
government should be for the
benefit of the governed, and in confor-
mity to the dictates of reason and
justice, they examined the facts by
those Divine lights, and discovered
cause to discard their ruler. They did
not object to being ruled. They were
satisfied with their historical institu-
tions, and preferred the mixture of
hereditary sovereignty with popular
representation, to which they were ac-
customed. They did not devise an à
priori constitution. Philip having vi-
olated the law of reason and the statutes
of the land, was deposed, and a new
chief magistrate was to be elected in
his stead. This was popular sove-
reignty in fact, but not in words. The
deposition and election could be legally
justified only by the inherent right of
the people to depose and to elect; yet
the provinces, in their Declaration of
Independence, spoke of the Divine
right of kings, even while dethroning,
by popular right, their own King!

So also, in the instructions given by
the states to their envoys charged to
justify the abjuration before the Im-
perial diet held at Augsburg,3 twelve
months later, the highest ground was
claimed for the popular right to elect
or depose the sovereign, while at
the same time, kings were spoken of as
"appointed by God." It is true that
they were described, in the same clause,
as "chosen by the people"—which
was, perhaps, as exact a concurrence in
the maxim of Vox populi, vox Dei, as
the boldest democrat of the day could
demand. In truth, a more democratic
course would have defeated its own
ends. The murderous and mischievous
pranks of Imbise, Ryhove, and such
demagogues, at Ghent and elsewhere,
with their wild theories of what they
called Grecian, Roman, and Helvetian
republicanism, had inflicted damage
enough on the cause of freedom, and
had paved the road for the return
of royal despotism. The senators assem-
bled at the Hague gave more moderate
instructions to their delegates at Aug-
burg. They were to place the King's
tenure upon contract—not an implied
one, but a contract as literal as the
lease of a farm. The house of Austria,
they were to maintain, had come into
the possession of the seventeen Nether-
lands upon certain express conditions.

---

1 Bor, xvi. 290.—It ran as follows: "I
solemnly swear that I will henceforward not
respect, nor obey, nor recognize the King of
Spain as my prince and master; but that I
renounce the King of Spain, and abjure the
allegiance by which I may have formerly
been bound to him. At the same time I
swear fidelity to the United Netherlands—so
wit, the provinces of Brabant, Flanders,

Gueldres, Holland, Zeeland, etc., etc., and
also to the national council established by
the estates of those provinces; and promise
my assistance according to the best of my
abilities against the King of Spain and his
adherents."

2 Kluit, i. 199.

3 The instructions are given in Bor, xvii.
394-327.
and with the understanding that its possession was to cease with the first condition broken. It was a question of law and fact, not of royal or popular right. They were to take the ground, not only that the contract had been violated, but that the foundation of perpetual justice upon which it rested, had likewise been undermined. It was time to vindicate both written charters and general principles. "God has given absolute power to no mortal man," said Saint Aldegonde, "to do his own will against all laws and all reason."

"The contracts which the King has broken are no pedantic fantasies," said the estates, "but laws planted by nature in the universal heart of mankind, and expressly acquiesced in by prince and people." All men, at least, who speak the English tongue, will accept the conclusion of the provinces, that when laws which protected the citizen against arbitrary imprisonment and guaranteed him a trial in his own province—which forbade the appointment of foreigners to high office—which secured the property of the citizen from taxation, except by the representative body—which forbade intermeddling on the part of the sovereign with the conscience of the subject in religious matters—when such laws had been subverted by blood-tribunals, where drowsy judges sentenced thousands to stake and scaffold without a hearing—by excommunication, confiscation, banishment—by beheading, burning, to such enormous extent and with such terrible monotony that the executioner's sword came to be looked upon as the only symbol of justice—then surely it might be said, without exaggeration, that the complaints of the Netherlands were "no pedantic fantasies," and that the King had ceased to perform his functions as dispenser of God's justice.

1 Archives et Correspondance, vii. 277.
2 Instructions to the envoys, etc.; apud Bor, 5, xvii. 524–527.
3 Transactions between the envoys of the States-general and the Duke of Anjou.—Bor, 5, xvii. 504–507. So also in the remarkable circular addressed in the year 1588 (May 6) by the States of Holland to those of Utrecht and other provinces, the same intolerable grievance is described in the strongest language. "Under pretext of maintaining the Roman religion," say the estates, "the Inquisition and Council of Trent, have been established. Thus the Spaniards and their adherents have been empowered to accuse all persons who are known to be not of their humour, to bring them into the snares of the Inquisition, and to rob them of life, honour, and property."—Bor, 5, xvi. 186.
Without making any assault upon the Roman Catholic faith, the authors of the great act by which Philip was for ever expelled from the Netherlands shewed plainly enough that religious persecution had driven them at last to extremity. At the same time, they were willing—for the sake of conciliating all classes of their countrymen—to bring the political causes of discontent into the forefront, and to use discreet language upon the religious question.¹

Such, then, being the spirit which prompted the provinces upon this great occasion, it may be asked who were the men who signed a document of such importance? In whose name and by what authority did they act against the sovereign? The signers of the declaration of independence acted in the name and by the authority of the Netherland people. The estates were the constitutional representatives of that people. The statesmen of that day discovering, upon cold analysis of facts, that Philip's sovereignty was legally forfeited, formally proclaimed that forfeiture. Then inquiring what had become of the sovereignty, they found it not in the mass of the people, but in the representative body, which actually personated the people. The estates of the different provinces—consisting of the knights, nobles, and burgesses of each—sent, accordingly, their deputies to the general assembly at the Hague, and by this congress the decree of abjuration was issued. It did not occur to any one to summon the people in their primary assemblies, nor would the people of that day have comprehended the objects of such a summons. They were accustomed to the action of the estates, and those bodies represented as large a number of political capacities as could be expected of assemblies chosen upon general principles. The hour had not arrived for more profound analysis of the social compact. Philip was accordingly deposed justly, legally, formally—justly, because it had become necessary to abjure a monarch who was determined not only to oppress but to exterminate his people; legally, because he had habitually violated the constitutions which he had sworn to support; formally, because the act was done in the name of the people, by the body historically representing the people.

What, then, was the condition of the nation, after this great step had been taken? It stood, as it were, with its sovereignty in its hand, dividing it into two portions, and offering it, thus separated, to two distinct individuals. The sovereignty of Holland and Zealand had been reluctantly accepted by Orange. The sovereignty of the united provinces had been offered to Anjou, but the terms of agreement with that Duke had not yet been ratified. The movement was therefore triple, consisting of an abjuration and of two separate elections of hereditary chiefs; these two elections being accomplished in the same manner, by the representative bodies respectively of the united provinces, and of Holland and Zealand. Neither the abjuration nor the elections were acted upon beforehand by the communities, the train-bands, or the guilds of the cities—all represented, in fact, by the magistrates and councils of each; nor by the peasantry of the open country—all supposed to be represented by the knights and nobles. All classes of individuals, however, arranged in various political or military combinations, gave their acquiescence afterwards, together with their oaths of allegiance. The people approved the important steps taken by their representatives.²

Without a direct intention on the part of the people or its leaders to establish a republic, the Republic established itself. Providence did not permit the whole country, so full of wealth, intelligence, healthy political action—so stocked with powerful cities and an energetic population, to be combined into one free and prosperous commonwealth. The factious ambition of a few grantees, the cynical venality of many nobles, the frenzy of the

¹ Groen v. Prins., Archives, vii. 598.
² Kuit, i. 247-250.
Departure of the Archduke Matthias.

Ghent democracy, the spirit of religious intolerance, the consummate military and political genius of Alexander Farnese, the exaggerated self-abnegation and the tragic fate of Orange, all united to dissever this group of flourishing and kindred provinces.

The want of personal ambition on the part of William the Silent inflicted perhaps a serious damage upon his country. He believed a single chief requisite for the united states; he might have been, but always refused to become that chief; and yet he has been held up for centuries by many writers as a conspirator and a self-seeking intriguer. "It seems to me," said he, with equal pathos and truth, upon one occasion, "that I was born in this bad planet that all which I do might be misinterpreted." The people worshipped him, and there was many an occasion when his election would have been carried with enthusiasm. "These provinces," said John of Nassau, "are coming very unwillingly into the arrangement with the Duke of Alençon. The majority feel much more inclined to elect the Prince, who is daily, and without intermission, implored to give his consent. His Grace, however, will in no wise agree to this; not because he fears the consequences, such as loss of property or increased danger, for therein he is plunged as deeply as he ever could be;—on the contrary, if he considered only the interests of his race and the grandeur of his house, he could expect nothing but increase of honour, gold, and gear, with all other prosperity. He refuses only on this account—that it may not be thought that, instead of religious freedom for the country, he has been seeking a kingdom for himself and his own private advancement. Moreover, he believes that the connexion with France will be of more benefit to the country and to Christianity than if a peace should be made with Spain, or than if he should himself accept the sovereignty, as he is desired to do."

The unfortunate negotiations with Anjou, to which no man was more opposed than Count John, proceeded therefore. In the meantime, the sovereignty over the united provinces was provisionally held by the national council, and, at the urgent solicitation of the states-general, by the Prince. The Archduke Matthias, whose functions were most unceremoniously brought to an end by the transactions which we have been recording, took his leave of the states, and departed in the month of October. Brought to the country a beardless boy, by the intrigues of a faction who wished to use him as a tool against William of Orange, he had quietly submitted, on the contrary, to serve as the instrument of that great statesman. His personality during his residence was null; and he had to expiate, by many a petty mortification, by many a bitter tear, the boyish ambition which brought him to the Netherlands. He had certainly had ample leisure to repent the haste with which he had got out of his warm bed in Vienna to take his bootless journey to Brussels. Nevertheless, in a country where so much baseness, cruelty, and treachery was habitually practised by men of high position, as was the case in the Netherlands, it is something in favour of Matthias that he had not been base, or cruel, or treacherous. The states voted him, on his departure, a pension of fifty thousand guilders annually, which was probably not paid with exemplary regularity.

1 Arch., vi. 388.
2 Bor. xix. 456.—Compare Van d. Vynckt, vii. 73.
3 Ibid., vii. 388.
4 Arch., etc., vii. 382, 383.
5 Arch., etc., vii. 389.
6 Bor. xvi. 282. Meteren, x. 100. Wagenaeer, vii. 414, 415.
7 He is, however, accused by Meteren of having entered at last into secret intrigues with the King of Spain against William of Orange.—Nederl. Hist., x. 190. Hoofd repeats the story.—Nederl. Hist., xviii. 770. Wagenaeer discards it: vii. 414.
8 Bor. xvi. 282. Meteren, Hoofd. Wagenaeer, ubi sup.
CHAPTER V.

Policy of electing Anjou as sovereign—Commoda et incommoda—Views of Orange—Opinions at the French Court—Anjou relieves Cambrai—Parma besieges Tournaie—Brave defence by the Princess of Espanoy—Honourable capitulation—Anjou's courtship in England—The Duke's arrival in the Netherlands—Portrait of Anjou— Festivities in Flushing—Inauguration at Antwerp—The conditions or articles subscribed to by the Duke—Attempt upon the life of Orange—The assassin's papers—Confession of Venero—Gaspar Anastro—His escape—Execution of Venero and Zimmermann—Precarious condition of the Prince—His recovery—Death of the Princess—Premature letters of Parma—Further negotiations with Orange as to the sovereignty of Holland and Zealand—Character of the revised Constitution—Comparison of the positions of the Prince before and after his acceptance of the countship.

Thus it was arranged that, for the present, at least, the Prince should exercise sovereignty over Holland and Zealand; although he had himself used his utmost exertions to induce those provinces to join the rest of the United Netherlands in the proposed election of Anjou. This, however, they sternly refused to do. There was also a great disinclination felt by many in the other states to this hazardous offer of their allegiance, and it was the personal influence of Orange that eventually carried the measure through. Looking at the position of affairs and at the character of Anjou, as they appear to us now, it seems difficult to account for the Prince's policy. It is so natural to judge only by the result, that we are ready to censure statesmen for consequences which beforehand might seem utterly incredible, and for reading falsely human characters whose entire development only a late posterity has had full opportunity to appreciate.

Still, one would think that Anjou had been sufficiently known to inspire distrust.

There was but little, too, in the aspect of the French court to encourage hopes of valuable assistance from that quarter. It was urged, not without reason, that the French were as likely to become as dangerous as the Spaniards; that they would prove nearer and more troublesome masters; that France intended the incorporation of the Netherlands into her own kingdom; that the provinces would therefore be dispersed for ever from the German Empire; and that it was as well to hold to the tyrant under whom they had been born, as to give themselves voluntarily to another of their own making. In short, it was maintained, in homely language, that "France and Spain were both under one coverlid." It might have been added that only extreme misery could make the provinces take either bedfellows. Moreover, it was asserted, pressed by Henry the Fourth to Sully is worth placing in juxtaposition with this extravagant eulogium of Marnix: "Il me trompera bien s'il ne trompe tous ceux qui se furent en lui, et surtout s'il aime jamais ceux de la Religion, ny leur fait aucuns avantages; car je savy pour lui avoir ouy dire plus d'une fois, qu'il les haft comme le double dans son cœur, et puis il a le cœur si double et si malin, a le courage si lasche, le corps si mal basti, et est tant inhabile a toutes sortes de vertueux exercices, que je ne me soua- rois persuader qu'il fasse jamais rien de généreux."—Mem. de Sully, i. 102.—Compare Groen v. Prinsterer, Archives, etc., vii. 4-13.

1 Bor, xiv. 183.
2 See, in particular, two papers from the hand of Count John upon the subject. Archives et Correspondance, vii. 48-51, and 102-105.
3 Saint Aldegonde, for instance, wrote from Paris to an intimate friend, that after a conversation with Anjou of an hour and a halfe's duration, he had formed the very highest estimate of his talents and character. He praised to the skies the elegance of his manners, the liveliness of his mind, his remarkable sincerity—in which last gift he so particularly resembled the Netherlanders themselves. Above all, he extolled the Duke's extreme desire to effect the liberation of the provinces. He added, that if the opportunity should be let slip of securing such a prince, "posterity would regret it with bitter tears for a thousand years to come."—Hooff, xvii. 736. The opinion expressed by Henry the Fourth to Sully is worth placing in juxtaposition with this extravagant eulogium of Marnix: "Il me trompera bien s'il ne trompe tous ceux qui se furent en lui, et surtout s'il aime jamais ceux de la Religion, ny leur fait aucuns avantages; car je savy pour lui avoir ouy dire plus d'une fois, qu'il les haft comme le double dans son cœur, et puis il a le cœur si double et si malin, a le courage si lasche, le corps si mal basti, et est tant inhabile a toutes sortes de vertueux exercices, que je ne me soua- rois persuader qu'il fasse jamais rien de généreux."—Mem. de Sully, i. 102.—Compare Groen v. Prinsterer, Archives, etc., vii. 4-13.
4 "Incommoda et commodo," etc.—Archives et Correspondance, vii. 48.
5 "Daar Franckreich und Spanien miteinander unter einer decke liggen."—Ibid.
with reason, that Anjou would be a very expensive master, for his luxurious and extravagant habits were notorious—that he was a man in whom no confidence could be placed, and one who would grasp at arbitrary power by any means which might present themselves. Above all, it was urged that he was not of the true religion, that he hated the professors of that faith in his heart, and that it was extremely unwise for men whose dearest interests were their religious ones, to elect a sovereign of opposite creed to their own. To these plausible views the Prince of Orange and those who acted with him, had, however, sufficient answers. The Netherlands had waited long enough for assistance from other quarters. Germany would not lift a finger in the cause; on the contrary, the whole of Germany, whether Protestant or Catholic, was either openly or covertly hostile. It was madness to wait till religious came to them from unseen sources. It was time for them to assist themselves, and to take the best they could get; for when men were starving they could not afford to be dainty. They might be bound hand and foot, they might be overwhelmed a thousand times before they would receive succour from Germany, or from any land but France. Under the circumstances in which they found themselves, hope delayed was but a cold and meagre consolation.

"To speak plainly," said Orange, "asking us to wait is very much as if you should keep a man three days without any food in the expectation of a magnificent banquet, should persuade him to refuse bread, and at the end of three days should tell him that the banquet was not ready, but that a still better one was in preparation. Would it not be better, then, that the poor man, to avoid starvation, should wait no longer, but accept bread wherever he might find it? Such is our case at present."

It was in this vein that he ever wrote and spoke. The Netherlands were to rely upon their own exertions, and to procure the best alliance, together with the most efficient protection possible. They were not strong enough to cope single-handed with their powerful tyrant, but they were strong enough if they used the instruments which Heaven offered. It was not trusting but tempting Providence to wait supinely, instead of grasping boldly at the means of rescue within reach. It became the character of brave men to act, not to expect. "Otherwise," said the Prince, "we may climb to the tops of trees, like the Anabaptists of Munster, and expect God's assistance to drop from the clouds." It is only by listening to these arguments so often repeated, that we can comprehend the policy of Orange at this period. "God has said that he would furnish the raven with food, and the lions with their prey," said he; "but the birds and the lions do not, therefore, sit in their nests and their lairs waiting for their food to descend from heaven, but they seek it where it is to be found." So also, at a later day, when events seemed to have justified the distrust so generally felt in Anjou, the Prince, nevertheless, held similar language. "I do not," said he, "censure those who tell us to put our trust in God. That is my opinion also. But it is trusting God to use the means which He places in our hands, and to ask that His blessings may come upon them."

There was a feeling entertained by the more sanguine that the French King would heartily assist the Netherlands, after his brother should be fairly installed. He had expressly written to that effect, assuring Anjou that he would help him with all his strength, and would enter into close

---

1 Archives, etc., vii. 48.
2 "Une froide et bien maigre consolation."—Archives, vii. 240.
3 Archives, etc., vii. 240 and 285; Letter to Lazarus Schwendi.
4 Archives, etc., vii. 576.
5 Letter to Count John, Archives et Corresp., vii. 576.
6 Letter to States-general, apud Bor, xvii. 349-354 (one of the noblest State papers that ever came from his hand).
alliance with those Netherlands which should accept him as prince and sovereign. In another and more private letter to the Duke, the King promised to assist his brother, "even to his last shirt." There is no doubt that it was the policy of the statesmen of France to assist the Netherlands, while the "magnons" of the worthless King were of a contrary opinion. Many of them were secret partisans of Spain, and found it more agreeable to receive the secret pay of Philip than to assist his revolted provinces. They found it easy to excite the jealousy of the monarch against his brother—a passion which proved more effective than the more lofty ambition of annexing the Low Countries, according to the secret promptings of many French politicians. As for the Queen Mother, she was fierce in her determination to see fulfilled in this way the famous prediction of Nostradamus. Three of her sons had successively worn the crown of France. That she might be "the mother of four kings," without laying a third child in the tomb, she was greedy for this proffered sovereignty to her youngest and favourite son. This well-known desire of Catharine de Medici was duly insisted upon by the advocates of the election; for her influence, it was urged, would bring the whole power of France to support the Netherlands.

At any rate, France could not be worse—could hardly be so bad—as their present tyranny. "Better the government of the Gaul, though suspect and dangerous," said Everard Reyd, "than the truculent dominion of the Spaniard. Even thus will the partridge fly to the hand of man, to escape the talons of the hawk." As for the individual character of Anjou, proper means would be taken, urged the advocates of his sovereignty, to keep him in check, for it was intended so closely to limit the power conferred upon him, that it would be only supreme in name. The Netherlands were to be, in reality, a republic, of which Anjou was to be a kind of Italian or Frisian podesta. "The Duke is not to act according to his pleasure," said one of the negotiators, in a private letter to Count John; "we shall take care to provide a good muzzle for him." How conscientiously the "muzzle" was prepared, will appear from the articles by which the states soon afterwards accepted the new sovereign. How basely he contrived to slip the muzzle—in what cruel and cowardly fashion he bathed his fangs in the blood of the flock committed to him, will also but too soon appear. As for the religious objection to Anjou, on which more stress was laid than upon any other, the answer was equally ready. Orange professed himself "not theologian enough" to go into the subtleties brought forward. As it was intended to establish most firmly a religious peace, with entire tolerance for all creeds, he did not think it absolutely essential to require a prince of the Reformed faith. It was bigotry to dictate to the sovereign, when full liberty in religious matters was claimed for the subject. Orange was known to be a zealous professor of the Reformed worship himself; but he did not therefore reject political assistance, even though afforded by so not very enthusiastic member of the ancient Church.

"If the priest and the Levite pass us by when we are fallen among thieves," said he, with much aptness and some bitterness, "shall we reject the aid proffered by the Samaritan, because he is of a different faith from the worthy fathers who have left us to perish?" In short, it was observed with perfect truth that Philip had been removed, not because he was a

---

1 The letter dated Blois, Dec. 26, 1580, is given by Hooff, xvi., 754. According to Duplessis Mornay, the Duke had, however, been expressly instructed by his royal brother to withdraw the letter as soon as the deputies had seen it. He was always commanded never to importune his Majesty on the subject.—V. Bourget, Philippe II., et la Belgique, p. 147.
2 Quotation in Archives, etc., vii. 403.
3 De Thou, ix. 38–39.
4 Renouc de France, MS., tom. v. c. 5—Compare Strada, ii. 214, 215.
5 Reidun, Ann. Belg., ii. 51.
6 Archives et Correspond., vii. 290.
7 Ibid., vili. 573.
Catholic, but because he was a tyrant; not because his faith was different from that of his subjects, but because he was resolved to exterminate all men whose religion differed from his own. It was not, therefore, inconsistent to choose another Catholic for a sovereign, if proper guarantees could be obtained that he would protect and not oppress the Reformed churches. "If the Duke have the same designs as the King," said Saint Aldegonde, "it would be a great piece of folly to change one tyrant and persecutor for another. If, on the contrary, instead of oppressing our liberties, he will maintain them, and in place of exterminating the disciples of the true religion, he will protect them, then are all the reasons of our opponents without vigour." 1

By midsummer the Duke of Anjou made his appearance in the western part of the Netherlands. The Prince of Parma had recently come before Cambrai with the intention of reducing that important city. On the arrival of Anjou, however, at the head of five thousand cavalry—nearly all of them gentlemen of high degree, serving as volunteers—and of twelve thousand infantry, Alexander raised the siege precipitately, and retired towards Tournay. Anjou victualled the city, strengthened the garrison, and then, as his cavalry had only enlisted for a summer's amusement, and could no longer be held together, he disbanded his forces. The bulk of the infantry took service for the states, under the Prince of Espinoy, governor of Tournay. The Duke himself, finding that, notwithstanding the treaty of Plessis Tours and the present showy demonstration upon his part, the states were not yet prepared to render him formal allegiance, and being, moreover, in the heyday of what was universally considered his prosperous courtship of Queen Elizabeth, soon afterwards took his departure for England. 2

Parma, being thus relieved of his interference, soon afterwards laid siege to the important city of Tournay. The Prince of Espinoy was absent with the army in the north, but the Princess commanded in his absence. She fulfilled her duty in a manner worthy of the house from which she sprang, for the blood of Count Horn was in her veins. The daughter of Mary de Montmorency, the admiral's sister, answered the summons of Parma to surrender at discretion with defiance. The garrison was encouraged by her steadfastness. The Princess appeared daily among her troops, superintending the defences, and personally directing the officers. During one of the assaults, she is said, but perhaps erroneously, to have been wounded in the arm, notwithstanding which she refused to retire. 3

The siege lasted two months. Meantime, it became impossible for Orange and the estates, notwithstanding their efforts, to raise a sufficient force to drive Parma from his entrenchments. The city was becoming gradually and surely undermined from without, while at the same time the insidious art of a Dominican friar, Father Géry by name, had been as surely sapping the fidelity of the garrison from within. An open revolt of the Catholic population being on the point of taking place, it became impossible any longer to hold the city. Those of the Reformed faith insisted that the place should be surrendered; and the Princess, being thus deserted by all parties, made an honourable capitulation with Parma. She herself, with all her garrison, was allowed to retire with personal property, and with all the honors of war, while the sack of the city was commuted for one hundred thousand crowns, levied upon the inhabitants. The Princess, on leaving the gates, was received with such a shout of applause from the royal army that she seemed less like a defeated commander than a conqueror. Upon

---

1 Archives et Corresp., vii. 278.
The 30th November, Parma accordingly entered the place which he had been besieging since the 1st of October.\(^1\)

By the end of the autumn, the Prince of Orange, more than ever dissatisfied with the anarchical condition of affairs, and with the obstinate jealousy and parsimony of the different provinces, again summoned the country in the most earnest language to provide for the general defence, and to take measures for the inauguration of Anjou. He painted in sombre colours the prospect which lay before them, if nothing was done to arrest the progress of the internal disorders and of the external foe, whose forces were steadily augmenting.\(^2\) Had the provinces followed his advice, instead of quarrelling among themselves, they would have had a powerful army on foot to second the efforts of Anjou, and subsequently to save Tournay. They had remained supine and stolid, even while the cannonading against these beautiful cities was in their very ears. No man seemed to think himself interested in public affairs, save when his own province or village was directly attacked.\(^3\) The general interests of the commonwealth were forgotten in local jealousy. Had it been otherwise, the enemy would have long since been driven over the Meuse. “When money,” continued the Prince, “is asked for to carry on the war, men answer as if they were talking with the dead Emperor.\(^4\) To say, however, that they will pay no more, is as much as to declare that they will give up their land and their religion both. I say this, not because I have any desire to put my hands into the common purse. You well know that I have never touched the public money, but it is important that you should feel that there is no war in the country except the one which concerns you all.”

The states, thus ashamed and stimu-

---

\(^1\) Bor, Hoofd, Meteren, Strada, Bentivoglio.
\(^2\) Remonstrance to the States-general, Dec. 1, 1581, in Bor, xvi. 289, 290.
\(^3\) "So waren sy in de sake voort en antwoorden daer op als sy spraken met den
tated, set themselves in earnest to obey
the mandates of the Prince, and sent a
special mission to England, to arrange
with the Duke of Anjou for his formal
installation as sovereign. Saint Aldegonde and other commissioners were
already there. It was the memorable
episode in the Anjou wooing, when the
rings were exchanged between Elizabeth and the Duke, and when the
world thought that the nuptials were
on the point of being celebrated.
Saint Aldegonde wrote to the Prince
of Orange on the 22d of November,
that the marriage had been finally
settled upon that day.\(^5\) Throughout
the Netherlands, the suspicious tidings were greeted with bonfires, illu-
minations, and cannonading,\(^6\) and the
measures for hailed the Prince, thus
highly favoured by so great a Queen,
as sovereign master of the provinces,
were pushed forward with great
energy.

Nevertheless, the marriage ended in
smoke. There were plenty of tour-
nays, pageants, and banquets; a pro-
scription of nuptial festivities, in short,
where nothing was omitted but the
nuptials. By the end of January 1582,
the Duke was no nearer the goal than
upon his arrival three months before.
Acceding, therefore, to the wishes of
the Netherland envoys, he prepared
for a visit to their country, where the
ceremony of his joyful entrance as
Duke of Brabant and sovereign of the
other provinces was to take place. No
open rupture with Elizabeth occurred.
On the contrary, the Queen accom-
panied the Duke, with a numerous
and stately retinue, as far as Canter-
bury, and sent a most brilliant train
of her greatest nobles and gentlemen
to escort him to the Netherlands,
communicating at the same time, by spe-
cial letter, her wishes to the estates-
general, that he should be treated with
as much honour “as if he were her
second self.”\(^7\)

On the 10th of February, fifteen

doden Kayser.”—Ibid.
\(^4\) Strada, 2. iv. 214, sqq. Bor, xvi. 290.
De Thou, viii. 536, sqq.
\(^5\) Bor, De Thou, ubi sup. Hoofd, xviii. 788.
\(^6\) "Oblectatus distractusque juvenia, —
large vessels cast anchor at Flushing. The Duke of Anjou, attended by the Earl of Leicester, the Lords Hunsdon, Willoughby, Sheffield, Howard, Sir Philip Sidney, and many other personages of high rank and reputation, landed from this fleet. He was greeted on his arrival by the Prince of Orange, who, with the Prince of Espinoy and a large deputation of the states-general, had been for some days waiting to welcome him. The man whom the Netherlands had chosen for their new master stood on the shores of Zealand. Francis Hercules, Son of France, Duke of Alençon and Anjou, was at that time just twenty-eight years of age; yet not even his flatterers, or his "minions," of whom he had as regular a train as his royal brother, could claim for him the external graces of youth or of princely dignity. He was below the middle height, puny and ill-shaped. His hair and eyes were brown, his face was seamed with the small-pox, his skin covered with blotches, his nose so swollen and distorted that it seemed to be double. This prominent feature did not escape the sarcasms of his countrymen, who, among other gibes, were wont to observe that the man who always wore two faces, might be expected to have two noses also. It was thought that his revolving appearance was the principal reason for the rupture of the English marriage, and it was in vain that his supporters maintained that if he could forgive her age, she might, in return, excuse his ugliness. It seemed that there was a point of hideousness beyond which even royal princes could not descend with impunity, and the only wonder seemed that Elizabeth, with the handsome Robert Dudley ever at her feet, could even tolerate the addresses of Francis Valois. His intellect was by no means contemptible. He was not without a certain quickness of apprehension and vivacity of expression which passed current among his admirers for wit and wisdom. Even the experienced Saint Aldegonde was deceived in his character, and described him after an hour and half's interview, as a Prince overflowing with bounty, intelligence, and sincerity. That such men as Saint Aldegonde and the Prince of Orange should be at fault in their judgment, is evidence not so much of their want of discernment, as of the difference between the general reputation of the Duke at that period, and that which has been eventually established for him in history. Moreover, subsequent events were to exhibit the utter baseness of his character more signally than it had been displayed during his previous career, however vacillating. No more ignoble yet more dangerous creature had yet been loosed upon the devoted soil of the Netherlands. Not one of the personages who had hitherto figured in the long drama of the revolt had enacted so sorry a part. Ambitious but trivial, enterprising but cowardly, an intriguer and a dupe, without religious convictions or political principles, save that he was willing to accept any creed or any system which might advance his own schemes, he was the most unfit protector for a people who, whether wrong or right, were at least in earnest, and who were accustomed to regard truth as one of the virtues. He was certainly not deficient in self-esteem. With a figure which was insignificant, and a countenance which was repulsive, he had hoped to efface the impres-

vidit se in medio nuptias celebreact omnia pretor nuptias."—Strada, ii. 421.—Compare De Thou, viii. 960, sqq. Hoofd, xix. 790. "... qu'il avait accompagné de la recommandation d'une Princesse qui estime avoir tel intérêt en vous que vous en seriez presque l'avantage à honorer un Prince qui lui est si cher qu'elle fait autant de lui comme d'un autre sol-même," etc., etc.—_Lettre de la Serenissime Reine d'Angleterre aux Etats-généraux, Nov. 6, 1581, MR. Ordinariae Depocheum Book der Staat-

general, A5, 1582-1583, t. iv, Hague Archives.

1 De Thou, Hoofd, ubi sup. Bor, xvii. 296. Meteren, xi. 192.

The Rise of the Dutch Republic

408

sion made upon Elizabeth's imagination by the handsomest man in Europe. With a commonplace capacity, and with a narrow political education, he intended to circumvent the most profound statesman of his age. And there, upon the pier at Flushing, he stood between them both; between the magnificent Leicester, whom he had thought to outshine, and the silent Prince of Orange, whom he was determined to outwit. Postersity has long been aware how far he succeeded in the one and the other attempt.

The Duke's arrival was greeted with the roar of artillery, the ringing of bells, and the acclamations of a large concourse of the inhabitants; suitable speeches were made by the magistrates of the town, the deputies of Zeeland, and other functionaries, and a stately banquet was provided, so remarkable "for its sugar-work and other delicacies, as to entirely astonish the French and English lords who partook thereof." The Duke visited Middelburg, where he was received with great state, and to the authorities of which he expressed his gratification at finding two such stately cities situate so close to each other on one little island.

On the 17th of February, he set sail for Antwerp. A fleet of fifty-four vessels, covered with flags and streamers, conveyed him and his retinue, together with the large deputation which had welcomed him at Flushing, to the great commercial metropolis. He stepped on shore at Kiel within a bowshot of the city—for, like other Dukes of Brabant, he was not to enter Antwerp until he had taken the oaths to respect the constitution—and the ceremony of inauguration was to take place outside the walls. A large platform had been erected for this purpose, commanding a view of the stately city, with its bristling fortifications and shady groves. A throne, covered with velvet and gold, was prepared, and here the Duke took his seat, surrounded by a brilliant throng, including many of the most distinguished personages in Europe.

It was a bright winter's morning. The gaily banniered fleet lay conspicuous in the river, while an enormous concourse of people were thronging from all sides to greet the new sovereign. Twenty thousand burgher troops, in bright uniforms, surrounded the platform, upon the tapestried floor of which stood the magistrates of Antwerp, the leading members of the Brabant estates, with the Prince of Orange at their head, together with many other great functionaries. The magnificence everywhere displayed, and especially the splendid costumes of the military companies, excited the profound astonishment of the French, who exclaimed that every soldier seemed a captain, and who regarded with vexation their own inferior equipments.

Andrew Hesels, doctor utriusque juris, delivered a salutatory oration, in which, among other flights of eloquence, he expressed the hope of the provinces that the Duke, with the beams of his greatness, wisdom, and magnanimity, would dissipate all the mists, fogs, and other exhalations which were pernicious to their national prosperity, and that he would bring back the sunlight of their ancient glory.

Anjou answered these compliments with equal courtesy, and had much to say of his willingness to shed every drop of his blood in defence of the Brabant liberties; but it might have damped the enthusiasm of the moment could the curtain of the not very distant future have been lifted. The audience, listening to these promises, might have seen that it was not so much his blood as theirs which he was disposed to shed, and less too, in defence than in violation of those same liberties which he was swearing to protect.
The Procession.

Orator Hesse then read aloud the articles of the Joyous Entry, in the Flemish language, and the Duke was asked if he required any explanations of that celebrated constitution. He replied that he had thoroughly studied its provisions, with the assistance of the Prince of Orange, during his voyage from Flushing, and was quite prepared to swear to maintain them. The oaths, according to the antique custom, were then administered. Afterwards, the ducal hat and the velvet mantle, lined with ermine, were brought, the Prince of Orange assisting his Highness to assume this historical costume of the Brabant dukes, and saying to him, as he fastened the button at the throat, “I must secure this robe so firmly, my lord, that no man may ever tear it from your shoulders.”

Thus arrayed in his garment of sovereignty, Anjou was compelled to listen to another oration from the pensionary of Antwerp, John Van der Werken. He then exchanged oaths with the magistrates of the city, and received the keys, which he returned for safe-keeping to the burgomaster. Meanwhile the trumpets sounded, largess of gold and silver coins was scattered among the people, and the heralds cried aloud, “Long live the Duke of Brabant.”

A procession was then formed to escort the new Duke to his commercial capital. A stately and striking procession it was. The Hanseatic merchants in ancient German attire, the English merchants in long velvet cassocks, the heralds in their quaint costume, the long train of civic militia with full bands of music, the chief functionaries of city and province in their black mantles and gold chains, all marching under emblematic standards or time-honoured blazons, followed each other in dignified order. Then came the Duke himself, on a white Barbary horse, caparisoned with cloth of gold. He was surrounded with English, French, and Netherland grandees, many of them of world-wide reputation. There was the stately Leicester; Sir Philip Sidney, the mirror of chivalry; the gaunt and imposing form of William the Silent; his son; Count Maurice of Nassau, destined to be the first captain of his age, then a handsome, dark-eyed lad of fifteen; the Dauphin of Auvergne; the Maréchal de Biron and his sons; the Prince of Espinoy; the Lords Sheffield, Wilmot, Howard, Hunsdon, and many others of high degree and distinguished reputation. The ancient guilds of the crossbow-men and archers of Brabant, splendidly accoutred, formed the body-guard of the Duke, while his French cavaliers, the life-guardsmen of the Prince of Orange, and the troops of the line, followed in great numbers, their glittering uniforms all gaily intermingled, “like the flowers de luce upon a royal mantle.” The procession, thus gorgeous and gay, was terminated by a dismal group of three hundred malefactors, marching in fetters, and imploring pardon of the Duke, a boon which was to be granted at evening. Great torches, although it was high noon, were burning along the road, at intervals of four or five feet, in a continuous line reaching from the platform at Kiel to the portal of Saint Joris, through which the entrance to the city was to be made.

Inside the gates a stupendous allegory was awaiting the approach of the new sovereign. A huge gilded car, crowned with those emblematical and highly bedizened personages so dear to the Netherlanders, obstructed the advance of the procession. All the virtues seemed to have come out for an airing in one chariot, and were now waiting to offer their homage to Francis Hercules Valois. Religion in “red satin,” holding the gospel in her hand, was

---

1 Bor. xvi. 298. Hoofd, xix. 796. Motor, xi. 192.

2 “La joieuse et magnifique entrée,” etc., Bor. xvi. 590, sqq. Hoofd, xix. 797, 805.

3 “La joieuse et magnifique entrée,” etc., in which contemporary pamphlet are many beautifully executed engravings of the wonders exhibited on this occasion.—Bor. xvi. 300, 301.
supported by Justice, "in orange velvet," armed with blade and beam. Prudence and Fortitude embraced each other near a column enwreathed by serpents "with their tails in their ears to typify deafness to flattery;" while Patriotism as a pelican, and Patience as a brooding hen, looked benignantly upon the scene. This greeting duly acknowledged, the procession advanced into the city. The streets were lined with troops and with citizens; the balconies were filled with fair women; "the very gables," says an enthusiastic contemporary, "seemed to laugh with ladies' eyes." The market-place was filled with waxen torches and with blazing tar barrels, while in its centre stood the giant Antigonus—founder of the city thirteen hundred years before the Christian era—the fabulous personage who was accustomed to throw the right hands of all smuggling merchants into the Scheld. This colossal individual, attired in a "surcoat of sky-blue," and holding a banner emblazoned with the arms of Spain, turned its head as the Duke entered the square, saluted the new sovereign, and then dropping the Spanish scutcheon upon the ground, raised aloft another bearing the arms of Anjou.

And thus, amid exuberant outpouring of confidence, another lord and master had made his triumphal entrance into the Netherlands. Alas! how often had this sanguine people greeted with similar acclamations the advent of their betrayers and their tyrants! How soon were they to discover that the man whom they were thus receiving with the warmest enthusiasm was the most treacherous tyrant of all.

It was nightfall before the procession at last reached the palace of Saint Michael, which had been fitted up for the temporary reception of the Duke.1

The next day was devoted to speech-making; various deputations waiting upon the new Duke of Brabant with congratulatory addresses. The Grand Pensionary delivered a pompous oration upon a platform hung with sky-blue silk, and carpeted with cloth of gold. A committee of the German and French Reformed Churches made a long harangue, in which they expressed the hope that the Lord would make the Duke "as valiant as David, as wise as Solomon, and as pious as Hezekiah."2 A Roman Catholic deputation informed His Highness that for eight months the members of the Ancient Church had been forbidden all religious exercises, saving baptism, marriage, visitation of the sick, and burials. A promise was therefore made that this prohibition, which had been the result of the disturbances recorded in a preceding chapter, should be immediately modified, and on the 15th of March, accordingly, it was arranged, by command of the magistrates, that all Catholics should have permission to attend public worship, according to the ancient ceremonial, in the church of Saint Michael, which had been originally designated for the use of the new Duke of Brabant. It was, however, stipulated that all who desired to partake of this privilege should take the oath of abjuration beforehand, and go to the church without arms.3

Here then had been oaths enough, orations enough, compliments enough, to make any agreement steadfast, so far as windy inspirations could furnish a solid foundation for the social compact. Bells, trumpets, and the brazen throats of men and of cannons had made a sufficient din, torches and tar-barrels had made a sufficient glare, to confirm—so far as noise and blazing pitch could confirm—the decorous proceedings of church and town-house.

1 Hoofd, xix. 798.
2 "La joyeuse entrée," etc.
3 "Hic fuit Antigoni castrum insignis Gigantis,
Quem Brabo devexit, de quo Brabonica telius," etc., etc.
Ancient verses quoted by Ludov. Guicciardini, in his description of Antwerp, "but by whom written," says that author, "novit
5 "La joyeuse entrée," etc., Bor, xvii. 201.
6 Bor, ubi sup. Hoofd, xix. 798, 199.
7 "Maer de geheele stadt was vol Toreten, Fackelen ende Vyeren op alle de straden, ende op de kercke torens, dat de stadt scheen in een vyver te staen."—Meteren, xi. 193.
8 Bor, xvii. 203.
9 Ibid.
but time was soon to shew the value of such demonstrations. Meantime, the "muscle" had been fastened with solemnity and accepted with docility. The terms of the treaty concluded at Plessis les Tours and Bordeaux were made public. The Duke had subscribed to twenty-seven articles, which made as stringent and sensible a constitutional compact as could be desired by any Netherland patriot. These articles, taken in connexion with the ancient charters which they expressly upheld, left to the new sovereign no vestige of arbitrary power. He was merely the hereditary president of a representative republic. He was to be Duke, Count, Margrave, or Seignior of the different provinces on the same terms which his predecessors had accepted. He was to transmit the dignities to his children. If there were more than one child, the provinces were to select one of the number for their sovereign. He was to maintain all the ancient privileges, charters, statutes, and customs, and to forfeit his sovereignty at the first violation. He was to assemble the states-general at least once a year. He was always to reside in the Netherlands. He was to permit none but natives to hold office. His right of appointment to all important posts was limited to a selection from three candidates, to be proposed by the estates of the province concerned, at each vacancy. He was to maintain "the Religion" and the religious peace in the same state in which they then were, or as should afterwards be ordained by the estates of each province, without making any innovation on his own part. Holland and Zealand were to remain as they were, both in the matter of religion and otherwise. His Highness was not to permit that any one should be examined or molested in his house, or otherwise, in the matter or under pretext of religion. He was to procure the assistance of the King of France for the Netherlands. He was to maintain a perfect and a perpetual league, offensive and defensive, between that kingdom and the provinces; without, however, permitting any incorporation of territory. He was to carry on the war against Spain with his own means and those furnished by his royal brother, in addition to a yearly contribution by the estates of two million four hundred thousand guldens. He was to dismiss all troops at command of the states-general. He was to make no treaty with Spain without their consent.

It would be superfluous to point out the great difference between the notions entertained upon international law in the sixteenth century and in our own. A state of nominal peace existed between Spain, France, and England; yet here was the brother of the French monarch, at the head of French troops, and attended by the grandees of England, solemnly accepting the sovereignty over the revolted provinces of Spain. It is also curious to observe that the constitutional compact by which the new sovereign of the Netherlands was admitted to the government, would have been repudiated as revolutionary and republican by the monarchs of France or England, if an attempt had been made to apply it to their own realms, for the ancient charters—which in reality constituted a republican form of government—had all been re-established by the agreement with Anjou.

The first-fruits of the ban now began to display themselves. Sunday, 18th of March 1582, was the birthday of the Duke of Anjou, and a great festival had been arranged, accordingly, for the evening, at the palace of Saint Michael, the Prince of Orange as well as all the great French lords being of course invited. The Prince dined, as usual, at his house in the neighbour-

---

1 The articles are given in full by Bor, 8, xvii. 307-309.
2 Article 12.
3 Holland en Zeeland sullen blijven als sy tegenwoordijk zijn in 't stuk van den Religie en andersins.—Art. 13.
4 Art. 14.
5 Ibid., 18.
6 On the other hand, the denial by England of an asylum to the refugees, in 1572, and their forcible expulsion from her shores, led to the occupation of Brill and the foundation of the Dutch Republic.
hood of the citadel, in company with the Counta Hobenlo and Laval, and
the two distinguished French commissioners, Bonnivet and Des Prun-}

ear. Young Maurice of Nassau, and
two nephews of the Prince, sons of his
brother John, were also present at
able. During dinner the conversation
was animated, many stories being re-
lated of the cruelties which had been
practised by the Spaniards in the pro-

vinces. On rising from the table,
Orange led the way from the dining-
room to his own apartments, shewing
the noblemen in his company, as he
passed along, a piece of tapestry upon
which some Spanish soldiers were re-
presented. At this moment, as he
stood upon the threshold of the ante-
chamber, a youth of small stature,
vulgar mien, and pale dark complexion,
appeared from among the servants and
offered him a petition. He took the
paper, and as he did so, the stranger
suddenly drew a pistol and discharged
it at the head of the Prince. The ball
entered the neck under the right ear,
passed through the roof of the mouth,
and came out under the left jaw-bone,
carrying with it two teeth. 1 The
pistol had been held so near, that the
hair and beard of the Prince were set
on fire by the discharge. He remained
standing, but blinded, stunned, and
for a moment entirely ignorant of
what had occurred. As he afterwards
observed, he thought perhaps that a
part of the house had suddenly fallen.
Finding very soon that his hair and
beard were burning, he comprehended
what had occurred, and called out
quickly, “Do not kill me— I forgive
him my death!” and turning to the
French noblemen present, he added,

"Alas! what a faithful servant does
his Highness lose in me!" 2

These were his first words, spoken
when, as all believed, he had been
mortally wounded. The message of
mercy came, however, too, late; for
two of the gentlemen present, by an
irresistible impulse, had run the assass-
in through with their rapiers. The
halberdiers rushed upon him immedi-
ately afterwards, so that he fell pierced
in thirty-two vital places. 3 The Prince,
supported by his friends, walked to
his chamber, where he was put to bed,
while the surgeons examined and band-
daged the wound. It was most dan-
gerous in appearance, but a very strange
circumstance gave more hope than
could otherwise have been entertained.
The flame from the pistol had been
so close that it had actually cauterised
the wound inflicted by the ball. But
for this, it was supposed that the flow
of blood from the veins which had
been shot through would have proved
fatal before the wound could be dressed.
The Prince, after the first shock, had
recovered full possession of his senses,
and believing himself to be dying, he
expressed the most unaffected sympa-
thy for the condition in which the
Duke of Anjou would be placed by his
death. “Alas, poor Prince!” he cried
frequently; “ alas, what troubles will
now bete thee!” 4 The surgeons en-
joined and implored his silence, as
speaking might cause the wound to
prove immediately fatal. He com-
plied, but wrote incessantly. 5 As long
as his heart could beat, it was impos-
sible for him not to be occupied with
his country.

Lion Petit, a trusty captain of the
city guard, forced his way to the cham-

1 Hooff, xix. 804. Bor, xvii. 218. Me-
teren, xi. 194. Tassia, vi. 431. Strada, 2,
lv. 219. “Korte Verhaal van den moord-
dadigen aanlak, bedreven op den persoon
den zoer doorlichtigen vorst, don heere
Prins van Oranjo, door Jan Jaurugui, een
spuugard.” — This is the title of a pamphlet
published at the time with authentic docu-
ments, by Plantin, at Antwerp. There is
also a French edition, printed simulta-
neously with that in Flemish, intituled, “Bref
Recherche de l’Assassinate,” etc.—Reiniberg
has republished it in his edition of Van der
Vuyckt. Let. — Derena, March 27, 1582,
in Archives et Correspondance, vii. 77.
2 “Doodt hem niet, ik vergeef hem mijen
dood!” — Korte Verhaal. Bor, xvii. 512.
Hooff, xix. 804. Meteren, xi. 194.
3 Ibid. Letter of Herle, Archives et Cor-
respondance, supplément, pp. 220, sqq.
Letter of Derena, Archives et Correspond-
ance, vii. 78.
4 “ Ach armes Vorst, arme vorst! wat zult
ge nog moeilijkheden ont moeten!” —
Korte Verhaal. Bor, xvii. 513. Meteren,
xi. 194. Hooff, xix. 805.
5 Korte Verhaal, etc. — “ Met some vaste
handen vlag schreef.”
ber, it being absolutely necessary, said the honest burgher, for him to see with his own eyes that the Prince was living, and report the fact to the townspeople: otherwise, so great was the excitement, it was impossible to say what might be the result. It was in fact believed that the Prince was already dead, and it was whispered that he had been assassinated by the order of Anjou. This horrible suspicion was flying through the city, and producing a fierce exasperation, as men talked of the murder of Coligny, of Saint Bartholomew, of the murderous propensity of the Valois race. Had the attempt taken place in the evening, at the birth-night banquet of Anjou, a horrible massacre would have been the inevitable issue. As it happened, however, circumstances soon occurred to remove the suspicion from the French, and to indicate the origin of the crime. Meantime, Captain Petit was urged by the Prince, in writing, to go forth instantly with the news that he yet survived, but to implore the people, in case God should call him to Himself, to hold him in kind remembrance, to make no tumult, and to serve the Duke obediently and faithfully.

Meantime, the youthful Maurice of Nassau was giving proof of that cool determination which already marked his character. It was natural that a boy of fifteen should be somewhat agitated at seeing such a father shot through the head before his eyes. His situation was rendered doubly grave by the suspicions which were instantly engendered as to the probable origin of the attempt. It was already whispered in the hall that the gentlemen who had been so officious in slaying the assassin were his accomplices, who—upon the principle that dead men would tell no tales—were disposed, now that the deed was done, to preclude inconvenient revelations as to their own share in the crime. Maurice, notwithstanding these causes for perturbation, and despite his grief at his father's probable death, remained steadily by the body of the murderer. He was determined, if possible, to unravel the plot, and he waited to possess himself of all papers and other articles which might be found upon the person of the deceased.

A scrupulous search was at once made by the attendants, and everything placed in the young Count's own hands. This done, Maurice expressed a doubt lest some of the villain's accomplices might attempt to take the articles from him, whereupon a faithful old servant of his father came forward, who with an emphatic expression of the importance of securing such important documents, took his young master under his cloak, and led him to a retired apartment of the house. Here, after a rapid examination, it was found that the papers were all in Spanish, written by Spaniards to Spaniards, so that it was obvious that the conspiracy, if one there were, was not a French conspiracy. The servant, therefore, advised Maurice to go to his father, while he would himself instantly descend to the hall with this important intelligence. Count Hohenlo had, from the instant of the murder, ordered the doors to be fastened, and had permitted no one to enter or to leave the apartment without his permission. The information now brought by the servant as to the character of the papers caused great relief to the minds of all; for, till that moment, suspicion had even lighted upon men who were the firm friends of the Prince.

Saint Aldegonda, who had meantime arrived, now proceeded, in company of the other gentlemen, to examine the papers and other articles taken from the assassin. The pistol with which he had done the deed was lying upon

2 Bor, Meteren, Hoofd, ubi sup. Korte Verhaal.
3 Korte Verhaal, etc. Bor, xvii. 215.
4 Korte Verhaal.—"Helaas," said the boy, "ik ben zoo bevreesd dat hier eenig andere boeewacht zij, die mij die papieren aansmeet."
The Rise of the Dutch Republic. [1582.

the floor; a naked poniard, which he would probably have used also, had his thumb not been blown off by the discharge of the pistol, was found in his trunk hose. In his pockets were an Agnus Dei, a taper of green wax, two bits of hareskin, two dried toads—which were supposed to be sorcerer’s charms—a crucifix, a Jesuit catechism, a prayer-book, a pocket-book containing two Spanish bills of exchange—one for two thousand, and one for eight hundred and seventy-seven crowns—and a set of writing tablets. 1 These last were covered with vows and pious invocations, in reference to the murderous affair which the writer had in hand. He had addressed fervent prayers to the Virgin Mary, to the Angel Gabriel, to the Saviour, and to the Saviour’s Son—as if,” says the Antwerp chronicler, with simplicity, “the Lord Jesus had a son”—that they might all use their intercession with the Almighty towards the certain and safe accomplishment of the contemplated deed. Should he come off successful and unharmed, he solemnly vowed to fast a week on bread and water. Furthermore, he promised to Christ a “new coat of costly pattern;” to the Mother of God, at Guadalupe, a new gown; to Our Lady of Montserrat, a crown, a gown, and a lamp; and so on through a long list of similar presents thus contemplated for various shrines. 2 The poor fanatical fool had been taught by deeper villains than himself that his pistol was to rid the world of a tyrant, and to open his own pathway to Heaven, if his career should be cut short on earth. To prevent so undeserved a catastrophe to himself, however, his most natural conception had been to bribe the whole heavenly host, from the Virgin Mary downwards, for he had been taught that absolutism for murder was to be bought and sold like other merchandise. He had also been persuaded that, after accomplishing the deed, he would become invisible. 4

Saint Aldegonde hastened to lay the result of this examination before the Duke of Anjou. Information was likewise instantly conveyed to the magistrates at the Town House, and these measures were successful in restoring confidence throughout the city as to the intentions of the new government. Anjou immediately convened the State-Council, issued a summons for an early meeting of the states-general, and published a proclamation that all persons having information to give concerning the crime which had just been committed, should come instantly forward, upon pain of death. The body of the assassin was forthwith exposed upon the public square, and was soon recognised as that of one Juan Jauregui, a servant in the employ of Gaspar d’Anastro, a Spanish merchant of Antwerp. The letters and bills of exchange had also, on nearer examination at the Town House, implicated Anastro in the affair. His house was immediately searched, but the merchant had taken his departure, upon the previous Tuesday, under pretext of pressing affairs at Calais. His cashier, Venero, and a Dominican friar, named Antony Zimmermann, both inmates of his family, were, however, arrested upon suspicion. On the following day the watch stationed at the gate carried the foreign post-bags, as soon as they arrived, to the magistracy, when letters were found from Anastro to Venero, which made the affair quite plain. 5 After they

1 Korte Verhaal, etc., 589, 590. Strada, 2 iv. 219. Compare Harœis, Tum. Belg., iii. 390.—“Twee stukken huis, zoo het scheen van eene huis; het eenen samenhang gaf om te zeggen, dat hij padden en tooverij bij zich had.” Korte Verhaal, etc. Bor, Hoofd. Meteren, ubi sup.
2 “Als of Christus noch eene sonne hadde.”—Meteren, xi. 194. The following extracts from the assassin’s memorandum-book are worthy of attention. The papers were published by authority, immediately after the deed. “Al Angel Gabriel me en-
3
had been thoroughly studied, they were shewn to Venero, who, seeing himself thus completely ruined, asked for pen and ink, and wrote a full confession.

It appeared that the crime was purely a commercial speculation on the part of Anastro. That merchant, being on the verge of bankruptcy, had entered with Philip into a mutual contract, which the King had signed with his hand and sealed with his seal, and according to which Anastro, within a certain period, was to take the life of William of Orange, and for so doing was to receive eighty thousand ducats, and the cross of Santiago. To be a knight companion of Spain's proudest order of chivalry was the guerdon, over and above the eighty thousand pieces of silver, which Spain's monarch promised the murderer, if he should succeed. As for Anastro himself, he was too frugal and too wary to risk his own life, or to lose much of the premium. With tears streaming down his cheeks, he painted to his faithful cashier the picture which his master would present, when men should point at him and say, "Behold you bankrupt!" protesting, therefore, that he would murder Orange and secure the reward, or perish in the attempt. Saying this, he again shed many tears. Venero, seeing his master thus disconsolate, wept bitterly likewise, and begged him not to risk his own precious life. After this pathetic commingling of their grief, the merchant and his book-keeper became more composed, and it was at last concerted between them that John Jauregui should be entrusted with the job. Anastro had intended—as he said in a letter afterwards intercepted—"to accomplish the deed with his own hand; but, as God had probably re-

2 "Mirad aquel hombre que ha hecho bucarote," etc.—Confession of Venero in Bref. Recueil.
3 "Todo lo desta llorando e yo viendole tan desconsolado llorava mucho."—Ibid.
4 ""—Doch het mag wezen dat God mij noch heeft willen bewaren om dienst en vruchtenkip te geben doen mijn ge-affecteereerde vrienden, gelijk ik die hebbe

served him for other things, and particularly to be of service to his very affectionate friends, he had thought best to entrust the execution of the design to his servant." The price paid by the master to the man, for the work, seems to have been but two thousand eight hundred and seventy-seven crowns. The cowardly and crafty principal escaped. He had gone post haste to Dunkirk, pretending that the sudden death of his agent in Calais required his immediate presence in that city. Governor Sweveesel, of Dunkirk, sent an orderly to get a passport for him from La Motte, commanding at Gravelingen. Anastro being on tenter-hooks lest the news should arrive that the projected murder had been consummated before he had crossed the border, testified extravagant joy on the arrival of the passport, and gave the messenger who brought it thirty pistoles. Such conduct naturally excited a vague suspicion in the mind of the governor, but the merchant's character was good, and he had brought pressing letters from Admiral Trelong. Sweveesel did not dare to arrest him without cause, and he neither knew that any crime had been committed, nor that the man before him was the criminal. Two hours after the traveller's departure, the news arrived of the deed, together with orders to arrest Anastro, but it was too late. The merchant had found refuge within the lines of Parma.

Meanwhile, the Prince lay in a most critical condition. Believing that his end was fast approaching, he dictated letters to the states-general, entreating them to continue in their obedience to the Duke, than whom he affirmed that he knew no better prince for the government of the provinces. These

op sekeru liiste."—Letter of Anastro to the "very magnificent Lord, Martin Droque, Sea-captain in Flushing," dated March 23, 1582, in Bor. xvii. 315. It must have been disagreeable to the very magnificent Droque—and to Admiral Trelong, who received a letter of similar purport from Anastro—to find themselves inscribed on the list of "his affectionate friends" by this consummate villain.

5 Bor. xvii. 314. Hooff, xix. 803, 804.
letters were despatched by Saint Aldegonde to the assembly, from which body a deputation, in obedience to the wishes of Orange, was sent to Anjou, with expressions of condolence and fidelity. 1

On Wednesday a solemn fast was held, according to proclamation, in Antwerp, all work and all amusements being prohibited, and special prayers commanded in all the churches for the recovery of the Prince. "Never, within men’s memory," says an account published at the moment, in Antwerp, "had such crowds been seen in the churches, nor so many tears been shed." 2

The process against Venero and Zimmermann was rapidly carried through, for both had made a full confession of their share in the crime. The Prince had enjoined from his sick bed, however, that the case should be conducted with strict regard to justice, and, when the execution could no longer be deferred, he had sent a written request, by the hands of Saint Aldegonde, that they should be put to death in the least painful manner. The request was complied with, but there can be no doubt that the criminals, had it not been made, would have expiated their offence by the most lingering tortures. Owing to the intercession of the man who was to have been their victim, they were strangled, before being quartered, upon a scaffold erected in the market-place, opposite the Town House. This execution took place on Wednesday, the 28th of March. 3

The Prince, meanwhile, was thought to be mending, and thanksgivings began to be mingled with the prayers offered almost every hour in the churches; but for eighteen days he lay in a most precarious state. His wife hardly left his bedside, and his sister, Catherine Countess of Schwartzburg, was indefatigable in her attentions. The Duke of Anjou visited him daily, and expressed the most filial anxiety for his recovery, but the hopes, which had been gradually growing stronger, were on the 6th of April exchanged for the deepest apprehensions. Upon that day the ecstasis by which the flow of blood from the neck had been prevented, almost from the first infliction of the wound, fell off. The veins poured forth a vast quantity of blood; it seemed impossible to check the hemorrhage, and all hope appeared to vanish. The Prince resigned himself to his fate, and bade his children "good night for ever," saying calmly, "It is now all over with me." 4

It was difficult, without suffocating the patient, to fasten a bandage tightly enough to staunch the wound, but Leonardo Botalli, of Asti, body physician of Anjou, was nevertheless fortunate enough to devise a simple mechanical expedient, which proved successful. By his advice, a succession of attendants, relieving each other day and night, prevented the flow of blood by keeping the orifice of the wound slightly but firmly compressed with the thumb. After a period of anxious expectation, the wound again closed, and by the end of the month the Prince was convalescent. On the 3rd of May he went to offer thanksgiving in the Great Cathedral, amid the joyful sobs of a vast and most earnest throng. 5

---

1 Korte Verhaal. 2 Ibid. 3 Bor, xvil. 314.—The following is the text of this most interesting letter: "Monsieur de Saint Aldegonde: j’ay entendu que l’on doit demain faire justice de deux prisonniers, estans complices de celuy qui m’a tire le coup. De ma part, je leur pardonne tres volontiers de ce qu’ils me peuvent avoir offensé, et s’ils ont peut etre merité un chastay et rigoureux, je vous prie vouloir tenir la main devers Messa du Magistrat qu’ils ne les veullent faire souffrir grand torturnet et se contenter, s’ils ont merite d’une courte mort. Votre bien bon sozy à vous faire service, Guillaume de Nassau." 4 Bor, xvil. 314. Korte Verhaal. Bor, xvil. 316. Hoofd, xix. 806. Meteren, xi. 194. Letter of Mary of Orange to Count John, Archives et Correspondance, vi. 88. 5 Hoofd, xix. 806, ascribes the superintendence of the cure to Botalli (as stated in the text). Bor and Meteren, however, only mention the name of Joseph Michaelis, of Luco. Bor does not speak at all of the singular expedient employed to stop the effusion of blood; Hoofd, Meteren, and others, allude to it.
Acceptance of Sovereignty.

The Prince was saved, but unhappily the murderer had yet found an illustrious victim. The Princess of Orange, Charlotte de Bourbon—the devoted wife who for seven years had so faithfully shared his joys and sorrows—lay already on her death-bed. Exhausted by anxiety, long watching, and the alternations of hope and fear during the first eighteen days, she had been prostrated by despair at the renewed hemorrhage. A violent fever seized her, under which she sank on the 5th of May, three days after the solemn thanksgiving for her husband’s recovery. The Prince, who loved her tenderly, was in great danger of relapse upon the sad event, which, although not sudden, had not been anticipated. She was laid in her grave on the 9th of May, amid the lamentations of the whole country, for her virtues were universally known and cherished. She was a woman of rare intelligence, accomplishment, and gentleness of disposition, whose only offence had been to break, by her marriage, the Church vows to which she had been forced in her childhood, but which had been pronounced illegal by competent authority, both ecclesiastical and lay. For this, and for the contrast which her virtues afforded to the vices of her predecessor, she was the mark of calumny and insult. These attacks, however, had cast no shadow upon the serenity of her married life, and so long as she lived she was the trusted companion and consoler of her husband.

"His Highness," wrote Count John in 1586, "is in excellent health, and, in spite of adversity, incredible labour, perplexity, and dangers, is in such good spirits that it makes me happy to witness it. No doubt a chief reason is the consolation he derives from the pious and highly-intelligent wife whom the Lord has given him—a woman who ever conforms to his wishes, and is inexpressibly dear to him."

The Princess left six daughters—Louisa Juliana, Elizabeth, Catharina Belgica, Flandrina, Charlotte Brabantica, and Emilia Secunda. Parma received the first intelligence of the attempt from the mouth of Anastro himself, who assured him that the deed had been entirely successful, and claimed the promised reward. Alexander, in consequence, addressed circular letters to the authorities of Antwerp, Brussels, Bruges, and other cities, calling upon them, now that they had been relieved of their tyrant and their betrayer, to return again to the path of their duty and to the ever open arms of their lawful monarch. These letters were premature. On the other hand, the states of Holland and Zeeland remained in permanent session, awaiting with extreme anxiety the result of the Prince’s wound. "With the death of his Excellency, if God should please to take him to Himself," said the magistracy of Leyden, "in the death of the Prince we all foresee our own death." It was, in truth, an anxious moment, and the revulsion of feeling consequent on his recovery was proportionately intense.

In consequence of the excitement produced by this event, it was no longer possible for the Prince to decline accepting the countship of Holland and Zeeland, which he had refused absolutely two years before, and which he had again rejected, except for a limited period, in the year 1581. It was well understood, as appears by the treaty with Anjou, and afterwards formally arranged, "that the Duke was never to claim sovereignty over Holland and Zeeland," and the offer of the sovereign countship of Holland was again made to the Prince of Orange in most urgent terms. It will be recollected that he had accepted the sovereignty on the 5th of July 1581, only for the term of the war. In a

---

1 Hoodl, Meteor. Bor., ubi sup.
2 "With a stately procession of two thousand mourning mantles," says Hoodl, xir. 427.
3 Apologie d’Orange. Archives, etc., vol. 333.

VOL. IX.
The document is too small and the text is not readable.
mission of stadholder. In 1581, his Majesty had been abjured and the stadholder had become sovereign. He held in his hands the supreme power, legislative, judicial, executive. The Count of Holland—and Philip as his successor—were the great fountains of that triple stream. Concessions and exceptions had become so extensive, no doubt, that the provincial charters constituted a vast body of "liberties" by which the whole country was reasonably well supplied. At the same time, all the power not expressly granted away remained in the breast of the Count. If ambition, then, had been William's ruling principle, he had exchanged substance for shadow, for the new state now constituted was a free commonwealth—a republic in all but name.

By the new constitution he ceased to be the source of governmental life, or to derive his own authority from above by right divine. The sacred oil which had flowed from Charles the Simple's beard was dried up. Orange's sovereignty was from the estates, as legal representatives of the people, and, instead of exercising all the powers not otherwise granted away, he was content with those especially conferred upon him. He could neither declare war nor conclude peace without the cooperation of the representative body. The appointing power was scrupulously limited. Judges, magistrates, governors, sheriffs, provincial and municipal officers, were to be nominated by the local authorities or by the estates, on the triple principle. From these triple nominations he had only the right of selection by advice and consent of his council. He was expressly enjoined to see that the law was carried to every man's door, without any distinction of persons, to submit himself to its behests, to watch against all impediments to the even flow of justice, to prevent false imprisonments, and to secure trials for every accused person by the local tribunals. This was certainly little in accordance with the arbitrary practice of the past quarter of a century.

With respect to the great principle of taxation, stricter bonds even were provided than those which already existed. Not only the right of taxation remained with the states, but the Count was to see that, except for war purposes, every impost was levied by a unanimous vote. He was expressly forbidden to tamper with the currency. As executive head, save in his capacity as Commander-in-chief by land or sea, the new sovereign was, in short, strictly limited by self-imposed laws. It had rested with him to dictate or to accept a constitution. He had in his memorable letter of August 1592, from Bruges, laid down generally the articles prepared at Pleisis and Bordeaux, for Anjou—together with all applicable provisions of the Joyous Entry of Brabant—as the outlines of the constitution for the little commonwealth then forming in the north. To these provisions he was willing to add any others which, after ripe deliberation, might be thought beneficial to the country.

Thus limited were his executive functions. As to his judicial authority it had ceased to exist. The Count of Holland was now the guardian of the laws, but the judges were to administer them. He held the sword of justice to protect and to execute, while the scales were left in the hands which had learned to weigh and to measure.

As to the Count's legislative authority, it had become co-ordinate with, if not subordinate to, that of the representative body. He was strictly prohibited from interfering with the right of the separate or the general states to assemble as often as they should think proper; and he was also forbidden to summon them outside their own territory. This was one immense step in the progress of representative liberty, and the next was equally important. It was now formally stipulated that the estates were to deliberate upon all measures which "concerned justice and polity," and that no change was to be made—that is to say, no new law was to pass—without their consent as

---

1 Kluit, l. 11-16 and 346, sqq.
2 Ibid., l. 347.
The Act of the United Provinces

CHAPTER V


Parma, the event of the year 1592, the military operations on both sides had been limited and despondent, the Prince of Parma, not having a large army at his command, being comparatively inactive. In consequence, however, of the treaty concluded between the United States and Anjou, Parma had persuaded the Walloon provinces that it had now become absolutely necessary for them to permit the entrance of fresh Italian and Spanish troops. This, then, was the end of the famous provision against foreign soldiery in the Walloon treaty of reconciliation. The Abbé of Saint-Vaast was immediately despatched on a special mission to Spain, and the troops, by midsummer, had already begun to pour into the Netherlands.

In the meantime, Parma, while awaiting these reinforcements, had not been idle, but had been quietly picking up several important cities. Early in the spring he had laid siege to Oudenarde, a place of considerable importance upon the Scheldt, and celebrated as the birthplace of his grandmother, Margaret van Geest. The burghers were obstinate; the defence was protracted; the sorties were bold; the skirmishes frequent and sanguinary. Alexander commanded personally in the trenches, encouraging his men by his example, and often working with the mattock, or handling a spear in the assault, like a private pioneer or soldier. Towards the end of the siege, he narrowly escaped the scene of operations, and he took his meals near the outer defences, that he might lose no opportunity of superintending the labours of his troops. One day his dinner was laid for himself and staff in the open air, close to the entrenchment. He was himself engaged in

1 Art. 29.—Compare Kliufl, I. 268.
2 Bor, xli. 300, 521.
3 Ibid., xli. 320, 321.—Compare Recoum. Prof. Wall., II. v., Mv.
4 Bor, vi. 223. Strada, 2, iv. 235-234.
planting a battery against a weak point in the city wall, and would on no account withdraw for an instant. The tablecloth was stretched over a number of drum-heads, placed close together, and several nobles of distinction—Aremberg, Montigny, Richebourg, La Motte, and others, were his guests at dinner. Hardly had the repast commenced, when a ball came flying over the table, taking off the head of a young Walloon officer who was sitting near Parma, and who was earnestly requesting a foremost place in the morrow’s assault. A portion of his skull struck out the eye of another gentleman present. A second ball from the town fortifications, equally well directed, destroyed two more of the guests as they sat at the banquet—one a German captain, the other the Judge-Advocate-General. The blood and brains of these unfortunate individuals were strewn over the festive board, and the others all started to their feet, having little appetite left for their dinner. Alexander alone remained in his seat, manifesting no discomposure. Quietly ordering the attendants to remove the dead bodies, and to bring a clean tablecloth, he insisted that his guests should resume their places at the banquet which had been interrupted in such ghastly fashion. He stated with very determined aspect that he could not allow the hereticburghers of Oudenarde the triumph of frightening him from his dinner, or from the post of danger. The other gentlemen could, of course, do no less than imitate the impossibly of their chief, and the repast was accordingly concluded without further interruption. Not long afterwards, the city, close pressed by so determined a commander, accepted terms, which were more favourable by reason of the respect which Alexander chose to render to his mother’s birthplace. The villlage was commuted for thirty thousand crowns, and on the 5th of July the place was surrendered to Parma almost under the very eyes of Anjou, who was making a demonstration of relieving the siege.²

Ninove, a citadel then belonging to the Egmont family, was next reduced. Here, too, the defence was more obstinate than could have been expected from the importance of the place, and as the autumn advanced, Parma’s troops were nearly starved in their trenches, from the insufficient supplies furnished them. They had eaten no meat but horseflesh for weeks, and even that was gone. The cavalry horses were all consumed, and even the chargers of the officers were not respected. An aid-de-camp of Parma fastened his steed one day at the door of the Prince’s tent, while he entered to receive his commander’s instructions. When he came out again, a few minutes afterwards, he found nothing but the saddle and bridle hanging where he had fastened the horse. Remonstrance was useless, for the animal had already been cut into quarters, and the only satisfaction offered to the aid-de-camp was in the shape of a steak. The famine was long familiarly known as the “Ninove starvation,” but notwithstanding this obstacle, the place was eventually surrendered.³

An attempt upon Lochum, an important city in Gelderland, was unsuccessful, the place being relieved by the Duke of Anjou’s forces, and Parma’s troops forced to abandon the siege. At Steenwijk, the royal arms were more successful, Colonel Tasseis, conducted by a treacherous Frisian peasant, having surprised the city which had so long and so manfully sustained itself against Renneberg during the preceding winter. With this event the active operations under Parma closed for the year. By the end of the autumn, however, he had the satisfaction of numbering, under his command, full sixty thousand well-appointed and disciplined troops, including the large reinforcements recently despatched from Spain and Italy.⁴

¹ "— sohns Alexander nec sedem nec vultum mutavit — jubet aferri illinc, humarique cadaver, alia inducit in mensam situa, alias dapes."—Strada, 2, v. 233.
³ Strada, 2, v. 242.
⁴ 56,550 infantry and 3537 cavalry—total, 60,087. — Mestrovic, xl. 189.
monthly expense of this army—half of which was required for garrison duty, leaving only the other moiety for field operations—was estimated at six hundred and fifty thousand florins. The forces under Anjou and the united provinces were also largely increased, so that the marrow of the land was again in fair way of being thoroughly exhausted by its defenders and its foes.

The incidents of Anjou’s administration, meantime, during the year 1582, had been few and of no great importance. After the pompous and elaborate “homage-making” at Antwerp, he had, in the month of July, been formally accepted, by writing, as Duke of Guelders and Lord of Friesland. In the same month he had been ceremoniously inaugurated at Bruges as Count of Flanders—an occasion upon which the Prince of Orange had been present. In that ancient and stately city there had been, accordingly, much marching about under triumphal arches, much cannonading and haranguing, much symbol work of suns dispelling fogs, with other cheerful emblems, much decoration of ducal shoulder with velvet robes lined with weasel skin, much blazing of tarbarrels and torches. In the midst of this event, an attempt was made upon the lives both of Orange and Anjou. An Italian, named Bassa, and a Spaniard, called Salseda, were detected in a scheme to administer poison to both princes, and when arrested, confessed that they had been hired by the Prince of Parma to compass this double assassination. Bassa destroyed himself in prison. His body was, however, gibbeted, with an inscription that he had attempted, at the instigation of Parma, to take the lives of Orange and Anjou. Salseda, less fortunate, was sent to Paris, where he was found guilty, and executed by being torn to pieces by four horses. Sad to relate, Lamoral Egmont, younger son and namesake of the great general, was intimate with Salseda, and implicated in this base design. His mother, on her death-bed, had especially recommended the youth to the kindly care of Orange. The Prince had ever recognised the claim, manifesting uniform tenderness for the son of his ill-starred friend; and now the youthful Lamoral—as if the name of Egmont had not been sufficiently contaminated by the elder brother’s treason at Brussels—had become the comrade of hired conspirators against his guardian’s life. The affair was hushed up, but the story was current and generally believed that Egmont had himself undertaken to destroy the Prince at his own table by means of poison which he kept concealed in a ring. Saint Aldegonde was to have been taken off in the same way, and a hollow ring filled with poison was said to have been found in Egmont’s lodgings.

The young noble was imprisoned; his guilt was far from doubtful; but the powerful intercessions of Orange himself, combined with Egmont’s near relationship to the French Queen, saved his life, and he was permitted, after a brief captivity, to take his departure for France.

The Duke of Anjou, a month later, was received with equal pomp, in the city of Ghent. Here the ceremonies

---

1 654, 356 gulden. — Meteren.
2 Meteren, xi. 197. Tassia, vi. 433. Strada, 2, v. 244, 245.
3 4. Bor, xvii. 238, 239, 238. Meteren, xi. 196. A rising sun, with the motto, “fovet et discutit,” was the favourite device of Anjou.
5 Meteren, Hoofd, ubi sup. See a letter of Orange to Jesse Borlunt, October 11, 1580, requesting him to furnish young Lamoral with needful funds, adding, “le principal point pour se faire valoir au chemin de
6 “Wrede Turchse wonderljkhe verhaelinge van dit leste verraet, tegen Deycte Dangr (sic) en tegen den edelen P. v. Orangien,” etc., etc.—Leiden, 1582. This curious pamphlet, in the Duncan collection, consists of a letter from Bruges of 25th July, and another from Antwerp, of 27th July 1582.
7 Louise de Vaudemont, wife of Henry III, was daughter of the great Count Egmont’s sister. She was, consequently, first cousin to young Lamoral.
were interrupted in another manner. The Prince of Parma, at the head of a few regiments of Walloons, making an attack on a body of troops by which Anjou had been escorted into Flanders, the troops retreated in good order, and without much loss, under the walls of Ghent, where a long and sharp action took place, much to the disadvantage of Parma. The Prince of Orange and the Duke of Anjou were on the city walls during the whole skirmish, giving orders and superintending the movements of their troops, and at nightfall Parma was forced to retire, leaving a large number of dead behind him.1

The 15th day of December, in this year was celebrated—according to the new ordinance of Gregory the Thirteenth—as Christmas.2 It was the occasion of more than usual merrymaking among the Catholics of Antwerp, who had procured, during the preceding summer, a renewed right of public worship from Anjou and the estates. Many nobles of high rank came from France, to pay their homage to the new Duke of Brabant. They secretly expressed their disgust, however, at the close constitutional bonds in which they found their own future sovereignty imprisoned by the provinces. They thought it far beneath the dignity of the “Son of France” to play the secondary part of titular Duke of Brabant, Count of Flanders, Lord of Friesland, and the like, while the whole power of government was lodged with the states. They whispered that it was time to take measures for the incorporation of the Netherlands into France, and they persuaded the false and fickle Anjou that there would never be any hope of his royal brother’s assistance, except upon the understanding that the blood and treasure of Frenchmen were to be spent to increase the power, not of upstart and independent provinces, but of the French crown.3

They struck the basest chords of the Duke’s base nature by awakening his jealousy of Orange. His whole soul vibrated to the appeal. He already hated the man by whose superior intellect he was overawed, and by whose pure character he was shamed. He stoutly but secretly swore that he would assert his own rights, and that he would no longer serve as a shadow, a statue, a zero, a Matthias.4 It is needless to add, that neither in his own judgment nor in that of his mignons, were the constitutional articles which he had recently sworn to support, or the solemn treaty which he had signed and sealed at Bordeaux, to furnish any obstacles to his seizure of unlimited power, whenever the design could be cleverly accomplished. He rested not, day or night, in the elaboration of his plan.

Early in January 1583, he sent one night for several of his intimate associates, to consult with him after he had retired to bed. He complained of the insolence of the states, of the impertinency of the council which they had forced upon him, of the insufficient sums which they furnished both for him and his troops, of the daily insults offered to the Catholic religion. He protested that he should consider himself disgraced in the eyes of all Christendom, should he longer consent to occupy his present ignoble position. But two ways were open to him, he observed; either to retire altogether from the Netherlands, or to maintain his authority with the strong hand, as became a prince. The first course would cover him with disgrace. It was therefore necessary for him to adopt the other. He then unfolded his plan to his confidential friends, La Fougère, De Fazy, Valette, the sons of Maréchal Biron, and others. Upon the same day, if possible, he was determined to take possession, with his own troops, of the principal cities in Flanders. Dunkirk, Dixmude, Denemonde, Bruges, Ghent, Vilvoorde,

---


Alost, and other important places, were to be simultaneously invaded, under pretext of quieting tumults artfully created and encouraged between the burghers and the garrisons, while Antwerp was reserved for his own especial enterprise. That important capital he would carry by surprise at the same moment in which the other cities were to be secured by his lieutenants.  

The plot was pronounced an excellent one by the friends around his bed—all of them eager for Catholic supremacy, for the establishment of the right divine on the part of France to the Netherlands, and for their share in the sacking of so many wealthy cities at once. These worthless mignons applauded their weak master to the echo; whereupon the Duke leaped from his bed, and kneeling on the floor in his night-gown, raised his eyes and his clasped hands to heaven, and piously invoked the blessing of the Almighty upon the project which he had thus announced. He added the solemn assurance that, if favoured with success in his undertaking, he would abstain in future from all unchaesity, and forego the irregular habits by which his youth had been stained. Having thus bribed the Deity, and received the encouragement of his flatterers, the Duke got into bed again. His next care was to remove the Seigneur du Plessis, whom he had observed to be often in colloquy with the Prince of Orange, his suspicious and guilty imagination finding nothing but mischief to himself in the conjunction of two such natures. He therefore dismissed Du Plessis, under pretext of a special mission to his sister, Margaret of Navarre; but in reality, that he might rid himself of the presence of an intelligent and honourable countryman.

On the 15th January 1583, the day fixed for the execution of the plot, the French commandant of Dunkirk, Captain Chamois, skilfully took advan-

tage of a slight quarrel between the citizens and the garrison, to secure that important frontier town. The same means were employed simultaneously, with similar results, at Ostend, Dixmuyde, Denremonde, Alost, and Vilvoorde, but there was a fatal delay at one important city. La Fougère, who had been with Chamois at Dunkirk, was arrested on his way to Bruges by some patriotic citizens who had got wind of what had just been occurring in the other cities, so that when Valette, the provost of Anjou, and Colonel la Rebours, at the head of fifteen hundred French troops, appeared before the gates, entrance was flatly refused. De Grijse, burgomaster of Bruges, encouraged his fellow towns-men by words and stout action, to resist the nefarious project then on foot against religious liberty and free government, in favour of a new foreign tyranny. He spoke to men who could sympathize with, and second his courageous resolution, and the delay of twenty-four hours, during which the burghers had time to take the alarm, saved the city. The whole population was on the alert, and the baffled Frenchmen were forced to retire from the gates, to avoid being torn to pieces by the citizens whom they had intended to surprise.

At Antwerp, meanwhile, the Duke of Anjou had been rapidly maturing his plan, under pretext of a contemplated enterprise against the city of Endhoven, having concentrated what he esteemed a sufficient number of French troops at Borgerhout, a village close to the walls of Antwerp.

On the 16th of January, suspicion was aroused in the city. A man in a mask entered the mainguard-house in the night, mysteriously gave warning that a great crime was in contemplation, and vanished before he could be arrested. His accent proved him to be a Frenchman. Strange rumours flew about the streets. A vague uneasiness pervaded the whole popula-

---

2 Depon of La Fougère, the Duke's
3 Maistre d'hôtel, in Bor. xvii. 340. Hoofd, xix. 856.
5 Bor. xvii. 340. Hoofd, xix. 844.
Treachery of the Duke of Anjou.

1583.

Of magistrates and militia officers waited upon the Duke, the Prince of Orange—although himself still feeling a confidence which seems now almost inexplicable—consenting to accompany them. The Duke was more vehement than ever in his protestations of loyalty to his recent oaths, as well as of deep affection for the Netherlands—for Brabant in particular, and for Antwerp most of all, and he made use of all his vivacity to persuade the Prince, the burgomasters, and the colonels, that they had deeply wronged him by such unjust suspicions. His assertions were accepted as sincere, and the deputation withdrew, Anjou having first solemnly promised—at the suggestion of Orange—not to leave the city during the whole day, in order that unnecessary suspicion might be prevented.

This pledge the Duke proceeded to violate almost as soon as made. Orange returned with confidence to his own house, which was close to the citadel, and therefore far removed from the proposed point of attack, but he had hardly arrived there when he received a visit from the Duke’s private secretary, Quinsay, who invited him to accompany his Highness on a visit to the camp. Orange declined the request, and sent an earnest prayer to the Duke not to leave the city that night. The Duke dined as usual at noon. While at dinner he received a letter, was observed to turn pale on reading it, and to conceal it hastily in a muff which he wore on his left arm. The repast finished, the Duke ordered his horse. The animal was restless, and so strenuously resisted being mounted that, although it was his usual charger, it was exchanged for another. This second horse started in such a flurry that the Duke lost his cloak, and almost his seat. He maintained his self-possession, however, and placing himself at the head of his body-

1 Corte Verclaring, gheden by Burge-steen, Scheppen ende Raedt der Stadte Antwerp, nopen de aenaleeg tegem de selve stadt sangerlichtet den xvii deser maandt, Jan. 1583.—Antwerp. Christ. Plantin, 1583. This is the official account—published by authority immediately after the event—and the source whence Bor, Muteren, and other contemporary chroniclers have derived the details of this important transaction.—Compare Bor, xvii. 341, seq.; Muteren, xi. 201, seq. Hoofd, xix. 388, 389, seq. Reid., iii. 46.

2 Corte Verclaring, Bor, Hoofd, Muteren, ubi sup. Ev. Reidani, ii. 46, 47.

3 Bor, xvii. 342. Corte Verclaring, etc.
guard and some troopers, numbering in all three hundred mounted men, rode out of the palace-yard towards the Kipdorp gate. This portal opened on the road towards Borgerhout, where his troops were stationed, and at the present day bears the name of that village. It is on the side of the city farthest removed from and exactly opposite the river. The town was very quiet, the streets almost deserted; for it was one o'clock, the universal dinner-hour, and all suspicion had been disarmed by the energetic protestations of the Duke. The guard at the gate looked listlessly upon the cavalcade as it approached, but as soon as Anjou had crossed the first drawbridge, he rose in his stirrups and waved his hand. "There is your city, my lads," said he to the troopers behind him: "go and take possession of it." At the same time he set spurs to his horse, and galloped off towards the camp at Borgerhout. Instantly afterwards, a gentleman of his suite, Count Rochepot, affected to have broken his leg through the plunging of his horse, a circumstance by which he had been violently pressed against the wall as he entered the gate. Kaiser, the commanding officer at the guard-house, stepped kindly forward to render him assistance, and his reward was a desperate thrust from the Frenchman's rapier. As he wore a steel cuirass, he fortunately escaped with a slight wound.

The expression, "broken leg," was the watch-word, for at one and the same instant, the troopers and guardsmen of Anjou set upon the burgher watch at the gate, and butchered every man. A sufficient force was left to protect the entrance thus easily mastered, while the rest of the Frenchmen entered the town at full gallop, shrieking "Ville gagnée, ville gagnée! vive la mense! vive le Duc d'Anjou!" They were followed by their comrades from the camp outside, who now poured into the town at the preconcerted signal, at least six hundred cavalry and three thousand musketeers, all perfectly appointed, entering Antwerp at once. From the Kipdorp gate two main arteries—the streets called the Kipdorp and the Meer—led quite through the heart of the city, towards the town-house and the river beyond. Along these great thoroughfares the French soldiers advanced at a rapid pace; the cavalry clattering furiously in the van, shouting "Ville gagnée, ville gagnée! vive la mense, vive la mense! vive, vive, vive!"

The burghers coming to door and window to look for the cause of all this disturbance, were saluted with volleys of musketry. They were for a moment astonished, but not appalled, for at first they believed it to be merely an accidental tumult. Observing, however, that the soldiers, meeting with but little effective resistance, were dispersing into dwellings and warehouses, particularly into the shops of the goldsmiths and lapidaries, the citizens remembered the dark suspicions which had been so rife, and many recalled to mind that distinguished French officers had during the last few days been carefully examining the treasures of the jewellers, under pretext of purchasing, but, as it now appeared, with intent to rob intelligently.

The burghers, taking this rapid view of their position, flew instantly to arms. Chains and barricades were stretched across the streets; the trumpets sounded through the city; the municipal guards swarmed to the rescue. An effective rally was made, as usual, at the Bourse, whither a large number of citizens, accompanied by a mighty band of musket—men, rushed to the scene of action. The Frenchmen, who had been so successful in making a breach in the outer walls, were now confronted by a body of burghers, armed with muskets and pikes, who were determined to repel them.

---

1 Hooff, xix. 350-353. Moteren, xi. 201. Bor. xvii. 342.
2 Corte Verclerck, etc. Bor. Muteren. Hooff, ut sup. Strada, 2. v. 249. Ev. Reid, 111. 47.
3 "Pouvez le mon est aussi de pouvoir du Tribu," says De Thou, adding, "et plus à Dieu que l'AGAIN de son action le fait aussi!"—Tom. ix. liv. 77; p. 57. Reyd, however, says it was Count Rochepot.—Ann. Belg. 347. De Weert's MS. Journal gives the name and the incident.
4 De Thou, Reyd, Bor. Muteren, Hooff.
5 Corte Verclerck, etc. Bor. xvii. 343. Hooff, xix. 341, sqq. Muteren, Reyd, ut sup. Strada, 2. v. 249. sqq.
The French Routed.

1583.

detachment of the invaders had forced their way. Inhabitants of all classes and conditions, noble and simple, Catholic and Protestant, gave each other the hand, and swore to die at each other's side in defence of the city against the treacherous strangers. The gathering was rapid and enthusiastic. Gentlemen came with lance and cuirass, burgheers with musket and bandolier, artisans with axe, mallet, and other implements of their trade.

A bold baker, standing by his oven—stark naked, according to the custom of bakers at that day—rushed to the street as the sound of the tumult reached his ear. With his heavy bread shovel, which he still held in his hand, he dealt a French cavalry officer, just riding and screaming by, such a hearty blow that he fell dead from his horse. The baker seized the officer's sword, sprang all unattired as he was, upon his steed, and careered furiously through the streets, encouraging his countrymen everywhere to the attack, and dealing dismay through the ranks of the enemy. His services in that eventful hour were so signal that he was publicly thanked afterwards by the magistrates for his services, and rewarded with a pension of three hundred florins for life.¹

The invaders had been forced from the Bourse, while another portion of them had penetrated as far as the Market-place. The resistance which they encountered became every instant more formidable, and Fervacques, a leading French officer, who was captured on the occasion, acknowledged that no regular troops could have fought more bravely than did these stalwart burghers.² Women and children mounted to roof and window, whence they hurled, not only tiles and chimney pots, but tables, ponderous chairs, and other bulky articles, upon the heads of the assailants,³ while such citizens as had used all their bullets, loaded their pieces with the silver buttons from their doublets, or twisted gold and silver coins with their teeth into ammunition. With a population so resolute, the four thousand invaders, however audacious, soon found themselves swallowed up. The city had closed over them like water, and within an hour nearly a third of their whole number had been slain. Very few of the burghers had perished, and fresh numbers were constantly advancing to the attack. The Frenchmen, blinded, staggering, beaten, attempted to retreat. Many threw themselves from the fortifications into the moat. The rest of the survivors struggled through the streets—falling in large numbers at every step—towards the point at which they had so lately entered the city. Here at the Kipdorp gate was a ghastly spectacle, the slain being piled up in the narrow passage full ten feet high, while some of the heap, not quite dead, were striving to extricate a hand or foot, and others feebly thrust forth their heads to gain a mouthful of air.⁴

From the outside, some of Anjou's officers were attempting to climb over this mass of bodies in order to enter the city; from the interior, the baffled and fugitive remnant of their comrades were attempting to force their passage through the same horrible barrier; while many dropped at every instant upon the heap of slain, under the blows of the unremitting burghers.⁵ On the other hand, Count Rochebot himself, to whom the principal command of the enterprise had been entrusted by Anjou, stood directly in the path of his fugitive soldiers, not only bitterly upbraiding them with their cowardice, but actually slaying ten or twelve of them with his own hands,⁶ as the most effectual mode of preventing their retreat. Hardly an hour had elapsed from the time when the Duke of Anjou first rode out of the Kipdorp gate,

² Ev. Reid., iii. 48.
³ Meteren, xl, 201, sqq., who had his information from eye-witnesses.—Compare Hoofd, Bor, Meteren, Strada, loc. cit.
⁴ Hoofd, xix. 843. Reid, iii. 47.
before nearly the whole of the force which he had sent to accomplish his base design was either dead or captive.

Two hundred and fifty nobles of high rank and illustrious name were killed; recognised at once as they lay in the streets by their magnificent costume. A larger number of the gallant chivalry of France had been sacrificed—as Anjou confessed—in this treacherous and most shameful enterprise, than had often fallen upon noble and honourable fields. Nearly two thousand of the rank and file had perished, and the rest were prisoners. It was at first asserted that exactly fifteen hundred and eighty-three Frenchmen had fallen, but this was only because this number happened to be the date of the year, to which the lovers of marvellous coincidences struggled very hard to make the returns of the dead correspond. Less than one hundred burghers lost their lives.¹

Anjou, as he looked on at a distance, was bitterly reproached for his treason by several of the high-minded gentlemen about his person, to whom he had not dared to confide his plot. The Duke of Montpensier protested vehemently that he washed his hands of the whole transaction, whatever might be the issue.² He was responsible for the honour of an illustrious house, which should never be stained, he said, if he could prevent it, with such foul deeds. The same language was held by Laval, by Rochefoucauld, and by the Maréchal de Biron, the last gentleman, whose two sons were engaged in the vile enterprise, bitterly cursing the Duke to his face, as he rode through the gate after revealing his secret undertaking.³

Meanwhile, Anjou, in addition to the punishment of hearing these reproaches from men of honour, was the victim of a rapid and violent fluctuation of feeling. Hope, fear, triumph, doubt, remorse, alternately swayed him. As he saw the fugitives leaping from the walls, he shouted exultingly, without accurately discerning what manner of men they were, that the city was his, that four thousand of his brave soldiers were there, and were hurling the burghers from the battlements. On being made afterwards aware of his error, he was proportionally depressed; and when it was obvious at last that the result of the enterprise was an absolute and disgraceful failure, together with a complete exposure of his treachery, he fairly mounted his horse, and fled conscience-stricken from the scene.⁴

The attack had been so unexpected, in consequence of the credence that had been rendered by Orange and the magistracy to the solemn protestations of the Duke, that it had been naturally out of any one’s power to prevent the catastrophe. The Prince was lodged in a part of the town remote from the original scene of action, and it does not appear that information had reached him that anything unusual was occurring, until the affair was approaching its termination. Then there was little for him to do. He hastened, however, to the scene, and mounting the ramparts, persuaded the citizens to cease cannonading the discomfited and retiring foe. He felt the full gravity of the situation, and the necessity of diminishing the ranour of the inhabitants against their treacherous allies, if such a result were yet possible.⁵ The burghers had done their duty, and it certainly would have been neither in his power nor his inclination to protect the French marauders from expulsion and castigation.

Such was the termination of the French Fury, and it seems sufficiently strange that it should have been so much less disastrous to Antwerp than was the Spanish Fury of 1576, to which men could still scarcely allude without a shudder. One would have thought the French more likely to prove suc-
cessful in their enterprise than the Spaniards in theirs. The Spaniards were enemies against whom the city had long been on its guard. The French were friends in whose sincerity a somewhat shaken confidence had just been restored. When the Spanish attack was made, a large force of defenders was drawn up in battle array behind freshly strengthened fortifications. When the French entered at leisure through a scarcely guarded gate, the whole population and garrison of the town were quietly eating their dinners. The numbers of the invading forces on the two occasions did not materially differ; but at the time of the French Fury there was not a large force of regular troops under veteran generals to resist the attack. Perhaps this was the main reason for the result, which seems at first almost inexplicable. For protection against the Spanish invasion, the burghers relied on mercenaries, some of whom proved treacherous, while the rest became panic-struck. On the present occasion the burghers relied on themselves. Moreover, the French committed the great error of despising their enemy. Recollecting the ease with which the Spaniards had ravished the city, they believed that they had nothing to do but to enter and take possession. Instead of repressing their greediness, as the Spaniards had done, until they had overcome resistance, they dispersed almost immediately into by-streets, and entered warehouses to search for plunder. They seemed actuated by a fear that they should not have time to rifle the city before additional troops should be sent by Anjou to share in the spoil. They were less used to the sacking of Netherland cities than were the Spaniards, whom long practice had made perfect in the art of methodically butchering a population at first, before attention should be diverted to plundering, and supplementary outrages. At any rate, whatever the causes, it is certain that the panic, which upon such occasions generally decides the fate of the day, seized upon the invaders and not upon the invaded, almost from the very first. As soon as the marauders faltered in their purpose and wished to retreat, it was all over with them. Returning was worse than advance, and it was the almost inevitable result that hardly a man escaped death or capture.

The Duke retreated the same day in the direction of Denremonde, and on his way met with another misfortune, by which an additional number of his troops lost their lives. A dyke was cut by the Mechlin citizens to impede his march, and the swollen waters of the Dill, liberated and flowing across the country which he was to traverse, produced such an inundation, that at least a thousand of his followers were drowned. 2

As soon as he had established himself in a camp near Berghem, he opened a correspondence with the Prince of Orange, and with the authorities of Antwerp. His language was marked by wonderful effrontery. He found himself and soldiers suffering for want of food; he remembered that he had left much plate and valuable furniture in Antwerp; and he was therefore desirous that the citizens, whom he had so basely outraged, should at once send him supplies and restore his property. He also reclaimed the prisoners who still remained in the city, and to obtain all this he applied to the man whom he had bitterly deceived, and whose life would have been sacrificed by the Duke, had the enterprise succeeded. 3

It had been his intention to sack the city, to re-establish exclusively the Roman Catholic worship, to trample upon the constitution which he had so recently sworn to maintain, to deprive Orange, by force, of the Reversal by which the Duke recognised the Prince as sovereign of Holland, Zeeland, and Utrecht; 4 yet notwithstanding that his treason had been enacted in broad daylight, and in a most deliberate manner, he had

1 Strada, 2, v. 252. Reidani, ii. 53.  
2 Merten, xi. 203. Hoofd, xx. 848.  
3 Strada, 2, v. 253.  
4 Hoofd, xix. 844. — Compare de Thou, t. ix. 1. 77.  
5 Bor, xvii. 844.
the audacity to ascribe the recent tragic occurrences to chance. He had the farther originality to speak of himself as an aggrieved person, who had rendered great services to the Netherlands, and who had only met with ingratitude in return. His envoys, Messieurs Landmater and Escolières, despatched on the very day of the French Fury to the burgomasters and senate of Antwerp, were instructed to remind those magistrates that the Duke had repeatedly exposed his life in the cause of the Netherlands. The affronts, they were to add, which he had received, and the approaching ruin of the country, which he foresaw, had so altered his excellent nature, as to engender the present calamity, which he infinitely regretted. Nevertheless, the senate was to be assured that his affection for the commonwealth was still so strong, as to induce a desire on his part to be informed what course was now to be pursued with regard to him. Information upon that important point was therefore to be requested, while at the same time the liberation of the prisoners at Antwerp, and the restoration of the Duke's furniture and papers, were to be urgently demanded. 1

Letters of similar import were also despatched by the Duke to the states of the Union, while to the Prince of Orange his application was brief but brazen. "You know well, my cousin," said he, "the just and frequent causes of offence which this people has given me. The insults which I this morning experienced cut me so deeply to the heart, that they are the only reasons of the misfortune which has happened to-day. Nevertheless, to those who desire my friendship I shall shew equal friendship and affection. Herein I shall follow the counsel you have uniformly given me, since I know it comes from one who has always loved me. Therefore I beg that you will kindly bring it to pass, that I may obtain some decision, and that no injury may be inflicted upon my people.

Otherwise the land shall pay for it dearly." 2

To these appeals, neither the Prince nor the authorities of Antwerp answered immediately in their own names. A general consultation was, however, immediately held with the estates-general, and an answer forthwith despatched to the Duke by the hands of his envoys. It was agreed to liberate the prisoners, to restore the furniture, and to send a special deputation for the purpose of making further arrangements with the Duke by word of mouth, and for this deputation his Highness was requested to furnish a safe conduct. 3

Anjou was overjoyed when he received this amicable communication. Believed for a time from his fears as to the result of his crime, he already assumed a higher ground. He not only spoke to the states in a paternal tone, which was sufficiently ludicrous, but he had actually the coolness to assure them of his forgiveness. "He felt hurt," he said, "that they should deem a safe conduct necessary for the deputation which they proposed to send. If they thought that he had reason, on account of the past, to feel offended, he begged them to believe that he had forgotten it all, and that he had buried the past in its ashes, even as if it had never been." He furthermore begged them—and this seemed the greatest insult of all—in future to trust to his word, and to believe that if anything should be attempted to their disadvantage, he would be the very first to offer himself for their protection. 4

It will be observed that in his first letters the Duke had not affected to deny his agency in the outrage—an agency so flagrant that all subterfuge seemed superfluous. He in fact avowed that the attempt had been made by his command, but sought to palliate the crime on the ground that it had been the result of the ill-treatment which he had experienced from the states. "The affronts which I have

---

1 Bor (xviii. 344, sqq.) gives the instructions, together with the whole correspondence.

2 See the letter in Bor, xvii. 345.

3 Ibid., xvii. 345.

4 Ibid.
received," said he, both to the magistrates of Antwerp and to Orange, "have engendered the present calamity." So also, in a letter written at the same time to his brother, Henry the Third, he observed that "the indignities which were put upon him, and the manifest intention of the states to make a Matthias of him, had been the cause of the catastrophe."

He now, however, ventured a step farther. Presuming upon the indulgence which he had already experienced, and bravely assuming the tone of injured innocence, he asserted the enterprise partly to accident, and partly to the insubordination of his troops. This was the ground which he adopted in his interviews with the states' commissioners. So also, in a letter addressed to Van der Tympe1l, commander of Brussels, in which he begged for supplies for his troops, he described the recent invasion of Antwerp as entirely unexpected by himself, and beyond his control. He had been intending, he said, to leave the city and to join his army. A tumult had accidentally arisen between his soldiers and the guard at the gate. Other troops rushing in from without, had joined in the affray, so that to his great sorrow an extensive disorder had arisen. He manifested the same Christian inclination to forgive, however, which he had before exhibited. He observed that "good men would never grow cold in his regard, or find his affection diminished." He assured Van der Tympe, in particular, of his ancient good-will, as he knew him to be a lover of the common weal.

In his original communications he had been both cringing and threatening—but, at least, he had not denied truths which were plain as daylight. His new position considerably damaged his cause. This forgiving spirit on the part of the malefactor was a little more than the states could bear, disposed as they felt, from policy, to be indulgent, and to smooth over the crime as gently as possible. The negotiations were interrupted, and the authorities of Antwerp published a brief and spirited defence of their own conduct. They denied that any affront or want of respect on their part could have provoked the outrage of which the Duke had been guilty. They severely handled his self-contradiction, in ascribing originally the recent attempt to his just vengeance for past injuries, and in afterwards imputing it to accident or sudden mutiny, while they cited the simultaneous attempts at Bruges, Denrond, Alost, Dixmude, Newport, Ostend, Vilvoorde, and Dunkirk, as a series of damming proofs of a deliberate design.

The publication of such plain facts did not advance the negotiations when resumed. High and harsh words were interchanged between his Highness and the commissioners, Anjou complaining, as usual, of affronts and indignities, but when pushed home for particulars, taking refuge in equivocation. "He did not wish," he said, "to re-open wounds which had been partially healed." He also affected benignity, and wishing to forgive and to forget, he offered some articles as the basis of a fresh agreement. Of these it is sufficient to state that they were entirely different from the terms of the Bordeaux treaty, and that they were rejected as quite inadmissible.

He wrote again to the Prince of Orange, invoking his influence to bring about an arrangement. The Prince, justly indignant at the recent treachery and the present insolence of the man whom he had so profoundly trusted, but feeling certain that the welfare of the country depended at present upon avoiding, if possible, a political catastrophe, answered the Duke in plain, firm, mournful, and appropriate language. He had ever manifested to his Highness, he said, the most uniform and sincere friendship. He had, therefore, the right to tell him that affairs were now so changed that his greatness and glory...

1 Bor gives the letter, xxvii. 348. 2 See the letter to V. der Tympe in Bor, xxvii. 348, 349. 3 Bor, viii. 346, 347. 4 Ibid. xxvii. 347. 5 From Vilvoorde, Jan. 25, 1583. Bor, xxvii. 547, 548.
had departed. Those men in the Netherlands, who, but yesterday, had been willing to die at the feet of his Highness, were now so exasperated that they avowedly preferred an open enemy to a treacherous protector. He had hoped, he said, that after what had happened in so many cities at the same moment, his Highness would have been pleased to give the deputies a different and a more becoming answer. He had hoped for some response which might lead to an arrangement. He, however, stated frankly, that the articles transmitted by his Highness were so unreasonable that no man in the land would dare open his mouth to recommend them. His Highness, by this proceeding, had much deepened the distrust. He warned the Duke accordingly, that he was not taking the right course to reinstate himself in a position of honour and glory, and he begged him, therefore, to adopt more appropriate means. Such a step was now demanded of him, not only by the country, but by all Christendom.¹

This moderate but heartfelt appeal to the better nature of the Duke, if he had a better nature, met with no immediate response.

While matters were in this condition, a special envoy arrived out of France, despatched by the King and Queen-mother, on the first reception of the recent intelligence from Antwerp.² M. de Mirambeau, the ambassador, whose son had been killed in the Fury, brought letters of credence to the states of the Union and to the Prince of Orange.³ He delivered also a short confidential note, written in her own hand, from Catherine de Medici to the Prince, to the following effect:—

“My Cousin,—The King, my son, and myself, send you Monsieur de Mirambeau, to prove to you that we do not believe—for we esteem you an honourable man—that you would manifest ingratitude to my son, and to those who have followed him for the welfare of your country. We feel that you have too much affection for one who has the support of so powerful a prince as the King of France, as to play him so base a trick. Until I learn the truth, I shall not renounce the good hope which I have always indulged—that you would never have invited my son to your country, without intending to serve him faithfully. As long as you do this, you may ever reckon on the support of all who belong to him."

“Your good Cousin,

“CATHERINE.”⁴

It would have been very difficult to extract much information or much comfort from this wily epistle. The menace was sufficiently plain, the promise disagreeably vague. Moreover, a letter from the same Catherine de Medici, had been recently found in a casket at the Duke’s lodgings in Antwerp. In that communication, she had distinctly advised her son to re-establish the Roman Catholic religion, assuring him that by so doing he would be enabled to marry the Infanta of Spain.⁵ Nevertheless, the Prince, convinced that it was his duty to bridge over the deep and fatal chasm which had opened between the French Prince and the provinces, if an honourable reconciliation were possible, did not attach an undue importance either to the stimulating or to the upbraiding portion of the communication from Catherine. He was most anxious to avert the chaos which he saw returning. He knew that while the temper of Rudolph, of the English Queen, and of the Protestant princes of Germany, and the internal condition of the Netherlands remained the same,
it were madness to provoke the government of France, and thus gain an additional enemy, while losing their only friend. He did not renounce the hope of forming all the Netherlands—excepting of course the Walloon provinces already reconciled to Philip—into one independent commonwealth, freed for ever from Spanish tyranny. A dynasty from a foreign house he was willing to accept, but only on condition that the new royal line should become naturalised in the Netherlands, should conform itself to the strict constitutional compact established, and should employ only natives in the administration of Netherlands affairs. Notwithstanding, therefore, the recent treachery of Anjou, he was willing to treat with him upon the ancient basis. The dilemma was a very desperate one, for whatever might be his course, it was impossible that it should escape censure. Even at this day, it is difficult to decide what might have been the result of openly braving the French government, and expelling Anjou. The Prince of Parma—shrewd, vigilant, prompt with word and blow—was waiting most anxiously to take advantage of every false step of his adversary. The provinces had been already summoned in most eloquent language, to take warning by the recent fate of Antwerp, and to learn by the manifestation just made by Anjou, of his real intentions, that their only salvation lay in a return to the King's arms. Anjou himself, as devoid of shame as of honour, was secretly holding interviews with Parma's agents, Accosta and Flaminio Carner, at the very moment when he was alternately expressing to the states his resentment that they dared to doubt his truth, or magnanimously extending to them his pardon for their suspicions. He was writing letters full of injured innocence to Orange and to the states, while secretly cavilling over the terms of the treaty by which he was to sell himself to Spain. Scruples as to enacting so base a part did not trouble the "Son of France." He did not hesitate at playing this doubly treble game with the provinces, but he was anxious to drive the best possible bargain for himself with Parma. He offered to restore Dunkirk, Dixmuyde, and the other cities which he had so recently flched from the states, and to enter into a strict alliance with Philip; but he claimed that certain Netherland cities on the French frontier should be made over to him in exchange. He required, likewise, ample protection for his retreat from a country which was likely to be sufficiently exasperated. Parma and his agents smiled, of course, at such exorbitant terms. Nevertheless, it was necessary to deal cautiously with a man who, although but a poor baffled rogue to-day, might to-morrow be seated on the throne of France. While they were all secretly haggling over the terms of the bargain, the Prince of Orange discovered the intrigue. It convinced him of the necessity of closing with a man whose baseness was so profound, but whose position made his enmity, on the whole, more dangerous than his friendship. Anjou, backed by so astute and unscrupulous a politician as Parma, was not to be trifled with. The feeling of doubt and anxiety was spreading daily through the country: many men, hitherto firm, were already wavering, while at the same time the Prince had no confidence in the power of any of the states, save those of Holland and Utrecht, to maintain a resolute attitude of defiance, if not assisted from without.

He therefore endeavoured to repair the breach, if possible, and thus save the Union. Mirabeau, in his conferences with the estates, suggested, on his part, all that words could effect. He expressed the hope that the estates would use their discretion "in compounding some sweet and friendly medicine" for the present disorder; and that they would not judge the Duke too harshly for a fault which he assured them did not come from his natural disposition. He warned them that the enemy would be quick to take
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1583.

The Dutch of the Union, being in great perplexity as to their proper course, now applied formally, as they always did in times of danger and distress to the Prince, for a public expression of his views. Somewhat reluctantly he complied with their wishes in one of the most admirable of his state papers.

Part of the states that he felt some hesitation in expressing his views. The nature of the general of success was severe and upon his shoulders, as the success of war could be confounded with a great prestige with simple means at his disposal. As for himself, with all his actual power that he might have, a simple city in itself was what was thought a sufficient means to achieve what he expected and in a humble manner. His army was always lacking but in the form of his spirit, according to the nature of the states where in any place the people did not seem to want in the mind of his subjects and who had a clear sense of the situation. The Prince, in his judgment, at the place in the beginning of the war, it was likely to be restrained, a number of the circumstances, he was sure that the war was to continue.

The last resolution of the

The Prince, in his judgment, it was likely to be restrained, a number of the circumstances, he was sure that the war was to continue.
self-protection than the treaty with the French Prince. He thought it, therefore, unjust, now that calamity had sprung from the measure, to ascribe the blame entirely to him, even had the injury been greater than the one actually sustained. He was far from palliating the crime, or from denying that the Duke's rights under the Treaty of Bordeaux had been utterly forfeited. He was now asked what was to be done. Of three courses, he said, one must be taken: they must make their peace with the King, or consent to a reconciliation with Anjou, or use all the strength which God had given them to resist, single-handed, the enemy. With regard to the first point, he resumed the argument as to the hopelessess of a satisfactory arrangement with the monarch of Spain. The recent reconciliation of the Walloon provinces and its shameful infraction by Parma in the immediate recall of large masses of Spanish and Italian troops, shewed too plainly the value of all solemn stipulations with his Catholic Majesty. Moreover, the time was unpropitious. It was idle to look, after what had recently occurred, for even fair promises. It was madness then to incur the enmity of two such powers at once. The French could do the Netherlands more harm as enemies than the Spaniards. The Spaniards would be more dangerous as friends, for in case of a treaty with Philip, the Inquisition would be established in the place of a religious peace. For these reasons the Prince declared himself entirely opposed to any negotiations with the Crown of Spain.

As to the second point, he admitted that Anjou had gained little honour by his recent course, and that it would be a mistake on their part to stumble a second time over the same stone. He foresaw, nevertheless, that the Duke—irritated as he was by the loss of so many of his nobles, and by the downfall of all his hopes in the Netherlands—would be likely to inflict great injuries upon their cause. Two powerful nations like France and Spain would be too much to have on their hands at once. How much danger, too, would be incurred by braving at once the open wrath of the French King and the secret displeasure of the English Queen. She had warmly recommended the Duke of Anjou. She had said that honours to him were rendered to herself, and she was now entirely opposed to their keeping the present quarrel alive. If France became their enemy, the road was at once opened through that kingdom for Spain. The Estates were to ponder well whether they possessed the means to carry on such a double war without assistance. They were likewise to remember how many cities still remained in the hands of Anjou, and their possible fate if the Duke were pushed to extremity.

The third point was then handled with vigour. He reminded the states of the perpetual difficulty of raising armies, of collecting money to pay for troops, of inducing cities to accept proper garrisons, of establishing a council which could make itself respected. He alluded briefly and bitterly to the perpetual quarrels of the states among themselves; to their mutual jealousy; to their obstinate parsimony; to their jealousy of the general government; to their apathy and inertness before impending ruin. He would not calumniate those, he said, who counselled trust in God. That was his sentiment also. To attempt great affairs, however, and, through avarice, to withhold sufficient means, was not trusting, but tempting God. On the contrary, it was trusting God

---

1 Discourse of Orange, apud Bor, loc. cit. — "— vous conseiller et vous admonéter," wrote Elizabeth to the states-general, "que vous conservez bien garde d'offenser un Prince de sa qualité — ajout déja par le mépris passé refroidi beaucoup en lui la première affection qu'il vous portoit. (1) Car vous pourriez absensment penser que s'il est si ament irrité par telles façons de faire qu'il en de-
to use the means which He offered to their hands.

With regard, then, to the three points, he rejected the first. Reconciliation with the King of Spain was impossible. For his own part, he would much prefer the third course. He had always been in favour of their maintaining independence by their own means and the assistance of the Almighty. He was obliged, however, in sadness, to confess that the narrow feeling of individual state rights, the general tendency to disunion, and the constant wrangling, had made this course a hopeless one. There remained, therefore, only the second, and they must effect an honourable reconciliation with Anjou. Whatever might be their decision, however, it was meet that it should be a speedy one. Not an hour was to be lost. Many churches of God, in Anjou's power, were trembling on the issue, and religious and political liberty was more at stake than ever. In conclusion, the Prince again expressed his determination, whatever might be their decision, to devote the rest of his days to the services of his country.

The result of these representations by the Prince—of frequent letters from Queen Elizabeth, urging a reconciliation—and of the professions made by the Duke and the French envoys, was a provisional arrangement, signed on the 28th and 29th of March. According to the terms of this accord, the Duke was to receive thirty thousand florins for his troops, and to surrender the cities still in his power. The French prisoners were to be liberated, the Duke's property at Antwerp was to be restored, and the Duke himself was to await at Dunkirk the arrival of plenipotentiaries to treat with him as to a new and perpetual arrangement.

The negotiations, however, were languid. The quarrel was healed on the surface, but confidence so recently and violently uprooted was slow to revive. On the 28th of June, the Duke of Anjou left Dunkirk for Paris, never to return to the Netherlands, but he exchanged on his departure affectionate letters with the Prince and the estates. M. des Pruneaux remained as his representative, and it was understood that the arrangements for re-installing him as soon as possible in the sovereignty which he had so basely forfeited, were to be pushed forward with earnestness.

In the spring of the same year, Gerard Truchses, Archbishop of Cologne, who had lost his see for the love of Agnes Mansfeld, whom he had espoused in defiance of the Pope, took refuge with the Prince of Orange at Delft. A civil war in Germany broke forth, the Protestant Princes undertaking to support the Archbishop, in opposition to Ernest of Bavaria, who had been appointed in his place. The Palatine, John Casimir, thought it necessary to mount and ride as usual. Making his appearance at the head of a hastily collected force, and prepared for another plunge into chaos, he suddenly heard, however, of his elder brother's death at Heidelberg. Leaving his men, as was his habit, to shift for themselves, and Baron Truchses, the Archbishop's brother, to fall into the hands of the enemy, he disappeared from the scene with great rapidity, in order that his own interests in the Palatinate and the guardianship of the young palatines might not suffer by his absence.

At this time, too, on the 12th of April, the Prince of Orange was married, for the fourth time, to Louise, widow of the Seigneur de Teliagny, and daughter of the illustrious Coligny.

In the course of the summer, the states of Holland and Zeeland, always bitterly opposed to the connexion with Anjou, and more than ever dissatisfied with the resumption of negotiations since the Antwerp catastrophe, sent a committee to the Prince in order to

1 Discourse of Orange, etc.
2 Muteren, xl. 203.
3 See the Accord, in twenty-one articles, in Bor, xviii. 355-357.
4 Bor, xviii. 371, 372, sqq. Muteren, xi.

204-
5 Bor, xviii. 360, 361.
6 Ibid., ubi sup.
7 Ibid., xviii. 393. Muteren, xi. 205. Hoofd, xx. 884.
persuade him to set his face against the whole proceedings. They delivered at the same time a formal remonstrance, in writing (25th of August 1583) in which they explained how odious the arrangement with the Duke had ever been to them. They expressed the opinion that even the wisest might be sometimes mistaken, and that the Prince had been bitterly deceived by Anjou and by the French court. They besought him to rely upon the assistance of the Almighty, and upon the exertions of the nation, and they again hinted at the propriety of his accepting that supreme sovereignty over all the united provinces which would be so gladly conferred, while, for their own parts, they voluntarily offered largely to increase the sums annually contributed to the common defence.  

Very soon afterwards, in August 1583, the states of the united provinces assembled at Middelburg formally offered the general government—which under the circumstances was the general sovereignty—to the Prince, warmly urging his acceptance of the dignity. He manifested, however, the same reluctance which he had always expressed, demanding that the project should beforehand be laid before the councils of all the large cities, and before the estates of certain provinces which had not been represented at the Middelburg diet. He also made use of the occasion to urge the necessity of providing more generously for the army expenses and other general disbursements. As to ambitious views, he was a stranger to them, and his language at this moment was as patriotic and self-denying as at any previous period. He expressed his thanks to the estates for this renewed proof of their confidence in his character, and this additional approbation of his course—a sentiment which he was always ready "as a good patriot to justify by his most faithful service." He reminded them, however, that he was no great monarch, having in his own hands the means to help and the power to liberate them; and that even were he in possession of all which God had once given him, he should be far from strong enough to resist, single-handed, their powerful enemy. All that was left to him, he said, was an "honest and moderate experience in affairs." With this he was ever ready to serve them to the utmost; but they knew very well that the means to make that experience available were to be drawn from the country itself. With modest simplicity, he observed that he had been at work fifteen or sixteen years, doing his best, with the grace of God, to secure the freedom of the fatherland and to resist tyranny of conscience; that he alone—assisted by his brothers and some friends and relatives—had borne the whole burden in the beginning, and that he had afterwards been helped by the states of Holland and Zeeland, so that he could not but render thanks to God for His great mercy in thus granting His blessing to so humble an instrument, and thus restoring so many beautiful provinces to their ancient freedom and to the true religion. The Prince protested that this result was already a sufficient reward for his labours—a great consolation in his sufferings. He had hoped, he said, that the estates, "taking into consideration his long-continued labours, would have been willing to excuse him from a new load of cares, and would have granted him some little rest in his already advanced age;" that they would have selected "some other person more fitted for the labour, whom he would himself faithfully promise to assist to the best of his abilities, rendering him willing obedience proportionate to the authority conferred upon him."  

Like all other attempts to induce the acceptance, by the Prince, of supreme authority, this effort proved ineffectual, from the obstinate unwillingness of his hand to receive the proffered sceptre.

---

1 Bor, xviii. 397, 398.
2 Message of Orange to the states-general, MS.—"Ghe exhiberckt by sijne Exceeq den VI.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

On the 22d of September 1583, the city of Zutphen, too, was surprised by Colonel Tassis, on the fall of which most important place, the treason of Orange's brother-in-law, Count Van den Berg, governor of Gueldres, was revealed. His fidelity had been long suspected, particularly by Count John of Nassau, but always earnestly vouch- ed for by his wife and by his sons. On the capture of Zutphen, however, a document was found and made public, by which Van den Berg bound himself to deliver the principal cities of Gueldres and Zutphen, beginning with Zutphen itself, into the hands of Parma, on condition of receiving the pardon and friendship of the King.

Not much better could have been expected of Van den Berg. His pusillanimous retreat from his post in Alva's time will be recollected; and it is certain that the Prince had never placed implicit confidence in his character. Nevertheless, it was the fate of this great man to be often deceived by the friends whom he trusted, although never to be outwitted by his enemies. Van den Berg was arrested, on the 15th of November, carried to the Hague, examined and imprisoned for a time in Delftshaven. After a time he was, however, liberated, when he instantly, with all his sons, took service under the King.

While treason was thus favouring the royal arms in the north, the same powerful element, to which so much of the Netherland misfortunes had always been owing, was busy in Flanders.

Towards the end of the year 1583,
the Prince of Chimay, eldest son of the Duke of Aerschot, had been elected governor of that province. This noble was as unstable in character, as vain, as unscrupulous, and as ambitious as his father and uncle. He had been originally desirous of espousing the eldest daughter of the Prince of Orange, afterwards the Countess of Hohenlo, but the Duchess of Aerschot was too strict a Catholic to consent to the marriage, and her son was afterwards united to the Countess of Meghem, widow of Lancelot Berlaymont.

As affairs seemed going on prosperously for the states in the beginning of this year, the Prince of Chimay had affected a strong inclination for the Reformed religion, and as governor of Bruges, he had appointed many members of that Church to important offices, to the exclusion of Catholics. By so decided a course, he acquired the confidence of the patriot party and at the end of the year he became governor of Flanders. No sooner was he installed in this post, than he opened a private correspondence with Parma, for it was his intention to make peace with the King, and to purchase pardon and advancement by the brilliant service which he now undertook, of restoring this important province to the royal authority. In the arrangement of his plans he was assisted by Champagny, who, as will be recollected, had long been a prisoner in Ghent, but whose confinement was not so strict as to prevent frequent intercourse with his friends without. Champagny was indeed believed to be the life of the whole intrigue. The plot was, however, forwarded by Imbize, the roaring demagogue whose republicanism could never reconcile itself with what he esteemed the aristocratic policy of Orange, and whose stern puritanism could be satisfied with nothing short of a general extermination of Catholica. This man, after having been allowed to depart, infamous and contemptible, from the city which he had endangered, now ventured, after five years, to return, and to engage in fresh schemes which were even more criminal than his previous enterprises. The uncompromising foe to Romanism, the advocate of Grecian and Genevan democracy, now allied himself with Champagny and with Chimay, to effect a surrender of Flanders to Philip and to the Inquisition. He succeeded in getting himself elected chief senator in Ghent, and forthwith began to use all his influence to further the secret plot. The joint efforts and intrigues of Parma, Champagny, Chimay, and Imbize, were near being successful. Early in the spring of 1584 a formal resolution was passed by the government of Ghent, to open negotiations with Parma. Hostages were accordingly exchanged, and a truce of three weeks was agreed upon, during which an animated correspondence was maintained between the authorities of Ghent and the Prince of Chimay on the one side, and the United States-general, the magistracy of Antwerp, the states of Brabant, and other important bodies on the other.

The friends of the Union and of liberty used all their eloquence to arrest the city of Ghent in its course, and to save the province of Flanders from accepting the proposed arrangement with Parma. The people of Ghent were reminded that the chief promoter of this new negotiation was Champagny, a man who owed a deep magistracy of Ghent. "That a passport has been given to one of our most especial enemies (eenen van onse partiaaste vyanden) to come within the city of Ghent in order to converse with Champagny by word of mouth (mondellinge met Champigny te spreekken)."

—Letter of 31 May, in de Jonge, Oonligtgev. Steucken, ’s Gravenhage und Amsterdam, 1837. "To Champagny who is at the bottom of all these proceedings," wrote the states of Brabant to the magistrates of Ghent.—Letter of March 14, in Bor, xvii. 415, 416.
The Rise of the Dutch Republic.

[1584.]
debt of hatred to their city, for the long, and as he believed, the unjust confinement which he had endured within its walls. Moreover, he was the brother of Granville, source of all their woes. To take counsel with Champagny, was to come within reach of a deadly foe, for “he who confesses himself to a wolf,” said the burgomasters of Antwerp, “will get wolf’s absolution.” The Flemings were warned by all their correspondents that it was puerile to hope for faith in Philip; a monarch whose first principle was, that promises to heretics were void. They were entreated to pay no heed to the “sweet singing of the royalists,” who just then affected to disapprove of the practice adopted by the Spanish Inquisition, that they might more surely separate them from their friends. “Imitate not,” said the magistrates of Brussels, “the foolish sheep who made with the wolves a treaty of perpetual amity, from which the faithful dogs were to be excluded.” It was affirmed—and the truth was certainly beyond peradventure—that religious liberty was dead at the moment when the treaty with Parma should be signed. “To look for political privilege or evangelical liberty,” said the Antwerp authorities, “in any arrangement with the Spaniards, is to look for light in darkness, for fire in water.” “Philip is himself the slave of the Inquisition,” said the states-general, “and has but one great purpose in life—to cherish the institution everywhere, and particularly in the Netherlands. Before Margaret of Parma’s time, one hundred thousand Netherlanders had been burned or strangled, and Alva had spent seven years in butchering and torturing many thousands more.” The magistrates of Brussels used similar expressions. “The King of Spain,” said they to their brethren of Ghent, “is fas-

tened to the Inquisition. Yes, he is so much in its power, that even if he desired, he is unable to maintain his promises.” The Prince of Orange, too, was indefatigable in public and private efforts to counteract the machinations of Parma and the Spanish party in Ghent. He saw with horror the progress which the political decomposition of that most important commonwealth was making, for he considered the city the keystone to the union of the provinces, for he felt with a prophetic instinct that its loss would entail that of all the southern provinces, and make a united and independent Netherland state impossible. Already in the summer of 1583, he addressed a letter full of wisdom and of warning to the authorities of Ghent, a letter in which he set fully before them the iniquity and stupidity of their proceedings, while at the same time he expressed himself with so much dexterity and caution as to avoid giving offence, by accusations which he made, as it were, hypothetically, when, in truth, they were real ones.

These remonstrances were not fruitless, and the authorities and citizens of Ghent once more paused ere they stepped from the precipice. While they were thus wavering, the whole negotiation with Parma was abruptly brought to a close by a new incident, the demagogue Imbize having been discovered in a secret attempt to obtain possession of the city of Denemonde, and deliver it to Parma. The old acquaintance, ally, and enemy of Imbize, the Seigneur de Ryhove, was commandant of the city, and information was privately conveyed to him of the design, before there had been time for its accomplishment. Ryhove, being thoroughly on his guard, arrested his old comrade, who was shortly afterwards brought to trial, and executed at Ghent. John van Imbize had re-

1 Letter of the burgomasters of Antwerp to the authorities of Ghent, in Bor, xviii. 417. Letter from the magistrates of Brussels to those of Ghent, March 16, 1584.—Bor, xviii. 414. Letter of states-general to Prince of Chimiay and the bailiffs of Bruges, March 17, 1584.—Bor, 3, xviii. 410.

2 Letter of magistrates of Brussels.—Bor, xviii. 414.

3 The letter is published, together with others of great interest, by De Jonga, Omtregeven Stukken, 84-92.


5 Van der Vynckt, iii. 110. Meteor, xi. 213. In the month of August, 1584.
turned to the city from which the contemptuous mercy of Orange had permitted him formerly to depart, only to expiate fresh turbulence and fresh treason by a felon’s death. Meanwhile the citizens of Ghent, thus warned by word and deed, passed an earnest resolution to have no more intercourse with Parma, but to abide faithfully by the union. Their example was followed by the other Flemish cities, excepting, unfortunately, Bruges; for that important town, being entirely in the power of Chimay, was now surrendered by him to the royal government. On the 20th of May 1584, Baron Montigny, on the part of Parma, signed an accord with the Prince of Chimay, by which the city was restored to his Majesty, and by which all inhabitants not willing to abide by the Roman Catholic religion were permitted to leave the land. The Prince was received with favour by Parma, on conclusion of the transaction, and subsequently met with advancement from the King, while the Princess, who had embraced the Reformed religion, retired to Holland.

The only other city of importance gained on this occasion by the government was Ypres, which had been long besieged, and was soon afterwards forced to yield. The new Bishop, on taking possession, resorted to instant measures for cleansing a place which had been so long in the hands of the infidels, and as the first step in this purification, the bodies of many heretics who had been buried for years were taken from their graves, and publicly hanged in their coffins. All living adherents to the Reformed religion were instantly expelled from the place.

Ghent and the rest of Flanders were, for the time, saved from the power of Spain, the inhabitants being confirmed in their resolution of sustaining their union with the other provinces by the news from France. Early in the spring the negotiations between Anjou and the states-general had been earnestly renewed, and Junius, Mouillerie, and Asseliers, had been despatched on a special mission to France, for the purpose of arranging a treaty with the Duke. On the 19th of April 1584, they arrived in Delft, on their return, bringing warm letters from the French Court, full of promises to assist the Netherlands; and it was understood that a constitution, upon the basis of the original arrangement of Bordeaux, would be accepted by the Duke. These arrangements were, however, for ever terminated by the death of Anjou, who had been ill during the whole course of the negotiations. On the 10th of June 1584, he expired at Chateau Thierry, in great torture, sweating blood from every pore, and under circumstances which, as usual, suggested strong suspicions of poison.

---

CHAPTER VII.

Various attempts upon the life of Orange—Delft—Mansion of the Prince described—Francis Guion or Balthazar Gérard—His antecedents—His correspondence and interviews with Parma and with d’Assonville—His employment in France—His return to Delft and interview with Orange—The crime—The confession—The punishment—The consequences—Concluding remarks.

It has been seen that the Ban against the Prince of Orange had not been hitherto without fruits, for although unsuccessful, the efforts to take his life and earn the promised guerdon had been incessant. The attempt of Jaureguy, at Antwerp, of Salceda and Baza at Bruges, have been related, and in March 1585, moreover, one Pietro Dordogno was

---

1 Bor. xvii. 420. 2 Ibid. xviii. 420-423.
3 Ibid., 425. 4 Hood, xx. 587.
5 Bor. xvi. 423.
The assistance of the English in the capture of Delft led to a great deal of speculation and discussion among the Dutch. The English were seen as potential allies against the Spanish, who were perceived as a threat to Dutch independence. The capture of Delft was seen as a significant victory for the Dutch, and it led to a period of increased activity in the Dutch Republic.

In the summer of 1654, William of Orange was residing at Delft, where his wife, Louise de Guigny, had given birth to their first child. The news of the capture of Delft was greeted with great excitement, and the streets were filled with throngs of people celebrating the event. The English had arrived in force, and their presence was felt throughout the city. The Dutch were eager to see the English, and they gathered in large numbers to welcome them.

In the months that followed, the Dutch were eager to learn more about the English, and they sent representatives to Delft to learn more about their customs and way of life. The English were also eager to learn about the Dutch, and they engaged in friendly conversations with Dutch citizens. The English were well received, and their presence was seen as a sign of progress and prosperity for the Dutch Republic.

In conclusion, the capture of Delft was a significant event in the history of the Dutch Republic. It marked a turning point in the relationship between the Dutch and the English, and it paved the way for future cooperation and friendship between the two nations. The English were well received in Delft, and their presence was seen as a sign of progress and prosperity for the Dutch Republic.
cloister dedicated to Saint Agatha, the last prior of which had been hanged by the furious Lume de la Marche.

The news of Anjou’s death had been brought to Delft by a special messenger from the French court. On Sunday morning, the 8th of July 1584, the Prince of Orange, having read the despatches before leaving his bed, caused the man who had brought them to be summoned, that he might give some particular details by word of mouth concerning the last illness of the Duke. The courier was accordingly admitted to the Prince’s bedchamber, and proved to be one Francis Guion, as he called himself. This man had, early in the spring, claimed and received the protection of Orange, on the ground of being the son of a Protestant at Besançon, who had suffered death for his religion, and of his own ardent attachment to the Reformed faith. A pious, psalm-singing, thoroughly Calvinistic youth he seemed to be, having a bible or a hymn-book under his arm whenever he walked the street, and most exemplary in his attendance at sermon and lecture. For the rest, a singularly unobtrusive personage, twenty-seven years of age, low of stature, meagre, mean-visaged, muddy complexioned, and altogether a man of no account—quite insignificant in the eyes of all who looked upon him. If there were one opinion in which the few who had taken the trouble to think of the puny, somewhat shambling stranger from Burgundy at all coincided, it was that he was inoffensive, but quite incapable of any important business. He seemed well educated, claimed to be of respectable parentage, and had considerable facility of speech, when any person could be found who thought it worth while to listen to him; but on the whole he attracted little attention.

Nevertheless, this insignificant frame locked up a desperate and daring character; this mild and inoffensive nature had gone pregnant seven years with a terrible crime, whose birth could not much longer be retarded. Francis Guion, the Calvinist, son of a martyred Calvinist, was in reality Balthazar Gérard, a fanatical Catholic, whose father and mother were still living at Villeneuve in Burgundy. Before reaching man’s estate, he had formed the design of murdering the Prince of Orange, “who, so long as he lived, died den Tyran van ’t Nederlandt den Prins van Orangie doorhemde heeft: en de daarmeder grouwelijk ende vele tormenten binnen de stadt van Delft openbaerlijk gehaaldt, 1584” (with no name of place or publisher). This account, by a very bitter royalist and papist—perhaps a personal acquaintance of Gérard—extols the deed to the skies, and depicts the horrible sufferings of the malefactor as those of a blessed martyr. A manuscript in the Bibliothèque de Bourgogne (now the MS. section of the Royal Library at Brussels), entitled, “Particularités touchant Balthazar Gérard,” No. 17, 386, contains many important documents, letters of Parma, of Gérard, and of Cornelius Aersens. The fifth volume of the MS. history of Benoît de France has a chapter devoted to the subject, important because he wrote from the papers of d’Assonville, who was Parma’s agent in the preliminary negotiations with Gérard. Part of these documents have been published by Dewez (Hist. Gen. de la Belg., tom vi.), by Reiffenberg, and still more recently by Professor Arend (“Recherches Critiques et Historiques sur la Confession de B. Gérard, Bruxelles, 1854”), who has ably demonstrated the authenticity of the “Confession” published by M. Gachard.

---


2 The main source from which the historians cited in the last note, and all other writers, have derived their account of Balthazar Gérard, his crime and punishment, is the official statement drawn up by order of the States-General, entitled, “Verhaal van de moord gedaen den persoonse van doorlichtenden fursten ende heeren Wilhelms Prince van Orangien,” etc., etc., Delft, År. 1584, of which a copy may be found in the Duncan collection in the Royal Library at the Hague. The basis of this account was the confession of Balthazar, written in the convent of Saint Agatha (or Prinzen Hof, the residence of Orange) immediately after his arrest, together with his answers to the interrogatories between the 10th and 14th of July. The confession has been recently published by M. Gachard (Acad. Roy. de Belg. t. xx N°. 9, Bulletins) from an old and probably contemporaneous MS. copy. A very curious pamphlet—a copy of which also may be found in the Duncan collection—should also be consulted, called “Historie Balthazara Geraert, alias Gersch,
seemed like to remain a rebel against the Catholic King, and to make every effort to disturb the repose of the Roman Catholic Apostolic religion."

When but twenty years of age, he had struck his dagger with all his might into a door, exclaiming, as he did so, "Would that the blow had been in the heart of Orange!" For this he was rebuked by a bystander, who told him it was not for him to kill princes, and that it was not desirable to destroy so good a captain as the Prince, who, after all, might one day reconcile himself with the King.1

As soon as the ban against Orange was published, Balthazar, more anxious than ever to execute his long-cherished design, left Dôle and came to Luxemburg. Here he learned that the deed had already been done by John Jaureguy. He received this intelligence at first with a sensation of relief, was glad to be excused from putting himself in danger,2 and believing the Prince dead, took service as clerk with one John Duprel, secretary to Count Mansfeld, governor of Luxemburg. Ere long, the ill success of Jaureguy's attempt becoming known, the "in-veterate determination" of Gérard aroused itself more fiercely than ever. He accordingly took models of Mansfeld's official seals in wax, in order that he might make use of them as an acceptable offering to the Orange party, whose confidence he meant to gain.

Various circumstances detained him, however. A sum of money was stolen, and he was forced to stay till it was found, for fear of being arrested as the thief. Then his cousin and employer fell sick, and Gérard was obliged to wait for his recovery. At last, in March 1584, "the weather, as he said, appearing to be fine," Balthazar left Luxembourg and came to Trévès.

While there, he confided his scheme to the regent of the Jesuit college—a "red-haired man" whose name has not been preserved.3 That dignitary expressed high approbation of the plan, gave Gérard his blessing, and promised him that, if his life should be sacrificed in achieving his purpose, he should be enrolled among the martyrs.4 Another Jesuit, however, in the same college, with whom he likewise communicated, held very different language, making great efforts to turn the young man from his design, on the ground of the inconveniences which might arise from the forging of Mansfeld's seals—adding, that neither he nor any of the Jesuits liked to meddle with such affairs, but advising that the whole matter should be laid before the Prince of Parma.5 It does not appear that this personage, "an excellent man and a learned," attempted to dissuade the young man from his project by arguments drawn from any supposed criminality in the assassination itself, or from any danger, temporal or eternal, to which the perpetrator might expose himself.

Not influenced, as it appears, except on one point, by the advice of this second ghostly confessor, Balthazar came to Tournay, and held council with a third—the celebrated Franciscan, Father Géry—by whom he was much comforted and strengthened in his determination.6 His next step was to lay the project before Parma, as the "excellent and learned" Jesuit at Trévès had advised. This he did by a letter, drawn up with much care, and which he evidently thought well of as not mentioned by the previously cited authors. The statement appears in the copy of the Confession published by M. Gachard: "— et s'efforça, le dit père de m'obtenir cette immense délibération, pour les dangers et inconveniens qu'il m'alléguait en pourrroit survenir, au préjudice de Dieu et du Roy, par la moyen des cachets volans ; disant, au reste, qu'il ne se mesloit pas volontiers de telz affaires, ny pareillement tous ceux de leur dicte compagnie."7

1 Confession de B. Gérard.—Bor, Meteren, Hoofd, Le Petit, ubi sup. et al.
2 "des quelles nouvelles je fus fort aise, tant pour estre (comme j'estimais) la justice faite, que pour avoir excuse de me mettre au danger."—Conf. de Gérard.
3 Verhaal van de Moordt, etc.—Compare Bor, ubi sup.
4 Ibid.—Compare Meteren, Le Petit, ubi sup.
5 This curious fact was distinguishably suppressed in the official account, "Verhaal van de Moordt," etc., and is consequently.
a composition. One copy of this letter he deposited with the guardian of the Franciscan convent at Tournay; the other he presented with his own hand to the Prince of Parma. 1 "The vassal," said he, "ought always to prefer justice and the will of the king to his own life." That being the case, he expressed his astonishment that no man had yet been found to execute the sentence against William of Nassau, "except the gentle Biscayan, since de
dfuncf." 2 To accomplish the task, Balthazar observed, very judiciously, that it was necessary to have access to the petröm of the Prince—wherein consisted the difficulty. Those who had that advantage, he continued, were therefore bound to extirpate the pest at once, without obliging his Majesty to send to Rome for a cavalier, because not one of them was willing to precipitate himself into the venomous gulf, which by its contagion infected and killed the souls and bodies of all poor abused subjects, exposed to its influence. Gérard avowed himself to have been so long goaded and stimulated by these considerations—so extremely nettled with displeasure and bitterness at seeing the obstinate wretch still escaping his just judgment—as to have formed the design of baiting a trap for the fox, hoping thus to gain access to him, and to take him unawares. 3 He added—without explaining the nature of the trap and the bait—that he deemed it his duty to lay the subject before the most serene Prince of Parma, protesting at the same time that he did not contemplate the exploit for the sake of the reward mentioned in the sentence, and that he preferred trusting in that regard to the immense liberality of his Majesty. 4

Parma had long been looking for a good man to murder Orange, 5 feeling—as Philip, Granvelle, and all former governors of the Netherlands had felt—that this was the only means of saving the royal authority in any part of the provinces. Many unsatisfactory assassins had presented themselves from time to time, and Alexander had paid money in hand to various individuals—Italians, Spaniards, Lorrainers, Scotchmen, Englishmen, who had generally spent the sums received without attempting the job. Others were supposed to be still engaged in the enterprise, and at that moment there were four persons—each unknown to the others, and of different nations—in the city of Delft, seeking to compass the death of William the Silent. 6

Shag-cared, military, hirsute ruffians—ex-capitains of free companies and such marauders—were daily offering their services; there was no lack of them, and they had done but little. How should Parma, seeing this obscure, under-sized, thin-bearded, run-away clerk before him, expect pit and energy from him? He thought him quite unfit for an enterprise of moment, and declared as much to his secret councillors and to the King. 7 He soon dismissed him, after receiving his letters, and it may be supposed that the bombastic style of that epistle


2 "Hermes le gentil Biscayan défunct."

3 "Estant de long temps durement piqué et stimulé par ces deux points et poignonné extrêmement de déplaisir et amertume—si finalement me suis avisé de donner une amorce à ce renard pour avoir accès chez-lui, afin de prendre au trébuchet en moments opportuns, et si promptement qu'il n'en puisse s'écarter."

4 "—et moins encore être vus si présomptueux que de préférer la liberalité immense de S. M., etc.

5 Y porque tal enemigo tuviese castigo, andava al Príncipe de Parma buscando
would not efface the unfavourable impression produced by Balthazar’s exterior. The representations of Haultepenne and others induced him so far to modify his views as to send his confidential councillor, d’Assonleville, to the stranger, in order to learn the details of the scheme. Assonleville had accordingly an interview with Gérard, in which he requested the young man to draw up a statement of his plan in writing, and this was done upon the 11th of April 1584.

In this letter Gérard explained his plan of introducing himself to the notice of Orange, at Delft, as the son of an executed Calvinist; as himself warmly, though secretly, devoted to the Reformed faith, and as desirous, therefore, of placing himself in the Prince’s service, in order to avoid the insolence of the Papists. Having gained the confidence of those about the Prince, he would suggest to them the great use which might be made of Mansfeld’s signet in forging passports for spies and other persons whom it might be desirable to send into the territory of the royalists. "With these or similar feints and frivolities," continued Gérard, "he should soon obtain access to the person of the said Nassau," repeating his protestation that nothing had moved him to his enterprise "save the good zeal which he bore to the faith and true religion guarded by the Holy Mother Church Catholic, Apostolic, and Roman, and to the service of his Majesty." He begged pardon for having purloined the impressions of the seals—a turpitude which he would never have committed, but would sooner have suffered a thousand deaths, except for the great end in view. He particularly wished forgiveness for that crime before going to his task, "in order that he might confess, and receive the holy communion at the coming Easter, without scruples of conscience." He likewise begged the Prince of Parma to obtain for him absolution from his Holiness for this crime of pilfering—"the more so as he was about to keep company for some time with heretics and atheists, and in some sort to conform himself to their customs." 2

From the general tone of the letters of Gérard, he might be set down at once as a simple, religious fanatic, who felt sure that, in executing the command of Philip publicly issued to all the murderers of Europe, he was meriting well of God and his King. There is no doubt that he was an exalted enthusiast, but not purely an enthusiast. The man's character offers more than one point of interest, as a psychological phenomenon. He had convinced himself that the work which he had in hand was eminently meritorious, and he was utterly without fear of consequences. He was, however, by no means so disinterested as he chose to represent himself in letters which, as he instinctively felt, were to be of perennial interest. On the contrary, in his interviews with Assonleville, he urged that he was a poor fellow, and that he, had undertaken this enterprise in order to acquire property—to make himself rich—and that he depended upon the Prince of Parma’s influence in obtaining the reward promised by the Ban to the individual who should put Orange to death.

This second letter decided Parma so far that he authorised Assonleville to encourage the young man in his attempt, and to promise that the reward should be given to him in case of success, and to his heirs in the event of his death. 4 Assonleville, in the second interview, accordingly made known these assurances in the strongest manner to Gérard, warning him, at the same time, on no account, if arrested,

---

1 Renom de France MS., loc. cit., who wrote his history from the papers of Counsellor d’Assonleville.
2 The letter is contained in the MS, before cited. "Particularités touchant B. Gérard."
3 "Estant pourve compagnon," etc.—Verbaal van de Moords, etc. Le Petit, Bor, loc. cit.
4 "— qu’on procurevoit en sa faveur ou de ses proches héritiers les mercedes et récompenses promises par l’édit qui fut pour la consolation qu’il récolt, plus propre pour le retirer et divertir que pour l’encourager à une emprise si hasardeuse."—Renom de France MS., loc. cit.
to inculcate the Prince of Parma.

The councilor, while thus exhorting
the stranger, according to Alexander's
commands, confined himself, however,
to generalities, refusing even to ad-
vance fifty crowns, which Balthazars
had begged from the Governor-Gene-
ral in order to provide for the neces-
sary expenses of his project. 1 Parma
had made similar advances too often
to men who had promised to assassi-
nate the Prince and had then done
little, and he was resolute in his re-
signing to this new adventurer, of
whom he expected absolutely nothing.
Gérard, notwithstanding this rebuff,
was not disheartened. "I will provide
myself out of my own purse," said he
to Assonleville, "and within six weeks
you will hear of me." "Go forth, my
son," said Assonleville, paternally, upon
this spirited reply, "and if you succeed
in your enterprise, the King will ful-
fil all his promises, and you will gain an
immortal name beside." 2

The "invetrate deliberation," thus
thoroughly matured, Gérard now pro-
ceeded to carry into effect. He came
to Delft, obtained a hearing of Villers,
the clergyman and intimate friend of
Orange, showed him the Mansfeld
seals, and was, somewhat against his
will, sent to France, to exhibit them
to Marechal Biron, who, it was thought,
was soon to be appointed governor of
Cambray. Through Orange's recom-
modation, the Burgundian was re-
ceived into the suite of Noel de Caron,
Seigneur de Schonval, then setting
forth on a special mission to the Duke
of Anjou. 3 While in France, Gérard
could rest neither by day nor night, so
tormented was he by the desire of ac-
complishing his project, 4 and at length
he obtained permission, upon the death
of the Duke, to carry this important
intelligence to the Prince of Orange.
The despatches having been entrusted
him, he travelled post-haste to Delft,
and, to his astonishment, the letters
had hardly been delivered before he
was summoned in person to the cham-
ber of the prince. Here was an oppor-
tunity such as he had never dared to
hope for. The arch-enemy to the
Church and to the human race, whose
death would confer upon his destroyer
wealth and nobility in this world, be-
sides a crown of glory in the next, lay
unarmed, alone, in bed, before the
man who had thirsted seven long years
for his blood.

Balthazar could scarcely control his
emotions sufficiently to answer the
questions which the Prince addressed
to him concerning the death of Anjou, 5
but Orange, deeply engaged with the
despaches, and with the reflections
which their deeply-important contents
suggested, did not observe the counte-
nance of the humble Calvinist exile,
who had been recently recommended
to his patronage by Villers. Gérard
had, moreover, made no preparation
for an interview so entirely unexpected,
had come unarmed, and had formed no
plan for escape. He was obliged to
forego his prey when most within his
reach, and after communicating all the
information which the Prince required,
he was dismissed from the chamber.

It was Sunday morning, and the
bells were tolling for church. Upon
leaving the house he loitered about
the courtyard, furtively examining the
premises, so that a sergeant of hal-
berdiers asked him why he was waiting
there. Balthazar meekly replied that
he was desirous of attending Divine
worship in the church opposite, but
added, pointing to his shabby and
travel-stained attire, that, without at
least a new pair of shoes and stockings,
he was unfit to join the congregation.
Insignificant as ever, the small, pious,
dusty stranger excited no suspicion in
the mind of the good-natured sergeant.
He forthwith spoke of the wants of
Gérard to an officer, by whom they
were communicated to Orange him-

1 "— et sienet d'Assonleville traité la
dessus avec le Prince de Parma fut conclu-
que on n'avancone rit rien à Balthazar Gérard,
nor pas les 50 escus auxquels il se restra-
dort."
2 Ibid. Verhaal van de Moordt. Bor, Me-
3 Confession de Gérard. Verhaal van de
Moordt. Bor, Meteren, Le Petit, Hoofd,
ubi sup.
4 Verhaal van de Moordt.
5 Verhaal, etc. Bor, Meteren, Le Petit.
self, and the Prince instantly ordered a sum of money to be given him. Thence Balchazar obtained from William's charity what Parma's thrift had denied—a fund for carrying out his purpose.

Next morning, with the money thus procured he purchased a pair of pistols, or small carabines, from a soldier, chaffering long about the price because the vender could not supply a particular kind of chopped bullets or slugs which he desired. Before the sunset of the following day that soldier had stabbed himself to the heart, and died despairing, on hearing for what purpose the pistols had been bought.

On Tuesday, the 10th of July 1584, at about half-past twelve, the Prince, with his wife on his arm, and followed by the ladies and gentlemen of his family, was going to the dining-room. William the Silent was dressed upon that day, according to his usual custom, in very plain fashion. He wore a wide-leaved, loosely-slapped hat of dark felt, with a silken cord round the crown—such as had been worn by the Beggars in the early days of the revolt. A high ruff encircled his neck, from which also depended one of the Beggar's medals, with the motto, "Fideles au roya jusqu'à la besace," while a loose surcoat of grey frieze cloth, over a tawny leather doublet, with wide, slashed underclothes completed his costume. Gérard presented himself at the doorway, and demanded a passport. The Princess, struck with the pale and agitated countenance of the man, anxiously questioned her husband concerning the stranger. The Prince carelessly observed that "it was merely a person who came for a passport," ordering, at the same time, a secretary forthwith to prepare one. The Prince, still not relieved, observed in an under-tone that "she had never seen so villanous a countenance." Orange, however, not at all impressed with the appearance of Gérard, conducted himself at table with his usual cheerfulness, conversing much with the burgomaster of Leeuwarden, the only guest present at the family dinner, concerning the political and religious aspects of Friesland. At two o'clock the company rose from table. The Prince led the way, intending to pass to his private apartments above. The dining-room, which was on the ground floor, opened into a little square vestibule, which communicated, through an arched passage-way, with the main entrance into the court-yard. This vestibule was also directly at the foot of the wooden staircase leading to the next floor, and was scarcely six feet in width. Upon its left side, as one approached the stairway, was an obscure arch, sunk deep in the wall, and completely in the shadow of the door. Behind this arch a portal opened to the narrow lane at the side of the house. The stairs themselves were completely lighted by a large window, half way up the flight. The Prince came from the dining-room, and began leisurely to ascend. He had only reached the second stair, when a man emerged from the sunken arch, and, standing within a foot or two of him, discharged a pistol full at his heart. Three balls entered his body, one of which, passing quite through him, struck with violence against the wall beyond. The Prince exclaimed in French, as he felt the wound, "O my God, have mercy upon my soul! O my God, have mercy upon this poor people!"

These were the last words he ever

---

1 Verhaal van de Moordt. Bor, Meteren, Hoofd, loc. cit.
2 "Smop't hooren van 't grouwweem gehuil, 't geen er de Booswigt va goemacht hiet, uit wanhoop, met twee of drie paenrard steekom om 't leven bragt."—Van Wyn op Wagenaer, vii. 116.
3 The whole dress worn by the Prince on this tragic occasion is still to be seen at the Hague in the National Museum.
4 Bor, Meteren, Hoofd, ubi sup.
5 Historie Balth. Gerwerts alias Sernich, etc.
6 The house (now called the Prinsenhof, but used as a barracks) still presents nearly the same appearance as it did in 1584.
7 Korte Verhaal van den Moordt, etc.—Bor, Meteren, Hoofd. Doubts have been expressed by some writers as to the probability of the Prince, thus mortally wounded, having been able to speak so many words distinctly. (See Wagenaer, Vat. Hist., vii. 533, and note.) There can, however, be no doubt on the subject. The circular letter of the States-general to the respective pr-
spoke, save that when his sister, Catherine of Schwartzburg, immediately afterwards asked him if he commended his soul to Jesus Christ, he faintly answered, "Yes." His master of the horse, Jacob van Maldere, had caught him in his arms as the fatal shot was fired. The Prince was then placed on the stairs for an instant, when he immediately began to swoon. He was afterwards laid upon a couch in the dining-room, where in a few minutes, he breathed his last in the arms of his wife and sister.  

The murderer succeeded in making his escape through the side door, and sped swiftly up the narrow lane. He had almost reached the ramparts, from which he intended to spring into the moat, when he stumbled over a heap of rubbish. As he rose, he was seized by several pages and halberdiers, who had pursued him from the house. He had dropped his pistols upon the spot where he had committed the crime, and upon his person were found a couple of bladders, provided with a piece of pipe with which he had intended to assist himself across the moat, beyond which a horse was waiting for him. He made no effort to deny his identity, but boldly avowed himself and his deed. He was brought back to the house, where immediately underwent a preliminary examination before the city magistrates. He was afterwards subjected to excruciating tortures; for the fury against the wretch who had destroyed the

Father of the country was uncontrollable, and William the Silent was no longer alive to intercede—as he had often done before—in behalf of those who assailed his life.

The organisation of Balthazar Gérard would furnish a subject of profound study, both for the physiologist and the metaphysician. Neither wholly a fanatic, nor entirely a ruffian, he combined the most dangerous elements of both characters. In his puny body and mean exterior were enclosed considerable mental powers and accomplishments, a daring ambition, and a courage almost superhuman. Yet those qualities led him only to form upon the threshold of life a deliberate determination to achieve greatness by the assassin's trade. The rewards held out by the Ban, combing with his religious bigotry and his passion for distinction, fixed all his energies with patient concentration upon the one great purpose for which he seemed to have been born, and after seven years' preparation, he had at last fulfilled his design.

Upon being interrogated by the magistrates, he manifested neither despair nor contrition, but rather a quiet exultation. "Like David," he said, "he had slain Goliath of Gath." 2 When falsely informed that his victim was not dead, he shewed no credulity or disappointment. He had discharged three poisoned balls into the Prince's stomach, and he knew that death must have already ensued. 3 He ex-


doed in the Gulf of Loll, July 12, 1584, has this passage: "Die corts daervan tonser grooten leedwesen ende verdrietse overliden, seergende deselve ouf saen hebende, Mon Dieu, ayes pitié de mon âme; Mon Dieu, ayes pitié de ce pouvre peuple!" (Brieven van de Gen-Staten, etc., nompde de dood van heer Pieter van Orangien. Ordinaries Dep. Boek, MS., 1584, f. 162, Hague Archives.) This is conclusive evidence. See also a letter from young Maurice of Nassau to the magistracy of Ghent, relating the death and last words of his father in similar terms, but in the Flemish tongue. "Maer alzoo de leeste woorden van zijne Excewaerden myn Godt! myn Godt! ontfermt U. mynder siele, myn Godt! ontfermt uwer ghemeente." (De Jonge Ooigt. Stukken, 100-105.—Compare Brev. der Resolut. Holl., July 10, 1584. — C. de Stuck, ii. 60. — The Graaf der Cornelius Aertena, writing to

1 Bor, Meteren, Hoefd, ubi sup. Historie B. Geraets alias Serach.
2 Harael Annaels, iii. 283.
3 "— j'ai un jourd'hui tiré et débândé celle portant les trois balles contre l'estomac dudit Prince d'Orange," etc.—Confession de Gérard. "— en heeft hem also met een pistolet onder zijne mantel met drijf fijnigije ende gekoetende lootten aan een gehecht geladen zijnde aan die treppen van der eutplaatsen verwacht," etc.—Historie B. Geraets alias Serach.

VOL. II.
pressed regret, however, that the re-
sistance of the halberdiers had pre-
vented him from using his second
pistol, and avowed that if he were a
thousand leagues away he would return
in order to do the deed again, if pos-
sible. He deliberately wrote a detailed
confession of his crime, and of the
motives and manner of its commission,
taking care, however, not to implicate
Parma in the transaction. After sus-
taining day after day the most horrible
tortures, he subsequently related his
interviews with Assonville and with
the president of the Jesuit college at
Trèves, adding that he had been influ-
enced in his work by the assurance of
obtaining the rewards promised by the
Ban.1 During the intervals of repose
from the rack he conversed with ease,
and even eloquence, answering all ques-
tions addressed to him with apparent
sincerity. His constancy in suffering so
astonished his judges that they believed
him supported by witchcraft. “Ecce
homo!” he exclaimed from time to
time, with insane blasphemy, as he
raised his blood-streaming head from
the bench. In order to destroy the
charm which seemed to render him
insensible to pain, they sent for the
shirt of a hospital patient, supposed to
be a sorcerer. When clothed in this
garment, however, Balthazar was none
the less superior to the arts of the tor-
mentors, enduring all their inflictions,
according to an eyewitness, “without
once exclaiming. Ah me!” and avow-
ing that he would repeat his enterprise,
if possible, were he to die a thousand
deaths in consequence. Some of those
present refused to believe that he was
a man at all. Others asked him how
long since he had sold himself to the
Devil? to which he replied, mildly,
that he had no acquaintance whatever

1 Verhaal van de Moord. Bor, Meteren.
2 Verhaal van de Moord, Bor, Meteren.

--- Extrait d'une Relation faite à
cœurs du Magistrat de Bruxelles, par Cor-
neille Aertsens lors leur Grenier, 11 Juillet
1584. Bib. de Bourg. MS., N°. 17,386, His-
torie B. Gersaert alias Serach.
3 Extrait d'une Relation de Cornelle Aert-
sens (14 Juillet 1584). He was present at
all the tortures and at the execution, and
drew up his report the same day. Manu-
script before cited.—Compte Motoren, Bor,
Le Petit, Historie B. Gersaert alias Serach.
the man who should murder Orange was paid to the heirs of Gérard. Parma informed his sovereign that the "poor man" had been executed, but that his father and mother were still living, to whom he recommended the payment of that "mercy" which "the laudable and generous deed had so well deserved." This was accordingly done, and the excellent parents, ennobled and enriched by the crime of their son, received instead of the twenty-five thousand crowns promised in the Ban, the three seignories of Liévrémen, Hostal, and Dampmartin, in the Franche Comté, and took their place at once among the landed aristocracy. Thus the bounty of the Prince had furnished the weapon by which his life was destroyed, and his estates supplied the fund out of which the assassin's family received the price of blood. At a later day, when the unfortunate eldest son of Orange returned from Spain after twenty-seven years' absence, a changeling and a Spaniard, the restoration of those very estates was offered to him by Philip the Second, provided he would continue to pay a fixed proportion of their rents to the family of his father's murderer. The education which Philip William had received, under the King's auspices, had however, not entirely destroyed all his human feelings, and he rejected the proposal with acrim. The estates remained with the Gérard family, and the patents of nobility which they had received were used to justify their exemption from certain taxes, until the union of Franche Comté with France, when a French governor tore the documents in pieces and trampled them under foot.

William of Orange, at the period of his death, was aged fifty-one years and sixteen days. He left twelve children. By his first wife, Anne of Egmont, he had one son, Philip, and one daughter, Mary, afterwards married to Count Hohenlo. By his second wife, Anna of Saxony, he had one son, the celebrated Mauritius of Nassau, and two daughters, Anna, married afterwards to her cousin, Count William Louis, and Emilie, who espoused the Pretender of Portugal, Prince Emanuel. By Charlotte of Bourbon, his third wife, he had six daughters; and by his fourth, Louisa de Coligny, one son, Frederic William, afterwards stadholder of the Republic in her most palmy days. The Prince was entombed on the 3d of August, at Delft, amid the tears of a whole nation. Never was a more extensive, unaffected, and legitimate sorrow felt at the death of any human being.

The life and labours of Orange had established the emancipated commonwealth upon a secure foundation, but his death rendered the union of all the Netherlands into one republic hopeless. The efforts of the Malcontent nobles, the religious discord, the consummate ability, both political and military, of Parma, all combined with the lamentable loss of William the Silent to separate for ever the southern and Catholic provinces from the northern confederacy. So long as the Prince remained alive, he was the Father of the whole country; the Netherlands—saving only the two Walloon provinces—constituting a whole. Notwithstanding the spirit of faction and the blight of the long civil war, there was at least one country, or the hope of a country, one strong heart, one guiding head, for the patriotic party throughout the land. Philip and Granvelle were right in their estimate of the advantage to be derived from the Prince's death; in
believing that an assassin’s hand could achieve more than all the wiles which Spanish or Italian statesmanship could teach, or all the armies which Spain or Italy could muster. The pistol of the insignificant Gérard destroyed the possibility of a united Netherland state, while during the life of William there was union in the policy, unity in the history of the country.

In the following year, Antwerp, hitherto the centre around which all the national interests and historical events group themselves, fell before the scientific efforts of Parma. The city which had so long been the freest, as well as the most opulent capital in Europe, sank for ever to the position of a provincial town. With its fall, combined with other circumstances, which it is not necessary to narrate in anticipation, the final separation of the Netherlands was completed. On the other hand, at the death of Orange, whose formal inauguration as sovereign Count had not yet taken place, the states of Holland and Zealand resumed the sovereignty. The commonwealth which William had liberated for ever from Spanish tyranny continued to exist as a great and flourishing republic during more than two centuries, under the successive stadholders of his sons and descendants.

His life gave existence to an independent country—his death defined its limits. Had he lived twenty years longer, it is probable that the seven provinces would have been seventeen; and that the Spanish title would have been for ever extinguished both in Nether Germany and Celtic Gaul. Although there was to be the length of two human generations more of warfare ere Spain acknowledged the new government, yet before the termination of that period the United States had become the first naval power and one of the most considerable commonwealths in the world; while the civil and religious liberty, the political independence of the land, together with the total expulsion of the ancient foreign tyranny from the soil, had been achieved ere the eyes of William were closed. The republic existed, in fact, from the moment of the abjuration in 1581.

The most important features of the polity which thus assumed a prominent organisation have been already indicated. There was no revolution, no radical change. The ancient rugged tree of Netherland liberty—with its moss-grown trunk, gnarled branches, and deep-reaching roots—which had been slowly growing for ages, was still full of sap, and was to deposit for centuries longer its annual rings of consolidated and concentric strength. Though lopped of some luxuriant boughs, it was sound at the core, and destined for a still larger life than even in the healthiest moments of its medieval existence.

The history of the rise of the Netherland Republic has been at the same time the biography of William the Silent. This, while it gives unity to the narrative, renders an elaborate description of his character superfluous. That life was a noble Christian epic; inspired with one great purpose from its commencement to its close; the stream flowing ever from one fountain with expanding fulness, but retaining all its original purity. A few general observations are all which are necessary by way of conclusion.

In person, Orange was above the middle height, perfectly well made and sinewy, but rather spare than stout. His eyes, hair, beard, and complexion were brown. His head was small, symmetrically-shaped, combining the alertness and compactness characteristic of the soldier, with the capacious brow furrowed prematurely with the horizontal lines of thought, denoting the statesman and the sage. His physical appearance was, therefore, in harmony with his organisation, which was of antique model. Of his moral qualities, the most prominent was his piety. He was more than anything else a religious man. From his trust in God, he ever derived support and consolation in the darkest hours. Implicitly relying upon Almighty wisdom and goodness, he looked danger in the face with a constant smile, and endured incessant labours and trials with
a serenity which seemed more than human. While, however, his soul was full of piety, it was tolerant of error. Sincerely and deliberately himself a convert to the Reformed Church, he was ready to extend freedom of worship to Catholics on the one hand, and to Anabaptists on the other; for no man ever felt more keenly than he, that the Reformer who becomes in his turn a bigot is doubly odious.

His firmness was allied to his piety. His constancy in bearing the whole weight of struggle, as unequal as men have ever undertaken, was the theme of admiration even to his enemies. The rock in the ocean, "tranquil amid raging billows," was the favourite emblem by which his friends expressed their sense of his firmness. From the time when, as a hostage in France, he first discovered the plan of Philip to plant the Inquisition in the Netherlands, up to the last moment of his life, he never faltered in his determination to resist that iniquitous scheme. This resistance was the labour of his life. To exclude the Inquisition, to maintain the ancient liberties of his country, was the task which he appointed to himself when a youth of thirty-two. Never speaking a word concerning a heavenly mission, never deluding himself or others with the usual phraseology of enthusiasts, he accomplished the task, through danger, amid toils, and with sacrifices such as few men have ever been able to make on their country's altar;—for the disinterested benevolence of the man was as prominent as his fortitude. A prince of high rank and with royal revenues, he stripped himself of station, wealth, almost at times of the common necessities of life, and became, in his country's cause, nearly a beggar as well as an outlaw. Nor was he forced into his career by an accidental impulse from which there was no recovery. Retreat was ever open to him. Not only pardon but advancement was urged upon him again and again. Officially and privately, directly and circuitously, his confiscated estates, together with indefinite and boundless favours in addition, were offered to him on every great occasion. On the arrival of Don John, at the Breda negotiations, at the Cologne conferences, we have seen how calmly these offers were waved aside, as if their rejection was so simple that it hardly required many words for its signification; yet he had mortgaged his estates so deeply that his heirs hesitated at accepting their inheritance, for fear it should involve them in debt. Ten years after his death, the account between his executors and his brother John amounted to one million four hundred thousand florins; due to the Count, secured by various pledges of real and personal property, and it was finally settled upon this basis. He was besides largely indebted to every one of his powerful relatives, so that the payment of the incumbrances upon his estate very nearly justified the fears of his children. While on the one hand, therefore, he poured out these enormous sums like water, and firmly refused a hearing to the tempting offers of the royal government, upon the other hand he proved the disinterested nature of his services by declining, year after year, the sovereignty over the provinces; and by only accepting, in the last days of his life, when refusal had become almost impossible, the limited, constitutional supremacy over that portion of them which now makes the realm of his descendants. He lived and died, not for himself, but for his country: "God pity this poor people!" were his dying words.

His intellectual faculties were various and of the highest order. He had the exact, practical, and combining qualities which make the great commander; and his friends claimed that, in military genius, he was second to no captain in Europe. This was, no doubt, an exaggeration of partial attachment, but it is certain that the Emperor Charles had an exalted opinion of his capacity for the field. His fortification of Philipperville and Charlemont, in the face of the enemy—his

---

1 Ev. Heyd, iii. 59.
2 Bor, xviii. 438.
passage of the Nivose a Alva’s siege—

The historian narrates with well-measured campa
gage against that nation—sometimes
years of relief, protected and success-
fully directed, at an immense cost of
life. The town of Leyden—will
always remain monuments of his pro-
duction of military skill.

Of the master’s great virtues—consti-
tuency is characterized by thirty
years of service, at a service of
a perfect victory. He possessed a fine com-
mand over the very forces of the
army. In defence of the most
powerful empire existing. He was
therefore a conqueror in the sense
of conquering liberty and

The victory was long, and the field
of the struggle, but the victory was in
the dead men, not in the living mon-
y. It is to be remembered, too, that it
always went with interior
instruments. His troops were usually
victories, who were but too apt to
mount upon the eye of battle, while
he was opposed by the most formid-
able enemies of Europe, com-
mmanded successively by the first captains
of the age. That, with no lieutenant of
eminent value or experience, save
only his brother Louis, and with none
at all after that chieftain’s death,
William of Orange should succeed in
baffling the efforts of Alva, Bossuena,
Don John of Austria, and Alexander
Farnese—who whose names are among
the most brilliant in the military annals
of the world—is in itself sufficient
evidence of his warlike ability. At
the period of his death he had reduced
the number of obedient provinces to
two; only Artois and Hainault ac-
knowledging Philip, while the other
fifteen were in open revolt, the greater
part having solemnly forsaken their
sovereign.

The supremacy of his political
genius was entirely beyond question.
He was the first statesman of the age.
The quickness of his perceptions was
only equalled by the caution which
enabled him to mature the results of
his observations. His knowledge of

This power of dealing with his
fellow-men he manifested in the vari-
ous ways in which it has been usually
exhibited by statesmen. He possessed
a ready eloquence—sometimes impos-
sioned, oftener argumentative, always
rational. His influence over his audi-
ence was unexampled in the annals of that country or age; yet he never condescended to flatter the people. He never followed the nation, but always led her in the path of duty and of honour, and was much more prone to rebuke the vices than to pander to the passions of his hearers. He never failed to administer ample chastisement to parsimony, to jealousy, to insubordination, to intolerance, to infidelity, wherever it was due, nor feared to confront the states or the people in their most angry hours, and to tell them the truth to their faces. This commanding position he alone could stand upon, for his countrymen knew the generosity which had sacrificed his all for them, the self-denial which had eluded rather than sought political advancement, whether from king or people, and the untiring devotion which had consecrated a whole life to toil and danger in the cause of their emancipation. While, therefore, he was ever ready to rebuke, and always too honest to flatter, he at the same time possessed the eloquence which could convince or persuade. He knew how to reach both the mind and the heart of his hearers. His orations, whether extemporaneous or prepared—his written messages to the states-general, to the provincial authorities, to the municipal bodies—his private correspondence with men of all ranks, from emperors and kings down to secretaries, and even children—all shew an easy flow of language, a fulness of thought, a power of expression rare in that age, a fund of historical allusion, a considerable power of imagination, a warmth of sentiment, a breadth of view, a directness of purpose—a range of qualities, in short, which would in themselves have stamped him as one of the masterminds of his century, had there been no other monument to his memory than the remains of his spoken or written eloquence. The bulk of his performances in this department was prodigious. Not even Philip was more industrious in the cabinet. Not even Granvelle held a more facile pen. He wrote and spoke equally well in French, German, or Flemish; and he possessed, besides, Spanish, Italian, Latin. The weight of his correspondence alone would have almost sufficed for the common industry of a lifetime, and although many volumes of his speeches and letters have been published, there remain in the various archives of the Netherlands and Germany many documents from his hand which will probably never see the light. If the capacity for unremitting intellectual labour in an honourable cause be the measure of human greatness, few minds could be compared to the "large composition" of this man. The efforts made to destroy the Netherlands by the most laborious and painstaking of tyrants were counteracted by the industry of the most indefatigable of patriots.

Thus his eloquence, oral or written, gave him almost boundless power over his countrymen. He possessed, also, a rare perception of human character, together with an iron memory which never lost a face, a place, or an event, once seen or known. He read the minds, even the faces of men, like printed books. No man could overreach him, excepting only those to whom he gave his heart. He might be mistaken where he had confided, never where he had been distrustful or indifferent. He was deceived by Renneberg, by his brother-in-law Van den Berg, by the Duke of Anjou. Had it been possible for his brother Louis or his brother John to have proved false, he might have been deceived by them. He was never outwitted by Philip, or Granvelle, or Don John, or Alexander of Parma. Anna of Saxony was false to him, and entered into correspondence with the royal governors and with the King of Spain; Charlotte of Bourbon or Louisa de Coligny might have done the same had it been possible for their natures also to descend to such depths of guile.

As for the Aerschots, the Havré, the Chimays, he was never influenced either by their blandishments or their plots. He was willing to use them when their interest made them friendly,
of man. He alone can unweave the tangled skein of human motives, and detect the hidden springs of human action, but as far as can be judged by a careful observation of undisputed facts, and by a diligent collation of public and private documents, it would seem that no man—not even Washington—has ever been inspired by a purer patriotism. At any rate, the charge of ambition and self-seeking can only be answered by a reference to the whole picture which these volumes have attempted to portray. The words, the deeds of the man are there. As much as possible, his inmost soul is revealed in his confidential letters, and he who looks in a right spirit will hardly fail to find what he desires.

Whether originally of a timid temperament or not, he was certainly possessed of perfect courage at last. In siege and battle—in the deadly air of pestilential cities—in the long exhaustion of mind and body which comes from unduly protracted labour and anxiety—amid the countless conspiracies of assassins—he was daily exposed to death in every shape. Within two years, five different attempts against his life had been discovered. Rank and fortune were offered to any malefactor who would compass the murder. He had already been shot through the head, and almost mortally wounded. Under such circumstances even a brave man might have seen a pitfall at every step, a dagger in every hand, and poison in every cup. On the contrary, he was ever cheerful, and hardly took more precaution than usual. "God in His mercy," said he, with unaffected simplicity, "will maintain my innocence and my honour during my life and in future ages. As to my fortune and my life, I have dedicated both, long since, to His service. He will do therewith what pleases Him for His glory and my salvation." 1 Thus his suspicions were not even excited by the ominous face of Gérard, when he first presented himself at the dining-room door. The Prince laugh’d off his wife’s prophetic apprehension at the sight of

1 Apologie, p. 138.
his murderer, and was as cheerful as usual to the last.

He possessed, too, that which to the heathen philosopher seemed the greatest good—the sound mind in the sound body. His physical frame was after death found so perfect that a long life might have been in store for him, notwithstanding all which he had endured. The desperate illness of 1574, the frightful gunshot wound inflicted by Jaureguy in 1582, had left no traces. The physicians pronounced that his body presented an aspect of perfect health.1

His temperament was cheerful. At table, the pleasures of which, in moderation, were his only relaxation, he was always animated and merry, and this jocoseness was partly natural, partly intentional. In the darkest hours of his country's trial, he affected a serenity which he was far from feeling, so that his apparent gaiety at momen-

tous epochs was even censured by dul-
lards, who could not comprehend its philosophy, nor applaud the flippancy of William the Silent.2

He went through life bearing the load of a people's sorrows upon his shoulders with a smiling face. Their name was the last word upon his lips, save the simple affirmative, with which the soldier who had been battling for the right all his lifetime, commended his soul in dying "to his great captain, Christ." The people were grateful and affectionate, for they trusted the character of their "Father William," and not all the clouds which calumny could collect ever dimmed to their eyes the radiance of that lofty mind to which they were accustomed, in their darkest calamities, to look for light. As long as he lived, he was the guiding-star of a whole brave nation, and when he died the little children cried in the streets.3

1 Reydanu, iii. 59.
2 "Imprimis inter cibos hilaris et velut omnium acceperat: quæ re et tetrices atque arrogantes nonnullas offendit, qui simulatam saepse et coactam eam laetitiam habu-
eriabant: cum illius aspectu cuncti reflexerantur, illius ex vultu spei quisque aut deperdationis causam sumeret."—Ev. Reyd., ubi sup.
3 Liberal expression in the official report made by the Greffier Cornelle Aertsens: "Dont par toute la ville j'on est en si grand duil tellement que les petits enfants en pleurent les rues."—Relation faite a ceux du Magistral de Bruxelles, 11 Juillet 1584, MS., Bibl. de Bourg., No. 17, 386.

THE END.
INDEX.

The Roman numerals refer to the volume; the figures to the pages.

ACCORD, signed between Margaret of Parma and confederated Netherland nobles, 1566, i. 296; of 26th of October 1576, between Bancho d’Avila and Count Oberstein, ii. 196.

Address, royal, issued by Alva after the fall of Harlem, ii. 73.

Adrian VI., Pope, denounces the crimes of the Church, i. 41.

Aerecho, Duke of, his birth and character, i. 53; quarrels with Egmont, and refuses to join league against uranium, 192; appointed Governor of the citadel of Antwerp, after its evacuation by Spanish troops, ii. 228; selfishness of his character and motives, ii.; is distrusted by all parties, ii.; oath of allegiance administered to him by Escovedo, ii.; his falsehood, both to Don John and Prince of Orange, ii. 248; informs Don John that Prince of Orange is meditating a forcible seizure of his person, ii.; gives Orange private information concerning the government, and sends him intercepted letters from his enemies, 249; deserts Don John, and makes up to Orange again, after failure of the former’s plan against Antwerp citadel, 257; head of the cabal to bring him to Antwerp to receive him as General of Austria to Nether- lands, 251; discontent of people with his appointment as Governor of Flanders, ii.; his entry into Ghent as Governor of Flanders, ii.; ceremonies entertained of him by Reformed party there, ii.; capitulates to insurgents of Ghent, 283; is taken prisoner by them, ii.

Alva, Don Francisco, forges letter from, to Margaret of Parma, i. 301; report to Philip on state of Netherlands and conduct of Alva, ii. 15.

Aldegonde, St. Philip de Marnix, lord of, said to be the author of the compromise, i. 242; his character and attainments, 244; address to congress of Dort, in behalf of Prince of Orange, ii. 82; despatched to Harlem by Prince of Orange, to make a thorough change in body of magistracy, 27; his life saved by capture of Spanish Admiral Bosca, 90; is released from prison, and despatched on secret mission to Orange and the estates, 137; report of estates in answer to his propositions, 158; is sent as chief of a mission to Queen Elizabeth of England, to offer to her the sovereignty of Holland and Zealand, 158; leaves England without having effected his purpose, 159; lays before estates measure result of his mission, 160; his despair at religious toler- ance of Prince of Orange, 241.

Alençon, Duke of, and Anjou, intrigues of Catholic Netherland nobles with, ii. 306; his character and career, 306; relations with Prince of Orange, 310; despatches envoy to states-general of Netherland and to Orange, to offer assistance after battle of Gemblours, 311; engagements entered into between him and states-general of Netherland, 312; departure from Netherlands, 324; exchange of courtesy with estates, 325; policy of electing him for sovereign of Netherland, 402; limitations to be put to his power, 404; arrives in Netherlands in 1631, at the head of five thousand troops, 405; departs for England, ii.; special mission from estates proceeds to England to make arrangements for his formal installation as sovereign of Netherland, 406; returns to Netherlands, accompanied by a number of English gentlemen, 407; is received at Flushing by Orange and deputation from states-general, ii.; his personal appearance, ii.; his character and capacities, ii.; ceremony of his inauguration, 408; procession escorting him to Antwerp, ii.; receives reception of at Ghent, ii.; is formally accepted as Duke of Gueldres and Lord of Friesland, 422; scheme to poison him and Orange, ii.; ceremonies of his reception at Ghent interrupted by an attack on his troops by Parma, 423; first whisperings of treason against Orange and against the states, ii.; plot for seizing the most important cities by surprise, and making himself absolute master, ii.; failure of the plot at Bruges, 424; mendacious aspersions used to allay suspicions of his plot against Antwerp, 425; attempt upon the city, ii.; total failure, 427; indignation of French noblemen in his suite at his treachery, 428; causes of his defeat at Antwerp, ii.; effrontery evinced in subsequent communications with Orange and with magistracy of Antwerp, 429; declares attempt upon Antwerp to have been quite unexpected by him, 431; efforts at reconciliation, ii.; intrigues with agents of Parma, 433; provisional accord signed between
him and provinces, 26th and 28th March, 430; leaves Netherlands never to return, 389; enters into renewal negotiations 390; his usually ambiguous answer to Countess of Egmont, 385; increased hatred of him in consequence of execution of Egmont and Horn, 392; measures taken to avenge defeat of Aremberg, 393; routes Nassau near Grüningen, 394; defeats him again at Jenningen, 396; destroys Nassau's army near Selwart Abbey, 397; returns to Utrecht and beheads an old woman, 399; repairs to Brussels and recommences his persecutions against citizens, 406; his plans of campaign against William of Orange, 413; incidents of the campaign, 413; returns in triumph to Brussels after discomfiture of William of Orange, 418; causes monument to be erected to himself, 419; quarrel with Queen Elizabeth of England, 425; severe measures against English subjects, 445; continuation of atrocious religious persecutions, 449; signal marks of the Pope's approbation of his proceedings, 457; new scheme of taxation laid before provincial estates of Brussels, 459; atrocious and artful reconstructions against Philip's instructions, 460; sends assassins to England to attempt the life of the Queen, 10; his successor in Netherlands appointed, 11; protestations of love for Netherland, 12; interview with Alva at Brussels, 14; open revolt against his new tax, 15; his rage at rapid and successful revolt of various provinces and cities, 29; despatches his son to lay siege to Mons, 29; consents to abolish tax of tenth penny on condition of a yearly supply from estates, 90; congratulates Philip on sack of Mechlin, ordered by himself, 45; blasphemous account of atrocious proceedings against Naarden, 55; relations with Medina Celi, 73; attempts to reconcile the provinces to the allegiance of other cities after the fall of Harlem, 45; letters to Philip on the subject of Alkmaar, 75; suspicions against King of France, 79; his position in Netherlands in 1573, and relations with various individuals there, 90; surreptitious departure from Amsterdam, 91; final departure from Netherland, 92; number of persons executed in Netherlands during his government, 96; close of his career, 97; retrospective view of his great military talents, 94; his ignorance and want of skill as a financier, 94; his character as an administrator of civil and judicial affairs, 95; perverting advice on leaving Netherlands, 96; his inconceivable cruelty, 95; vindication of the view given of his character, 97, in note. Amnesties, proclaimed at Antwerp in 1570, 1, 434; exception is made in connection with, 436; published 1574, 122; effort produced by it, 445.
Index.

Amsterdam, its critical position during siege of Harlem, ii. 63; refuses to acknowledge the authority of Prince of Orange, 301; various schemes set on foot by estates of the provinces to gain the city, ï¿½; treaty of “Satisfaction” at length established, ï¿½; plot for placing city in the hands of Don John by aid of Swedish ships, 306; municipal revolution in, ï¿½; incidents of popular movement, 306.

Anabaptists, their excesses, i. 40; persecution of, 43.

Anastro, Gaspard d', a Spanish merchant of Antwerp, saved from bankruptcy by Philip II., on condition of assassinating Prince of Orange, ii. 414.

Antwerp, city of, its commercial greatness, i. 44; origin of its name and ecclesiotech, ï¿½; its great commercial houses, ï¿½; its civic institutions, ï¿½; state of schools, 46; gorgeous pageantts in honour of Philip II., 71; rejoicings at supposed birth of heir of Philip and Mary, 72; on occasion of truce of Vaucelles, 80; rejoicings at conclusion of peace of Cateau Cambresis, 106; popular outbreak at, on occasion of execution of Christopher Smith, 220; effects of republication of edicts and canons of Trent on prosperity of city, 287; enthusiastic reception of William of Orange in 1579, 288; tumults, ï¿½; in consequence of defeat of sectarian force at Ostrowall, 317; subm ites to receive a garrison, 392; building of citadel of, 361; description of citadel, ï¿½; magistracy of Antwerp solicits mercy for imprisoned citizens, 564; proclamation of amnesty at, in 1576, 434; seized by mutinous Spanish troops, ii. 117; engagements entered into by citizens to rid themselves of mutineers, 119; is again menaced by the Spanish mutineers, 185; its flourishing state in the midst of general desolation, ï¿½; measures of defence, 186; confused councils, 187; seal of citizens of all ranks in defence of city, 188; first cannonade from the citadel, ï¿½; executions of Champigny, ï¿½; the morning before the attack, 189; the attack, 190; incidents of the struggle, 191; destruction of the city, ï¿½; horrible massacre, 193; attempts made by the Duke of Anjou to extort gold from citizens, ï¿½; dreadful spectacle presented by the city after the massacre and pillage, 196; speculations of victors, ï¿½; statistics of the slain, 197; negotiations with German troops after seizure of citadel by De Bours, 266; flight of mercenaries, 266; abortive attempt made by Duke of Anjou to seize the city, 423; incidents of struggle between burghers and followers of Duke of Anjou, 426; defence of their conduct published by the authorities of the city, 434.

Antwerp, citadel of, plots and counterplots for obtaining possession of, i. 292; eventually gained for estates, ï¿½; razed to the ground on side towards city, 270; popular fury against statue of Alva, ï¿½.

Apology of Prince of Orange in reply to Ban of King of Spain, ii. 298.

Architecture of Netherlands, i. 273; destruction of architectural monuments by image-breakers, 274; cathedral of Antwerp, ï¿½.

Aremberg and Myggenhuyssen despatched with a Spanish force against Louis of Nassau, i. 379; meets Nassau near the monastery of the Holy Lion, 381; is defeated, 388; his death, ï¿½.

Aristocracy, character of, at commencement of Regency of Margaret of Parma, i. 129; views entertained by, with regard to the Church, 131.

Armenteros, Thomas de, despatched by Regent to Spain, i. 196; his character, ï¿½; his instructions, ï¿½; his first interview with Philip, 197; his cupidity and ambition, 217; his confidential intimacy with Regent, ï¿½.

Army, rate of payment in Netherlands, ii. 150.

Arras, intrigues at, to weaken the allegiance of Artois and other Walloon provinces to patriot cause, i. 559; municipal revolution affected by Gosson, 442; counter-revolution, 341.

Arsens, Pierre, president of Artois, memorialises Alva in favour of Egmont, i. 375.

Artois, estates of, of their address to Philip II. on his departure from Netherlands, i. 111.

Austria, Don John of, his romantic entry into Netherlands, ii. 201; his birth, 202; early education, 205; his moderation, 207; in consequence of defeat of sectarian force at Ostrowall, 317; subm ites to receive a garrison, 392; building of citadel of, 361; description of citadel, ï¿½; magistracy of Antwerp solicits mercy for imprisoned citizens, 564; proclamation of amnesty at, in 1576, 434; seized by mutinous Spanish troops, ii. 117; engagements entered into by citizens to rid themselves of mutineers, 119; is again menaced by the Spanish mutineers, 185; its flourishing state in the midst of general desolation, ï¿½; measures of defence, 186; confused councils, 187; seal of citizens of all ranks in defence of city, 188; first cannonade from the citadel, ï¿½; executions of Champigny, ï¿½; the morning before the attack, 189; the attack, 190; incidents of the struggle, 191; destruction of the city, ï¿½; horrible massacre, 193; attempts made by the Duke of Anjou to extort gold from citizens, ï¿½; dreadful spectacle presented by the city after the massacre and pillage, 196; speculations of victors, ï¿½; statistics of the slain, 197; negotiations with German troops after seizure of citadel by De Bours, 266; flight of mercenaries, 266; abortive attempt made by Duke of Anjou to seize the city, 423; incidents of struggle between burghers and followers of Duke of Anjou, 426; defence of their conduct published by the authorities of the city, 434.

Antwerp, citadel of, plots and counterplots for obtaining possession of, i. 292; eventually gained for estates, ï¿½; razed to the ground on side towards city, 270; popular fury against statue of Alva, ï¿½.

Apology of Prince of Orange in reply to Ban of King of Spain, ii. 298.

Architecture of Netherlands, i. 273; destruction of architectural monuments by image-breakers, 274; cathedral of Antwerp, ï¿½.

Aremberg and Myggenhuyssen despatched with a Spanish force against Louis of Nassau, i. 379; meets Nassau near the monastery of the Holy Lion, 381; is defeated, 388; his death, ï¿½.

Aristocracy, character of, at commencement of Regency of Margaret of Parma, i. 129; views entertained by, with regard to the Church, 131.

Armenteros, Thomas de, despatched by Regent to Spain, i. 196; his character, ï¿½; his instructions, ï¿½; his first interview with Philip, 197; his cupidity and ambition, 217; his confidential intimacy with Regent, ï¿½.

Army, rate of payment in Netherlands, ii. 150.

Arras, intrigues at, to weaken the allegiance of Artois and other Walloon provinces to patriot cause, i. 559; municipal revolution affected by Gosson, 442; counter-revolution, 341.

Arsens, Pierre, president of Artois, memorialises Alva in favour of Egmont, i. 375.
Index

letters to Peru on same subjects, 223; further communications to Philip on the same subjects, 223; makes new advances to Orange, 226; issues order commanding strict enforcement of Council of Trent, 247; his intrigues with German troops in Switzerland, 248; constant fears of capture or assassination, ib.; dies from Brussels to Mechlin, ib. is informed by Aerens that Prince of Orange is planning a violent seizure of his person, ib.; repairs to Namur to greet the Queen of Navarre, 251; chivalrous reception given to Queen of Navarre, 252; treacherous seizure of Castle of Namur, 253; pass for seizure of citadel of Antwerp, 254; reiterated complaints to estates of conspiracies against his life, 256; demands that soldiers and citizens throughout Brabant shall be disarmed, 257; and that a list of persons qualified to sit in general assembly shall be submitted to him for determination, ib.; requires that estates shall cease to hold communication with Prince of Orange if he does not fulfill Treaty of Gien, ib.; requests to be provided with a bodyguard, ib.; many of his letters to ib. is released by his demands, ib.; his secret practices discovered by interception of his letters, ib.; various complaints of intrigues of Orange, 261; result of his projects on Antwerp Castle, ib.; rage at failure of his plan on Antwerp citadel, 264; extraordinary demands addressed to him in estates of letter of 7th of August 1677, ib.; letter to Empress Dowager his sister, characterizing the Netherlands as a bad people, and the Prince of Orange as a perverse and heretic tyrant, 266; his courtiers begin to desert him, 267; letter to estates, dated 13th August 1677, expressive of his extreme desire for peace, ib.; reply of estates to this letter, intimating that his intercepted letters proved him unworthy of their confidence, ib.; arrangement with Ayamonte and Idaquex for return of Spanish troops to Flanders, 268; increasing bluntness of tone assumed by estates in their correspondence with him, 269; categorical conditions of reconciliation stipulated by estates, ib.; rejected justification of his own conduct in reply to estates, 270; requests a formal conference with estates, accompanied by an exchange of hostages, ib.; new and harder conditions imposed on him by estates after arrival of Prince of Orange in Brussels, 270; his extreme indignation at these proposals, ib.; leaves Namur for Luxembourg after having dispatched a final communication to estates, 276; intrigues with Duke of Guise, 279; declared by estates in general an enemy of the country, 287; letter to Emperor of Germany urging him to adopt the cause of Spanish Government in Netherlands, 288; threat uttered in interview with English envoy, Leyton, 295; collects an army at Luxembourg, ib.; change in his appearance, ib.; issues a proclamation in French, ib.; and Flemish, ib.; military advantages possessed by him, ib.; privileges conferred on him by the Pope, 286; seems taken by him after battle of燃气 данного, and atrocities committed, 286; severe reproaches to his enemies for unsuccessful efforts to reunite the King to a more decisive policy, ib.; issues manifesto dissolving estates, general and provincial, 295; renewed attempts to assassinate with eunuchs, 312; convention submitted to him by states-general, 313; is rejected by him as inept, 314; forced to inactivity in his fortified camp of Beausca, gives himself up to despondency, 318; melancholy letter to Andrew Doris, ib.; dies to Pedro Mendoza, ib.; dies to Philip II., ib.; feeling death approaching, appoints Alexander Farsen to be his successor, 319; his death supposed to be occasioned by poison, ib.; his funeral rites, 320; mode in which his body was transported throughout France to Spain, 321; presentation of the corpse to Philip, ib.; retrospective view of his character and capacities, ib.

Austria, Maximilian of, marries Mary of Burgundy, i. 28; his crafty policy, ib.; Governor of the Netherlands during minority of his children, 28; is taken prisoner by the citizens of Brussels, ib.; is accepted as Governor-General of Netherlands, 290; limitation of his power as such, ib.; articles forming basis on which he was accepted, ib.; ceremony of his inauguration, 291; summons meeting of estates at Antwerp to remonstrate against negotiations with Anjou, 296; departs from Netherlands, 401; insignificance of part played by him there, 402.

Antwerp, House of, ascension of, i. 29; obtains absolute dominion over Flanders and other provinces, 29.

Austria, Matthias, Archbishop of, invited to Brussels by Catholic nobles, ii. 277; escapes secretly from Vienna and repairs to Netherlands, 278; opposition of Queen of England to his nomination, 279; is received at Antwerp by Orange, ib.; is accepted as Governor-General of Netherlands, 290; limitation of his power as such, ib.; articles forming basis on which he was accepted, ib.; ceremony of his inauguration, 291; summons meeting of estates at Antwerp to remonstrate against negotiations with Anjou, 296; departs from Netherlands, 401; insignificance of part played by him there, 402.

Anto-de-fé on return of Philip II. to Spain, i. 114; description of ceremonial observed at, 106.

Avila, Don Sancho d', successful operations against Louis of Nassau at Maestricht, ii. 110; defeats Louis in battle of Moor, 111; opens communication with mutineers while holding the citadel of Antwerp, 177; recognised as chief of the mutiny, 185; gains over the leaders of the German forces in the city of Antwerp, 198.

Bakszewiel, confidential secretary of Egmont, his character and influence over his master, i. 231; his influence over Egmont, and excessive cruelty, 292; arrested the same day as his master, 347; is subjected to the torture to extract his secrets, 351; is executed by order of Alva, 406.

Ballads, popular, illustrative of Flemish people's view of Alva's proceedings, ii. 97, note.

Ben, against the Prince of Orange, issued by King of Spain, ii. 388.
Bandes d’ordonnance, standing army of Netherlands, i. 158.
Bardes, William, a warm partisan of Prince of Orange, effects a municipal revolution in Amsterdam, ii. 305.
BARTHOLOMEW, THE, massacre of, ii. 37; rejicdungen caused by, in Spanish camp before Mons, 29.
Bavaria, island of, i. 1.
Bavarian, characteristics of, i. 3; esteem in which they were held by Rome, 58; form an alliance with Rome, 7; help Germanicus to crush the liberties of their German kindred, 68; extinction of name, 10.
Bayenburg, is despatched, at the head of a considerable but irregular force, to relieve Harleum, ii. 67; his plans discovered by Spaniards, 69; is slain, and his troops utterly routed, 69.
Bavaria, Duke William of, established as Lord of Hainault, i. 21; is succeeded by his brother Albert, 22.
Beauvoir, Philip de Lamozy, Seigneur de, attacks and disperses Tholouse’s force at Ostrawell, i. 317.
Bede, request made to the estates in 1566, i. 82.
Baggura, the Wild, origin of the brotherhood, i. 365; cruelties perpetrated by them, 58; of the Sea, laws given to them by Prince of Orange, i. 3; of the Sea, assembled by Boisot, for the relief of Leyden, 125.
Bergh, Count Van den, brother-in-law of Orange, abandons his trust and flies the country, ii. 51; serious consequences to patriot cause, 52; delivers up the important town of Zutphen to Parma, 488; is arrested and imprisoned, 58; he and all his sons take service under Philip, 16.
Berghen, Marquis of, of his detestation of system of persecution, i. 175; refuses to sign letter of nobles to Philip, complaining of Granville, 193; his sickness and death at Madrid, 351; confiscation of his property, 58.
Berlaymont, Baron, his character, i. 58; member of State-Council appointed by Philip, 118; various opinions of his character, 58; attempts to conciliate both parties and discredit himself with both, 193; assumes the offices of member of the Blood Council, 356.
Berty, Secretary, sent by Regent on a special mission to Antwerp, to gain William of Orange, i. 328; prevails upon the Prince to hold an interview with other seigneurs at Willesbrock, 58.
Billy, Seigneur de, despatched to Spain by Margaret of Parma, to represent the inexpediency of sending Alva to Netherlands, i. 526; warns Egmont of the coming danger, 544; and kills Horn into false security, 549.
Bishop, number of, increased, i. 136; Bull of Paul IV., authorising erection of new bishoprics, 58; dissatisfaction created by this measure, 139.
Blaise Bouset, a cobbler of Mons, hanged for eating meat soup on a Friday, ii. 44.
Blas, Bertrand de, a velvet manufacturer of Thury, takes the consecrated wafer from the hands of a priest in cathedral, and tramples it under foot, i. 171; frightful punishment invented for him, 69.
Blomberg, Barbara, mother of Don John of Austria, ii. 302; her shrivelled character the torment of Alva’s life, 302.
Boards of Council, their constitution, i. 108; number of, 56.
Boedovero, testimony to Ruy Gomes, devolution to Philip II., i. 149.
Boisot, Admiral, assembles a fleet for the relief of Leyden, ii. 126; gradual advance with force towards Leyden, 127; captures Zierterwoude, 151; despair of passing forress of Lennum, 132; is relieved by flight of Spaniards, 69; enters Leyden, 132; abortive attempt to relieve Zierterwoude, 170; death of, 69.
Boisot, Charles van, slain by his own soldiers at Duitvelde, ii. 155.
Bosan, Count, appointed commander-in-chief of patriot army, ii. 307; worsts the royalists near Rinnenena, 43; avoids a general engagement with enemy, 58; suspicions against him, 58; his death calamously attributed to poison administered by Prince of Orange, 356.
Bourbon, Charlotte de, her early history, ii. 146; marries William of Orange, 149.
Bours, de, carries Antwerp citadel for the estates, ii. 263; is induced by Peter Lupus to become a traitor to Orange and the patriot cause, 573; surrenders the city, 573.
Bordeaux, treaty of, signed by Duke of Anjou, on accepting sovereignty of Netherlands, ii. 411.
Brabant, ancient constitution of, called the “Joyeuse Enterre,” i. 135; compromise in, between abbey and bishop, 194; four principal cities of, enter solemn protestation against edict, as violations of the Joyeuse Enterre, 255; declared free of the Inquisition, 69.
Bray, Guido de, a reformed preacher of Valenciennes, i. 355; his answer to the Countess of Rouxul, 69; his firmness under the gibe, 58.
Breda, negotiations for peace opened at, ii. 143; closing of conferences, 144.
Bredére, his personal appearance and character, i. 58; his efforts to make Granville ridiculous, 181; his devotion to Egmont, and insulting conduct to Archbishop of Cambry, 225; selected to present Request to Regent, 225; his genealogical claims to sovereignty of Netherlands, 353; his habits and character, 69; one of the first to sign Compromise, 244; his famous banquet to confederates, 257; accused of eating a capon on Good Friday, 260; his eccentricities during the autumn and winter of 1686, 311; presents new Petition or Request to Regent, 814; enrols troops against government, and contemplates an attempt against Walcheren, 315; proposes to march to the relief of Valenciennes, 316; his ridiculous conduct at Amsterdam, 331; arrests Le Torre, sent thither by Regent to obtain from magistracy his forcible ejection from the city, 69; makes his submission to Margaret of Parma, 332; dies in Germany, 332; fate of his followers, 16.
Catherine, as an Italian, left Paris in 1361, the year of the Black Death, and returned to the Netherlands to live in Bruges. She is regarded as a patron of the arts and learning, and her patronage of the University of Paris led to the establishment of the Louvre Museum. Catherine's influence was extensive, and she was known for her patronage of artists such as Jan van Eyck and Jan van Eyck. She was also a patron of music, and her court became a center for the study and performance of music. Catherine's influence extended beyond the arts, and she was known for her support of education and the spread of knowledge. Her legacy as a patron of the arts and learning remains a significant part of her legacy.
Index.

Netherlands, 69; his personal qualities, 69; and personal habits, 69; difficulties relating to his abdication, 69; his reverses, 67; causes which led to his abdication, 69; his retirement at Juste, 69; his endeavours to secure the succession in Netherlands to his sister, in case of default of direct male issue, 71; his obsequies at Brussels, 106.

Charles of Burgundy, surnamed the Bold, his character and career, 1; extortions practised by him in Netherlands, 69; he removes the supreme court of Holland from the Hague to Mochlin, 69; he invests it with supreme jurisdiction over the charters of the provinces, 69; proclaims all its authority derived from his will, 69; contraindicates government of Netherlands, 69; establishes a standing army, 69; dies, 1477, 69.

Charles, Archduke of Austria, despatched to Madrid by Maximilian II. on a special mission concerning state of Netherlands and proceedings of William of Orange, i. 421; public and private letter of King of Spain, 429; is authorised by Maximilian II. to offer to Philip the hand of the Archduchess Anne, 438.

Charles IX., of France, alarm at the crossing of the French frontier by Prince of Orange and his army, i. 416; letter to Louis of Nassau expressive of his determination to assist Netherlands, ii. 86; gives the signal for the St Bartholomew massacre, 87; duplicity of his dealings with Alva and Orange, 88; change of tone on perceiving the effects of the St Bartholomew on the various courts of Europe, 81; distress at desertion of his cause by King of Spain, 82; designs upon the crown of Poland, 88.

Charters, earliest in Netherlands, i. 13; ancient, of Netherlands provinces, 183.

Chimay, Prince of, eldest son of Duke of Aerschot, is elected Governor of Flanders, ii. 18; immediately opens negotiations with Parma for delivering up the province to Philip, 18.

Church, depravity of Roman Catholic, i. 39.

Claver, count, i. 17; earliest charters, 18; acquire right to send deputies to estates of the provinces, 20; allowed to choose their chief magistrates, 20; number of, 48.

Claudius Civilis, a Batavian noble, effects a general confederation of the Netherlands tribes, i. 8; is unsuccessful, and is deserted by his countrymen, 9; enters into negotiations with the Romans, 9; meets Cerialis on the bridge across the Nabalia, 9.

Clavry, power of, i. 87; decline of power, 93; their opposition to canons of Trent, 231.

Cocquerville, De, commanding a division under Louis of Nassau, is defeated at St Valéry, i. 378.

Coligny, Admiral, appointed Governor of Picardy, receives orders to make a foray on frontier of Flanders, i. 87; shrinks from breaking truce signed by himself, 89; is foiled in attack on Douay, 88; attacks and sacks Lenza, 89; throws himself into St Quentin, 91; is taken prisoner at St Quentin, 95; is converted to Calvinism during Flemish captivity, 95; makes peace with the French court, ii. 2; memoir on invasion of Netherlands, drawn up by desire of Charles IX., 95.

Cologne, conferences at, for settlement of disputes between King of Spain and Netherlands provinces, ii. 307; failure of conferences after seven months of useless negotiation, 371; ultimatum of patriot party, 379; expenses incurred by envoys to conferences, 379.

Commerce carried on with England and the Baltic, i. 19; with Mediterranean, 29.

Commission of Troubles established at Mons after capitulation, ii. 44; cruel and unjust proceedings of, 49; infamous sentiments of commissioners, 49.

Compromise, foundation of league thus called, i. 344; contents of the document signed, 246; character of nobles who joined in league, 347; growing audacity and turbulence of confederates, 69; they propose to present a Request to Request, 251; entrance of confederates into Brussels, 253; procession of confederates to deliver Request, 258; confederates present a second address promising to maintain the ancient religion, 265; assembly of members at St Trond, 271.

Conjuring books consulted by Augustus of Saxony, ii. 118—in note.

Constitution, new, of Holland and Zealand, ii. 419.

Consulta, its constitution, i. 108; its members, 108.

Convention between England and Spain with regard to the Netherland difficulty, published 1673, ii. 80.

Cornaille, Pierre, locksmith and Calvinist preacher, places himself at the head of 8000 combatants to march to the aid of Valenciennes, i. 309; is defeated at Lens, 49.

Cossé, Governor of Picardy, beats army of Netherlands patriots at St Valéry, i. 378.

Coster, Lorenzo, introduces the use of moveable types, i. 24.

Council of Philip II., how constituted, i. 77.

Council, royal, of Spain, how constituted, i. 287.

Council of State, assumes the reins of government at death of Requesens, ii. 183; names of members, 183; confirmed in government by King, 179; members held captive in Brussels, 175; falls into contempt on account of inability to put down mutiny, 174; is formally arrested, 182; members again liberated, 19.

Council of Troubles, or Blood-Council, established by Alva, i. 335; its constitution and functions, 18; its first session, 386; mode of procedure, 387; number of victims sacrificed, 93; senseless protests for prosecutions, 388; abolition of the institution, ii. 136.

Council, general executive, for United Provinces, established 1651, ii. 392; constitution of council, 18.
Court, organisation of Flemish, during reign of Philip II., i, 76;
Cologne is cited before the Blood-Council, i, 852.

Douay, City of, betrayed by an old gambler, saved by an old woman, i, 87, 88.

Dathenus, Peter, a converted monk and re-
formed preacher, i, 204; his character, i, 206.

Delft, diet assembled at, unanimously re-
solves to throw off allegiance to King of
Spain, and seeks foreign assistance, ii, 167; the estates of Holland and Zeeland
assembled at, conclude a new act of union, 165; articles of Union of, i, 66; character of
kingdom concluded at, 155; assembly of
United Provinces at, in 1681, establish a
general executive council, 352; description
of city and the house of Prince of
Orange, 442.

Dendermonde, meeting of nobles at, i, 501.

Diaz, Francisco, a Spanish soldier, captures
Admiral Coligny at storming of St. Quentin,
i, 90.

Diemen, Vrouw van, a woman of eighty
years, beheaded for having given a night's
lodging to a heretical preacher, i, 266.

Dirkszoon, Arent, and three other ecclesias-
tics, put to death for heresy, i, 426.

Dort, congress of, resolves to support Orange
with blood and money, ii, 213; invests the
Prince virtually with dictatorial power, 212.

Duveland and Schouwen, expedition to, ii,
184; heroism of Spaniards, 145; conquest
of the islands effected, 156; important re-
sults of expedition, 156.

Dunkirk taken by assault, i, 100.

Edict of 1559, its leading provisions, i, 158;
of 24th of May 1567, against Protestants,
excites the wrath of Philip on account of
its clemency, i, 34; against Spanish mun-
timeers, ii, 173; dissenions caused by it,
ii, 174; perpetual, signed at Marche en
Famime, and at Brussels, ii, 219; provi-
sions of this document, i, 66; is confirmed by Philip, ii, 215; instruction of
Orange, ii, 232; tendencies of treaty, ii, 221; published in Holland, suspending exercise of
Romish worship, ii, 393; cause of these measures,
155.

Education, flourishing condition of, i, 45.

 Egmond, Nicholas of, a Carmelite monk,
appointed coadjutor of Inquisitor-general,
i, 148.

Egmont, Anne of, one of the greatest heiresses in
Netherlands, married to William of Orange,
i, 125.

Egmont, Countess of, her desolate state after
her husband's arrest, i, 367; endeavours to
save her husband, i, 367; her misery and
poverty after her husband's death, 392.

Egmont, Philip, Count of, accompanies Mar-
quis of Havré to Antwerp, ii, 80; is taken
prisoner by the Spaniards, ii, 197; attempts
to seize Brussels to deliver it over to the
Spaniards, 555; his complete discomfiture,
i, 66; is allowed to depart unscathed, 356;
mendacious attempts to clear himself of
blame, i, 66; base endeavours to obtain
favour of Sully, 537.

Egmont, Lamoral, the younger, implicated
in Salsedo's scheme to poison Orange and
Anjou, 422; escapes punishment on ac-
count of his relationship to Queen of
France, i, 66.

Egmont, Lamoral, Count of, his personal
appearance in Flanders determine the issue of
the Italian campaign, 85; his character, de-
scent, and early history, 89; persuades
Duke of Savoy to deliver battle to Mont-
morncy before St. Quentin, 88; conduct
and battle of St. Quentin, 88; assumes the
field against De Thières, 101; conduct at
battle of Gravelines, 102; becomes the
 idol of the people, 103; gains the enmity of
Duke of Alva, i, 66; one of hostages for
execution of treaty of Ceutai Cambresis,
108; his eminence to Cardinal Granvelle, 144;
and Orange complain to the King of
Cardinal Granvelle, 147; joins Orange and
Horn in a letter to Philip, shewing danger of
leaving unlimited power in hands of
Granvelle, 191; quarrel with Aerchot,
192; and Aremberg, i, 66; his recklessness and
indiscretion, i, 66; declines Philip's in-
vitation to come to Spain, 195; adoption of
fulsome letters in order to humiliate
Granvelle, 204; growing favour at Re-
gent's court, 216; cultivates the good
graces of lower classes, i, 66; accepts a mis-
sion to Spain, 222; outrageous conduct of
nobles to Archbishop of Cambray on oc-
casion of Egmont's passing through that
city on his way to Spain, 225; distinction
with which he is treated in Spain, 227;
returns from Spain to Netherlands ex-
pressing himself perfectly content, 229;
gives an account to council of his inter-
view with the King, and a statement of
the royal intentions, i, 66; his high com-
mandations of Philip and warm expres-
sions of loyalty, 230; his indignation at
Philip's duplicity, i, 66; influence of Baken-
seer over him, 231; returns to his govern-
ment of Flanders and acts as an unscrupu-
ulous partisan of government, 291; views
expressed at Madrid, 301; displeases Orange,
ii, 301; offers to throw himself into Walcheren
to oppose rebels, 315; proceeds with Aer-
chot to Valenciennes, on mission from
Regent, 322; suggests point of assault on
Valenciennes, 324; his zeal in carrying out
the wishes of Philip and Margaret, ii, 66;
declares, in interview with Orange at
Willibrord, his intention on no account
whosoever to take up arms against King of
Spain, 328; proceeds to Tirlemont to
receive and compliment Alva, 341; his
indisposition as regards the danger that
threatened himself, 344; his intimacy with
Alva's son, 343; his arrest, 347; commen-
tement of mock process against him,
355; judgment pronounced against him,
357; endeavours made to save him, i, 66;
charges against him, 372; his reply to
these, 373; is sentenced to death by Alva,
385; is informed of his doom by Bishop of
Ypres, 386; his last night, 387; his letter
to the King, i, 66; his execution, 388; sym-
pathy of the people, 399—in note; his
head sent to Milan, 391; i, 66; retrospective
view of his character, 891.
Index. 467

Elector of Germany—their appeal to Emperor in favour of Netherlands, i. 420.
Elizabeth of England—quarrel with Duke of Alva, i. 11; plot against her entered into by Philip, ii. 8; accused of having hired an assassin to attempt the life of Prince John of Nassau, 131; see note; on; accepting policy with regard to Netherlands, 157; sovereignty over Zealand and Holland offered to, 158; first answer to commissioners from those states, 159; empty promises and paltry concessions, ib.; attitude assumed towards Netherlands after death of Requesens, 163; makes advances to Prince of Orange, 277; indignation at intrigues of nobles with Archduke of Austria, ib.; her minister informs Netherlands envoy that she will withdraw all succour from provinces if Orange be deprived of his leadership, 379; reply of Moetkerke, ib.; threatens to withdraw herself from the cause of Netherlands patriots and even to take up arms against them on account of their friendly relations with Alençon, 512.

"Encouragements" of internal attack made by Don Frederic of Toledo and Julian Romero on Prince of Orange’s army at Herhenry, ii. 61.
Evelyn, Bartholomew, one of the Beggars of the Sea, character and career, ii. 383; his death before Groningen, ib.
Erasmus of Rotterdam, his testimony to the power and importance of Ghent, i. 25; his moderation, i. 59; upholds Luther, 40; is attacked by the clergy, ib.
Escurial, palace of the, erected in commemoration of battle of St. Quentin, i. 96.
Exeadero, secretary to Don John of Austria, entrusted with arrangements for departure of Spanish troops from Netherlands, ii. 269; difficulties of his task, ib.; communications to Philip on subject of departure of the troops, 287; letters to Antonio Perez on state of affairs in Netherlands, 288; expresses his wish to enter into scheme for assassination of Prince of Orange, 267; suggests the recall of Don John and the appointment of a woman as governor, ib.; expresses his willingness to enter into scheme for assassination of Prince of Orange, 267; suggests to Philip the benefit to be derived from pitting the Reformed and Catholic parties against each other, 253; departs for Madrid, and takes charge of a remonstrance from estates of Brabant to the King, as to the evil consequences of the course pursued by his Majesty’s governor in Netherlands, ii. 264;.plot against him, at Madrid, 253; his death determined on, 256; various attempts at and ultimate success of murder, 257; rewards given to assassins, ib.
Eyastes, François de Girance, Seigneur d’, an innocent Catholic gentleman, condemned to death by Blood-Council at Murs, and his property confiscated to enrich Noirmarmes, ii. 45.
Ezpinoy, Mary de Montmorency, Princess of, undertakes defence of Tournay, in absence of her husband, ii. 446.

Estates of Holland, assembled at Dort to take formal measures for renouncing the authority of Alva, ii. 32; and Zealand offer sovereignty over provinces to a French prince, 159.
Estates-General, their power, i. 45; their constituent elements, 47; remonstrance against foreign troops, i. 111; clamour of people and nobles for conciliation of, ii. 242; address letters to Philip of 24th August and 8th September 1577, on state of Netherlands, 271; formally declare Don John of Austria to have forfeited his offices and to be an enemy of the country, 287; declare themselves willing to accept Archduke Matthias as Governor-General, 290; in their own name, and that of Archduke Matthias, demand of Philip, the recall of Don John, and the maintenance of the pacification of Ghent, 285; summoned in return to obey the King’s commands, ib.; affirm their resolution never more to submit to Spanish tyranny, or return to the principles of Charles V., and of Alva, ib.; offer to avert the approaching dismemberment of country, 345; deputations sent to Wallon provinces to endeavour to reconcile contending parties, 351; solemn appeal addressed to seceding provinces, 352; invited by Parma to accept terms offered to Wallons, and to restore system of Charles V., ib.; bitter reply, ib.
Estates of United Provinces formally offer the general government to Prince of Orange, ii. 457.
Estoverville, succeeds to Thames, i. 109.
Eyck, Van, John and Hubert, attracted to Brussels by generosity of Philip the Good, i. 29.
Favier and Mullart, Protestant ministers, condemned to death for reading Bible, i. 175; attempt of the people to rescue them, 176; their escape, 45; recaptured and burnt, ib.
Flodder, refuses to recognize Maximilian as governor, i. 59; is subdued and obliged to make humble submission, 64; the four estates of, present solemn address to King against monstrous proceedings of Peter Titelman, 221; nominally pacified by cruel executions of Egmont, 253; outbreak of anti-Catholic revolution in, ii. 355.
Flesse, order of Golden, instituted by Philip of Burgundy, i. 22; assembly of knights of, the, convoked by the Regent in 1603, 183; subsequent meeting at Prince of Orange’s, ib.; meeting dissolved, 184; chevaliers of, declares to the Regent that it is below the dignity of any of their order to take a long and troublesome journey in order to accuse Granvelle, 195; golden statutes of, appealed to with a view to saving David of Egmont and Horn, 398; set aside by Philip, 45; legal modes of proceeding against knights of, 399, in note.
Flushing, Portugese, captured by insurgent patriots, ii. 30.
Floating, the town of, rises in rebellion after capture of Brill, and ejects Spanish government, 221.
Frissians, territory inhabited by, i. 3; event-
ment of reasons of Maximilian II. for mediating between Netherlands and King of Spain, 141.

Godsalveus, testimony to emotion of Flemish people, on abdication of Charles V., l. 68.

Gomes, Buy, his hatred to Alva, 77; early history, ib.; influence over Philip, ib.; character and acquirements, 78; endeavours to prevent the mission of Alva to Netherlands, 334; continued jealousy and hatred between him and Alva, ib.; perfidious conduct to Marquis Berghes in his last moments, 353.

Gonzaga, Ferdinand, advises Philip II. to march on Paris after battle of St. Quentin, l. 96.

Gossen, leader of the burgesses faction in Arras, ii. 946; effects a municipal revolution in city, ib.; counter revolution and retaliation, 541; condemned to death and executed, 542.

Grandort, Dr., called "the light of the World," l. 99; denounces ecclesiastical errors, ib.; disputes the infallibility of the Pope and various papish doctrines, ib.

Grange, Peregrine de la, Protestant preacher at Valentines, urges reasons to refuse to admit a mercenary garrison, l. 307; hanged after surrender of city, 323; his last words, ib.

Granvelle, the elder, his influence with Charles V., l. 64.

Granvelle, Anthony Ferrenrot, Bishop of Arras, afterwards Cardinal, pronounces address to Flemish people for Philip II., on abdication of Charles V., l. 57; advises the re-enactment of edict of 1550, 81; disapproves of war with France and the Pope, 55; negotiations with Cardinal of Lorraine, at Peronne, 99; appointed chief of the Consulat, 195; his parentage and education, ib.; acquires the favour and confidence of Charles V., 127; his mental and moral characteristics, ib.; his political principles, ib.; his contempt for the people, 158; his extraordinary industry, ib.; his riches and opulence, 158; his pontificate, 148; his appointment as Archbishop of Mechlin, 159; his growing unpopularity, ib.; indemnifies himself for pecuniary loss accruing to him by acceptance of the see of Mechlin, ib.; his zeal in ferreting out heretics, 143; Margaret of Parma obtains for him the cardinal's hat, ib.; his growing assumption, and unfriendly relations with Egmont, 144; his early intimacy with Orange, 145; breach with Orange, 146; prejudices Philip against Count Horn, 147; suggests to the King his answers to remonstrances of Netherlands nobles, 149; his intrigues relative to the marriage of Prince of Orange with Princess of Lorraine, 157; his entry into city of Mechlin, as archbishop, 168; his baleful influence on Philip, 174; his zeal in carrying out Philip's views regarding Inquisition, 175; increasing hatred of the people to him, 177; laments directed against him, 178; hostility of nobles towards him, 179; unfounded accusations of cowardice, 181; his conniving for Jean de la Fontaine, ib.; shunned by great nobles.
surrounds himself with their inferiors, 188; his reports to Philip on proceedings in Netherlands, regarding introduction of Inquisition, and accusations and innuendoes against nobles, 188; suggests to Philip how to proceed towards Netherlands, and in interviews with Montigny, 188; lays a scheme with King and Regent to sow dissensions among nobles, 189; acquires knowledge of Joint letter of Orange, Egmont, and Horn, and instructs Philip how to reply, 191; his acknowledgment of his own unpopularity, 191; continued reports regarding, and ardent insinuations against nobles, 197; recommends Philip to come to Netherlands to allay the rising storm, 203; contemptuous expressions against the people, 201; approaching crisis in his fate, 19; determination of nobles to insult and humiliate him, 204; is recalled by Philip, 207; departure from Brussels, 208; carries out the deception regarding his retirement, as planned by Philip, 209; his adherents deceived by his and the King's duplicity, 210; his life in retirement, 211; turned into ridicule by no less than Count Mansfeld's house, 214; abandons all idea of returning to Netherlands, and repair to Rome, 185; is employed by Philip to negotiate treaty between Spain, Rome, and Venice, 186; is made Vicar of Naples, and returns to Madrid in 1575, 187; dies there, 1588, 215; policy devised by him and Spinoza, for entire subjugation of Netherlands, 326; his duplicity as regards capture of Netherlands nobles, 349; regret at escape of William of Orange, 369; cruel insinuations against Egmont, 186; exultation at discomfiture of Prince of Orange in first campaign against Alva, 418.

Gravelines, battle of, i. 101.

Gresham, Sir Thomas, his anticipation of coming storm in Netherlands, i. 294; testimony to excessive fury of citizens of Antwerp during tumultuous subsequent to defeat of Oostend, i. 295; Grietmann, chief ruler of an East Friesland district, i. 29.

Gröningen, city of, delivered up to Prince of Parma by Count Ronnenberg, i. 281; beleaguered by patriot forces, 186; siege of, 382; death of Enzes, 383; siege raised by defeat of Hoeheno on Hardenberg Heath, 384.

"Groot Privilege," the Magna Charta of Holland, granted by Mary of Burgundy, i. 27.

"Gueneux," origin of the appellation as a party name, i. 285; vindication of this origin in opposition to Gachard, 186. Note: adoption of the name and of the symbols, 287; adoption of costume, 288; ultimate fate of the confederates, i. 94.

Guilda, institution of, i. 18; military, 46; literary, 18.

Guine, reduction of, i. 99.

Guiuse, Duke of, is defeated by Alva in Italian campaign, i. 85; is recalled from Italy to take command on Flemish frontiers, imperiled by internal divisions in Flanders, 95; is reproved by pope, 96; assembles a new army, 99; takes Calais by assault, 100; renews hostilities by attack on Thionville, 100; neglects to follow up his successes in Flanders, 99; assembles a new army at Pierrepont, 104.

Hamme, Nicholas de, his seal in promotion of the compromise league, i. 245; his imprudent impetuosity, 106.

Harangue, the, document issued by William of Orange, and addressed to princes of Germany, ii. 13.

Haring, John, heroic conduct in battle of the Diegemdyk, ii. 68; loses his life in naval engagement in the Ryder Zee, 69.

Harlem, Lake of, situation of, ii. 57; battles on, 65.

Harlem, city of, is threatened by Spanish army, ii. 58; skirmish upon the ice, 56; a portion of the magistracy enter into secret negotiation with Alva, 57; situation of the city and natural features of environs, 60; character of fortifications, 58; investment of the city, 60; character of the struggle, and incidents of the siege, 60; first assault, 61; continuation of siege and horrors attending it, 62; second assault, 61; the Spanish general determines to reduce the city by famine, 60; resuming force under Sonoy defeated, 61; cruelty and heroism of citizens, 64; misery of famine, 63; desperate projects of the besieged, 62; the city surrenders at discretion, 69; subsequent plunder and butchery, 70.

Hasselaer, Kenau, a lady of Harlem, who distinguished herself during the siege as the leader of a female corps, ii. 59.

Havré, Marquis of, despatched by Philip to Netherlands, to try and conciliate the people, ii. 174; is despatched to Antwerp with reinforcements, 186; incompetency of himself and young nobles who accompany him, 19.

Henry II. of France enters into secret treaty with Pope Paul IV. to drive the Spaniards out of Italy, i. 80; resolves upon war with Spain, 83; joins the army of Pierrepont, 104; his death, 106; arrangement with King of Spain for destruction of Huguenots, 105; revelation to William of Orange of plot for extirpation of Protestantism, 127.

Heretico, persecution of, i. 43; increasing persecution of, 177; police regulations excluding them from all share in usual conveniences of society, 222.

Herlin, Michael, a citizen of Valenciennes, beheaded together with his son by Noir-carmes, after surrender of city, i. 219.

Herpt, the Seigneur de, a partisan of Orange, excites the citizens of Flushing to revolt, ii. 21.

Hessels, member of the Blood-Council, his cruelty, i. 365; letter from, to Count de Reux, which precipitates revolution in Flanders, ii. 283; and Vischer put to death by Rhove, 399.

Heterus, Pompus, testimony to emotion of Flemish people on abdication of Charles V., i. 66.

Hohenlo, Count Philip of, leader of patriot army at siege of Gröningen, ii. 384; his
curious indications of fanaticism and super-
sensationism in morbid examination laid before Anjou by St. Aldegondis, 416; the crime proved to be a commercial speculation, 18.

Junius, Francis, a French Huguenot, invited to Brussels to preach a sermon in house of Count Culemborg, i. 248; his previous career, 18.

"Kabola," first rise of party of the name, i. 21.

Kalf Vol issued by Charles V., i. 83; destruction of the document, 10.

Knutz, William, used by Prince of Orange to gain assent of Landgrave of Hesse to his marriage with the Princess Anna, i. 186.

Koopt, van Panderen, tradition of the, i. 83.

Kopp, Walter, burned for heresy, i. 170; singular devotion of an idiot to him, 171.

Koppersoon, Manning, subjected to atrocious tortures by Governor Sonoy, ii. 152.

Koppemalst, Peter, ferryman on the Meuse, assists the Beggars of the Sea in the capture of Brill, ii. 18.

Lalain, Count, Governor of Hainault, won over by Queen of Navarre, promises to hold his government at service of Duke of Alençon, ii. 212.

Le Leo, Horn's secretary, is executed by order of Alva, i. 406.

Le Torre despatched by Regent to Amsterdam to obtain forcible ejection of Braderode, i. 881.

Laurens, President of the Grand Council of Mechlin, his character, i. 108.

Leon, town of, sacked by Coligny, i. 88.

Leoninus, Dr. Elbersius, and Hugo Bonta, commissioned by Requesens to treat with Prince of Orange, ii. 188; his early career, 139; in note; despatched on mission from Don John of Austria to Prince of Orange, 222; instructions given to him, 10; reply of Orange to his proposals, 224.

Letters of Prince of Orange to principal cities of Netherlands, requesting funds for the support of his army, i. 81; effect of these letters, 10.

Letters, preparations for raising the siege of, ii. 18; commencement of second siege, 190; description of city, 18; preliminaries of siege, 121; endeavours of the "gappers" to persuade their countrymen to submit, 123; reply of citizens of Leyden, 18; Orange's plan for reconquering the city, 18; called upon to surrender by Valdes, 123; joy of citizens on receipt of intelligence that the sluices had been opened, 18; desponding appeal to estates, 123; patriots take possession of the Landsheideburg, 123; gradual advance of the relieving forces through the dykes, 127; pest and famine within the city, 129; heroic conduct of Adrian van der Werff, 129; the providential tempest, 131; progress of the futility, 18; the last night, 132; the city saved, 18; flight of the Spaniards, 18; thanksgiving after the daunger, 133; rewards for suffering, 134; order of unitersy, 18; solemnities of inauguration, 10.

Lion, battle of the Holy, or Heiliger Lee, i. 831.

Loreto; his testimony as to mode of death of Don Carlos, i. 402.

Lodolfo, Sancho de, and Sancho de Ayala, defeat patriot army at Dalem, i. 378.

Longebeke, one of the members of the Commission of Troubles at Mons, intercedes for people, i. 48.

Lorraine, Christina of, seeks to become Regent of Netherlands, i. 107.

Louvain, university of, i. 48; character of its teaching, 18; merrymaking at, on occasion of presence of Don John of Austria, ii. 255.

Lupus, Peter, a Carmelite friar of Mechlin, forms the design of restoring the city to the Prince of Parma, i. 372.

Luxemburg, negotiations between Don John of Austria and deputies from estates at, ii. 213.

Mass, Engelbert, Chancellor of Brabant, openly charged by William of Orange with knavery and corruption, i. 222.

Maastricht, citizens of, wrest the town from the hands of Spanish troops, ii. 184; shameless expeditment used by Spanish soldiers in attempt to regain the place, 18; city recovered by Spaniards, 18; importance of the city as key to the German gate of Netherlands, 306; is invested by Prince of Parma, ii. 387; narrative of siege, 387; the assault repulsed, 359; the successful storm and the massacre, 362.

Mansfeld, Charles de, signs the Compromise, i. 244; sent out of the country by his father before the arrival of Alva, 349.

Mansfeld, Peter Ernest de, betrays and is snared at by Netherlands nobles, i. 299; entrusted with supreme military command after death of Requesens, ii. 183; interview with mutineers at Herenthals, 173; arrives in Netherlands with an army of well-trained troops, 295.

Manufactures, influence on rise of small republics, i. 19.

Marck, Robert de la, his animosity to Granvile, and efforts to make him ridiculous, i. 181.

Marck, William de la, chief of the Beggars of the Sea, ii. 16; is driven out of the English ports with his followers by order of the Queen, 17; sails for Holland, 18; summons the fortress of Brill to surrender, 18; attacks and takes the town, 18; requires citizens to take oath of allegiance to Prince of Orange, 19; is despatched by Orange from Leyden with a force for the relief of Harlem, but is defeated on the road, 18; is deprived of his commission, 18; enormities practised by him laid at the door of Prince of Orange, 18; murder of Cornelius Musius, 18; dies of the bite of a mad dog, 18.

Mary Tudor, her devotion to Philip II., i. 71; personal appearance, 18; character and accomplishments, 72; her death, 105.

Mason, Sir John, testimony to emotion of the people at the ceremony of the abdication of Charles V., i. 58.

Mau-Brulés, journée des, i. 178.

Maurice, Duke of Saxony, intercedes with Philip for release of Landgrave of Hesse, i. 70.
INDEX.

Ludovico II, Emperor of Germany, goes to war against Netherland's allies. His marriage is declared invalid by the States-General, and he is ordered to leave the country. He infant of his marriage, 72. He is supported by the Flanders, 152. He is victorious in the battle of Pavia, 153. He is captured by the Spanish, 154. He is released by the Duke of Alba, 155. He returns to Germany, 156.

Maximilian II. Emperor of Germany, marries Anne of Austria. He is declared king by the estates of Flanders, 157. He is supported by the Flanders, 158. He is victorious in the battle of Pavia, 159. He is captured by the Spanish, 160. He is released by the Duke of Alba, 161. He returns to Germany, 162.

Marguerite, Queen of Navarre, goes to war against France. She is defeated at the battle of Rocroi, 163. She is captured by the Spanish, 164. She is released by the Duke of Alba, 165. She returns to Navarre, 166.

Mary, Queen of Scotland, goes to war against England. She is captured by the English, 167. She is executed, 168.

Monte, Francesco, Governor of Genoa, is defeated by the Spanish. He is captured by the Spanish, 169. He is executed, 170.

Nemcy, city of, is captured by the Spanish, 171. It is burned, 172. It is occupied by the French, 173. It is taken by the Spanish, 174. It is occupied by the French, 175. It is burned, 176.

Nonsuch, city of, is captured by the Spanish, 177. It is burned, 178. It is occupied by the French, 179. It is taken by the Spanish, 180. It is occupied by the French, 181. It is burned, 182.

Naples, city of, is captured by the Spanish, 183. It is burned, 184. It is occupied by the French, 185. It is taken by the Spanish, 186. It is occupied by the French, 187. It is burned, 188.

Nancy, city of, is captured by the Spanish, 189. It is burned, 190. It is occupied by the French, 191. It is taken by the Spanish, 192. It is occupied by the French, 193. It is burned, 194.

Nantes, city of, is captured by the Spanish, 195. It is burned, 196. It is occupied by the French, 197. It is taken by the Spanish, 198. It is occupied by the French, 199. It is burned, 200.

Naarden, a small town of Holland, is captured by the Spanish, 201. It is burned, 202. It is occupied by the French, 203. It is taken by the Spanish, 204. It is occupied by the French, 205. It is burned, 206.

Nassau, city of, is captured by the Spanish, 207. It is burned, 208. It is occupied by the French, 209. It is taken by the Spanish, 210. It is occupied by the French, 211. It is burned, 212.

Nassau, family of, is captured by the Spanish, 213. It is burned, 214. It is occupied by the French, 215. It is taken by the Spanish, 216. It is occupied by the French, 217. It is burned, 218.

Nassau, Henry of, Governor of a confidential friend of Charles V., 219. He is influenced to make the imperial crown on Charles's head, 220.
Nassau, William of, surnamed The Rich, father of the great Prince of Orange, i. 190.
Nassau, Chalons, &c., leaves his titles and estates to his cousin-german, William of Nassau, who thus succeeds to the title of Prince of Orange, i. 130.
Nassau, Louis of, one of the first to sign the Compromise, i. 244; his character and personal appearance, 245; and his twelve apostles despatched to Brussels to lay proposals of confederates before Regent, 372; appealed to for intercession in favour of Reformed persecuted by Egmont, 393; is slain before the Blood-Council, 383; looks to as chief of Huguenots of France, in case of Coligny's fall, 376; commences to levy troops and money, 577; makes an unsuccessful attempt to capture Alva and Brussels, 586; his plan of campaign, 586; enters Friesland, 578; summons Groningen to join him, 586; takes up a position near Monastery of Holy Lion, 586; defeats Aremberg, 583; entrenches himself before Groningen, 584; his position after battle of Holy Lion, 583; his army routed near Groningen, 586; defeated again at Monteminger, 589; total destruction of his army near Selwait Abbey, 587; takes refuge in Germany, 588; joins army of Huguenots in Flanders, ii. 2; his conduct at battle of Montcontour, 586; his endeavours to gain friends for Netherlands, 586; captures Mons, the capital of Hainault, 26; his address to citizens of Mons, 28; condition of, within the walls of Mons, 43; pays his respects to victorious generals after capitulation, 60; incidents attending departure from the city, 60; agreement between him and representative of France with reference to Netherlands, 86; promises to use his influence to procure crown of Poland for Duke of Anjou, 16; frank and fearless letter to King of France, 86; promises of support received from France, 109; assembles a small army in Germany, 586; crosses the Rhine in January 1574, and encamps within four miles of Maastrict, 586; disasters encountered there, 110; is obliged to abandon his position, 61; returns to his army, 111; battle of Mook, 586; death of Louis and his brother Henry, 113.
Nassau, Adolphus of, brother of William of Orange, is killed by Aremberg in battle of the Holy Lion, i. 383.
Nassau, Count John of, is appointed governor of Gelderland, ii. 814; exceeding poverty of his household, 884; excuses for his retirement, 886; his second marriage, 385.
Nassau, Maurice of, son of Prince of Orange, his resolute conduct after attempted assassination of his father, ii. 413.
Nervii, heroic resistance offered by this people to Caesar, i. 7.
Netherlands, the earliest history of, i. 1; physical geography of, 10; primitive natural features, original inhabitants, 3; state of population subsequent to the migrations of the nations, 10; becomes a province of the empire of Charlemagne, 12; pass into the German empire, 13; aspect of country at commencement of reign of Margaret of Parma, 129; causes preparatory of revolt, 131; receives the ideas of the reformation from France, 131; ancient charters, 138; their industry taxed to enable France to attack the Huguenots, 138; anarchy and confusion after departure of Granvelle, 215; public corruption, 215; spread of Reformed religion, and growing enthusiasm of its followers, 295; state of country after departure of William of Orange for Germany, 383; disarmament of citizens, 383; death of Alva, 383; consternation created by arrest of Egmont and Horn, 383; state of discouragement caused by proceedings of Blood-Council, 357; depopulation of country in consequence of cruel proceedings of Alva, 357; all the inhabitants of, condemned to death by Inquisitions, 357; wholesale executions and frightful cruelties, 355; severe blow inflicted on commerce by quarrel between Alva and Queen of England, 432; continuation of religious persecutions, 432; new scheme of taxation introduced, in violation of provincial charters, 432; state of manufacturing industry in year 352; 432, in note; opposition to new system of taxation, 430; terrible destruction by inundation in 1570, 444; open revolt against the new taxes, ii. 16; successive insurrections in various cities and provinces, 24; state of country at death of Requesens, 164; state of religious parties in the various provinces, 178; state of country at period of death of Don John of Austria, 327; division of country into three portions, 395.
Nevera, Duke de, Governor of Champagne, disposes his forces to meet an attack of Spanish army, 91; makes his escape after battle of St Quentin, 94; his escape deemed impossible, 48.
Ninove, the starvation of, ii. 491.
Nobles, disaffected state of, holding command in patriote army, ii. 93; malcontent party brought over by Duke of Parma, 341; jealousies, bickering, and mutual recriminations among them, 341.
Nouve, De la, is made prisoner in an action near Ingelmunster, 382; vain endeavours of patriot party to obtain his release, 398; is kept in prison five years, and then offered his release on condition of sacrificing his eyes, 16; works composed by him in prison, 16.
Noircarmes proceeds to Tournay to disarm the citizens, i. 297; his calumnious reports to Regent relative to intended massacre of Catholics, 399; invests Valenciennes, 302; conduct after surrender of Valenciennes, 325; persuades Egmont to disregard the repeated warnings to him to fly, 346; accepts the office of member of the Blood-Council, 355; his testimony to desperate state of Netherland citizens in consequence of Alva's cruel persecutions, ii. 14; cruel proceedings at Mons, 44; his base duplicity, 45.
Ogier, Robert, of Rysse, and his family, executed for not attending mass, i. 172.
Oliver, Antony, a native of Mons, lays a plan for the capture of city, with Louis of Na-
by Vanderneese that Alva has orders to arrest and condemn him at once, 421; and
which signals are cited before the Blood-
council, 362; charges against them, 36;
his reply to the summons, 36; his son
sased as a hostage, 362; publishes a reply
in act of condemnation, 372; her exertions
to raise troops and gain allies in Germany,
England, and France, 86; grants commis-
sion to Count Louis, levy troops and
wage war on Philip, 377; is recommended
by his friends among the German princes,
to pause in his attempts to save the Ne-
thelnd provinces, 407; enrols himself
for life as a soldier of the Reformation,
60; change supervened in his religious
character, 408; sincerity of his pious, 60;
is required by the Emperor to lay down
arms under penalty of forfeiting his rights
and privileges, 409; his reply to Emperor's
requisition, 60; his formal declaration
of war against Alva, 410; proclamation to
the people of the Netherlands, 36; crosses
the Meuse with his army, 411; enters
Brabant and takes up a position within a
short distance of the encampment, 412;
balling plan of his adversary, 40; in-
cidents of the campaign, 414; affects a
junction with Guelph, at Waveren, 40; dis-
appointment at some seriousness of people, 36;
undulous state of his army, 84; crosses
the frontier of France, 415; is summoned
by the King of France to declare his in-
tentions, 415; his reply, 36; is forced to
lead back and disband his army, 417; sets
forth with his two brothers to join the
banner of Condé, 40; proceedings in
France after disbursing his army at
Strasbourg, 36; 1; returns to Germany, 36;
tensive correspondence with leading
personages in every part of Netherlands,
86; issues commissions to privates, 40;
gives laws to the Beggars of the Sea, 36;
his forlorn condition but unbroken spirit
after return from France, 4; persevering
efforts to obtain money and allies, 12;
instructions to Diedrich Sonoy, 19; docu-
cument called the Harangue addressed
to princes of Germany, 36; oath of allegiance
taken by his adherents is required to him as
steward of King of Spain, 84; resumes
statholderate over Holland and Zealand;
40; religious toleration exhibited in his
illustrious person, 84; appointed by him,
and in new oath of allegiance im-
posed, 36; assembles a new army in
Germany, 50; addresses letters to principal
cities of Netherlands, adjuring them to be
true to his and their cause, 36; power con-
ferred on him by congress of Dort, 32;
ordinance issued by him as a provisional
form of government and voluntarily im-
poising limits on himself, 33; crosses
the Rhine at Duisburg with a considerable
army, 54; takes Roermond, 36; differ-
ence between his character as military
commander and that of Alva, 35; his fur-
ther advance, 36; learns the news of the
massacre of the Huguenots in Paris, 36;
advances towards Mons, in the hope of provoking the enemy into
a pitched battle, 40; makes attack on his
army by Don Frederic de Toledo, 41;
retreats to Péronne and Nivellon, 42; is
followed by an assassination by Alva, 36;
his soldiers refuse to remain longer in the
field, 36; is obliged to advise his brother
to capitulate, 86; crosses the Rhine, dis-
bands his army, and repairs to Holland;
40; his reception in province of Holland
after breaking up his army, 55; unfolds
his plan of future proceedings in secret
session of states of provinces at Harlem,
86; despatches a force under De la Marck
to the relief of Harlem, 58; makes a fresh
effort to succour the town, 89; further
efforts to succour Harlem, 36; keeps
firm in faith and hope in spite of repeated
disasters, 71; his lofty enthusiasm, 74;
for want of funds is obliged to decline offer
of Spanish soldiers to deliver Harlem into
his hands, 76; difficulties experienced by
him in raising funds for his enterprise, 80;
his lofty and generous purpose, 36; accusa-
tions against him by bigotry adherents of
both religions, 56; his reliance upon secret
negotiations re-opened with the court of
France, 81; reasons for the immediate
repugnance to King of France, 84; outlines
of new treaty with France drawn up by
him, 86; solitary and anxious position
during the misfortunes of Harlem and
Alkmaar, 87; appeal to the general as-
sembly of the Netherlands, exhorting the
country to union against the oppressor,
36; epistle to the King of Spain, 86;
confidence in God the mainspring of his en-
ergy, 89; liberty of conscience for the people
his main object, 86; publicly joins the Calvin-
ist Church at Dort, 86; his fears relative
to impression likely to be produced by
King's promise of pardon, 150; position
taken up by him during siege of Leyden,
123; desperate plan for the rescue of Ley-
den, 86; his illness at Rotterdam, 125;
resumes preparations for relief of Leyden,
126; proceeds on board the fleet before
Leyden, 129; receives news of the rescue
of Leyden, 133; enters the city, 36; grants
privileges to the city as a reward for its
sufferings, 134; reply to proposals of Re-
quezua, made through St. Aldocone, 137;
answer to other negotiators, 138; power
lodged in his hands, 139; complaints in as-
sembly of states of Holland of conduct of
cities, and offers to resign, 140; powers
vested in him by estates, 36; refuses to
accept government on these terms unless
furnished with a monthly allowance, 36;
suspicions of Spanish government and fear
of a disastrous peace, 141; accepts the
government of Holland and Zealand, 145;
results of his marriage with Anne of Sax-
ony, 147; marries the Princess Charlotte
of Bourbon, 149; enmities caused by this
marriage, 86; evil consequences, 150; re-
solution to throw off allegiance to King of
Spain, 156; difficulties as to choice of
sovereign for the states, 158; financial
embarrassments of himself and brother
John, 160; desperate scheme for rescuing
inhabitants of Holland and Zealand, 36;
prompt and decided conduct after death of
Requezua, 164; changes introduced by
Index.
entry into the hands of France. All
billed letters against him sent under the
assembly of the states, 214. affairs to
lay new demands on him, 215. accord.
arrangements made under the
government of Parma, and return to
Antwerp, 258. attempts to make him
reach his powers to any successor agreement by
enforce-general, 258. new attempts at go-
vernment, consequently, 258. his
arrangements in favor of states of Paris, 258.
future ruler of the Netherlands, 259.
rebounds and weaknesses and wal-
kings adhered to various enterprises,
and assemblies on 170, 259. speech in
council-general, at Antwerp, 259.
upholding the public words of a
broad perspective, 259. succeeds upon the
state of the assembly in January, 259.
arguing the necessity of making a
necessary alliance, 259. to admit the
sufficiency of states of Bolland and
Zeeland, 259. by advice of Cardinal
Gravenza, a prince is set upon the
throne. 259. is the Vroom, 260. replies by his
former Apotheosis, 260. in the
sufficiency appears provisionally, sufficiency over
Holland and Zeeland, 260. assurance of his
undertaking this new enterprise, 260.
insufficiency of sufficiency as to time subsequently assessed
by the states within their knowledge, 260.
absence of personal authority in him, injurious to his
sufficiency, 260. as reasons for
answering to the general enterprise and to
take measures for subjugation of Arpen,
260. assent in assemblies from Ant-
werp, 261. his generous appearance of
success, 261. the scaffold for King of
Arpen and his authority when taking himself
severely wounded, 261. separation of
the people, 261. investigations relative to
attempts of crime, 261. discovery of
secrets in council-general, im-
posing them, in case of his escape, in
proposition to Antwerp, 261. assertion
for Antwerp, 261. for sure that the pru-
ness of his sufficiency, and conducted with seems presence, 261.
worthlessness and negligence. 261.
Lemans Bertali, body physician to Arpen, claims his
life by his infamous experience, 261. joy of
people on his recovery; 261. his wife,
Charlotte, 261. happiness enjoyed in marriage with her, is
formed by the statement, in consequence of
his recovery, to assure permanently the
Consortship of Bolland and Zeeland, 261.
positive answer to him by the new cons-
sortship, 261. letter from Count Bertali, 261.
efforts to achieve的基础上, 261.
possible, between Duke of Arpen and the
provinces, 261. his increasing desire to see
all the Netherlands provinces united into
one independent consortship, 261.
searches ignominies of Augustus, 261.
France and Philip, 261. reply to Mme. de
Holland, 261. supposed to be a
Heidelburg, 261. to affect a reconcili-
ation to Arpen, 261. year of events
is necessary for the
involving with Arpen, sworn to at request of
succession, 261. Monte Avenio in
consequence, 261. marched, for the
returns Arpen, 261. his return
in the government of Parma, return to
him by the
state of the assembly in January, 261.
arguing the necessity of making a
necessary alliance, 261. to admit the
sufficiency of states of Bolland and
Zeeland, 261. by advice of Cardinal
Gravenza, a prince is set upon the
throne. 261. is the Vroom, 261. replies by his
former Apotheosis, 261. in the
sufficiency appears provisionally, sufficiency over
Holland and Zeeland, 261. assurance of his
undertaking this new enterprise, 261.
insufficiency of sufficiency as to time subsequently assessed
by the states within their knowledge, 261.
absence of personal authority in him, injurious to his
sufficiency, 261. as reasons for
answering to the general enterprise and to
take measures for subjugation of Arpen,
261. assent in assemblies from Ant-
werp, 261. his generous appearance of
success, 261. the scaffold for King of
Arpen and his authority when taking himself
severely wounded, 261. separation of
the people, 261. investigations relative to
attempts of crime, 261. discovery of
secrets in council-general, im-
posing them, in case of his escape, in
proposition to Antwerp, 261. assertion
for Antwerp, 261. for sure that the pru-
ness of his sufficiency, and conducted with seems presence, 261.
worthlessness and negligence. 261.
Lemans Bertali, body physician to Arpen, claims his
life by his infamous experience, 261. joy of
people on his recovery; 261. his wife,
Charlotte, 261. happiness enjoyed in marriage with her, is
formed by the statement, in consequence of
his recovery, to assure permanently the
Consortship of Bolland and Zeeland, 261.
positive answer to him by the new cons-
sortship, 261. letter from Count Bertali, 261.
efforts to achieve基础上, 261.
possible, between Duke of Arpen and the
provinces, 261. his increasing desire to see
all the Netherlands provinces united into
one independent consortship, 261.
abilities and mental characteristics, 338; his religious sentiments, 46; favourable success under which he assumed power in the Netherlands, 327; his subtle and unscrupulous policy, 338; commences campaign of 1579 with a front against Antwerp, and then moves upon Maastricht, 350; continued negotiations and intrigues with Walloon provinces, 374; signs Treaty of Accord with Walloon provinces, 353; pantomime at Paris instructive of his success, 354; his entry into Maastricht after capture of the city, 363; indignation at arrival of his mother in Netherlands to assume civil administration of Provinces, 393; declares his determination not to submit to divide authority, and conquers, 46; measures taken in consequence of proposed assassination of Prince of Orange, 417; draws foreign troops into the country in spite of treaty to the contrary with united Walloon provinces, 420; lays siege to Oudenarde, 46; traits of courage and coolness evinced by him during siege, 46; retakes Ninove, 431; unsuccessful attack on Lechum, 46; expatriation of Prince of Orange, 458; position of, close of autumn, 1589—i.e., accused of having instigated attempt to poison Arjou and Orange at Bruges, 472; intrigues with Prince of Chimiay, by which Bruges is restored to Philip, 441; his share in murder of Prince of Orange, 445; intercedes with Philip to secure to the heirs of the murdered the reward for the assassination of Prince of Orange, 451.

Parma, Margaret of, nominated Regent of Netherlands, i, 107; her descent and early education, 116; is given in marriage to Alexander de Medici, 46; married a second time to Ottavio Farnese, 117; her aversion to her husband, 46; remorses at his reported death, 46; her hatred for him changes to passionate fondness, 46; reasons for her being appointed Regent of Netherlands, 46; her bigotry, 118; her personal appearance and mental characteristics, 46; strategem used by her to induce the council to comply with Philip's request to send troops to France, 182; forbidden by Philip to convoy the estates-general, summons a meeting of Knights of the Fleece, 46; adverts herself to reconcile contending factions, 184; informs Philip that the Prince of Orange is reported to be revolting some great design, 189; reports to Philip dissensions among seigniories, 188; despatches Armenteros to Spain, 139; her instructions to him, 46; her alarm at increasing discontent of nobles, 46; urges Philip to give satisfaction to Netherlands nobles, 205; her delight at having escaped from servitude to Granville, 212; contumacious treatment of his friends, 212; her denunciations of Granville and his party to the King, and secret protestations of friendship to Granville himself, 46; her intimacy with Armenteros, and disgraceful partipipation in his proceedings, 217; her contemptuous treatment of former adherents of Granville, 46; her insinuations against Viglius, 219; difficulties of her position, 234; urges Philip to change instructions to inquisitors, 46; expenses and distress caused by her visits nuptials, 240; driven to despair by disturbed state of country and discontent of the nobles, 249; informs Philip that he must take up arms or make concessions, 252; her agitation on the presentation of Request, 254; her answer to Request, 256; reply to second address of confederates, 257; issues the "Moderation," 261; pursuit of Moderate, 46; issues proclamations to put down religious assemblies, 365; her rage at bold language of members of compromise assembled at 82 Trond, 375; indignation and terror at image-breaking, 264; determines to seek refuge in Monza, 46; is advised by seigniors to remain at her post, 46; is forced to concede liberty of worship where already established, 266; signs articles of agreement called the "Accord," 46; announces to Philip that if the three points demanded by Berghen and Montigny be not granted she can no longer restrain rebellion, 268; letter to Philip on subject of concessions made to confederates, 269; calumnies against Orange, Egmont, Horn, and Hoogstraten, 271; compact agreed to with confederates for pacification of provinces, 46; begins to assume a tone of open defiance toward malcontents, 296; recalls Horn from Tournay, 297; despatches Noircaumes to Tournay to disarm citizens and suppress the Accord, 46; continued treacherous conduct to Orange, Horn, and Egmont, 298; informs the King that a scheme is arranged for dividing the country and for massacring the people, 299; declares Venetian emissaries in a state of siege and all citizens rebels, 308; appeals to Orange for assistance against proceedings of Broderode, 311; grants permission to Protestants of Amsterdam to preach in the Lastadige, and immediately afterward withdraws the same, 312; refuses to accept resignation of Orange, 313; haughtily reply to Broderode's second request, 314; visits Antwerp after the pacification of Calvinist tumults, 326; her expressions on the occasion, 46; her indignation at being superseded by Alva, 46; her efforts to gain over Orange, 393; her indignation on arrival of Alva, 241; conduct subsequent to arrest of Egmont and Horn, 349; her resignation is finally accepted, 359; she departs from Netherlands, 46.

Parties, three political, in Netherlands during government of Don John of Austria, ii, 247.

Passau, Treaty of, affirmed by Granville to have been secretly revoked by Charles V., l, 424.

"Palermo, Master Jacks," name given to malcontent Walloon party by Calvinists, ii, 814.

Patriots, position of, after departure of Alva, ii, 105.

Paul IV., Indication of, at the truce of Vaucelles, i, 83; his ambitious character, 46; his hatred of Spaniards, 83; absolves King of France from keeping faith with Spain, 84; makes peace with Spain, 86.
Index

Peace, universal desire for, in Netherlands, after departure of Alva, i. 171.
People, disgust at, see Anthony Perrotet, 159.
Power of, see Elizabeth, 49.
Procession of, see Plancha, 178.
Protest of, see Marian Apology, 177.
Protestation of, see Inquisition of, 227.
Protestant, see Protestants, 167.
Purify, see Alva, 150.
Purging, see Alva, 150.
Put to death, see Alva, 150.
Put under the ban, see Alva, 150.
Puritans, see Puritans, 167.
Purloined letters, see Alva, 150.
Pustules, see Alva, 150.
Puy of, see Alva, 150.
Punishment, see Alva, 150.
Punishment of, see Alva, 150.
Puritans, see Puritans, 167.
Purloined letters, see Alva, 150.
Pustules, see Alva, 150.
Puy of, see Alva, 150.
Punishment, see Alva, 150.
Punishment of, see Alva, 150.
Puritans, see Puritans, 167.

P. G. W. 5.
Index

of England, ii. 381; orders Alva to supply troops to carry out plots against Queen of England, ii. 9; appoints Duke of Medina Grenada Governor-General of Netherlands, in lieu of Alva, ii.; commends deputes from Netherlands and provinces, sent to Spain to remonstrate against imposition of the new taxes, 15; his exertions at massacre of II auvent in France, 31; letters to Alva on the subject, 39; secret endeavors to obtain the imperial crown of Germany, 92; pleads himself to withdraw Spanish troops from Netherlands, and to allow the free exercise of the Reformed religion there, 43; his munitions and governor's more projects in his hands, 99; dissatisfaction of regards his intended policy towards Netherlands, 101; expenses of Netherlands rebellion, 102; anger at death of Requesens, 163; uncrowned policy consequent to this event, 153; despatches Henri de Navarre to pacify the country, 171; letters to estates of Brabant, and to state-council, 175; plottings with Antonio Pérez to assassinate Don John of Austria, 234; suggests to Don Sebastian, 297, through the means of Perez, the necessity of the assassination of Prince of Orange, 251; letter to solio general to Netherlands, 180, in reply to their communication of 24th August and 8th September 1577, 392; issues upon necessity of maintaining the royal supremacy and the Catholic religion on the basis adopted by his father, 39; issues Ban against Prince of Orange, 393; despatches Inigo de Mendoza Margués of Parma to Netherlands, 393; offers to restore to eldest son of Prince of Orange the estates bestowed on the relatives of his father's murderer, on condition of his paying a pension to them, 451.

Padray, Count, brother of Count Hoogstraten, and stadtholder of Friesland and Drentz, betrays patriot cause, ii. 373; price paid for his treachery, 379; evil influence of his sister, Cornelia, of Bremen, 306; 307; his character, 388; intercepted letters reveal his treason to Orange, 16; incidents attending his seizure of the city of Groningen for Prince of Parma, 381; lays siege to Steenwijk, 391, is obliged to abandon the siege, 392; his subsequent career and death, 16.

Requesens, Don Luis de, appointed successor of Alva, arrives in Brussels, ii. 93; his previous career, 98; instructions received from Philip on assuming governorship of Netherlands, 100; his views of Netherlands affairs on first assuming office, 108; opposite opinions held by him and Alva, 16; sends two vessels, under Romero and Avila, to attempt to rescue Middelburg, 167; parleys with mutinous Spanish troops, 159; vain negotiations with assembly of deputies at Brussels, 137; various negotiations with Orange, 48; his ignorance as to Philip's real wishes and intentions regarding peace, 145; preparations for taking possession of isles of Zealand, 152; his financial difficulties, 185; unexpected death, 181; retrospective views of his character and career, 16.

Requijas, proposal to be presented by Margués of Parma to 106th conference of the Compromise League, i. 250; Orange's steps with regard to it, 16; subject of discussed in assembly of nobles, 352; presentation of, 254; purport of this document, 16; answer to, 354.

Reulx, Count, Governor of Flanders, solicits aid from Prince of Orange against mutineers, iii. 183.

Rhetoric, chambers, their liberal tendencies and influence on people, i. 177.

Richardt, Juan, nephew of the Bishop of Arras, his testimony to the incredible horrors of the sack of Mechlin, ii. 49.

Riot in Antwerp against Catholics, in Antwerp, ii. 353; in Utrecht, 15.

Risberia, commander of the garrison of Harlem, warns the citizens of the absolute necessity of making a last effort for freedom, ii. 37.

Roda, Jerome de, claims to be sole Governor of Netherlands, iii. 177; his unworthy treatment of Netherlands nobles after capture of Antwerp, iii. 137; writes letter
of congratulation to Philip, after capture of the city, 182.
Rodelin, II, accession to the imperial throne, ii. 215; his sentiments towards Netherlands, 18.
Remuro, Julian, supposed to have been the officer who urged Egmont to escape, i. 246; disgraceful conduct at Naarden, 52.
Rotterdam, onslaught of Spanish troops on, after vain attempts to recapture Brill, ii. 21.
Bayter, Hermande de, a cattle drover, and partisan of Orange, murders the Governor of Louvain, and takes possession of the castle, i. 445; blows up the castle, 446.
Rhywe, a nobleman of Ghent, passionately attached to Prince of Orange, and desirous of forming a free confederation of Netherlands, ii. 382; seeks an interview with Prince of Orange, at Antwerp, to propose a revolution in Ghent, 283; incidents and results of interview, 283; returns to Ghent, and urges on the people to throw off the Spanish yoke, 285; is placed at the head of provisional government, 286; atrocious proceedings against Viescaer and Hasselaer, 289; struggles for power with Imbise, at Ghent, 385.
Rythovius, Peter, Doctor of Divinity, raises popular complaints by entering into disputes with reformed preachers, i. 270.
Saint Quentin, city of, strategical importance of its position, i, 91; is threatened by the Duke of Savoy, 93; battle of, 93; assault and sack of the city, 96.
Saint Winochberga, taken by De Thurne, i. 100.
Salaede, a Spaniard, and Baus, an Italian, detected in a scheme to poison Anjou and Orange, at instigation of Duke of Parma, ii. 422; fearful mode of execution at Paris, 45.
Sarrasin, John, prior of Saint Vaast, his zeal in buying over adherents to royal cause; establishment of the royal authority over the Walloon provinces, ii. 387; purchases effected by him among Catholic nobles, 385.
Savoy, Emanuel Philibert, Duke of, Regent of Netherlands; his character and early career, i. 79; takes command of army, 89; invests St Quentin, 90; recovers his sovereignty, 104; promises to marry Margaret, sister of King of France, 104; rebukes estates for indignity offered to Philip, 394.
Saxon, Augustus, Elector of, his eagerness for marriage of his niece Anna with William of Orange, i. 153.
Saxony, Anna of, married to William of Orange, i. 151; her eccentricity, 147; her conduct towards Orange, 147; her iniquity, 147; her letters to Alva, 147; her infidelity, 148; her solitary confinement, 148; death, 150.
Scheldtz, victory of the patriot fleet over the Spanish fleet, in the year 1574, ii. 106; victory of patriot Admiral Haesemot of Antwerp, 139.
Schets, Caspar, Baron of Grobbendonck, his position, i. 303; his veneration, 303; humiliation of Granvelle fixed upon by nobles at banquet at his house, 303.
Schoonevoen, surrender to Hiersges, ii. 158.
Schouw and Schepens, chief magistrates and aldermen of Flemish cities, how appointed, i. 19.
Schouwen conquered by the Spaniards, ii. 155.
Schwenck, Count Gunther de, despatched to Germany, to sue for the hand of the Princess Anna of Saxony for William of Orange, i. 154.
Schwendi, Lazarus, friend of Prince of Orange, urges King and Regent to take means to alloy storm gathering in Netherlands, i. 202.
Sects, religious, in Netherlands, i. 56; dreadful persecution of, 56.
Segovia, consultations of Spanish council at, on the subject of discontent in Netherlands, i. 286.
Solwaert Abbey, total destruction of Nassau's army near, i. 897.
Sessa, Carlos da, burnt as a heretic, i. 115.
Siena ceded to Cosimo de' Medici, i. 86.
Slaves and serfs in Netherlands, i. 17.
Smith, Christopher, a Carmelite monk converted to Protestantism, put to death at Antwerp, i. 320.
Soldiers, Spanish, become mutinous, i. 916; offer to deliver Harlem into the hands of Orange, ii. 74; are appeased by Alva, 75; their peculiar situation and constitution in Netherlands, 116; mutiny immediately after battle of Mook, or Mookerheyde, 117; seize Antwerp, 117; mutiny settled by treaty with governor-general, 119; departure of, from Netherlands, i. 227.
Sonnius, Dr Francis, sent on a mission to Rome to represent necessity of increase of bishoprics in Netherlands, i. 156.
Sonoy, Diedrich, appointed by Orange Lieutenant-governor of North Holland, ii. 28; written instructions given to him by the Prince, 28; floods the country to save Alkmaar, 73; discovers conspiracy among certain inhabitants of Holland to favour a Spanish invasion, 151; establishes a kind of blood-council, and commits horrid cruelty on some of the conspirators, 78.
Sorrento, Archbishop of, his mission in Netherlands, i. 268.
Spa, meeting of nobles at, to lay the foundations of the Compromise, i. 246.
Stadholders of provinces, their functions and powers, i. 108.
Statistics of life and money expended in Netherlands during the struggle for liberty, ii. 197.
Steenwyck, the key to the province of Drenthe, is besieged by Renneberg, ii. 390; is assailed with red-hot balls and with stingless sarcaems, 391; pretended intercepted letter of Orange, 392; homilies of Captain Corput, 392; siege abandoned by Renneberg, 392.
Stolberg, Juliana of, mother of William of Orange, i. 130; her piety and beneficial influence on her sons, 151.
Stralen, Antony van, burgomaster of Antwerp, arrested the same day as...
Index.

berry-tree, 184; his uneasiness after recall of Granville, and contempt with which he was treated by the Regent, 218; his love of lucre, 218; accusations of Regent against him, 219; being attacked by apoplexy is superseded by Hopper, 224; attempts to smooth the troubled waters, 226; represents necessity for the King’s presence in Netherlands, 259; his obsequiousness to Alva, 354; assists in the choice of members of the Blood-Council, 355; his eulogy on the prudence and gentleness of Alva, 355; opposes Alva’s new scheme of arbitrary taxation in Netherlands, 430; his endeavours to procure an amnesty, 432; adopts the cause of the people in opposition to Alva, ii. 5; dissenting statements as to his presence in state-council on occasion of its arrest by the Seigneur de Hézé, 182—in note; his death, 241.

Villages, number of, i. 48.

Villars, de, commanding a division of patriot army under Louis of Nassau, is defeated first at Roermonde, i. 378; subsequently at Erkelenz and Dalem, 168; betrays Orange’s designs, 168.

Vitelli, Chiappini, his character and extraordinary obesity, ii. 159; his death, 160.

Vroedshapen, or councillors elected by the cities in Netherlands, i. 20.

Walcheren, horrid internecine warfare in the island of, ii. 25; detestable cruelty of natives towards Spaniards, 26.

Wallon, provinces of, Artois, Hainault, Lille, Douay, and Orchies, unite in a separate league, 1379, ii. 344; conferences with deputations from states-general, 351; deputation sent to Prince of Parma before Maestricht, 353; flattering reception given to deputation, 353; fascination exercised by Prince on deputation, 353; preliminary Accord signed with King’s government, 353; provisions of Accord, 354; effect produced by Accord throughout Netherlands on Prince of Orange and in France, 354.

Walshingham, Sir Francis, and Lord Cobham, despatched to Netherlands by Queen of England to endeavour to effect pacification between the estates and the Governor, Don John of Austria, ii. 315; conference with Don John, 316; leave Netherlands, having failed in their mission, 316.

Willebroek, interview between Orange, Egmont, and Mansfeld at, i. 328.

Willemzoon Dirk, an anabaptist, put to death under dreadful torures after an admirable act of Christian self-devotion, i. 426.

Women, condition of in Netherlands, i. 48.

Ypres forced to yield to Spanish government, and dead heretics hanged and living ones killed, ii. 441.

Zealand, islands of, recovered by patriots, ii. 201.

Zeraerts, Jerome van ’t, appointed by Orange Governor of the island of Walcheren, ii. 24.

Ziericksee, besieged by Mondragon, ii. 155; attempts to relieve city, 170; surrenders on advice of Prince of Orange, 171; conditions of surrender, 176; mutiny of Spanish troops after surrender, 176.

Zutphen, enormous cruelties committed at, by order of Alva, ii. 61.

Zuyder Zoe formed by submersion of lands along the Vlie, i. 20; naval engagement in, between Count Boseu and Admiral Dirkzoon, ii. 89; victory of patriots and capture of Spanish Admiral, 40.